Shattered Songs of Faith
by Sakura108645

Summary

Fire Emblem Three Houses AU Story: What if Sothis was with Byleth since their childhood days?

"If only I could touch the stars."

Born sick since day one of her life, Arisa grew mostly in a hospital room. At some point in her life, she got better and was able to live the way she wanted. Freedom, make friends, create bonds, travel the world. But that dream to continue living a healthy life was struck down when she turned 23. Her illness came back but much worse, and this time, she would not win the battle.

3 year laters, on her 26th birthday, she passes away in her sleep.

Now, one does not expect to wake up in another body when they die. She did not expect to come to such a world that she had only read and played through technology. What's more, that she wakes up as Female Byleth during her childhood days.

Notes
See the end of the work for notes.
Prologue: Under the Stars, Just a Little Longer

*A dream is a wish your heart makes ~*

*When you’re fast asleep ~*

*Alone. Alone.*

*Cold cold.*

She hated these cold walls with a passion. With windows shut with white curtains, not even the sun could touch her skin. It was the typical look of a hospital room. Though it was far larger due to the amount of machines she was connected to. It almost looked like she was puppet trapped in a web of strings. Each machine iritated her as she heard the beeping sounds, they made. Big and small they were. Color white like the skin of a pale ghost. Each machine had a job to monitor her body. One her blood pressure. Two, her heartbeat. Three, was a hospital stretcher that allowed her to be moved immediately if something went seriously wrong. Another hospital machine that was connected to the wall showed X-rays of her bones. On it were also the results of her blood test and such.

*Connect. Inject. Cut.*

*Agony. Pain.*

*Iron.*

*Must she suffer more...?*

It was always the taste of iron in her mouth. She coughed into her hand and gritted her teeth once she saw the crimson liquid that is suppose to stay in her body, splatter on her hand. Today it was only small droplets, so she calls it lucky. She groans as she grabbed the paper towel roll next to her bed and ripped a sheet off. She wipes her hand and crumpled the paper and threw it.

"Yeet!" She said excitedly as she saw it made it into the trash can.
She hummed as she went back to her computer, where she was watching some guide videos to help her out in the newest game that was gifted to her. Personally, she would have preferred to go buy it herself, since she is an adult.

"Tch. So much work." She grumbled as she continued to watch the video on her computer.

It was one of the few pieces of technology she has access to. To her, it was a blessing.

Knock knock.

Hearing the knocks on the metal doors, she saw them open automatically and revealed a young boy who seemed to be about 13. He carried a medium size case that she could tell inside was his guitar. He loved playing music.

"Hey sis, how are things?" The boy smiled to her and she smiled back.

Internally, the boy just wanted to burst out crying. She looked so pale. The rosy color of her cheeks were no longer there. There were dark circles under her eyes. Her once glowing light tan skin now had the sickly pale color. Her brown eyes were a bit red from crying, that he could tell. She was skinny, but not so much that people think she is malnourished. Her brown colored hair looks dry and it's glow was no longer there. The trash can was filled with crumpled paper that had red blood stains on them. Her body was wrapped in bandages from the different surgeries she had, but was hidden away thanks to the pale blue hospital dress that she wears. Multiple wires were connected around her arms and a few on her legs. The bed she sat on had white and blue bed sheets except her blanket, which the hospital allowed her to have. It was blue colored one with a lion, eagle and deer on it.

"Hey little bro, how are you? I hope your teachers aren't being too harsh or they might have to deal with the wrath of a former college professor." She giggled as he walked over to her.

He grabbed the chair that was next to the table where there were multiple bottles filled with different colored pills. He hid his grimace looking at so many bottle pills. He pulled the chair near her bed and saw she was watching a video game guide again.

"Watching Fire Emblem 3 Houses guides again sis?" He asked.

She nodded as she grabbed her Nintendo Switch that she had placed next to her laptop. She turned on the screen, revealing the games she had. She smiled as she found the one he just mentioned it and opened it.

"Dun, dun, dun dunn... " she lightly sang the tune of the starting screen.

He smiled at her sadly.

"Let me finish recruiting Bernadetta quickly and I'll help you with your math homework in a bit. Alright?" She smiled to him.

"Arisa...you don't have to..." he said, worried.
"I can do it myself now. I can finally understand the formula of a sphere!" He said proudly.

She just gave him a blank face and he chuckled nervously.

"Nice try Christian. *A mi no me puedes engañar.*" She said.

"Shit.." he cursed internally.

She was a college professor(formally) after all.

"*Aha. Lo sabia.* You can't hide things under my eyes. But Christian, like I said before, as your older sister, I will help you. Regardless of my condition." Arisa smiled to him and patted his head.

He smiled at her sadly and nodded.

"So...I'm assuming you're recruiting Bernadetta because you finished the Church and Crimson Flower routes?" He said.

"Since I'm bed ridden, I'll take my advantage and play my games. Personally, I rather be in my classroom at the university teaching my lesson about constellations and then teach at the nursing program, but sadly life likes to kick you where it hurts." She said.

"But yes, I can't bring myself to hurt my children!" She said.

"Yet you show no mercy when you give out midterms." Christian said back.

"You know very well it is for everyone's good. I was once a student myself when I was younger." She said.

"Well...you're 25 turning 26 in three days." He said.

"*Tienes razon. Pero~*" she sung, "Might as well live what I have left of my life in joy than bitterness." She giggled.

He smiled bitterly at that last part. He didn't want her to die.

"Anyhow," he said wanting to change the topic, "So your reason to recruiting Bernadetta?" He said.

"Her and Felix belong together." Was all his elder sister said.

He groaned into his hands. He swears her and her romances....

"How....are mom and dad by the way? And the rest of the family?" She asked a bit nervous.

"Mom is a wreck as is dad. Both constantly working because they want you to be okay. Our siblings are also doing okay. But all of us are coming on Saturday for your birthday. You know well no one ever misses that day." He smiles as she nodded.

She fist pumped when she saw Bernadetta ask Female Byleth if she could join the Blue Lions. Of course Arisa clicked the yes option. This was honestly her second play through of the Blue Lions Route. It was her favorite. If she had to rate her favorites, it be Blue Lions, Golden Dear, Black
Eagles and lastly the church route.

"Okay, I'm done. I finished saving so take out your homework." She said as she finished saving her game and put her switch down.

Christian nodded and took out his folder, which had his math homework in it. He handed it to her and she opened it. There were 14 questions and she pointed to three of them.

"This one is wrong. You need to divide. Remember, this formula is used to find the mass of the sphere, not the volume. Now, this one you do use the formula to find the volume and the last one you have to use both formulas. Y----cough cough!!!" She suddenly began coughing and he quickly ran to get her the small trash can and quickly handed it to her.

"Uurreegghhhhh!!!" She hurled in it and he rubbed her back gently.

"Cough!!!! Cough!!! Thanks...." she said weakly as he handed her a small towel to wipe her mouth.

He saw the blood on her lips and his blood froze. She was getting worse.

"Could you hand me the bottle with the blue pill please?" She said and he nodded.

He handed it to her and she opened it and with shaky hands, plopped one in her mouth and swallowed it with no water.

"Here..." he handed her her favorite lavender tea, but no sugar in it.

She thanked him and gulped it down and handed him back the cup. He put it on the table.

"Sorry about that. Shall we get back to fixing those math problems?" She smiled to him like nothing happened.

He looked at her worried but nodded.

Behind the smile she wore to make sure no one was so constantly over worried about her, was a little girl that screamed and screamed nothing sorrowful words of pain and agony. Screaming why she had to be born like this? Why did her sickness have to come back and now ten times worse. Not only did her bone disease return, she was diagnosed with lung cancer and ovary cancer. She was anemic and worse, her immune system was deteriorating. Her bone disease was cured when she was 13 and she was more than happy to leave the damn hospital rooms. She was finally able to have a proper life. She went to school, graduated high school and went to college. At age 22, she became a full fledged professor and was teaching mathematics, astronomy and dance. Her hobbies are fencing, martial arts, reading nothing but piles of books in her free time.

History, psychology, philosophy, geography, culture, mathematics, biology, art, language, folklore.

It was the only thing she ever had access to when she was a child. A simple book of fairy tales is what started it all. Literally her room in her house was filled with shelves and shelves of books to the point her parents put a limit on her of how many she could buy. When the shelf near the window in her hospital room was filled with books. But not just that. Games, soundtracks and
movies. Thank her elder brother to introducing her to otaku culture.

- Night -

"It's like this." She said as she opened her mouth.

"Aaaaaaaaaahhhhhhh!!!!!!" She sung beautiful.

Her brother smiled. He was the baby of the family. Arisa was the 3rd oldest. He noticed the clock and it was beginning to get late. He sighed and took out his guitar.

"Hey sis, can we sing Hanezeve Caradhina from Made in the Abyss?" He asked.

She smiled and nodded.

"Of course." Arisa smiled.

He smiled and he began to gently pluck the strings to the notes. He sung softly because he wanted to hear his sisters voice. He always sang lightly. Because..he may never hear it again..

"Ha la la ha se la ha la le lu
Si vi bi le shi dhina how we le la la le li la
Hanezeve caradhina
Ha la la ha la for the ha la he le le le
Le le le col we le la ka la li la hanezeve yu lu mai ni
Ha la la ha ze la ha la le lu
Si vi bi leshi dhina how we le la la le li la Hanezeve caradhina
Ko do wo do hon do hon dow
He le le le le le ho we le low
he le le Hanezeve yu lu mai ni
Ha la la ha ze la ha la le lu
Si we bi le shi dhina how we le la la le li la
hanezeve caradhina"

From outside the hospital room, the nurses and doctors hummed softly to the song. And from the door, Arisa's best friend was silently crying as she heard her friend sing to the music her brother played. She turned around and ran through the hallways and into the bathroom, where she burst out
crying.

"Why why....?! Why must you take her way from us God?!? She didn't deserve this!!" She cried.

She way her best friend. She didn't want Arisa to go through such pain. She didn't deserve it.

"If only.....God if you really do actually exist....if she does die....please....grant her a healthy body in her next life...." she whimpered.

- 2 days later: 5 minutes before midnight to become the third day -

With the curtains opened, she laid on her bed looking at the ceiling. She wore her oxygen mask and looked at the letter she had placed next to vase with flowers. Her body was getting weaker, her heart rate becoming more sluggish and she felt her body becoming colder for some reason.

"Hhmmmm...hhmmm..hmm...." she softly sung Isabella's lullaby to herself.

She slowly turned her head towards the window and smiled sadly.

_The stars.....how beautiful they are...._

_Little to big balls of light...

_They all have different meanings..._

_Is there life out there...?_

_They say the stars are the souls of those who have passed on._

"I still want to live...." she muttered softly as she reached out her hand towards them.

It hurt. Her whole body hurt with that single movement. She didn't care.

"Just a little more....just a little more....Just a little longer" her eyelids feel heavy and she was starting to have this overwhelming feeling to sleep.

The strength in her body was almost gone but she smiled as a lone tear fell from her eye.

"I caught one....." was her last words as her hand dropped down heavily.

On her lips...remained a happy smile, because in that final moment, she was able to touch a star.

- The Next Day -

"I hope she likes these!!" With cheerful smile and her red hair tied into a ponytail, her honey
colored eyes gleamed with joy as she made her way to her friend's room.

She carried a vase with her friend's favorite flowers, which were white lilies. She always came one hour earlier than her friend's family. It was a special moment for them. The two women would always talk about different animes they watched and such. As she made a turn to the left, she saw her friend's door open and walked in. The room was cleared of the machines and also bookshelves. She was Professor in Criminology but also had another job of making different guns. Also she was motorcyclist. She was confused at first till she saw doctor come in and looked at her surprised.

"Ms. Theresa!! Wha....what are you doing here?" The doctor said.

"Today my class starts late so I decided to come and pay my fellow professor and friend a visit. Has she been transferred to another room?" Theresa asked.

The doctor looked at her sadly and spoke calmly.

As the doctor spoke the next words, time seemed to slow down, and a ringing in her ear began. Her smile left her face in an instant as her hands became loose and the vase shattered on the floor. Water spilled all over, the petals of the lilies ripped and some fell apart.

"No.....you're lying....she....she......" Theresa began and the doctor looked at her sadly.

"I'm sorry for your loss." He said.

She walked further into the room and was silent.

"Please close the door. I need a moment." Was all she said and he did just that.

The nurses nearby looked worried and the doctor shook his head.

"AAAAAAAAAAAAHHHHHHHHH!!!"

Everyone looked down to the floor as they heard the woman's screaming voice. Her curses and wails filled the hallways. Theresa screamed all of her emotions out. Her friend was gone. Her friend was gone. Arisa had saved her during a difficult time she was going through when she was 14.

"I'm still holding on to some heavy baggage

Hey, what kind of tomorrow

Am I supposed to look for in this town?

AAAAHHHHHHHHH!!!"
With the gray sky that seemed to be weeping with her, Theresa placed the boutique of flowers on the tombstone. In her hand, was the letter that her friend wrote. She cried and whispered..

"My friend....should we ever meet again one day in another life.....I pray you have a healthy body....for you to smile and to have the strength to walk on your own two feet. To run, to play, to fall in love. For you to make your own family and meet your beloved. I will serve you....and protect you.....my dear friend...."

(End of Prologue: Under the Stars, Just a little longer)

Welcome to the Prologue of my newest story!!! And I can already see the millions of pitchforks coming at me. Look, I'll be truthful with you all, I really have not had much energy these past few years because of university. But now that I am now doing what I love, I have actually found my moment to enjoy manga, anime and writing again. I won't be constantly writing, and my updates will be slow. This is my first attempt at writing a Fire Emblem Fan Fic. I will be adding a few of my own elements. This story was inspired by an artwork by @funyanrinpa. The artwork was what if Sothis was with Byleth since their childhood days? I really loved it and with me recently being able to buy Three Houses and Awakening, this story was born.

Now for my OC information:

This story will mainly focus on Arisa and around midway, we will start to focus a bit more on Theresa and Christian. Now, when will they appear again? That I will not say. The next chapter I will give more details how I have officially decided turned the 2 prototype chapters in my one shot book to an official AU fanFic.

Enjoy everyone!!
Falling.

Falling.

Warm.

Warm.

Comfy.

The overwhelming sleep that took over her body as she closed her heavy eyelids, that was what it felt like.

Fall.

Fall.

Warmth.

Nothingness.

"Please....."

A whisper so faint, you wouldn't be able to hear it if the darkness was not so still and silent. Only that whisper so, so, faint, could be heard.

"Who....."
She whispered as she felt the grogginess from her body begin to go away. She can tell she was still falling but it felt more like floating. This time, the heaviness of her eyes was almost gone and this time she was able to open her eyes a bit. She saw what seemed to be a small sphere of light floating to her till it was only a few inches away from her chest. The small spark glowed and it showed the outline of someone. She could tell it was female though they were see through. The female outline was talking and she could barely even make out what it was saying.

"Can't----alone---don't---please-----sorry-----thank---you---"

That was all she could hear till the female outline smiled softly and intertwined her hands with hers. A warm feeling filled her body as the outline disappearing into a glowing shower of green dust. It surrounded her till it seemed to be absorbed into her. Her strength was returning, almost as if she was healthy again.

**Floating, floating.**

Softly, she felt her feet gently touch some type floor. Cold it felt. Like stone.

"Hmmm.....where....?" She muttered as she carefully opened her eyes to look at her surroundings.

She blinked as she kept looking around. She spun a bit to have a better look of her surroundings. A blue and green colored stone floor she saw as her eyes travelled through the room. Two tall torches with burning blue flames stood on the right and left of stairs. The stairs were tall, it reminded her of the stairs of a Aztec Pyramid. The glowing light of the blue flames gave the place a majestic feeling, almost divine.

"Zzzzz...."

She blinked as she walked towards the stairs she saw. Carefully, she took a step on them and the flames seemed to glow a bit brighter. She heard the soft snoring and began to climb up the stairs, towards the snoring. Up she walked the stairs, thr snoring becoming clearer, she could tell it belong to a female, perhaps a child. A few more seconds of climbing and she reached the top. Before her eyes, was a huge throne made of stone. On it, was a symbol that looked familiar. Her eyes travelled down to a sleeping figure on the throne. A young girl with dark green colored hair, slight peach skin, pointed ears, and wearing a strange foreign dress. Through her mind, "she looked adorable" Arisa was thinking. The girl began to stir a bit and lightly opened her eyes, but not fully. She blinked a but still yawned into her hands and her eyes locked with hers.

"Hmmm.......Oh...my. What could have...yaawwnn..brought you here? I wonder how you got here...yaawwn." She woke up and rubbed her eyes, yawning. She stretched her arms and Arisa couldn’t help but chuckle. The feeling of familiarity was beginning to fill Arisa as she look a closer
look at this girl. A few thoughts were going through her head.

"What's so funny?" The girl asked with a bit of a halty voice.

"Sorry, but you honestly looked cute right now." Arisa said.

She looks familiar. Where have had she seen her?

"How rude!! You dare call me cute, especially when we do not know each other what's more, I know you are supposed to be down there!!! It is a most rude to interrupt a moment of repose!! Very rude indeed!" She said as she pointed back down the stairs.

The sight almost reminded Arisa of an angry child who almost wanted to throw a tantrum.

"Ahh, forgive me my lady but even I do not know where I am. If it be alright, care to enlighten me?" She smiled kindly.

"I wanna scold her." Were the older woman's thoughts.

Similar when she would scold her baby brother.

"At least you have manners. Very well, what is your name?" The young girl asked her.

"My name is Arisa Hernandez. I'm a professor. Well, former professor..." Arisa whispered that last part.

"I see." The girl for some reason looked at her sadly. "Honestly, I can never get used to the strange sounds of human names. You must have a day if birth as well. Beneath which moon and what day were you born into this world?" The girl asked.

This is really starting to feel extremely familiar. But the terms "Moon", did confuse her. Usually it's another term used for months.

"Moon....hmmm...August 23. So....Verdant Rain Moon, I believe." Arisa said a little bit unsure.

The girl smiled. Why did she say that....? Moons....? Wait....a...

"Well wonders never cease!! We share our month of birth!! Though we are only 3 days apart from our day of birth. How strange!" The girl said with a warm smile.

Arisa smiled to her sadly. She then noticed the girl began yawning again.

"Hmmm. It all feels so..familiar. I think it may be time for another nap..yaaaawwwwnnn...." she yawned and leaned into her throne.

She curled up in a small ball as if she was wrapping herself in a warm blanket to protect her from the cold.

"Alright, I'll be going now my lady. Have a good night's sleep." Arisa spoke softly and unconsciously patted her head.
She felt the girl was surprised at her doing this. Arisa always did this to her younger and even older siblings for them to feel safe.

"It's a warm touch....yawwn....I'll allow it...." she said and the girl fell asleep with a peaceful smile on her lips.

Arisa sighed. All this feels too familiar. Slowly, the light in the room turned dark, and so did her vision. It felt like she was floating again. The place was dark, it didn't feel suffocating like the hospital rooms. This darkness felt warm, almost as if someone was protecting her.

She didn't know better. She honestly didn't. All she could remember was that she had this overwhelming feeling to sleep. Her body and mind felt like it was falling, but it wasn't one that would scare the life out of you. It felt like a gentle fall. Like when a leaf falls off a tree and gently land to ground. But...she remembers one wish she had.

"Just a little longer."

She whispered to herself as she had closed her eyes at that time.

"Just hold on a little longer
Even when we're hurting I still want you
And if you walk out that door you know it's over
Can't we just hold on a little longer?
A little longer"

She heard a soft female voice singing.

"Theresa?" Arisa whispered then she saw a small flicker of light and felt it getting closer and brighter.

She used her arms to shield herself from the blinding light. Now, it was gone.

-Waking up: Sun Kiss Confusion and Panic-

The sounds of birds chirping she could barely make out. Her body felt heavy, and she hissed as she felt a sharp pain in her chest.

"I swear if I needed another heart surgery...." she inwardly cursed.
Her eyelids she could barely opened and she hissed once again as light entered her vision and it blinded her for a moment. She forced herself to sit up and coughed a bit. She always did it since it was usually required when bed ridden people have to stay in hospitals for days, months or even years. The purpose was to keep her lungs from shrivelling like a plant. Her vision was now becoming much clearer and she felt her hair was...short. She coughed again and like usual, was expecting the the taste of iron in her mouth but instead, it was the bitter taste of herbs?

"Wha...?" With a groggy vision, it didn't register to her yet that her hair was a different color, almost....teal.

She shook her head a bit and this time her vision was much more clear. She blinked. And she blinked again. She blinked multiple times as she looked around the room she was in. The room was similar to a cabin. Inside were a few shelves, a table with medical supplies it seems. On the wall to the left, was a simple small desk with a few opened books and also a paper on it. She saw the chair had a green colored cloak hanging on it. Seems to be the size for the child. Once again, she heard the sounds of birds chirping and turned to the source.

"Tssskkk!!" She said between her teeth as she used her right arm to protect herself from the light that hit her face.

"Sunlight?" She said and her vision now fully adjusted.

She blinked as she noticed the window with brown curtains opened. The sun's rays were touching her warmly, hugging her like a warm blanket. Her eyes slowly went wide as she noticed the green forest outside the window.

Forest....

Forest....

FOREST??! WASN'T SHE SUPPOSED TO BE IN A HOSPITAL ROOM?!

Did the doctors do a blood transfusion on her and cured her?! Or did she actually manage to get naturally better?! Did she get kidnapped in the process and sent to an inn? The girl jumped out of bed, not caring how heavy her body felt and the sudden surge of energy she had, but ended up tripping because the blanket ended tangling around around her legs.

"Kyyaaa!!" Arisa yelled out and winced as she felt a painful shock through her body.

She looked down to her chest(which was flat?!?) and it was wrapped in bandages. It was bit bloody but not so much that she was bleeding out. She noticed her sight was very much better and far more clearer than usual. Her voice sounded so much younger and then noticed a single strand of teal colored hair. She frantically began to look around and began to notice more things in the room she was in. The walls were not the sickly white but a dark color brown with a few things hung on them. Almost like a living room. The blankets of the bed she was on were not blue or white, but a forest color fur blanket that was soft and warm to the touch. The bed sheets were still white though.
The bed was made of wood and she could tell it was hand carved.

She quickly began to look around frantically for a mirror and found a small one next to the chair of the desk. She ran to it and with shaky hands grabbed it.

"Wha....wha....wha...." she a shaky small hand, she touched her cheek, unable to believe what she was seeing.

"What...*que es esto?*" Arisa screeched so loudly that a crack formed on the mirror as she looked at her own reflection.

Or should she say, someone else. With eyes the color of emeralds, her skin was a slight light peach color with rosy warm cheeks, her hair was to her shoulders but the color was teal. Her hair was a dark color brown, not teal. Not teal. It should not be teal!!! Her body was much much smaller, that of a child.

"This better be a prank...this better be a prank....this better be a prank...." her voice became shaky as it was finally beginning to register what had just happened to her.

"...how...Aahhh!!" Arisa suddenly screamed out as shock of pain went through her head as flood of memories entered her vision.

"Stop!! It hurts!! It hurts!!" She cried as she screamed and collapsed to the floor.

These weren't her memories, but of the person she had now become. She could hear yelling that sounded worried but it was in a completely foreign language she did not understand. It was not Spanish (*her native tongue*), nor English, nor Japanese, French, Portuguese, or even Hmong language. Finally when the voices were near, there was a click in her mind that made her freeze. She could now understand it. Her mind was still processing everything at a rapid pace.

"Byleth are you alright?!"

The door to "her" room slammed opened, and she saw a big muscular man in armor, was panting and next to him a younger woman??? dressed in what seemed clothing of a mage. Arisa was crying, and was a sobbing mess. She was still in pain and hugging herself as she looked up at the two. She was shaking and terrified. Her eyes were filled with tears as she finally fully understood where she was and who she was now. The individuals were very surprised to see her or should she say, Byleth, crying. The memories Arisa saw were painful. All of Byleth's memories had become hers and merged with her own. It hurt. The sudden surge of memories was a painful process. The stress was so much that she felt herself black out again and that man, who she knew was Jeralt, Byleth's father. The last thing she heard was him and the mage running over to her worried and yelling out Byleth's name.
"Florencio, get Sandy immediately!!! Byleth, stay with us!!" Jeralt yelled out as he quickly picked up his daughter.

Her fever was high and her eyes were red. There were tear stains on her cheeks and a few were still fresh.

"I'm going!!!! SANDY WE NEED THE MEDICINE NOOOOWWWW!!" The magician named Florencio yelled out in a panic and dashed through the door.

Jeralt turned to his daughter, worried and quickly put her back on her bed and wrapped the blanket around her. Her fever was high and she was panting rapidly. He heard running footsteps and next to Florencio, was a woman dressed as Fodlan dancer. She had tan skin, dark black hair tied in a bun, and her silver eyes were wide with worry.

"I brought the medicine!! I need you all to get out now!! Florencio, assist me!!" She yelled out to the magician next to her.

He wore a female purple colored dress with a what seemed to be some type of witch hat he wore. On it, were multiple colored flowers. His long hair was loose with his bangs braided. His skin was also than that match his right silver eye and purple left eye.

"Jeralt, we need you to step out. I promise Byleth is safe with us." Sandy said and closed the door.

Florencio summon his grimoire and chanted a spell as multiple stones came out and circled around Byleth's bed. He began chanting a spell as the small stones began to glow a warm green and blue color. Sandy began opening a small bottle with a purple colored cream and began to undo the bandages around the child's chest. The older woman then noticed the mirror on the floor, it was cracked. Her eyes narrowed at it. A mirror is said to show the reflection of the soul. And if cracked, it can damage it or trap the soul inside.

She shook her head and finished removing the bandages and placing the purple colored cream on the girl's chest.

"If ta efu, rah hagta me. Ifte sho, urganake." She chanted along with Florencio.

The stone glowed a bit more brighter and the cream also glowed. It turned to dust and was absorbed by the girl. She began to breathe normally again and the wound on her chest was no longer bleeding but healing slowly now. The two adults sighed in relief as the girl was now sleeping soundly and fever was now low. They heard a knock and Florencio opened the door, to see it was Jeralt.

"How is she?" He asked.

"She's feeling better now Jeralt. Byleth a strong girl." Florencio smiled to him worried.

"Oh thank Sothis....." he breath out and the man let him in.

Sandy smiled to him as she was done with putting new bandages back on the girl and her night gown back on. Jeralt got the chair next to the desk and sat next to his daughter's bed.

"I thought I was going to lose her......." he muttered and the two smiled sadly.

"We all did Jeralt. We all took care of those bandits and the leader as been executed by you.
Florencio and I have placed a barrier around the village and we'll be on high alert if bandits try to come back.” Sandy said and he nodded.

"Hmmm...."

Everyone turned as they saw the girl stir a bit and opened her eyes a bit.

"Go back to sleep my lady. You need to rest." Florencio said as he walked over to her.

Byleth lightly reached out her hand and Jeralt gently held it. He really thought he lost.

"Pa...pa...." she muttered.

Everyone's eyes went wide and the girl had fallen back to a deep sleep thanks to the sleeping spell Florencio used.

"D-Did she just....?!” The magician stuttered as he looked back and forth between the father and daughter.

Jeralt was still processing hearing that and somehow he felt a form of pride because that was the first time his daughter has ever called him that. It was usually "Father."

"Okay, stop that smug look on your face." Sandy called Jeralt out.

"Cough. Sorry." The man cough.

"But still, Sandy if you were the one to come in, I think you would be surprised by what we saw." Florencio said as he got a chair and sat next to her.

"Wait, what happened to Lady Byleth when you two came in?” She said.

"She was crying. Shaking, sobbing, screaming. We have never heard so much emotion come from her. And honestly.....it's not how we wanted to see her Express her emotions first." Jeralt said as he looked over to his sleeping daughter.

"What?! Are you serious?! You're not lying right?! Especially with whatever.....that woman did to her when she was an infant!!" Sandy said.

"Sister, if we were lying, I think we wouldn't be hearing her say "Papa." Right now." Florencio said back.

Sandy was still in shock and looked over to the girl.

"Sigh...never mind..I guess you are right. For now, it's better we go and get our job done. It is early in the morning. If she is awake during lunch, I'll bring her my famous chicken stew." Sandy grinned proudly at the talk of her stew.

"Thank you, you two. Really." Jeralt said and the two nodded.

The three stood up and began to leave the room. Jeralt looked over to his daughter one last time,
beyond grateful that she is alive and well.

- 4 hours later: Lunch time -

Silence filled her room as she sat up and stared at the wall. Her eyes were beginning to fill with tears again as she finally broke down and cried. She remembered everything from her previous life and it hurt. She died in her sleep. She whispered "just a little longer." She died alone in that damn hospital room. She was more than happy looking forth to her 26th birthday, so she would celebrate it with all her friends and family. Especially with her little brother and her best friend. Gone, it was all gone. She wasn't even able to say goodbye to them, only through the letter she wrote. She hated it, she hated it. If she could go back in time, she would and at least tell them goodbye before she was completely gone. Especially Theresa and Christian. The dream she had of meeting Sothis was very much real, and she now understood that the female outline that she saw was Byleth's, the female version. Arisa just cried. She didn't know how to feel. To suddenly be in a body not your own. It felt....it felt so strange...

She gasped when she heard footsteps approaching the room and quickly laid back down on her bed with the blanket over herself, pretending to be asleep. The door opened and it was the woman she heard called Sandy, before she had passed out.

"Sigh...she's still asleep. I'll just leave her lunch here on the table. Thankfully the heat rocks will keep your food warm Byleth." Sandy smiled warmly as she placed the tray of food on the table next to her bed.

"No...no...my name isn't Byleth. It's Arisa." Arisa thought and felt the woman's hand on her arm.

"Get rest dear. I know you're stubborn and strong like your father." She lightly patted her head. The feeling reminded her of her mother.

"I'll be going now Byleth. Need to teach those newbies a lesson in today's training." The woman chuckled and left.

Once she heard the door closed and made sure she was gone, Arisa sat up and stared at the door, unsure of what to think. This was still too much for her and she then turned to the table where the food was. There was a medium size bowl filled with chicken stew. A small plate with butter and cooked vegetables, along with another plate with a chocolate cake and a warm cup of milk.

"Sniff.....hmmmm...." she hummed at the delicious scent and carefully sat back up and got off her bed.

She walked over to the table and sat down on the chair. She stared at it, unsure if she should eat it.

Her diet in the hospital was heavily restricted when she was there and to the point she has almost forgotten what sweet, salty, spicy, savoury, sour, how regular food tasted like. The hospital food was always so bland that it became something normal to her. She took a deep breath and with a shaky hand, picked up the wooden spoon. She took a spoon full of the broth and put in her mouth
with eyes shut.

"Hmmm!!!!!!!!" Her eyes went wide at the explosion of flavours in her mouth to the point she began crying again.

How many years has it been since she tasted food like this? How long has it been since she was able to eat like a regular human?

"Ouch!! My tongue!!" She accidentally burned herself but didn't care.

She began to devour the stew as if she had never eaten before in her life. She grabbed a cup of milk and took a big gulp of it. Once again, she squealed as the creamy taste of milk hit her tongue and also the sweet taste honey?? She thought. She got her fork and stabbed into a carrot and took a bite out of it. Once again, she was squealing mess as she ate her dinner. In a couple more minutes, she was completely done with her milk, vegetables and chicken stew.

"Sighhhh....." she let go of a long and happy sigh as she relaxed after eating that meal.

She looked over to the cake and grabbed the fork and used it to cut a small piece off it. Take that piece to her mouth, she squealed loudly as the taste of chocolate filled her mouth.

"How long has it been since I actually had something so sweet and delicious?!?" Arisa thought as she began eating her cake, but this time at a much slower pace.

She did not want to throw up this delicious meal. After 20 minutes of relaxing when she finished her cake, Arisa sighed as she looked around the room. It felt....forien.

"I need sleep...." Arisa muttered and walked back to her bed and plopped into her bed. She needed this.......why is she here.....? Did she accidentally take over Byleth's body?

- Dream -

Floating, floating

Falling, falling, falling.

That was what it felt. Her body felt light as a feather as she gently floated down to the stone floor once again. It was the same room that Sothis was in, but this time, the torches had green colored flames. She looked at the stairs and saw the throne but it was empty. Sothis was not there, but.......

"Thank goodness!!! I'm so happy!!
Arisa’s eyes went wide as she saw the dark green haired child run down the stairs and to her.

"I’m sorry!!! But I don’t have much time. I don’t...I can’t leave my father alone like this. Please don’t be angry with me. please....I’m sorry...." the child said.

Though their face could not show emotions, their voice did. Arisa smiled sadly and got down on one knee, so she could be at their eye level.

"Was it you who I heard?” She asked.

The child nodded.

"I didn't survive...but...I don't want my father to be left alone. So please...." they said.

Arisa smiled sadly and held their hands.

"I lost a lot. I can't say goodbye to my old family, but......you chose to help me....so...I’ll help you Byleth." Arisa smiled sadly to the child in front of her who nodded.

"Thank you....thank you...." Byleth smiled sadly to her and she hugged the child tightly in her arms as they disappeared in a shower of green flower petals.

"My memories....keep them....live a healthy life. Explore the world....thank you..”

- Later at night -

Waking up from the dream, Arisa was once again crying but smiled sadly and nodded.

"I will....thank you...." she whispered and wiped her tears away.

It's been a few hours since that disasters wake up call. From the surge of memories Arisa got, and the dream she had after eating, it was like a slap to the face multiple times.

"I won't survive..but...I don't my father to be alone..so please...can you help him?"

How could she say no to a soul of a child? Despite Byleth being emotionless during her years before the monastery, even such a plea, held sadness and love for her father. Even if it was a small smile, how could she say no? It will take time for Arisa to adjust to this new life. Who knows how long it will take?

She sighed once again and looked at the bandages wrapped around her chest. Byleth reacted when her father and his group of fellow mercenaries and merchants were attacked by a group of bandits. She jumped in front of her father right when one of thieves charged at him. The sword had went right through the heart. Such a blow should have killed her instantly but Arisa is guessing, this
forcefully caused Sothis to awaken and use a time pulse so the attack wouldn't go through the heart, but at most, managed to get slashed instead. The cut was still fatal but enough to miss the heart.

"Ouch!" She winced again.

Byleth didn't survive the attack but her will to save her father, and not leave him alone, led to her being here. Arisa was guessing, also assuming her soul was compatible with her body. The number one requirement when a body needs a soul is that they are compatible. Their waves need to match and at most, their personalities. At least similar to their personalities or somewhat opposite of each other.

"Tch." She bit her lip a bit.

A habit she had when she unsure or nervous of something or someone. She questioned how Byleth and her were compatible but then again....at some point in her life she was very much emotionless.

Knock, knock.

"Come in." She said once she heard the knock on the door to her room.

It felt strange. It still didn't feel real. Almost as if she was in some prank show. But reality can really be a bitch when it wants to.

"Hey kiddo, are you feeling better? You gave everyone a scare." Jeralt said to her worried.

Arisa was silent as she stared at him as he came in.

"Oh lady Byleth, thank goodness you're alright!!" She heard the young Male magician from earlier behind him.

She was still quite cautious of them but chose to take it slowly. She smiled sadly to them.

"I'm okay Papa. I swear this cut is nothing." She said a bit too confidently.

Jeralt turned to stone as well as the magician. That's when it clicked to her that Byleth never smiled and what's more always address Jeralt as "Father". Also her own habit of calling my own past father, "Papa" came through. She looked down to her hand, embarrassed that she let that side of her show. Her cheeks had turned a bright rosy pink.

"Ummm...I mean...I'm okay father!!" She stuttered as she turned to look back at the two.

No Byleth doesn't stutter!! Before she knew it, the magician ran to her and quickly placed a hand on her head.

"You're not running a fever!!! Are you sure Jeralt that she didn't hit her head??" He said and kept checking her.

Okay, this seriously felt out of her comfort zone.

"Mmouuu!!! Cut it out!!! I'm perfectly fine thank you very much!! Hmph!!" Arisa snapped back a bit harshly and turned away from him and pouted.
She crossed my arms and just turned away. It was something she usually only did with her baby brother.

"Aaahh!!! This the first time we seen you pout!!! At this rate, if you keep making those cute expressions, all the boys are going to ask for your hand in marriage." The magician gushed.

Arisa's ear perked up a bit and raised an eyebrow.

"I'm not ready for a husband." She said and the magician chuckled.

That made Jeralt snap out of it and glare at him.

"She is in no way getting married." He said.

"Ahhhh...I mean..." the poor magician shrunk away.

Arisa couldn't help but giggle. This reminded her of when her uncle and father were arguing over her older sister's wedding dress.

"It's okay father!! And it's okay umm....who are you again?" And with that, the poor magician fell to the floor as if he was stabbed by arrows.

Arisa searched through Byleth's memories again and the name Florencio showed up.

A booming laughter filled the room and she turned towards the direction of her "father" who was laughing and holding his stomach. He looked up to them and smiled. He walked towards the bed and ruffled her hair. She blinked like an owl and looked up to him, confused. Honestly, she really is confused. The hair ruffle was something her dad did to her and she got the habit to do that also.

"I'm just glad you're alright. This is honestly the first time we have seen you express so much emotion. I can't help but be happy seeing this." He said.

"I see...he's happy. It was only for a moment but I felt my heart beating, despite the Crest of Flames being there." She thought and smiled to him warmly.

"I'm sorry I caused you to worry father. I really am. But, seeing you nearly get stabbed, I guess it's only natural for family to protect each other." She said.

And it's true. That was part of her culture. The bonds of family were stronger than steel.

The two were shocked to silent but a smile slowly crept onto Jeralt's face. He ruffled her hair and she once again blinked like an owl but giggled.

"Thank you kiddo. But don't ever do that again. But, I'm proud of you. I'm sure you'll be an amazing mercenary one day." He said.

Father scolding their daughter.

"By the way Lady Byleth, how are your wounds?" The magician asked.

Arisa touched her chest and felt the pain going away. Seems the medicine was working.
"Umm.....Florencio, right???" She cringed at how she asked that.
"Yes!! Finally someone got my name right!!" The magician now known as Florencio cheered.

"Cut it out. You're going to make my ears burst." Jeralt said, with a bit of annoyance.
"I'm alright Florencio. These wounds should heal in a week right?" She said.
"They should. But I swear, the human body is so complicated. Magic at most heals the physical
part of humans like closing wounds, physical pain. International part of a human is a completely
different story. Luckily you don't have internal bleeding. Out of safety measures, it's better to rest
and not move around so much." He said.
If she remembered correctly, there was no Florencio nor Sandy in the game. She is guessing they
were one of the many NPCS in the game.
"I'm gonna go get Sandy to come change your bandages. We'll be back in a bit." He said and
walked towards the door, but stopped.
"Byleth, I'm glad you're okay." He smiled at her and then left, gently closing the door.
Jeralr turned to her and ruffled her hair.
"I gotta go finish some papers for the next job. For a 5 year old, you're pretty brave." He said and
she giggled lightly.
"So Byleth is 5 years old then...." she mentally thought and smiled to him.
"I'll be okay father. You go finish your work!! Gambatte!!" She gave him a peace sign.
"Gam--ba--te???" He was confused.

Shit!!! There goes her weeb side!!

"It means good luck!!! I overheard one of the kids in the village say it!" She said quickly.
"I see. Well, get some rest. Sandy will bring you your food later tonight. Take care Byleth." He
smiled and about to leave but stopped.
He scratched his cheek a bit.
"Also, I don't mind if you call me Dad or Papa.." he said and coughed.

..........

Oh my.


"Alright. Take care Papa!!" She gave him the biggest grin.

She swears she can feel flowers surrounding her. Jeralt seemed very happy as he left.

Ha. So her "daddy's little girl" side came out......? Bloody hell..

-----

Arisa was looking through one of the books that she had gotten from the shelf. She frowned as she opened it. If it wasn't for Byleth's memories, she would have absolutely no clue how to read this damn thing. Luckily the language was a bit similar to English and the characters used were a bit similar to Japanese characters. She still couldn't read it properly but she could understand a fair amount. She heard a knock on her door and it opened. In came in the woman Sandy, with a tray of food.

"Thank goodness!! You seem so much better!!" Sandy smiled at her as she walked to the table with the tray of food.

"Hmm!! I'm surprised you finished your plates clean!!" The older woman said as she placed the new tray down and picked up the other tray to take back to get the plates cleaned.

"The food was absolutely delicious. How could I not leave my plates clean?" Arisa said as she walked over to the table and sat down.

Sandy giggled and ruffled the girls hair. Arisa smiled to her kindly and Sandy looked her surprised but quickly recomposed herself. This was the first time she had seen the girl smiles, it completely caught her off guard.

"Is that so? Well, I think you'll love today's dinner. Your father hunted a nice big dear with the gang today so for tonight, we are having dear stake! I also made some mushroom soup and your typical cooked vegetables. You can't exactly exactly drink wine yet but I brought you apple cider." Sandy smiled to.

"I'm excited!! It's been a while since we had deer steak!!" Arise grinned as she clapped her hands a bit excitedly.

Each happy emotion was throwing Sandy off. The girls speech had even changed a bit and all the smiling was just new. The feeling of the pure joy of food was in the girls eyes.

"Let me go get my tray quickly. Your father and Florencio are going to eat their food in their offices tonight. Your father has been getting a lot of new requests and Florencio is trying to strike a deal for trading route for transporting medical herbs. I'll be back in a bit." Sandy smiled as she stood up and walked out of the room.

Closing the door behind her, the woman took a deeeeeeeppppp breath that she didn't even know
she was holding. Every smile and movement of joy Lady Byleth was doing was so much. Her lip was twitching and her eyes held this overwhelming look of joy.

"I wanna dress her up in a cute dress....." Sandy hummed as she walked back to the kitchen with the tray of empty plates.

After a few minutes, she returned with her tray and also floating behind her was a tray filled with a different variety of pastries and sweets.

"Sorry I am a bit late. Needed to get these?" She hummed.

Arisa's eyes sparkled at the sight of all the sweets. Oh, she was definitely going to tr--- and she spotted cheesecake. Hell no. One thing she absolutely refused to eat, even when she got healthy in her old life, was cheesecake.

"What's with the sudden grimace?" Sandy said as she put her tray down along with the sweets. They were placed at the center of the table.

"Sorry...it's just....I don't like cheese cake..." Arisa said a bit nervous.

Sandy face palms, just barely remembering that Lady Byleth hated cheese cake.

"It's alright Lady Byleth. I'll save this for your father. He does like eating this." She said.

Arisa nodded and took her knife and fork, and began cutting into the stake piece. She didn't notice that Sandy was staring at her hands as she used the utensils for her food.

"Since when.....?" Sandy thought as she saw the Lady properly use her utensils and take a bite of her stake.

Jeralt and Florencio definitely didn't teach her that. Neither did she.

"Was it one of the ladies in the clothing shop?" She thought to herself and turned when she heard Byleth squeal as she chewed her food.

"It's so good!!! The meat is salty but not so much that it overpowers the taste of the other herbs used!!! It's juicy and the vegetables match it perfectly!! Even the mushroom stew gives it more to it's natural earthy flavor!!! This is heaven!!" Arisa squealed as she continued to eat.

This was absolutely heaven. It had been years since she ate a proper dinner like this!!! All those years in the hospital had nearly numbed her sense of taste. Sight, touch, smell, hearing, taste, to have it all back.....it was truly a blessing. Sandy stared at her with wide eyes. She...Byleth looked just like her mother when she would eat food. Sandy smiled sadly and patted the girls head. Arisa blinked and looked over to the woman who had a kind gentle warm smile.

"I'm glad you love it." Sandy smiles to her warmly.

Arisa nodded and the two women continued to get their food. After they finished, they waited around 10 minutes before they set their sights on the sweets. If a camera exists in this world, Sandy would have been talking hundreds of pictures of Arisa's smiling face and squeals as she watched her try the different pastries. Arisa absolutely loved the tea flavored ones.
"Hmm...your fever has gone down, and seems your strength has returned. Luckily it's still summer so don't have to worry about a cold." Florencio said as he was checking her temperature.

"Wait, it's summer? I thought is was spring...." Arisa thought to herself.

Maybe she thought it was spring because she was used to damn heat in California. At least it wasn't as bad as Texas or Arizona. Gah, worse in Japan!! Especially during rainy seasons! Sandy had already come early in the morning to change her bandages.

"Am I allowed to walk around the village then?" She asked.

She was getting used to being called Byleth despite her name is Arisa. Also, finding out that it has only been 5 years since Jeralt left the Monastery didn't settle with her. She wanted to find out more. She wanted to know more than what the game let on.

"Huh? Oh, of course. You have enough of your strength back. Just don't move around so much. The wounds are still closing and we don't want them to reopen." He said as he put away the medicine he gave her.

"At least this is better than a pile of bloody pills every day." Arisa thought to herself as he handed her a cup filled with a green liquid.

She gulped it down in one go, making the man's eyes go wide.

"Ugghhh!!!!" She grimaced at the bitter taste.

Florencio chuckled a bit and handed her a cup of water, which she gladly gulped down.

"I got to go back to the medical shop for the new stock today. Also, your father had some new clothing ordered for you since....your previous one had to be cut down." He said that last part a bit silent.

She knew what he meant. The day of the assault, they had to cut open Byleth's clothing she was wearing to treat the fatal wound.

"You remember where the shop is?" Florencio asked and she nodded.

"Near....the book store right?" She said and he nodded.

"Yup. Take care Lady Byleth. I'll see you later today." He said and left.

Arisa waves goodbye and the door closed. She sighed and went to her closet. She raised and eyebrow as she saw the clothing there was. Mostly shorts and white button up shirts with long sleeves. Part of her was hoping there a black dress. Despite her being a bit of a tomboy, she still liked wearing feminine clothing. She shrugged and put the clothing on, brushed her hair and put it in a high bun.

"Having short hair is gonna take awhile to get used to....plus it's mostly straight...." she muttered as she looked at her teal colored hair through the big mirror on the wall.
Her hair was originally curly and a hassle to work with. She would just wake up, brush her damn hair like it was some damn mop, and put it in a ponytail and left for work. It wasn't till Theresa began treating her hair using natural things like honey, avocado, coconut oil and caster oil that her hair had become healthier, smoother, and straighter.

She finished her bang so it can partly hang loose on the right side of her face.

"Hmmm. Not bad." She muttered as she looked at her self and did a quick twirl.

She nodded, grabbed the green cloak, put it on, got on her boots and headed out to the village.

- Village-

She couldn't help but have small skips in her steps as she walked down the pathway of the village. Walking down the pathway, feeling the sunlight on her skin. The sun felt warm instead of it wanting to burn off your skin. She didn't cough blood or vomit when she wanted to move around. Everything still just felt so unreal. Even walking around like this felt like a dream. After a couple more minutes, she arrived to the shop.

The doorbell rang as she opened the door and suddenly heard a loud squeal. Before she knew it, she being hugged tightly by no other than Sandy.

"Good you came!!!!!!" Sandy was a squealing mess as she looked at her with a flushed face and a bit of drool on her lips.

A feeling of dread was beginning to fill her and she slowly backed away. Every muscle memory in Byleth's body was telling her to run as Sandy's smile was turning to a crazy one. She also noticed that female shop owners that wore glasses had a wide smile with a terrifying gleam on their glasses. Even the men were terrified and she heard a few of them begin praying for her.

"Umm.....I got to go....." Arisa said and began to back away.

The woman smiled and began to get closer to her. Compare to Byleth, who most likely just had a blank face, for her, she was terrified.

"NNNOOOOOOOOOOOO!!!!"

She screamed at the top of her lungs.

Bubump.

Emerald eyes snapped open from their slumber and unconscious used a time pulse, saving the girl from the hands of the women who wanted to dress her up. Sothis too screamed at the same time as Arisa when the hands of the women were trying to get her. Time stopped for a few seconds and
reversed back, enough for Arisa to choose not to go into the clothing store and make a run for it. "Oh goodness that was terrifying!!" Sothis said as she saw through the girl's eyes that she had safely escaped.

She hummed and noticed the girl was now happy. Yeah, for she will use this power of hers to help her. "Hmm...I shall watch what she does before I manifest myself before her again."

Chapter 1: Clear Clouds: Part 1: Taking Small Steps
"I'm safe..." Arisa was finally able to breath after she made a run from the clothing shop.

She did hiss a bit as the cut on her chest hurt but luckily not to the point it was bleeding again.

"To think Sandy is was like....a Fate version of Medea....." she shuddered at the thought of getting dragged to the back and being dressed up like some doll.

Yeah, she was more of the feminine tomboy but still.....

"No wonder all of Byleth's muscle memories instantly reacted. Thank you Byleth. I swear I'll run each time for your sake." She said as she looked down to her hands and patted her shoulder.

She looked around and noticed she had run to near a small food stall. Her stomach growled, remembering she hadn't eaten yet. Luckily her father had given her a small pouch of money. She's figuring out the money system in this world.

"Umm...how much for a chicken stick?" She walked up to the food stall bender and pointed to the cooking chicken sticks on the fire grill.

"2 copper coins each." The vendor said and she nodded.

She took out her pouch and pulled out 4 copper coins and handed to them.

"I'll take two please." She said.

The vendor nodded and said to wait a bit since the chicken was just recently placed on the fire to cook. She nodded and sat down on crate. Slightly swinging her legs, she looked around the village. She wondered how on earth she managed to get outside the clothing store again. She remembered she screamed at the top of her lungs and felt like things suddenly slowed down. She had closed her eyes just and when she opened them again, she was outside the store. She chose not to go in once again and instead ran before the other females wondered where she was.

"Here you go little lass." The vendor handed her a small baby with the food.

"Thank you." She smiled and waved goodbye.

She decided to walk around again, eating a chicken stick, avoiding the clothing store on purpose. She wanted to settle her thoughts. Did she perhaps unconsciously used time pulse? She shook her head. No, that should not be possible. Sothis wasn't supposed to awaken till Byleth was around 20/21 years old. But she also questioned herself. She knew the Crest stone was still in her heart. These emotions she has should have been sealed away till she went to the monastery. It was very faint, but her heart bested ever so gently. Was she a special case? Did her soul influence Byleth's body when she became one with it?

Oh good, she found a crate she could sit at.

After all, it has only been a few days since she has arrived at this world. The wound on her chest is still healing but at most, she could walk around now. She decided to walk around the village that
was now her home. She also walked around the company building that belong to her father. The place the company was in a secluded village deep in the forest that was made very difficult to get to. Walking around, she decided to think about a few things. Numbers were one thing she was trying to figure out. If Byleth is 4 years old now....that means she still had 15 years left till Garreg Mach. Meaning right now...hmmm...

Ugh. As much as she loved and hated math, there were times she would get the numbers wrong.

Byleth is 20-21 in part one of the stories. Dimitri, Edelgard and Claude are 17. So if her calculations are correct....those three are currently 2 years old. Byleth is older than them by three years. It's not much of a difference. Also, considering this, Mercedes should be around 7 years old now. And what about Lysithea...?

She was 15 when enrolled so......she's not even born yet. No wait...Byleth is 4 years old(barley turned). Born 1159...and this year is 1164. Lysithea is born next year!! If that's the case, would the story change so much if she kidnapped her to save her from what will happen? Arisa sighed and mentally slapped herself for thinking that. But she could. Maybe she should do it. Arisa honestly want to save her. She's a cute kid. The girl had grown on her more and more as she watched the support conversation videos. She giggled a bit remembering the ending the girl had with Linhardt, because honestly it was a sweet ending. Arisa then suddenly groaned and pulled her hair in frustration. There were too many things in this damn equation she wanted to fix and prevent.

ESPECIALLY BETWEEN EDELGARD AND RHEA!

"Arrghh...why is everything so complicated?!!" She screeched.

"If that's the way you think now, I can't even imagine that you have patience."

A female voice she suddenly heard around her and she turned around and looked all over her surroundings but nothing. Weird.

"Did I imagine that?" She scratched cheek in confusion.

"No, you did not. You ought to get used to it!" There it was again and it sounded.....almost demanding.

Only a figure that she could see manifested itself before her, floating and smiling. With the same emerald green eyes, she remembered, a certain green hair gremlin (GODDESS!), appeared before her in all her glory.

"Ahh!!! There, now you can see me. Well, I am very much awake thanks to that rude awakening from me saving your life!! Keep in mind we share a body!" Sothis said as she pointed at Arisa with an accusing finger.

The girl just stared, and stared, and stared, and turned to stone. She even dropped her half eat chicken stick it. Ah..Fidel sticks!
"What were you thinking?! Running towards those low lives and jump in front of your father?!? You seem to care so little about your life!! Well, it's up to me to guide you. I am Sothis, also known as, the Beginning." She clapped her hands in joy and smiled at her.

Arisa was just staring at her with her jaw dropped open.

**HOLD THE F****** UP!!! Sothis isn't supposed to awaken now!!!**

"Well, you're still silent. Aren't you going to say anything? You should be honored that I am even showing myself before you!" Sothis said with a slight angry pout and crossed her arms.

Arisa finally snapped out of it and pinched her own cheeks. She winces but that confirmed she wasn't asleep nor that this was a dream. The thing she knew, she couldn't help but shout in surprise.

"How?! The last time I saw you, you had fallen asleep!" The girl screeched.

Thank goodness no one was around, or else people would think she was crazy.

"How rude! But it was no thanks to you, I am now awake. Like I said before, it's up to me to guide you. There is more value in your life you fool." She flicked her forehead.

"Ouch!" She was surprised she could feel that.

"Don't ever throw your life away like that again. We share a body, but I care for your wellbeing." Sothis said as she floated closer to the girl.

She really was worried about her. The look reminded her a lot kid her older sister and cousin. A look of worry and concern. Arisa smiled to her sadly and nodded. Being in a hospital most of her life made her appreciate how short life can be. Sicken that time, she had chosen to live her life to the fullest. As if each day was her last.

"Alright. I'll be careful from now on." Arisa smiled to her kindly.

"For now," the girl jumped off the crate she was sitting on, and dusted her clothing down, "why don't we explore the village? Papa let me walk around." She said and Sothis nodded.

"Yes, I suppose that will do us well." She said.

The Progenitor Goddess couldn't help but let a small smile slip on her lips. Even with the internal turmoil of emotions this girl had, she was doing her best to take a few small steps to acceptance on her part. Arisa turned to her and smiled warmly.

"You want to have a view of the village, don't you?" The girl said.

A small blush rose on Sothis cheeks. She will never admit it but she really would live to explore the village. For some reason, she felt it has been a long, long, time since she has had this type of freedom. She did question why her, and the girl shared the same body.

"No worries!! Let's go Sothis!!" Arisa grinned and began running/jogging.
"One moment!!! I can only float so fast!!" Sothis said and flew after her.

Curse having short legs and the body of a child!

Arisa couldn't help but laugh as I ran a bit. The villagers were smiling, some were surprised. She guessed; she was just happy.

- Unknown Area -

On her knees, with arms spread wide, a woman sang as she worshipped the stone throne behind her. She sung and sung. The emotions of sorrow. She waited she waited.

The woman suddenly gasped as she felt a very faint pulse. She turned to a stone coffin that was around 10 feet away. A smile on her lips formed as she stood up. Walking to the coffin, she placed her hand on it.

Ahh...so much emotion filled her. But was it too early? If this one was a failure as well, she will continue to make another. She shook her head but suddenly frowned. Something felt different. No...it felt very different. But she worried not. It would soon change when the time was right.

"Mother....."

- Back to the village-

Both Sothis and Arisa shivered for some reason.

"It's not even fall...I hope I'm not catching a cold." Arisa grumbled as she finished eating her chicken stick and the 4 pastries she bought.

Her lips were covered in crumbs and she looked cute.

"Hopefully not. For now, we should not return to that clothing shop. I can tell we will be running away each time." Sothis said.

Arisa nodded and used her sleeves to wipe off the crumbs and pointed a direction opposite of the clothing shop.

"We could go to Florencio's medical shop. He sells herbs and medicines there." She said and Sothis thought for a moment.

"Hmmm...I am curious at what type of medicine you humans use at this time." Sothis said.

Honestly, Arisa wanted to know also. Was once a nurse in her old world. It was more of a side job since her main job was a Professor but still. The two girls headed that direction and, in a few
minutes,, arrived to nice looking shop that smelled like witch hazel, rosemary, lavender and a mixture of different herbs. The outside had a huge garden that was guarded with a barrier to keep thieves away. She walked through the path and reached the door, opened it. A small bell rang as she walked in. The place looked nice and clean. On one side, was a full wall with hundreds of small drawers. Each one had a different label that said what herb was in it. It reminded her of Spirited Away.

"Kuy kuy!!"

Sothis giggled as she saw something familiar. Small cute little blue balls of fluff the size of baby birds, chirped as she floated to them.

"Hello there!" She said excitedly.

"Kyyuuuuu!!" They said and floated around her.

At least the ancient spirits could still see her. Arisa giggled as she walked in deeper. There were tables with rows of potions that were sale. Empty flasks. Bottles with perfumes and scented oils. Fresh plants growing in pots and a few hung from the ceiling. A small fire near the chimney. She spotted one or three cats asleep on the bookshelves.

"Oh?" Arisa muttered as she spotted an open book and climbed up a chair to look at it.

Her eyes began sparking as she released it was medical book about herbs and their uses. She didn't notice that someone as behind her till Sothis yelled out her.

"Lady Byleth? Aren't you supposed to be at the clothing store?" She turned to see it was Florencio.

She was caught off guard because he wasn't dressed in his usual clothing but instead a light blue long coat with long sleeves. He wore a purple shirt with black pants. His hair was tied up in a ponytail and he wore glasses.

"Oh Florencio!! Well...I...um....ran away from Sandy. Things got...scary." she muttered.

The poor man groaned into his hands. He knew it!! That at some point Lady Byleth would become terrified of Sandy if she went to the clothing store!!

"It's alright. My sister loves cute things. But you could stay here for a bit if you want. I was just getting a couple of ingredients for a potion that was ordered." He smiled at her.

"Yeah, and that sister rofl your traumatized us both!!" Sothis yelled out and Arisa kept herself from snickering hearing that.

"Umm...can I watch?" She asked.

"I don't mind. Also, looks like you’re were trying to read my medical book?" He said.

She nodded.

"That isn't a medical book. It's about poisonous herbs and how to make them to something deadly."
He said.

Arisa went a bit pale as did Sothis.

"Ooooohhhhhh.....I had no idea. Umm....has anyone ever requested poison from you?" She asked.

Florencio just gave her a closed eye smile and patted her head.

"At most a sleeping potion but that's about it." He chuckled.

Arisa inwardly frowned and Sothis just straight up narrowed her eyes. The two girls could tell that Florencio hid something behind that smile of his. Only Jeralt and Sandy know what it is. Now that she thinks about it, she doesn't know anything about these two siblings. They never existed in the game. But one thing for sure she knows because of her years of reading light novels, you will meet people you never know existed. You will learn things that were not shown in the game. You will see things that aren't even in the story.

"Florencio, how did you meet my father?" She asked.

The man chuckled a bit nervously as he grabbed a chair sat next to her. She did the same.

"(Whistle) bring the mint please." He ordered the small fluffy creatures.

"Kyyuuuuuu!!" They all said and flew towards the back of the shop.

"Wait, come back flufftrats!!" Sothis said and went after them.

Arisa giggled.

"Wait....flufftrats?" She said.

Florencio raised an eyebrow at her.

"How did you know their names?" He asked.

"I heard Sandy say it once." She said.

She lied. She heard Sothis say it.

"Flufftrats are small little spirits that grow in the forest. People say they were the friends of....the spirits of the forest." He smiled.

She was sure he was he was going to say goddess.

"Kyyuuu!!" Both turned to back door as the little tiny army of fluff balls flew towards them with a tray of pastries and also two teacups, and a teapot.

"Thank you." She said to them and then did a quick nuzzle on her face.

She giggled and saw them fly back to Sothis, who was giggling mess as she followed them to near the chimney. She sat on a pillow and began talking to them. The cats in the shop woke up and walked over to where she was and plopped down on a pillow next to her. Sothis was a squealing mess.
"Well, let's see......How I met your father huh?" Florencio sighed as he poured tea for them.

It smelled good.

"Sandy and I aren't originally from here in Garreg Mach. Sandy is my adopted sister. I originally was a thief in the Empire and Sandy was an assassin from Almyra." He chuckled at the memory.

He didn't see the look of horror Arisa had and the shocked face Sothis had.

"Ah, brings back both good and bad memories. Sandy and I met when we were about 10 years old. She escaped Almyra because the royal family accused her father of treason. She was originally a noble. I'll let Sandy tell you about her life. As for me, wasn't raised in a good environment and pretty much stole money every day to survive. Eventually, I joined a group of thieves. Picked up medicine from the books we would steal from nobles. Truth to be told, I eventually earned the name Doctor Death among the Black Market!! Hahahaha!! Sandy was called the Bloody Rose!!" He laughed proudly at that.

Arisa was just looking at him in shock and Sothis was shaking.

"Eventually, I was given a mission to poison.....someone from a higher position." He said that last part a bit slowly.

"The plan backfired. Sandy and I ended up fighting your father on that fateful day. True to his name, The Blade Breaker. He destroyed Sandy's beloved sword with his bare hand. The poor woman was horrified and froze. The sword.....was the last thing she had of her mother..." he smiled sadly.

Arisa was silent and Sothis continued to listen as the man spoke again.

"We end up gravely injured, my sister on the verge of death because she went into shock over her sword. That gave an opening for her to be struck. The higher up that we were supposed to assassinate.....made a deal with us." He said that last part a bit bitterly.

Arisa somehow knew he was talking about Rhea. The woman may have the smile of a saint, but it never did reach her eyes.

"In exchange we tell her who sent us to assassinate them and pledge loyalty to them, they would save me and my sister. And as a bonus, Jeralt offered to have Sandy's sword repaired. Honestly, it felt as if we were making a deal with the devil." He chuckled dryly.

He took a sip of his tea and sighed.

"Do you regret your decision?" Arisa asked.

Florencio stared at her for a moment but smiled sadly.

"I don't. Because if I never accepted that deal, I wouldn't be where I am now. Talking to you, being Jeralt's advisor, Sandy smiling. I would be missing out on all this." He patted her head.

"A little fun fact. I used to have a wife. Also, a son." He said.

Arisa could hear the sadness in his voice despite him trying to hide it.

"If it be alright...can I ask what happened? Where are they?" She said.
Florencio looked towards the fire and spoke softly.

"My wife passed away after she gave birth to our son. A few days later..my son passed away because his body was too weak..." he whispered.

Sothis gasped as she covered her mouth and Arisa looked at the man sadly. This most likely explained why Florencio would treat the children of the village kindly. Why he loves flowers and does what he does.

He would dress in a similar fashion as his wife. He does things he loved to do with her. Her eyes looked at him sadly as he gave her a sad but a warm smile.

"If my son was alive, he would be around 30 years old right now. I would be a proud grandpa!!" He laughed proudly at that.

"So you're already calling yourself an old man?" Arisa smirked.

The man froze and whimpered hearing that. Sothis was snickering as she floated towards them and wrapped her arms around Arisa's neck, resting her chin on top of her head.

"Honestly, it's interesting hearing these stories you humans have. I think we'll be having a lot of fun till you reach adulthood." Sothis giggled.

Florencio coughed and chuckled a bit worried.

"I wouldn't exactly say I'm old....." he said.

"But....I haven't aged in 100 years. Neither have.........sigh.....damn this blood I drank..." he mentally thought as he saw the girl took a sip of tea.

Arisa hummed at the mint tea taste and he couldn't help but smile.

"But then again....I would never have been able to live this life I have now. Definitely better than......serving Rhea...." he closed his eyes as he drank.

"Oh, Florencio." He opened his eyes as Arisa spoke to him.

"It is alright, can you teach me about medicine here? I want to be a doctor when I'm older, but I will still also remain mercenary." She said.

Florencio nearly spit his tea out in shock. The part of being a mercenary was expected since she was Jeralt's daughter, but a doctor like him?

"I can't properly read yet, but O was able to understand a certain about when I read a couple pages from the book." She said and he decided to listen.

"The first paragraph I was reading was about how you can if a mushroom is edible or not. Unfortunately, the only right you tell is by tasting. But a small amount of course. If the taste is like a burning sensation it is poisonous. But another was to tell if it is poisonous." She said and made a ring like shape with her hands.

"Mushrooms with white gills are often poisonous. So are those with a ring around the stem and
those with a volva. Because the volva is often underground, it's important to dig around the base of a mushroom to look for it. Mushrooms with a red color on the cap or stem are also either poisonous or strongly hallucinogenic." She said.

Florencio couldn't help but smirk hearing this. For him, this was common knowledge. Though unfortunately the only way he learned what was poisonous and such was through taste but to be able to tell just by looking at it and looking for certain features, he must say, he is impressed. Indeed, there had to be another way other than taste.

"I'm impressed. Even if you couldn't properly read it, you were still able to understand enough." He crossed his legs smiled.

"I'll talk to your father about it. Besides, you seem to be the type to enjoy exploring new things." He said.

"Well....I honestly want to become a professor one day, but I still want to learn things like to be a doctor and mercenary if things don't work out. Hehe..." Arisa chuckled a bit nervously.

"Wait a professor?!!" Florencio screeched.

Sothis and Arisa hissed at the pitch of his voice.

"Yeah. I want to teach astronomy and math!!!!" She said confidently with a glint in her eye.

Oh no no no.....

A professor...a professor of all things?!?! Then that would mean she could end up....

"Wait, what's astronomy?" He said.

"The study of the stars and cosmos!!" She huffed.

"Uhh...okay. I'll talk to your father about it. For now, why don’t I teach you how to read and write to prepare you. Don't think you are escaping your studies young lady!" He said.

"Of course not!!! I'm a proud daughter of a mercenary!!! Studying doesn't scare me!" She said back.

Florencio chuckled and patted her head.

"We'll see about that. Also," he tipped his head a bit, "I'll go with you to the clothing store. Sandy and the others won't dress you up if I'm there with you." He said.

"Thank you!!" Arisa said in pure joy.

After the talk, they indeed went to the clothing store together. The girl was spared from the nightmare of clothing the woman had chosen. Sandy begged her brother to let them have Arisa try one on, but the man stood strong and defended the girl.

"Sigh...instead of those horrendous dresses with frills, why not something simple like this?"
Florencio sighed as he walked up to one of the dress shelves and picked a nice long sleeve black dress that stopped just above her ankles. He also picked a simple short fluffy white coat and some black boots.

"Go try them on." He said as he handed it to her, and she thanked him.

She made a dash to the dressing room.

"Wwwhyyyyyyyyyyyyy??!!?!" Sandy screeched to him.

"Because you have a horrible sense of fashion!! Even children these days know that frills are a horror to work with!" Florencio said.

Sandy sighed but couldn't help but giggle.

"This brings back memories." She smiled sadly as she crossed her arms and leaned on the wall a bit.

Florencio sighed and knew what was coming.

"Back in the day, Dolca would get whatever chance to dress you up. At first you didn't like it but as time went by, you grow into it. You know," she looked at him up and down, "I'm surprised you're not wearing your dress today. You were earlier." She said.

Dolca was his deceased wife.

"I was working in the medical shop. You know I don't like wearing my dresses when I am working!" He said back.

She shrugged but looked towards the back are where Arisa was changing in the room.

"Hey....do you think she'll....age like a normal human?" She suddenly asked.

Florencio frowned.

"Unfortunately, there is a good chance she will outlive her beloved if she ever gets married. We aren't......normal anymore exactly...not since....." he whispered and Sandy also frowned.

"Yeah......I do wonder sometimes how things turned out in Almyra. It's been 61 years..." she whispered that last sentence and Florencio sighed.

They heard footsteps approaching and Sandy instantly cooed.

"What do you think?" Arisa smiled as she twirled.

"The dress matches you well with your green hair and eyes. Also, the reason I chose the small fur coat is because it gets cold at night. The dress can be worn without the coat and still look nice." Florencio said.

Arisa nodded went back to have the clothing taken off and have it packed. After all, she was just here to pick up the clothing that has already been ordered for her. When that was done, the three left the shop and began to head back to the company. That was until Sandy and Florencio noticed the man dressed in a gray pristine clean uniform was in front of the company. Arisa raised an eyebrow and Sandy quickly stood in front of her as Florencio walked up to the man.
"Good morning, Mr. Messenger! Lovely day is it not?" The purple haired man said to the uniformed one.

The messenger turned towards him and nodded.

"It is! Just came back from the Kingdom!! Just came to deliver the letters like usual. I'll be truthful you with you Florencio.." the messenger said as he handed him a medium size pile of letters tied together, "Reques for mercenaries are increasing. I get it's good for the business but I'm honestly worried for the safety of the citizens. The beast has gotten...bolder." he said.

Florencio sighed and nodded.

"Thank you. You know well, Jeralt's company prioritizes the safety of the people." Florencio said.

"I know. Oh?" He looked behind Florencio and noticed Sandy, but also noticed a child, Arisa.

"Is that Jeralt's daughter? I thought the child d------!!" The man suddenly flinched at the smile Florencio's closed eye smile.

"I would appreciate if you didn't say another word about that. Do not say one word that you saw this child. She does not exist-----!!" Florencio turned around quickly as he heard familiar footsteps approaching.

"No no!!" He and his sister thought as Byleth was now next to him.

"Hello Mr. Messenger!! I'm Arisa!!! So, you know Uncle Jeralt?" Arisa smiled sweetly.

"Uncle?" Mr. Messenger said confused.

"Yup!!! I'm Uncle Jeralt's niece!!! Sandy is my mama!!" She said.

Sandy suddenly began coughing hearing that. Mr. Messenger grinned and pointed at Sandy.

"I knew it!!!! I win the bet!!! So, you did marry Seteth!!!!! I knew it!!" He said.

Florencio looked pale as paper and Sandy was just a coughing mess as her face was turning red.

"I DID NOT!!!! I MARRIED SOMEONE ELSE!!!!!!" She yelled at the messenger who was a laughing mess.

"Keep denying it all you want!!! I knew it!!!! I win 2 silver coins!! Yahoo!!! Goodbye everyone!! I gotta go tell the others!! Ahahah!! I knew it!!" Mr. Messenger laughed and left running, to save his skin from Sandy's wrath.

"COME BACK HERE Maggot!!! I'LL SKIN YOU ALIVE IF YOU SAY ANYTHING LIKE THAT!!" The woman yelled as she ran after him with her sword out.

Many that witnessed the scenario laughed and Florencio just sent a dry look to Arisa.

"Was that really necessary........?" The man asked dryly.

Arisa giggled.

"If it saves you trouble, then sure. But the way, who is Seteth?" She asked.
She already knew and decided to play dumb.

"Sandy's ex-lover. That's all you need to know." He said picked her up and sat her on his shoulder.

"Let's go.....I need a drink after this whole ordeal...." the man groaned.

"Also, Arisa? I never heard of such a name." He said as he walked.

"It's my nickname I decided to give myself." She said.

Truthfully, Arisa wanted to at least have something from her past life. At most, her former name as her nickname was enough. The girl looked over to his left shoulder since she was on the right, and there Sothis was, sitting and laughing mess from watching everything.

"Hahahahaah!!!! I can't breathe!!! That was amazing!!" Sothis laughed.

"Why does my left shoulder feel heavy...?" Florencio thought and just shook his head. He swears Sandy is never live this down.

"By the way, what's a boyfriend?" Sothis said and Arisa snickered.

"Another form of saying (lover)" Arisa mentally snickered.

A few more minutes, Florencio put the girl down and sighed.

"I'm going to be in my office unpacking these letters and having them set up soon. And I think you better run to your room and lock it. Sandy is coming to hunt you down." He said.

Arisa turned pale and bolted like a fire storm was after her. Florencio couldn't help but chuckled as he walked into his office, closing the door shut. Walking to his desk, he flopped down on his chair and took out the pile of letters. He sighed.

"Why did Seteth have to be mentioned......?" He groaned into his hands as he rested his elbows on the table.

Imperial year 1159....the year Lady Byleth was born.

Florence lightly growled. He cannot forgive that....woman...for whatever she did to Jeralt's daughter. It explained why Jeralt went so far as to set part of the monetary on fire. His loyalty was towards Jeralt regards if that woman saved his and his sisters life. He knew the smile she wore never reached her eyes. That smile she wore, was nothing but sick and fake. Like she looked down on humans and saw them below her.

"Three months.....three months....was enough for me to see when you let your guard down.." he whispered.

He sighs again and just decided to stop thinking about those days of the past. He noticed a strange blue colored letter with a wax seal on it.
"Oh no....oh no..no no......." panic began to rise up in his chest as he took his knife and broke the wax seal open.

His eyes went wide, and he screamed so loud someone thought the company was on fire.

"JERALT!!!!!! YOU HAVE TO SEE THIS!!" He bolted out of his office to find the older man.

Florencio wanted nothing more than to pass out but also burn the letter but unfortunately, that would mean the owner who sent the letter would view them as enemies. As he bolted down the hallway, Sandy was heading towards office raised an eyebrow as her brother bolted right past her.

"What on earth is going on?" She muttered and headed straight to his office to find the reason.

Once she arrived, straight to his desk she went and spotted the blue envelope. She recognized the texture and a bead of sweat rolled down her face. She knew damn well what type of paper was used for the letter she pulled out of the envelope. Reading it, she couldn't help but let an almost feral smile appear on her lips. Her old habit whenever nobility was involved. She took a deep breath and continued to read it.

"So that's what's going on. So, we're guarding the King and his family." The woman said and sighed.

Luck always seems to have a way of finding their way to them.

"Sandy, where's Jeralt!!!!??" Florencio yelled and she just groans.

"He's out in entrance of the village!! Remember, today the steel supplies came in!!" She said.

Sandy sighed and rubbed her forehead, thinking where on earth did, she go wrong in raising her brother. But she smiled. She rather sees him being himself, dressing up in cute clothing than be left out and isolated when they were part of the...the church. Florencio was a believer of the Teachings of Serios but he also respected other faiths. She continued to practice her own faith, despite how she was once part of that damn church. Her loyalty was to Jeralt, not that woman. And certainly, she would not tolerate any discrimination against her people or others. Especially.....even if she had to part ways with........she shook her head. Why did the messenger have to mention Seteth?

"Hey, Florence!!" That was his nickname, "Make sure to also give the document that has the list of medical herbs needed!" She yelled out.

- Later at Night: Discussion-

"So, are you planning to accept the letter?" Sandy said as they were in the meeting room.

There were around 12 people in the room, half men and half women. Jeralt sighed as he was reading the letter that was given to him by Florencio.

"Well, the amount we are being paid is good. Guess it wouldn't hurt to see how others are doing." He said.

"I'm more worried that someone from the Knights of Serios will also be there." Florencio said.
"Hey, if they try anything on the boss, we'll gladly fight back!" One woman said.

"Our loyalty is to him and Lady Byleth!! No way are we gonna ditch the boss and his kid just because we are mercenaries!" A man said.

"It's also one of the main reasons why a bunch of us chose to leave!" Another said.

"Alright, calm down everyone." Jeralt yelled out and the room went silent.

"We will be taking this job. I trust our team prepared for the harsh journey. That place is like a snowstorm." He said.

"I and my team will be the medics for the group. Three of the men will be in the offensive team and the other three will be in the defensive." Florencio said.

The six men nodded.

"My team will be ready to strike the shadows should there be any Assassins. The other three will have the magic barriers set. Jeralt, you can count on us." Sandy said.

The entire team got in formation quickly vowed and did their salutes.

"I know I can. We have three days to get everything ready. Start getting supplies, get your things packed. Make sure also wear warm clothing that are easy to move in." He said.

"Quick question." Someone said and Jeralt raised an eyebrow.

"Will...um...you be taking Lady Byleth with us or is she staying behind?" They asked.

"I'LL BE GOING THAT'S WHAT!!"

Jeralt didn't even get a chance to speak when they heard small footsteps go inside the meeting room and ran towards him. He looked down and saw his daughter looking at him with a certain glint in her eyes that he recognized far too well.

"I'm not getting left behind papa!!!!!!" She pointed at him.

"Pfft...!!" One of the women went to a bit if giggling fit and few others chuckled at this.

"You are not coming." Jeralt said with a straight face.

As much as Arisa wished she had the courage to purposely throw a tantrum like an actual four-year-old, her adult heart just couldn't do it.

"You will be staying Elder Bara. And that is final." Jeralt said as he crossed his arms.

Arisa pouted and crossed her arms, mocking him. Everyone else was trying not to burst out laughing, seeing this.

"Then at least bring me souvenir. Like a puppy!!" She said.

A couple lost it and were laughing, holding their stomachs. Even Sandy and Florencio were having
a hard time trying to keep their composers.

- Much Later at night -

"Arrghhhhh!!! I can't believe it!!! It's only been like what, a few days since I arrived and already, I'm getting treated like a child. Well...technically, physically I am a child but...sigh...of forget it!" Arisa threw her pillow at her bed as she was sitting next to a miniature pile of stuffed animals that she learned was gifted to Byleth from Sandy.

"Are you really going to stay, are you?" Sothis said from her bed.

The goddess was laying down on her stomach, with her elbows propped and resting her chin in her palms.

"I can't do much. Dad said I was going to stay with the village elder. I guess it makes sense. Since we did hear that entire meeting. The adults assumed I only heard that they were going out on a job." She said.

Sothis smirked.

"Technically, your soul is much older than what your physically look like. So, why not, rebel a bit?" Sothis said with a too chipper smile.

"Actually, you have a point." Arisa said.

The smile on Sothis was gone and replaced with one of shock.

"I remember during my pre-teen years, around then I was 13 to 16 years old, I was pretty much more open. I tried so many different things. I’m still a bibliophile of course but I would try in many things other than books. Archery, martial arts, video games (Sothis: video???), rock climbing, and a lot more. One thing I was really good at was sneaking around. When I was around 14, I began practicing walking quietly so I wouldn't make so much noise. That resulted in me learning how to walk without making a single sound. This caused me to unintentionally scare people when I would walk behind them or they would not notice that was behind them at all. My friends would get scared of me. Especially my friend Theresa, who would get scared easily." Arisa said and smiled as old memories resurface.

Theresa was someone met during her time in the hospital. Now, the girl was actually the opposite of Arisa. A healthy body, cheerfully attitude but also....a very dark sense of humor. Theresa loved horror, horror!!! Arisa hated horror movies!!! If we put it in different terms, Arisa was Ladybug and Theresa was Car Noir. She guesses????

She shook her head and smiled again, placing her index finger on her cheek and smiled.

"I know what to do!!" She grinned and Sothis flew to her quickly.

"Please don't tell you're going to sneak into barrel and pretend that there is fruit in it like some kid
from a book about djiins and dungeons?" Sothis said.

"So, you saw my memories about Magi?" Arisa smiled.

Sothis huffed.

"So, what if I did?! Though I must admit that man Sinbad is......siiiiigghhhhh...." Sothis gave a dreamy sigh.

Arisa just snickers.

"We got three-days Sothis!! 3 days to plan our sneak in!" Arisa said excitedly, ran to desk and took out a blank journal she bought.

Grabbing her charcoal pencil, the two girls grinned at each other and nodded. 3 days to plan and execute their plan. If Theresa was with them, she would most likely give them a huge thumbs up.

What neither one knew that this adventure would cause the first major changes in the future that is yet to come.

Chapter 2: Clear Clouds: Sound and Unsure: End

-----

So, it begins!!! Now, let us start on the two major Fire Emblem Oc's I created.

Florencio: True Name: Florencio von Varley Flor

Florencio was originally from House Varley in the Empire. But due to him being the illegitimate son of a former Lord of Varley, also lacking a Crest, he was abandoned by his father. His mother was a maid that serviced the house and was kicked out along with her son. Before that, she stole a good amount of gold and silver jewelry. She raised her son till he was 5 years old. She died from a black plague that spread over Fodlan. Medicine during his childhood years was nearly impossible to buy because of being a commoner. Only nobles could get it. He absolutely grew to hate the Crest System that was placed by the church. Growing up, he became a part of a group of bandits and eventually picked up medicine thanks to the books that were stolen from noble doctors. During his teen to adult years, became known as Doctor Death throughout the underworld/black market. Despite being the
most feared doctor in Fodlan, he wore a mask to never let anyone see his face. He was well respected among the poor because he would heal them for free and only ask for a cooked dinner in return or simply materials like wool and thread as his payment.

Sandy: True Name: Sandana Flora Van Illac

Sandy was the daughter of a highly respected military family that served the Almyra Royal Family. Both her parents were respected generals along with her older siblings. The people of Almyra treats their civilians equally regardless of status, the opposite of the ways of Fodlan. Though Sandy was from a military family, she absolutely hated fighting and preferred dressing up in cute clothing and dressing up dolls. She did have a violent side though. Her family had no Crest but were respected because they were able to wield a Hero's Relic with no Crest. This weapon was a sword that was handed down from generations. When she was 8 years old, her family was accused of treason. This led to the massacre of her family. Her mother gave her sword before she was killed. Sandy was the only survivor. After waiting days to make sure no one was at her former home, she snuck in and packed as much as many belongings as she could. There, she grew to despise the royal family and swore she would never forgive them. She escaped to Fodlan through an underground tunnel near the border.

These two I will eventually draw, though Florencio going to be hard because I suck at drawing men.

Also, a bibliophile is another term for bookworm. It means an individual who loves and frequently reads books.
"So, what exactly do we know about this.....Holy Kingdom of Faerghus? Any information from those books of yours?" Sothis said as she laid on the bed.

It was now early in the morning. The two had decided to go to sleep that night instead so they could have a better and refreshed mind for planning. Arisa smiled and fixed her imaginary glasses and pointed to the book she had opened. The page she went to was in the middle of the book, where it showed the map of Faerghus. "Mountain terrain, slopes, snow, rugged land that is barren very difficult to survive in. In a way, it's almost like Alaska (Sothis: Al-iaaaka??). The people had to learn to adapt and survive in the harsh cold environment." She said.

Sothis hummed and then placed her finger on a star that was on the map.

"What does this star mean?" She asked.

"That is where the city capital and the place is, Fhiriad. Incredible isn't it? And if you look closely, that opening is where the river connects to the sea. It makes it an amazing area for importing goods from the sea. Similar to the Aquatic Capital of the Leicester Alliance." Arisa explains as she Sothis eyes travel over the map.

The goddess smiled at this.

"Blaiddyd, Fraldarius, Gautier, and the names continue, are these ways also to mark certain territories of The Kingdom?" She asked.

"In a way, yes. But the names are used to show what land belongs to what house. They are the ones that bare Crest." Arisa said.

"Crest.....crest... it sounds familiar. Yet I cannot remember where such words I have heard. Hm... there is still much to learn should I ever recover my memories." Sothis said as she sat up and crossed her arms.

Arisa nodded and pointed to Fhiriad.

"This is where we are most likely heading to. There is a possibility that we may go to another house territories but since this letter was requested by the king himself. We'll also probably go through a town. They'll be making multiple stops on the way to restock on supplies." She said as walked over to the window and grabbed the stool.

She used it to climb up, open her window and looked out. Sothis followed and looked.

"The six men and women we saw are part of the mercenary team that takes care of the jobs in Fodlan. Dad's ace team. Also, specifically, the men are Florencio's team and the women are part of Sandy's. Those two especially. Are the generals of this company and my father, the leader." She said seriously.

Sothis nodded.

"Morning Byleth!!"
One of the women yelled out as she was carrying a few boxes towards one of the wagons.

"Morning Ili!!" Arisa yelled out.

"One of the ladies in Sandy's team?" Sothis said.

"Yup." Arisa said as she looked back to the wagons.

"Let us map out all three wagons. What is in each of them, which one is the most secure for us to sneak in." She smirked as she got down and headed out, but not before grabbing a loaf of bread with honey on it.

It was actually Sandy's, so she took advantage and grabbed it while the woman had her back turned as she was cooking more food. The best part is that Arisa used her "silent run" technique so she wouldn't make any noise.

"WHO TOOK MY HONEY BREAD?!!?"

"Teheh!!" Arisa and Sothis giggled mischievously as they ran out the door and towards the wagons.

"Hyaaa!!" They heard a bit of yelling and grunting and spotted a couple of the men training.

"Focus!!" Florencio yelled as he watched two of his men sparing.

One was using a wooden sword and the other was fighting using his bare fists.

"Morning Florencio." Arisa said as she walked up to him.

"Morning Lady Byleth." He smiled to her and turned back to the men.

He was wearing his usual dress again. Hmmm....

"Can I try?" She smiled as she pointed to a wooden sword.

"Well....you are at age to learn the sword; I don't see why not?" Florencio said and went to the crate to grab a small wooden sword.

He rummaged through it and found it.

"Catch." He said and he threw it to her.

She easily caught it with one hand, which honestly surprised many. To her, she repeatedly grasped the pommel of the sword to get a feel of it. It was a bit too thick for her taste, since she was used to fencing. Meaning one hand. So, a little bit of a story. At age 15, Arisa found a fencing club in her high school along with a kendo club. To add a bit more to this, also a kickboxing club. She joined all three. Lucky for her, the clubs were each an hour apart, allowing her to rest before she went to the next one. Now, another to this. She loved dancing. It was her very few passions along with art and music. So, she had the GRAND idea of combining her dancing with the use of the sword.
Pretty much sword dancing but at a much deadlier level because she loved to scare the hell out of people. It was no surprise that Theresa and her older sister encouraged it after watching a few dancer characters from the Fire Emblem series. Hell, they dressed her up as Azura for Halloween.

Now back to our present time.

"Do you have a thinner lighter version of this?" She asked.

May began to whisper among another and even Florencio was confused.

"Thinner?" He asked.

"Yes. I'm asking for a wooden version of a rapier." She said.

"Ooohhh!!! Okay, that makes better sense. But why a rapier? This type of sword is common among those of Fodlan so hearing you want a rapier is surprising." He admitted.

Arisa hummed and spoke.

"I want something that is easy to move around with but also light enough that I can draw it when I am in danger." Was all she said.

Florencio thought for a moment. Rapiers were designed to be long, slender, but a little bit of weight. They were created for thrusting but there where records of it being used for slashing. Also, the use of a rapier was common among.... nobles. Especially those of the Asdrestian Empire. So, for Lady Byleth to ask for such sword......was a surprise. It isn't a well-known sword among those of mercenaries and certainly not among the common folk. He had a guess she must have seen the sword in a book since she can only read a certain amount till she has properly learned the alphabet. But he didn't know the sword style of a rapier nor did his sister or anyone in the company.

"I'm sorry Lady Byleth, but I don't think it's possible." He said.

"Wait, why?" She said as she looked over to him.

"Well, first of all, none of us know how to use a rapier. The sword style is very different to what us mercenaries learn, and it is not a well-known sword known among common folk." He explained.

He saw her narrow her eyes at him. There was this glint in them that made him feel like was talking to an adult than a child.

Ever since the ambush from a week ago, everyone has noticed the drastic change she went through. She expressed her emotions normally, which was still a bit much to take in, her form of speech is clearly formal like that of an adult. Her form of thinking is different. And her eyes, especially her eyes. There was a look that reminded him of a grown woman. Definitely not..."that woman"...but more towards her mother, Rosa. They even noticed that she had a love for plants and especially flowers like her mother.

"I see then." She said and looked back to the sword.
There it was again, that look in her eyes.

"Would it be possible for there to be a book about rapiers?" She asked.

And then there was that side of Rosa that was clear Byleth had inherited. The girl was a damn bibliophile like her mother!! The love of books so great to the point that Rosa has actually gotten in trouble for not paying attention because she was so caught up in her book and it was the same case with Byleth.

"It could be possible. Maybe in the new book supplies we get next month." One of them said as he grabbed an apple to eat.

There was an apple tree where they were training at. Arisa stared at her sword and gave it back to Florencio.

"What about metallic fans that Sandy uses?" She said.

"No no no no no!!" He instantly said.

"Why not?" She asked.

"First of all, that is a very traditional and highly difficult dance training that takes almost your entire life to perfect. And that's just the dancing part. The war fans are a completely different story." He said.

"War fans huh?" She smirked to him.

A lot of the men were slowly feeling a shiver down their spine.

"Then what about a chain scythe? Or the claws brawlers use? What about the knife’s assassins use? Or a staff since I have yet to learn magic? Or a bow? An axe? A lance? Medicine? Healing? The list can go on. I want to learn." She said.

"I want to learn!!"

That sentence. That damn sentence. It was the exact one Rosa would use. Florencio took a deep breath and pointed to the small bookstore around three buildings away.

"Learn your alphabet first then we can talk about training." He said with a smile.

Truthfully, he was a bit angry for some reason. Everyone else seem to flinch at his smile because they all recognize it. Byleth was a different story. She too gave him a smile.

"Okay then!!! Challenge accepted!! I'll have the full alphabet memorized by tomorrow and read you one full page of one of your books. Then you can teach me to use magic and knives." She grinned.

Funny how her canine teeth made her look almost as she had fangs. Florencio shivered. That smile...that damn smile.....it was the same smile Rosa had when she was going to pull a prank that spelled his doom. It was the smile of a fox he called it. The girl took the wooden sword from him and threw it at the tree trunk like it was some dagger. The look of horror that befell everyone when they saw it stuck on.
"Oh nice. Like a dart it stuck!" Arisa said a bit too cheerfully.

None could see that Sothis was cackling evilly as she did her usual of wrapping her arms around the girl’s neck and resting her chin on her head. Arisa turned to Florencio.

"Like I said. Challenge accepted!!!!" She grinned and walked away humming a tune.

She was humming Isabella's lullaby from The Promised Neverland. An uncomfortable silence filled the area till it was cracked by the voice of Sandy's cheerful voice.

"Alright, sorry to be late!!! Whoever stole my honey bread is going to pay. Anyhow, here is the brea----why is everyone so silent?" Sandy said she was carrying a tray of fruits, bread and also bowls of oatmeal.

The woman looked to each one as they just looked way till she turned to her brother.

"What's going on?" She said and he pointed to the wooden sword stuck to the tree trunk.

Sandy placed the tray down on the table and walked it. A small smile formed her lips.

"Well well well...." everyone shivered at the excitement building in her voice, "Who was the one that did this? I am impressed by the accuracy where the wooden sword it. Right at the vein of the tree that temporary puts it to a death state, but when removed, the tree is back to life." She smiled as she removed the sword.

A bit of sap was coming out of the tree. She smiled as she turned to everyone.

"So, who did it? I think I just found my possible successor to my Dance of Death." She said.

"It was Lady Byleth." And instantly everyone turned to look at the one who said it.

The poor man shrunk away at the glare his captain gave him. Sandy looked at him shocked.

"Wait, are you serious? The only way someone can actually land a blow like this is if they concentrate a small amount of magic into the sword. But...it could be possible she did it unconsciously. Hmm....." she thought for a minute and everyone quickly jumped back when they noticed what seemed like a crack appeared on the whole of the tree.

Sandy stared at it and smiled.

"Okay, okay. I see how it is."

- Book Store -

"Books about how to use rapiers?" The bookstore owner said and placed his hand under his chin.

"We have one book in the back I believe. As for the one that teaches our language and basic magic spells for beginners. Let me get them for you. Uh, you are buying them, right?" He asked.
Byleth nodded.

"Alright, let me get them. I'll be out in a few minutes." The owner said and went to the back of the store.

Arisa went to sit at one of pillow chairs and noticed the poodle that the owner has. It's name was Spark, from what she remembered from Byleth's memories. The poodle spotted her and wagged its tail as she sat next to it.

"Woof!" It barked when Sothis sat across from her.

"Hmm...funny how only animals can see me and you also." Sothis smiled as she petted the dog.

"I find it strange that you can even touch it." Arisa said.

"At most, only you can physically touch me and the animals but that's it. To everyone else, I do not exist, nor can they see or feel me. It's a bit lonely but I'll take advantage. I can give them a good scare as a ghost!" She said that last part with glee.

"Totally agree with you on that." Arisa said.

"You know," Sothis hummed as the poodle fell back to sleep, "You unconsciously used a bit of magic when you threw that sword." Sothis said and looked at her seriously.

Arisa became a bit nervous and looked at her own hands.

"I feel like some bug." She said.

"A bug?" Sothis asked confused.

"Well, how do I put it? I feel like...enigma." she said.

Sothis hummed but shook her head.

"Arisa, we can only do so much. Though your soul and heart are wiser than your looks, one must still be careful. Do not push yourself too hard. That is all." Sothis said.

"FOUND THEM!!"

The two girls giggled from the cheerful yell of the bookstore owner in back. Looks like the rumors that it is a tornado in there are true. Seeing the man come out with three books, she got up and walked to the front desk, where he used string to tie them together like a present.

"Okay, so that will be 30 copper coins." He said and she took out her small pouch that was given to her by her father.

She was still figuring out the money system. Pulling out the 30 copper coins, she handed them to the man did a quick peek behind him.

"Say, why don't you have an assistant help you organize the back?" She asked.

"Usually my son helps me, but he and his group are getting ready to head out to the Kingdom in
two days. Bright and early before sunrise." He said.

What the man didn't know was that he should have not said that piece of information because that was one of the key missing pieces Arisa needed for her plan. The time that they will depart.

"Oh, that's nice." She said cheerfully.

"So, what are you planning?" Sothis said as she floated behind the man to get a good look at the back room.

The goddess screeched when she saw the horrid of a mess in the back. Books, papers, even scrolls littered everywhere or even hanging off bookshelves.

"THIS IS A CRIME IN ITSELF!!! HOW DARE THESE PRECIOUS WRITTEN FORMS OF KNOWLEDGE AND SOULS BE LEFT LIKE THIS?!" The girl screeched.

It took a lot of effort for Arisa not to hiss at how loud her voice was. The poor poodle yelped and ran to escape her screech.

"If it be alright, can I help organize the back? Papa and the others aren't letting me train yet till next month since I am still recovering. But they said I can help out around the village if I want too!" She hummed.

The bookstore owner raised an eyebrow but shrugged his shoulders.

"Eh, sure why not? Also, books and scrolls marked with a green leaf are ones I plan to throw away. You can keep them if you want. My way of paying you." He said.

"Thank you!!!" She said and allowed her to enter the back as he went to the window fix a couple of books that fell off the stands.

"QUE CHINGADOS ES ESTO??!!? ESTO ES UN CRIME!!!" The young girl screamed and cursed in her original native tongue.

The bookstore owner just raised an eyebrow because he swore that was a foreign language. He just shrugged. It was expected of the child of a mercenary. To know multiple languages is a sign that the child is bound to do great things. What the man did not know is that it was also a weapon in many ways. And to Arisa's advantage, she was glad no one, not even Sothis, could understand the amount of profanities she was yelling as she was having a hard time trying to organize everything to the rightful place.

- 4 hours later: lunch time-

"That's the last one......" the girl sighed as she finished separating the old and new books.

There was at least one small size crate filled with about 13 book and 5 scrolls she was going to keep because they had the green leaf marking. She had organized the back like a proper librarian.

"Byleth are you------ what on earth?!" That was the voice of Sandy as she walked into the back. The bookstore owner followed behind her and both of their jaws dropped as they saw how clean and organized the place now was.
"I swear I thought I walked into the wrong room." The book owner said.

Both looked down as they saw Arisa walk up to them with a proud grin on her face and crossed her arms proudly, despite being partly covered in dust. Sothis got bored at some point and had chosen to disappear to fall asleep.

"All done!!" The girl stated proudly.

Everything was spotless and she even pointed to another crate.

"I found a couple kitchen tools here and some wax seal kits. I placed them there. As for the books and scrolls with the green leaf marks, I put them in that crate that I will be taking home." She grinned.

"Uhh....okay...." Sandy said a bit confused and turned to the bookstore owner, who looked more than amazed by how clean and spotless the place looked.

"So, Florencio told me he saw you head to the bookstore and never left out. He wanted me to check on you but guess there was nothing to worry about." Sandy chuckled and saw the girl with arms crossed, still in proud mode.

"I told him I accepted his challenge and I'll keep it!!" She said.

"Challenge?" Both the adults said.

"Yup. If I can learn the Fodlan alphabet by tomorrow and read a full page from one of his medical books, he'll teach me how to use to use magic and a sword!" She said.

Sandy groaned into her hands. Well, at least that was one motivation to help the girl learn.

"Well, let's go. I'll carry the box for you. And, Isa, thanks for watching over her while we trained." Sandy said.

The bookstore owner now known as Isa snapped of it and nodded.

"No thank you!! I'm just amazed by how much this place is clean!" He said enthusiastically and quickly ran to one shelf and took out a small medium size box.

He handed to her and she was confused.

"A thank you gift. Also, it's just been in the back-collecting dust. Even I don't know what it is." He chuckled and Arisa just giggled a bit lowly.

She said thank you and the two females headed out to head back to the company.

"I'm surprised by how many books and scrolls you got. Too bad we don't have a book restoration team." Sandy said as they arrived and went to Byleth's room.

Arisa opened the door and the two went in. Sandy had placed the crate on the table as Arisa did the same with the other box.

"Well, I'm going to make lunch. After this, I want to speak with you. I saw the sword stuck to the tree." Sandy said.
Arisa giggled a bit nervously. Sandy patted her head with a warm smile.

"It's alright. I'll teach you to properly control that strength of yours. Also, I'll be teaching you how to dance when we come back from our job." Sandy said.

"Okay...umm...so what are we having for lunch?" Arisa asked.

"I and the cooks are going to cook some stew for today along with a couple sandwiches." She said and began to walk towards the door.

"Your father will be eating with us today since looks like the battalion runs ended early today. Looks like there is a chance of a bit of a sprinkle." Sandy said and waved goodbye as she closed the door.

Hearing that meant that there may be a bit of rain. Arisa sighed as got on her chair and decided to open the box that was given to her. She blew on it to get rid of the dust and raised an eyebrow as she took a closer look at it. It was a wooden box with beautiful flower cravings on it. Carefully opening it, her eyes shot wide open once she saw what was in it. It was a beautiful jade tea set!!! With shaky hands, she carefully picks one up and saw the symbols used on it. They were that of the Teachings of Serios.

"I'm never using this tea set......it's too beautiful..." she whispered to herself as she put it back into the box and closed it.

She smiled at this but then thought again!! Shoot!! Her planning. Well....she could always just wing it right?

- Two Days later: 30 minutes before Sunrise -

She was wide awake, along with Sothis by her side. Arisa had her bag packed with clothing, food, books, materials for writing. Even her personal journal, and a few other things. Thank goodness Florencio doesn't keep track of the magic bags he has.

"Found it." She heard Sothis say as the goddess pointed to the main wagon.

"The only ones in that wagon are Sandy, your father and Florencio. Time to sneak in. Ninja??? Style like you say!" Sothis said.

Arisa just gawked at her but shook her head.

"Let's do this." Both girls said as smirk formed on their faces.

If one were to see them both, they say they were almost looking at demons. With no sound to her steps, Arisa ran the wagon. None of the men and women even felt her presence nor heard a single sound as they were all now getting ready set out.

"Quickly!! Make haste!!" Sothis said as the two arrived at the main wagon and Arisa quickly climbed up and went in through the cloth.

Luckily her father and the others were not there yet, which gave her enough time. She sighed as she
looked at the different crates and barrels and spotted on that she could easily fit in and had enough space that she could breathe and move around. She walked up to it and opened it, revealing a few packages, most likely just an extra box. Still enough room to be in. She and Sothis nodded to each other and went in and closed the lid. And just in time too because Florencio had opened the back to climb in. Luckily, the crate was far in the back where very little paid attention to it. Through a hole on the crate, she saw Florencio walk towards the front and also heard neighing. She looked through another hole on the right and saw that Sandy was on a horse.

"Everyone ready!!?" Jeralt yelled out and everyone gave out a "Haaaa!!" War cry to show they were ready.

"Oh, this is an experience!!! Looks like we made it." Sothis cheered as she did a small twirl.

"Not yet." Arisa said as they felt the wagon move forward and multiple sounds of wooden wheels moving.

"Why do you say that?" Sothis asked as she sat across from her.

"We still have a chance to get caught." This time the two were speaking telepathically to each other.

"We need to make sure we don't get discovered until we are at the border between Garreg Mach and the Kingdom. That way it will be impossible for them to take us back to the village." Arisa explained as she took out a small scroll and unrolled it.

It was one of the scrolls that was given to her. It was the full map of Fodlan. Arisa pointed to the center of the map, that was shown as mountains.

"We're here. We need to make to the border. At most, 2 weeks we need to keep hiding." She said.

"What?! There's no way we can last that long!!" Sothis said.

"We can, and we will." Arisa said clearly.

The two locked eyes.

"Sigh...fine. For now, study your book. You did beat Florencio at his challenge." Sothis said and saw the girl grin.

"I still beam with pride!" Arisa mentally giggled.

---

It was late at night, and she waited till she made sure she was clear to sneak out. She needed to answer nature's call and hid behind a bush where no one could hear her. After that, and cleaned herself, she saw there were about 3 men and women awake, keeping guard, each one taking turns for their shifts. Arisa sighed as she looked up at the sky and nearly gasped. The stars were a beautiful amazing sight. She mentally began naming all the constellations she saw, and even a few new ones she had never seen.
"If only I had my telescope." She thought and took a deep breath of air.

She missed her old home.... she missed California and it's crazy tragic nights. She missed the sound of cars speeding by, hell, even the wifi because she loved watching drama channel videos, video games, music, a lot. It's only been a week, but she's surprised by how much she has learned because she has been disconnected from technology of the modern era of her old world. She walked back the wagon and climbed back in, and back into the crate. She closed the lid, making sure not to make a sound and opened her bag, taking out the fur blanket she brought. Funny...it reminded her of Dimitri's Cape during the five-year time skip.

Now, she needs to correct herself on a few things. First, she decided to start off with the possible children she will meet at the Kingdom. First, Sylvain, who first she thought was the same age as the others but then remembered he was 19 years old at the start of the game. One year younger than her. So that means he is currently 4 years old. Next, Dimitri, Ingrid and Felix.

Dimitri, year 1162.

Ingrid, year 1163

Felix, 1163

Sylvain, 1160

Ashe, 1163

Mercedes, 1157

Numbers. Numbers...she needed to remember numbers. She bit her lip and sighed. This was also the time that Glenn was alive. Byleth was born in 1159???. She shook her head again. This was hurting her head. She laid down and hugged tightly blanket. She needed sleep.

- Dream: ????? -

"In time flows....see the glow!!!

Of flames ever burning bright!!"
Singing. She heard singing. She opened her eyes as they revealed a beautiful grass field. She heard giggling and running. She could see a figure of a woman giggling as she ran around the beautiful field. There were also flowers of different shades of colors. The woman smiled and took a deep breath.

"I'm pregnant!!"

She happily yelled out to the field where no one could hear her. She was brimming with excitement. She placed her hands on her stomach and smiled. Arisa wish she could see how this woman looked like. All she could see was an outline of her.

"I can't wait to tell your papa!! I'm sure he will be super excited!! Well...I'm not sure how...mother will react but I'm more than happy you are with me."

The woman smiled warmly.

"Hmmm...I wonder what I'll call you. Oh, I know! This name can be used for both girls and boys!! I'll name you -------

- End of Dream -

Arisa's eyes slowly opened as she sat up and rubbed her eyes. That dream she had...

It felt warm and full of kindness and love. She peeked out the hole of her crate and saw the others were all eating a meal. She quietly snuck out and stole one of the bowls of oatmeal while Sandy had her back turned and made a dash back.

"What the? Okay who got a second bowl??" She heard Sandy and saw as she glared at everyone.

Everyone said none of them. Arisa quietly giggled as she happily ate the food. Two weeks.... can she manage two weeks of hiding?

- 2 weeks later: Border -

She done it. She actually done it. She managed to stay hidden for exactly two weeks!!! Miracle!! It was a miracle. Arisa patted herself on the back with a proud smile and sighed as she watched them
cross the border. It would take at most another week to reach the nearest town. She sighed and curled herself into a ball to sleep. She really needed this. Damn, Sothis's sleeping habits are now part of her.

[---]

"Hmm....not sure." Florencio said as was busy looking through one of the maps he brought.

"Currently right now we're in here and we need to go through the territories of Charon and continue on straight to the town in Galatea where we will be staying and where the job is at." He said.

"Ugh...I heard the temperature is gonna drop more." Sandy said.

All the team members had changed to their warm winter clothing that was usually used for hunting. Sandy wore a nice winter dress that was created for dancers. Florencio felt his wool coat would be enough for now and Jeralt wore a fur like coat that made him look like a gladiator.

"Let me get my pencil quickly. I need to mark these." Florencio said as he handed Jeralt the scroll and headed to the one box that a certain girl prayed no one ever went to.

The man opened the lip, expecting to see the small packages with writing supplies in it, what he didn't expect...

"Zzzzzzz...."

Silence. The man had slowly closed to lid then reopened it to make sure he wasn't hallucinating.

"Hahahahah!!" He laughed a bit too loudly that made Jeralt look inside the wagon.

"Is everything alright?" Jeralt asked as Florencio just kept laughing nervously.

"I'm just hallucinating, aren't I? There is no way she is here." He laughed as he stood up and jumped off the wagon, heading straight to the forest.

Thank goodness everyone was on a break. Sandy was just confused by who he meant by "she"? She got off her horse and climbed the back of the wagon to the inside to see what he meant.

Once she did that, she opened the crate and her eyebrows shot up almost as they flew off.

"Uuuuhhhh!!! Jeralt!!! You might wanna see this...." Sandy said as her soul was slowly leaving her body.

She needed to sit down before she really passed out from shock. Jeralt walked in towards the crate, now seeing what the other two saw.
You see.... this loud of a commotion would wake up anyone right about now. But since Sothis and Arisa are one, the goddess's sleeping habits have become part of the girl. Meaning, Arisa was asleep like a rock and did not hear anything of the full panic mode the entire team was going to and how her father turned to stone from shock. He was slowly recovering as he gently shook the sleeping girl.

"Hmm...no not now mom....zzzzz" she muttered and turned the other direction.

"**Byleth Reus Eisner,** wake up." Was all he said that made the girl's eyes snapped open and wide awake.

Now, as you the reader and me, the author, we all know we have screwed up big time when our parents call us by our full names.

Arisa slowly turned and screamed.

"Don't hurt me!!! Don't hurt me!!! I'm sorry!!! I'm sorry!!! Don't hurt me!!!" The girl screamed as she used her arms to shield herself.

"What? No, no, no!! I would never do that!!" Jeralt was completely caught off guard by this as many others.

The man gently picked up his daughter to his arms.

"Jeez kid. You gave us all a heart attack when we found you. How long have you been hiding there?" He said softly, trying to calm down his daughter, who had a few tears.

"Two..weeks...since the day you all departed." Arisa sniffed.

Jeralt sighed.

"TWO WEEKS?!!" Everyone else yelled.

They were all asking themselves how not even one of them noticed her at all. Not even her presence.

"You still came even though I said not to...sigh..." Jeralt sighed.

To think she was hiding inside a crate....a damn crate!!!

"No way am I getting left behind!! This is my first time I wanna see us outside the village!! So please!!!!!" She begged as he gently put her down.

The man sighed, walked over to a different crate, pulled out a gray cloak, and gave it to her. The temperature is already starting to drop every day.

"Alright. Since there is no way to take you back to the village, you will be coming with us. The temperature is dropping more every day and you just recently made a full recovery." He scolded her and she pouted as she put on the coat.

She admits, it was nice and warm.
"Alright, I'll be careful." She said.

Jeralt sighed again but couldn't help showing a small smile as he ruffled her hair. The two walked back to the front seat of the wagon and sat next to each other while they saw Florencio climb back in from the back.

"GHHAAAA!!! I WASN'T HALLUCINATING!!" The man screamed and Sandy just smacked him on the head before she got off and went back on her horse.

Sothis merely watched from the girl’s eyes and spoke to her. Honestly, she was very surprised they managed to hide for so long.

"You only just healed and already going wild? So, you're a wild child." She chuckled.

Indeed, for some reason the feeling of seeing a child go wild like this felt familiar but also warm. Like a mother scolding her children.

"I'm not...that wild. Personally, I rather be in bed and read through a mountain of books but, I want to learn more about Fodlan. Dad has never told me anything and I want to learn." Arisa said.

If anything, she must learn. Everything is now much different.

This was now her reality and she still found it hard to believe. Even if now it has been 3 weeks since waking up in this new body of hers. It still...felt so foreign to her!!! Like this was all a dream. It felt like survivor's guilt. She should be dead, not Byleth. Byleth should be the one with this body, not her. So why?! Why was she the one here?! Even if she accepted that Byleth gave her to her, it still felt...felt...so wrong. Arisa hugged the cloak closer to her. This is going to take a long time to come to terms.

"Umm, Papa, are there any more books I can read while we travel to the Kingdom?" She asked all of a sudden, hoping to change the subject in her mind.

Jeralt raised an eyebrow but nodded.

"Considering how you beat Florencio in his bet." He began and saw the said man send a playful glare to his daughter," you are at the age to start learning to become a mercenary, so I don't mind teaching you myself how to wield a sword. Now quick test from our previous lesson around two weeks ago." He said.

Her eyes sparkled and she nodded confidently. She finally understood the money system here.

"How much is one 100 bronze coins?" Jeralt began as his daughter nodded confidently.

"One silver!!! 1 bronze coin can be used to buy food, glass, and basic small things!!" She said excitedly.

"Not bad. How much is 100 silver?" He asked again.

The girl began muttering to herself as she counted her fingers and looked up to him.

"Ummm.....1...2....40....1 gold coin!!" She said.
"Nice job Byleth!! Keep it up!!" Sandy yelled from her horse.

The men and women of the team smiled and were enjoying watching this. It wasn't every day you see the Captain be so gentle and kind.

"Now, time for a bit more of the harder things." Jeralt said and the girl nodded.

"If we put in terms of American dollars...1 borzen is 1 dollar, 1 silver is 100 dollars and 1 gold is 10,000 dollars. Ouch..." Arisa thought to herself.

"Great, now I'm unconsciously turning it to Japanese money..sigh.." she sighed to herself thinking that.

"What about a orona coins? How much is each one worth?" Florencio said with a small smirk.

If she remembered correctly, orona is extremely rare metal that has a gold yet silver color look.

"Hmmm...orona is an extremely rare metal used to amplify magic. It's no longer a currency in this time but it was at some point. So...on orona coin is worth....10 gold pieces each?!" The girl screeched.

Okay that much money is worth at most 200 years of rent.

"And she realized the the worth. Yeah. Your dad has 3 of them that he has as a collection. He refuses to use them." Sandy said as she took out a carrot and fed it to her horse.

Arisa peeked out of the wagon and saw she was riding a beautiful black horse, and wearing a winter dress that was made for a dancer.

"Alright, now final question. What is gold "pieceling"?" Florencio said.

"Umm..a special type of gold when shaped, part of it turns a light blue color while the other remains the same. 4 of them is equal to 1 gold. And in terms of silver, it's around 25. 1/4." She said.

"So......2,300 something dollars...that's worth around 7 months of rent." Arisa thought and turned to her father.

"So, did I pass?" She grinned a bit proudly.

Jeralt ruffled her hair and nodded.

"Sandy will teach you how to read more advanced words. Florencio will teach you how to handle money and also the medical supplies. I'll teach you self-defense and also what it means to be a mercenary." Jalter said and she nodded.

"Oh, this is exciting!!" She saw Sothis appear and floated in a few circles excitedly.

"Look at you!! Seems you're having fun!" Sothis grinned as she floated over and sat on one of the horses that was pulling the wagon.

It sent her a glare.

"Oh, don't be angry! I want to talk to her!" Sothis stuck her tongue out to it.
Arisa couldn't help but giggle as she heard the other horses neigh. Their form of laughing. Sothis huffed and turned back for Arisa, ignoring the glare from the horse.

"So, what do you plan to do now?" She asked.

Arisa spoke to her telepathically to answer her question.

"From here, I think we're going to relax a bit and finally enjoy the journey." Arisa responded as she saw Sothis grin.

"Thank goodness!!! I was getting tired of hiding. I thought we were going to go mad at this rate!" Sothis giggled.

As Arisa was about to answer her question, the girl noticed a white speck gently falling down.

"Oh!!! Looks like it's starting to snow." Jeralt said as more snowflakes began to fall.

The horse that was glaring at Sothis no longer was and instead, stared up to the gray clouded sky. To Sothis, this was her first time seeing such specks of white fall from the sky. It was a beautiful sight. She couldn't help but awe as she flew up and a few fell into her hands and melted.

"Mother, mother look!!! Snow!!"

An imagine of a young girl appeared in her vision. Even if she could not see the girls face, the memory help so much affection and warmth. A lone tear fell from her right eye and she touched it. She was silent as she stared at the clear water droplet on her finger and looked back to the sky.

"Faint visions of familiar faces in the fog yet they are so far away I cannot reach them...." she muttered softly as she cupped her hands together and a few snowflakes fell.

It melted away and she smiled sadly.

"In...time...flows....see the glow..." she sung softly.

She didn't know why but that song felt so familiar as she sung it. The words left her lips as if it was natural. She looked one more time to the sky before heading back down.

"Is everything alright?" She heard Arisa asked her as she flew back down and stopped a few feet away from the girl.

"Everything is alright. Just wanted a better view." Sothis smiled to her.

Arisa looked to her sadly and nodded in understanding. She knew that look very well.

- 1 week: Town in Galatea Territory -

It was beautiful. Throughout the 1 week of traveling, Arisa could finally understand why The Holy Kingdom of Faerghus was known for being cold as hell but also beautiful because of the white
snow that covered a majority of the vast lands. It almost felt like a winter wonderland. Almost. The reason was because they have encountered bandits on the way and their group would cut them down easily. But there was a time one managed to get past one of the women in their group and went after her. Her old instinct of coldness took over her when she used to do fencing and grabbed a dagger that was dropped and jumped back and stabbed the dagger into the man's stomach. It was the first time she felt warm blood splatter on her face. The attack wasn't enough to kill him but still enough to be a fatal blow. She jumped back and her father finished the bastard off.

The girl snapped out of it and fell to her knees, looking at her bloody hands and the warm sticky substance on her cheek. Everyone ran over to her worried but the one most worried was Jeralt. That was his daughter's first ever attempt to take a life. He saw the shock and fear take over her face as he bent down to hug her tightly. He will never forget how much she shook as he held her tightly. But that was the life of a mercenary.

**Kill or be killed.**

"**The only ones who should be killed are those ready to be killed.**" Jeralt spoke those words to his daughter as they had stopped near a town before they entered it.

The man had made it his mission to train his daughter. The girl looked to him a bit surprised because the words were familiar to her. He handed her a wooden sword and she caught it.

"Those words were told to me growing up. That is the reality. As a mercenary, many will go after your life as you continue to battle through the years. They were a reminder that you could die at any moment in battle. Especially when you and your enemies are doing the same thing. Survive, fight. You are the one to live and your enemy must die." He said to her as his daughter looked at the wooden sword and held it tightly in her hands, even if they were shaking.

He could tell. She didn't want to kill. If she could, she would gladly find another way to not fight if she could. After all, she originally used to live in a society that didn't have to be in constant survival mode. He saw his daughter look up to him and nodded as she let go of a shaky breath.

Arisa reminded herself. This was now her reality. She wasn't in her old world anymore. She wasn't in the United States anymore. She wasn't in California not traveling the world anymore. She wasn't bound to a hospital bed anymore.

[ **** ]

"It's a winter wonderland!!!"

The team couldn't help but chuckle as the young girl jumped off the wagon, giving many heart
attacks and twirl around as the snow gently fell to the stone road. They have arrived at a nearby
town in Galatea Territory. Both Sothis and Arisa's eyes were sparkling like rainbows when they
arrived. Looking at the beauty of the town. Honestly it looked a bit more like a capital. The Holy
Kingdom of Faerghus, despite it being winter, was lively. The children of the town playing in the
snow, stores and stalls open with lanterns lighting, and with the snow falling gently, the place look
absolutely beautiful. To Arisa, it reminded her almost of Disneyland during the holidays. The
scents of food filled the air and her side of gluten was awake again. Arisa's inner Saber was wide
awake.

"My, humans definitely know how to make their homes absolutely beautiful!!! Even in this cold
time, they know how to make the best of it." Sothis said as she hugged Arisa around her neck as
she floated.

"I'm for sure getting food!!! Oh, I wonder what sweets they have?!!" Arisa said as she ran to one of
the stalls and instantly bought one of the egg tarts they were selling.

The girl squealed in utter delight as she took her first bite after so long of not eating sweets. The
sweetness was so much. The vendor couldn't help but chuckle as she happily ate. She bought 24
more. As the girl was busy buying food and eating happily, a general of the knights stationed at the
village walked up to him and he explained to them why they were there. The guard understood and
said they were waiting for their arrival.

"Byleth, come back!! We're heading to where we're staying. Hurry or we'll leave you behind!" Jeralt yelled out to her as he finished speaking to a guard.

He and guard couldn't help but chuckle as they saw the girl turn their way with stuffed cheeks of
food.

"Coming Papa!!" She yelled back as she gulped down the sweet hot chocolate she bought and
swallowed the food.

"How come you're called Byleth? Isn't your name Arisa?" Sothis asked as Arisa ran back to her
father and she floated behind her.

"Byleth is my birth name given to me in this world. Arisa is what I personally go by. It's....my
former name. I want to have at least a small part of my old self." She responded back and stood in
front of her father.

"Where are we heading to Papa? I thought the inns were the other direction." She said as she
pointed to the east different of the town, where she spotted the inns.

"Huh...? So, two names you go by. How interesting." Sothis said.

"Yaawwnn..I'm going to take another nap...if you need me, I'll be there with you...zzzzzzzzz..." and
with that, the goddess disappeared to go onto the daily naps.

Arisa giggled and Jeralt spoke.

"We're going to be staying at a different house Territory. Main one where most of the knights are.
For a few days, we'll be staying under House Fraldarius." He said.

Honestly, Jeralt would have preferred they stayed at an inn.
The name of the house instantly made Arisa's eyes go wide. She was internally screaming and if she could, would bang her head on a wall but that would make her look like an idiot.

"I see!!! Okay, I wonder if I'll make friends!!" She said a bit too cheerfully.

*The chances of meeting Felix and his brother Glenn, just skyrocketed, and so was the chance that she might meet Dimitri.*

Chapter 3: Snowy Blue: Seeking Snow

[ ------ ]

And hell is about to break lose!!! Now, I money system I decided to use is from one of my favorite anime/mangas/light novels Ascendance of a Bookworm. I felt it would make more sense instead of always using gold. I wanted it to also show how a bit of the system works.
Chapter 4: Snow Blue: Part 2: Blood Red Painted Snow

Forgot to put this in chapter 3, Byleth's mother. We don't know how she looks like or her name. It was never given in the game. But I decided to try and give her a character based on what Jeralt says about her in the game. She loved flowers and would get excited whenever he brought her one, she had never seen before. As you can guess, the woman was never allowed to leave the monastery. Also, the way she referred to Rhea as "mother" is because.... yeah that's a spoil. If you have played the game, then you know what I mean. If you have not and are avoiding spoilers then I won't say more on it.

So why did I choose the name, Rosa? Because based on how she loves flowers and plants.

She really wanted to scream and avoid like the plague going to House Fraldarius. Now, there are a few reasons. One, was because she felt it was FAR too early to even encounter her future students.

"Kyu Kyu!!" Ah, but at least the fluffy balls of flufftrats, she calls them Fluffs, that were brought by Florencio, calm her nerves very much.

"I told you not to bring them." Jeralt glared over to Florencio as they were riding the wagons through the forest.

"Captain Jeralt, I don't think he heard you...." one of the men pointed to Sandy and Florencio, who were riding their horses and arguing with each other, again.

"We said not to bring them!!! And you purposely ignored the order!!" Sandy said to him.

"Well, excuse me!!! I brought them because I knew we were going to need them at some point!! And look, they have been helping guide the group!! Especially when it's snowing because everything is white!!" He said back to her.

Their horses just looked at each other and shook their heads. Everyone else was used to their bickering at this point.

"Kyaaaa!! That tickles!!" Arisa and Sothis giggled as the tiny army of fluffs nuzzled around them.

"Captain, how long till we reach House Fraldarius? Since we need to stop at Conand Tower for our checkpoint." A man asked as was looking at his own map.

He swears these damn forest roads a pain in the ass to go through.

"At most, another week. Luckily, the road we are taking to reach it is one commonly used by merchants. We might get a few deals." Jeralt said.

A mercenary at heart he truly is.

"Oh!!" One of the women said, "I heard in this road it is common to find herbs that grow in the winter. Like mint, thyme, sage, rosemary and oregano. Didn't General Florencio need them?" She
"Is that so, ne?" One man said with his twin sister next to him.

"May we stop to look for some, ne?" She said.

The twins were Rin and Ra. Originally, they were from Sreng, so the speech of theirs usually ends with a sound. They were Florencio's assistants in his medical shop.

"Very well then. We'll set up camp here in this area for tonight. Ares, Yofos, and Ili!! You three will come with me to hunt. Rin, Ra, Jorah, will go with Florencio to collect herbs and any other plants that are edible. Make sure to also get water from the stream nearby. Zach and Fiona, collect firewood. The rest of you set up the camp and guard the place." Jeralt ordered.

"Yes Capitan!" The team yelled out.

"Dad, what can I do?" Arisa asked.

"Jeralt," Florencio walked up to him, "Do you mind if she comes with my group? I think this is a good opportunity to teach her what plants are consumable when times are harsh during missions." He said.

"Alright. Just make sure she doesn't wander too far. Also, be careful. Wolves are out here, especially during this time." He said.

"WOLVES NE?!?!!" The twins screeched.

Jorah just sighed and wished he was on Jeralt's hunting team instead.

"Hmmm...good. I can get a new fur coat." Arisa said.

Jeralt just put his hand over his found to keep himself from laughing at the comment his daughter made while the others just looked at her horrified.

- Forest -

"We may have to dig a bit through the snow to find the mint, ne." Ra said from his horse as the 5 were making it through the forest.

The snow was a bit deep but not enough for them to completely fall into it. At most, to their knees. Arisa on the other hand, since she is short child once more, up to her waist. Oh, the agony. This is where she wished she had an adult body. She was currently riding with Florencio.

"Cranberry tree spotted!! It high. See a few berries." Jorah yelled and pointed to a tree a few feet away.

"Good, they still have berries, ne!" Rin said happily.

Arisa looked over to each of the assistants. Through the week after she was discovered, she got to speak to each one of the members of the teams. She wanted to get to know them better.
Sandy's team consists of six women. Rin, Ili, Fiona, Deidra, Acia, Helena. They were her team of assassins.

Florencio's team was one of six men. Ra, Zach, Johra, Ares, Teme and Yofos. They were his team of magicians.

She learned their stories, how they came to be the people they are today. Why some chose to leave their homelands. Each person in her father's company had a story. Everything is much more difficult when you are no longer looking at it through a screen but living through it. She wanted to know them. To have a better understanding of them. Because in a way, everyone in the company was like family to her. They help fill the hole in her heart. The hole that was created when she could no longer be with her brother and sisters. Mother and father, and friends. Not even her former lover. She had gotten in a relationship with a man a year older than her. The two met in the same hospital but he passed away 4 days before their 6-month anniversary. She was devastated. But her loneliness and days in the hospital was nothing to what the men and women of her father's company went through. Through thick and thin they stood together. Some have passed on, others have left. Some have even betrayed. But all of them still pulled through. Truly, that was the life of a warrior.

"Pick some up!! Turn to juice!! Feast tonight, I miss!!" Jorah laughed as he was picking the cranberries from the tree.

"Ne, Jorah!! Stop stuffing your face ne!!" Rin yelled from a different tree because she used a small amount of fire magic to melt the snow to look for herbs.

"Found wild carrots, ne!!" The woman said cheerfully.

"Don't eat them, ne." Ra said as he was picking berries from a Hawthorn Bush.

Number one rule when picking Hawthorne berries, never eat the seeds because they are poisonous!!

"Hmm....I'm hoping we find some Oregon Grape bushes. There aren't any berries on it, but the roots are perfect for medicine." Florencio said he carried Arisa and was using his staff to radiate a warm heat from it to melt the sound.

He had mounted off his horse to have a better look.

"If I remember...orange grape roots is good for the immune system but it is also antibacterial and anti-inflammatory. Correct?" Arisa said.

She really must play dumb or else she is screwed. But she didn't mind. It felt good reading and studying subjects she already knew. A good way to refresh her memories.

"Nice job. Looks like these weeks of you studying have paid of------" he went silent suddenly.

"Florencio?" She said as he saw him turn his head towards the left slowly.

Then she heard it. Growling.

"Ggggggrrrrrrrrrrrrr...."
He wasn't the only one in the situation. Ra, Rin and Jorah were also in a tight grip. The three had slowly back up to their horses, who were beginning to panic. Ra took one look to his horse, who gave a slow nod as his hand slightly glowed green.

"(Rin, looks like we need to go into that mode, don't we?)" He spoke in his native tongue to his sister as a feral grin was forming on their faces.

"Of course, brother, ne. Time to hunt ne....." her voice became lower as her eyes glowed green color.

"Time to kill." Was all Jorah said as he grabbed the katana on his waist. The three wolves growled and crouched down as they were getting ready to pounce on them.

Jorah arms crossed as his hands grabbed the hands of his swords. He slowly began to pull them out. All of his facial expressions disappeared as his face become stone, void of any emotion at all. His only thought right now was, to kill or be killed.

With her fingers cracking, her hands glowed a light green hue as steel like gauntlets formed on her hands. The 3 blades on it emitted a blue colored reflection instead of a clear one. These blades were specifically crafted for one thing. Should the poor soul survive and attack by these blades, they will die an agonizing death by the poison these blades are covered in. She bends her knees a bit and spread her legs a bit.

"AHHHWWHOOOO!!" The wolves howled as they charged at three.

"IKE!!" Ra yelled and his stood on its two hind legs as it weighed loudly.

Wings sprouted from its sides the man grabbed the lance he had with him and slashed at the wolf before jumping on his pegasus. Only a few selected horses were actually pegasus. Their owners, Ra, Fiona and Fiona used an illusion spell to hide their wings so they may look like normal horses. It is to keep attention away from them when they are traveling.

"Haaa!!! Let's go bloody mut, ne!!" He grinned as his pegasus snorted looking down at the first world that charged at him.

Rin jumped with precision and speed as she dodged the claws of the wolf she was going
"Hahah!! I'm going to enjoy turning you to a rug, ne!!" She laughed cheerfully she charged at it and slashed it's right side.

It yelped and growled even more fiercely at her.

"Chaaal!!" She said as it charged at her once more and this time, she sliced it's right paw off.

"AAHHHWWWWHOOOOO!!" It howled in pain and glared at her.

Rin then noticed the wolves had a bit of blood on their lips. Seems she wasn't the only one.

"The poison will take 2 minutes to take effect!! Can you all stall enough?" She yelled put as she kept her eyes on her opponent's movements.

"Yeah!!! Stall must hurry. Not enough time!! Worried of Captain and child!!" Jorah yelled as he used his swords to deflect the attacks.

"Wolves, blood on lips!!! Must have come into their territory!! Disturbed their meal!! Worried if it man or animal!!" He yelled and used his dual swords to slash at the chest on the wolf.

"These are small fry....na...." Ra eyes widened in realization, "THE ALPHA WENT AFTER THE CAPTAIN AND BYLETH!!" He yelled and now they really needed to finish them off.

"30 seconds!!!" Rin yelled out.

"FINISH IT!!" All three yelled out as they concentrated their energy for the final strike.

"GRRRR!!" The wolf lunged at him and his pegasus launched back from the air.

"DIE IN THE STRIKES OF WIND!!" Ra yelled out as he spun his lance and it went right through the wolf through his mouth.

Ra smirked as he threw his lance down and the wolf fell dead onto the snow. He skewed that wolf like a piece of meat. The handle of his lance stood out of its mouth as blood oozes out.

"Gaaaaaa...ack....AWWWHHOOO!!" Rin grinned in glee as the poison finally took effect.

The wolf began to vibrate, drool began to come from its mouth nonstop and turning to foam. Vessels of blood began to explode all over its body, its gray coat becoming bloody. Its eyes exploded as the foam in its mouth turned red, its heart exploding. Dropping dead onto the snow, she smiled as she walked up to it.

"Poison is in the blood of all. Die in a pool of death." She grinned down at it.

Then the woman screamed as she saw a wolf head fall a few feet away from her. The twins turned as they saw Jorah swing his swords at the snow as a body fell into the snow, its head served off clean. The man looked over to them for a bit and shook his head as he saw Ra pull out his lance from the wolf he killed.

"Let's go, ne!! We'll come back for them once we find the captain and the lady, ne!!" Ra yelled out and the three bolted to the direction of the were they saw Florencio and Byleth go.
The alpha wolf shook in fear as was looked down on by Florencio, who was covered in its blood. Arisa was gently mounted on his horse, and he slapped it's behind, ordering it to run so he could take care of the damn beast. The girl protested, yelled out to him as she held onto the reins. The horse ran like it was ordered to safety. Honestly, the man did not want the girl to see how brutally horrible he could be in battle.

"Expla-toack." Was all he muttered as the wolf exploded.

Its blood splattered on him as she watched it be nothing blood where it once stood. It's organs, bones, blood, fur, all splattered on the field of snow. He sighed.

"I over did it again..." he muttered.

"CAPTAIN!!"

He turned as he heard 3 pairs of running footsteps towards him. Like him, the three were covered in blood also. Oh goodness, especially Jorah.

"I'm glad you are all alright. I'm assuming that poison actually worked, since it was in the testing phase?" He said as he looked over to Rin, who nodded happily.

"It worked perfectly, ne!!!" She grinned.

"I have my pegasus watching the other two, ne. They are safe, ne." Ra said and slightly cringed at the stomach organs he spotted.

"Where Lady Byleth?" Jorah said.

"She's safe. For now, we need to find her and my horse. Spilt up. But do be careful." Florencio ordered and they all nodded.

"Dara, stop! We gone far enough!!" Arisa yelled as she now forcefully pulled the reins of the horse.

"Okay, you stupid horse!!! ENOUGH!!" Sothis roared as she appeared in front of it, scaring it and making it stop.

"Huff....huff......Thank you Sothis.....honestly...what would I be without a friend like you...?" Arisa panted as she slumped forward.
She didn't see Sothis's ears turn red when she told her that. As a friend. She saw Sothis as a friend. Dara neighed and Arisa gently petted it.

"I'm sorry Dara. For now..." all three looked around and she shook her head, "We need to head back to the camp." Was all she said.

She is glad her father taught her how to ride a horse. As the three slowly went through the forest, Dara suddenly snorted and began to go a different direction in a bit of a hurry.

"Dara, w----!!" The girl slapped her hand over her mouth as she saw mutilated animal dead in the snow.

"Urghh!!" She jumped off and ran behind a bush and began vomiting.

Even Sothis had turned away from the horrible sight. Luckily, the area they had wandered off to the snow was only as deep as her ankles.

"Cough! Cough!!! The white feathers....and I recognize some of the skin...it's a....Urgghhh!! Pegasus!! Uurrrggghhh!!" She hurled once again.

The sight was horrific. Dara neighed again and Arisa lifted her head a bit, still recovering and saw him walk to a tree a few feet away from the body.

"Nnnghhh...."

It was faint but it was a small whine. With shaky feet, Arisa walked over to the tree where she saw a small little came underneath it. She looked in along with Sothis and the two gasped. Inside, shaking from both fear and the coldness, was a young foal. It's almost orange red hind small little red feather wings, shook with fear as its brown eyes looked up to her.

"(Neigh...)") Dara neighed and the little foal responded back with a weak voice.

"Then that animal carcass...." Sothis said sadly as Arisa shook her head sadly.

"Was its mother...." she said spoke gently.

"It's okay.... you can come out now." She spoke gently, hoping to coax out the little foal.

It only cowered more, and she sighed.

"I'm not the best when it comes to animals but...I'll try." Arisa muttered to herself and looked over to Dara.

"(Neigh. Neigh.)" Dara neighed and still the little one refused to come out.

"Maybe just pull him out?" Sothis suggested and Arisa sent her a glare.

"Of course not!! It's a baby!! You don't treat babies like that!!" She said to her.

She turned back to the little foal and reached in, gently placing her warm hand on its head. It froze but nuzzled to the warmth of it. With shaky feet, it got up and the girl moved out of its way so it can come out. Now that they had a better look at it, it was the same height as her. Perhaps maybe a
week old at most.

"There, there, it's alright." She gently placed her forehead on it and it closed its eyes.

"Shhh...shh... in time flows...see the glow.... of flames ever burning bright.... on a swift...river's drift...broken memories alight." she sung softly, hoping to calm the little one.

Sothis stared at the girl. That song.... she...sung it.... she knows it...yet where.... where...?

"Byleth!!"

The four turned to see Florencio, Rin, Ra and Jorah look at them in shock and relief. Honestly the sight of them covered in blood unsettled Arisa's stomach again.

"Urgh...." she put her hand over her mouth to stop herself from vomiting again.

She took deep breaths and her eyes widened when the little foal snuggled closer to her. The three adults ran up to them with their horses and one pegasus. Rin looked over to the dead mutilated body and sighed.

"I'm glad you're safe!!" Florencio said as placed his hand on the girl’s shoulder. He noticed the little pegasus foal looked over to the other two.

"You two got collect the wolf’s bodies. We're heading back to camp." He said.

"Florencio, can we take him with us?" She said as the foal snuggled closer to her.

Dara neighed and nodded his head as the others did.

"I don't know how your father is gonna react at this but.... bring him." Florencio sighed.

- 20 minutes later: Back at camp -

"IN THE NAME OF THE GODDESS, WHAT HAPPENED?!?!" Sandy screamed as the four arrived back with three dead wolves and one pegasus foal.

Plus, the three adults were covered in blood.

"You can already see, we got attacked, ne." Ra said.

Jeralt also came at that same time and looked at the group in shock. Before anyone can say anything, he pointed to his daughter.

"Inside the wagon, now." Was all he said, and she nodded.

The little foal fowled after her as she picked it up and put inside the wagon with her. She needed to warm the little one up.

"Jeralt, we got attacked by wolves." Florencio said.
"I can clearly see that." Jeralt said a bit coldly.

"We kept daughter safe. She okay." Jorah said.

"I know...but...thank you. What about you four? You aren't injured, are you?" Jeralt said as he saw them put the wolf's bodies down on the ground.

"We're okay, ne. But the hunt was fun ne!!! Haven't fought like that in so long, ne!!" Rin clapped her hands happily.

The woman didn't notice the looks of fear a few others gave her. Jeralt, Sandy and Florencio just gave them all the face of "you get used to it."

- With Arisa -

"Here. Eat." She said as she cut a carrot to bite size pieces and tried to feed it to the little foal.

It sniffed it and shook its head. She sighed. She doesn't know how to take care of a baby horse, much less, doesn't know what they eat exactly. One thing for sure was milk because that was the most basic and key food for nutrition for all mammals in this world.

"Byleth, are you alright?" She heard her name called and saw her father enter.

He sat next to her and she shook her head.

"No, I'm not okay. I don't know what to give this little one. We found him near a tree. Its mother was killed by a pack of wolves. It was...urgh..." she put her hand over her mouth again.

The memory made her nauseous. Jeralt sighed and gently patted her back.

"It's alright. So, have you decided what to name him?" He said, hoping to get her mind off that horrific sight.

"Name him? Wait, we get to keep him?" She asked him, looking to him with sparkles in her eyes.

"Of course. We can't leave him behind. Seems he has become attached to you." He said and saw the foal lay its head on her lap. Arisa quietly squealed.

"See? Since this is a foal, I'll teach you how to take care of it. He will be your responsibility. Got it?" He said and she nodded her head rapidly.

"Hmm...." she thought for a moment as she looked at the baby pegasus. Its hide was almost a red brown color, so...

"Red Hare." She said.

"Red Hare?" He said.

"Yes. Red Hare. It was the name of a horse that belonged to a warrior by the name, Lu Bu, rode through his battles. The legend says that Red Hare speed was quick as a rabbit and would run 500 meters in a single day and 800 in one night." She explained.
"So you're going to name him after a character from one of the books you read, huh? Not bad. I admit. It suits him. Look at him. His hide is red." He said as the little foal now known as Red Hare snorted a bit.

She giggled petted it.

"Red Hare. Glad you like the name."

- One Week Later: House Fraldarius-

"Good boy!! No, don't eat the spinach!!" Arisa panicked as she was training Red Hare simple commands such as "Whoa" and "go."

The little one was a bundle of energy. Honestly, she was tired from waking up at certain times at night to feed him. Her father taught her how much needed to be fed to him, what food, and the measurements.

"I think I understand what my mom went through when she had me and my siblings..." she thought as she grabbed the bag of vegetables.

Red Hare neighed to her and lightly tap it's hooves, showing that he was hungry. It was an interesting way of communication.

"Look, we're here." She heard he father say and looked out.

Her heart began racing. Honestly it was something she wanted to avoid. Like seriously, it's far too early, meeting her future students. Don't get her wrong, she's excited but this a bit too fast for her. The wagon she was on arrived to a beautiful home that definitely belonged to a noble but was not as much on the fancy side of things. It was simple. The gates open, allowing the wagons to go in. She looked out and saw the courtyard. Though covered in snow, she spotted a few flowers blooming. Arriving at the entrance of the mansion, a group of knights dressed in blue like armor with fur, were waiting, along with their leader. The man was dressed in his black armor.

Rodrigue Achille Fraldarius, also known as, Shield of Faerghus.

Rodrigue was pale skinned man with medium wavy dark blue length hair, thin U shape facial hair (Nintendo just why?!), and dark blue colored eyes. As the wagons stopped, Jeralt along with the team (except Arisa), got off and followed behind him in formation. The two leaders looked at each other in silence for a few moments until both smirked to each other.

"Sir Jeralt, it's an honor to meet you! I'm glad you and I will be working together in guarding the King and his family." Lord Rodrigue smiled and extended his hand to shake.

"The honor is mine. I'm also glad to be working beside you." Jeralt said as the two shook hands then turned to Sandy and Florencio, for them to come forward.
"This is my team along with my two generals, Sandy and Florencio. My best mercenaries and also my most trusted friends. They will also be working with us on this mission." Jeralt introduced them.

The entire team gave a small vow to show their respects. While this happened, Arisa took a tiny peak. She was still inside the wagon and looked out through a crack in the cloth covering the entrance. She didn't even notice the small footsteps that had climbed inside the wagon from the back. Red Hare was just still as a stone as he watched the figure walk up to his master and tap their shoulder.

**Tap tap**

She felt a tap on her shoulder. It was probably Sothis again, so she brushed it off.

"Not now Sothis!! I'm debating if I should head out or not." She said.

She was watching her father and Sir Rodrigue speak, straining her hearing, hoping to catch a bit of the conversation. She heard the words "grave", "guard", "king".

**Tap tap, tug.**

Okay, this time she was getting pissed. Was this a game? Sothis by now would have at least pulled her hair a bit to get her attention. Once more, but with a bit of anger in her voice when she felt a tug on her cloak.

"Sothis I said wait, please!!" She said again.

Nothing happened for a good minute.

**Tap.**

Okay, that's it.

"Sothis, I said wah------" when she finally turned, she wasn't looking at the goddess but a young little boy who looked around two years old, who looked at her with slight tearful eyes.

Oh Arisa felt guilt fill her because she had raised her voice to scold Sothis. The boy's hair was a dark black blue, his eyes were a honey colored brown, his skin peach and he was wearing what seemed winter coats and pants. The clothing is mostly worn by the children of the Kingdom as she seen through the weeks.

"Oohhh...uuummm...hiiiii!! How did you get here? Are you lost?" Arisa quickly changed to a kind voice and hoping the boy doesn't start crying.
The boy nodded and smiles to her. She let go of a sigh of relief and lightly patted his head. The boy seemed to like it. He flinched a bit when he noticed Red Hare and tears formed in his eyes.

"Well....sigh..." she took out her handkerchief she had used it to wipe the few tears he had.

"It's alright. Don't cry." She gently and saw him giggle a bit when Red Hare nuzzled him.

Now that she had a closer look at the boy, he looked.... familiar. But where?

"Wh-----!!" Before she could speak, a yell from the outside interrupted her.

"Felix!!! Where are you!!?"

Arisa felt like her heart stopped. With a speed so fast that the both thought her neck broke, she looked back outside from the crack again and saw a much older young man, who looked around his early 8 years of age, dressed as a knight?? and running around, with frantic but also frustrating expression. He spotted Rodrigue and ran up to him.

"Glenn, what's wrong?" Rodrigue asked as he finished his conversation with Jeralt.

"Felix disappeared again!! He got in a small fight with Sylvain again and Ingrid tried to stop them. This time he ran off who knows where." the boy now known as Glenn said and sighed.

Oh how much Arisa wanted to scream as she looked back and forth to the boy and the child, and now it fully hit her that the child was Felix.

**BLOODY HELL!!! MISSION DOWN!! MISSION DOWN!! SO MUCH FOR AVOIDING HER FUTURE STUDENTS!!**

"So umm...why don't we go to your big brother and Papa? Ahaha... " she laughed nervously.

The mini Felix pouted but nodded. Oh, he was adorable! So, the conversation between Sylvain and Ingrid was true!! Felix was sweet and a bit of a crybaby when he was younger!! She sighed and just gave up. The two got off the wagon, along with Red Hare because she wanted him as emotional support right now, the three walked towards Jeralt, Rodrigue and Glenn. Felix hid behind her the whole time and kept looking back and forth between her and Red Hare because the said pegasus stood close to her and walked like it was guarding her.

"Ummm...excuse me...?"

When everyone heard her voice, they all turned around towards her. Jeralt was hoping his daughter would not come out but alas, fate always has a different idea.

"Ummm....I found him...?" She smiled nervously and Felix popped his head out from under her
Honestly it was a cute sight. Glenn's eyes widened as he saw his brother behind some girl who clearly did not belong here.

"There you are!! And, who are you?" Glenn glares at her.

Arisa just kept a calm face smiled to him. It irked him for some reason.

"My lady, why did you come out?!" Florencio screeched while Sandy went pale and Jerealt just shook his head.

Rodrigue was honestly amused and chuckled. Wait, did one of his generals just call the girl, "My lady?"

"Sir Jeralt, if I may ask, who is this? Seems my son has taken a liking to her." Rodrigue said as he saw Felix hide more in between her cloak.

Jeralt was honestly hesitant on saying anything. After all, the Knights of the Kingdom were devoted followers of the Church of Serios. Jeralt made sure no one in his company even mention the Knights of Serios nor the church. He sighed and decided to take a risk as he looked over to Rodrigue.

"Sigh...this is my daughter, Byleth. She wasn't supposed to have come with us but she managed to sneak herself into the wagon when no one was looking. She's also studying to become a mercenary." Jeralt said.

He made sure his eyes held the message if anything happened to her, he was going to show no mercy to anyone. Sir Rodrigue understood the message well, after all, he himself was also a father of two boys. Arisa bowed to him and slightly flinched at the glare Glenn was giving her. Seriously, it reminded her of one of the glares her brothers would give each other when they would fight over who gets to play the PS4.

"Thanks. Now, come on Felix. Ingrid and Sylvain are waiting for you." Glenn said bluntly and reached out his hand for Felix to take and go with him.

Instead, Felix shook his head and his hold became tighter on the girl. Arisa was internally gushing at how cute the boy was. Everyone else was watching in amusement and some tried not to laugh at the face Glenn was making. Red Hare just snorted and stood closer to the two. Arisa turned towards Felix and knelt on one knee, so the two were at the same height. She would do this often when she was talking to one of her younger siblings to calm them down or if they had a nightmare that woke them up.

"So that's your name. Alright Felix, it's alright. Your big brother was just worried about you. I'm sure your friends are too. Please go with them. I'm sure we'll see each other again and we can even play together. You could even introduce me to your friends. Oh, I'll even let you play with Red Hare. I'm Arisa Byleth. Arisa is my nickname and Byleth is my first name. Alright?" She smiled kindly to him like a mother.

She wanted him to feel safe. Felix stared at her but smiled and nodded. He ran over to his brother but quickly turned to her and grinned.

"Bye big sis!!"
The look on Glenn and Arisa was hilarious. A couple of the knights laughed and quickly composed themselves. Even Rodrigue and Jeralt had a small laugh.

"I think our children will get along just fine." He said.

It was a bit of dismay to Jeralt. So much for keeping his daughter away from eyes.

- A couple minutes later -

"MY DAMN HEART!! I SWEAR I THOUGHT I WAS GONNA HAVE A HEART ATTACK!!" Arisa screamed into a pillow since she was the first one to run into the room they were given to.

She left behind everyone in dust. Sothis appeared and giggled as she circled around her friend.

"Look at you!! Did the encounter with the child affect you so much? Personally, I wish Red Hare was with us, but he has to stay with the rest at the stables. Ooohh!! I was really looking forward to seeing him to spread his little wings and try to fly!!" The goddess squeals and swings her legs a bit fast like an excited child.

"Sothis, this isn't the time to be excited!!! My original plan was not to meet these children but now...I even screwed (Sothis: Language!!) myself over that I said I would play with him." She said.

"Not bad, not bad!!" The two girls turned as they saw Sandy come in with her belongings and Arisa's also.

They could hear Ili and the other girls protesting to the servants that they could carry their belongings on their own. The men had offered to help the servants, but the servants protested back, saying they're guest and should not even be lifting a finger to carry their belongings. Honestly it was a funny sight. Sir Rodrigue was trying not to laugh as Jeralt groans into his hands. Sandy closed the door and bust out laughing as she held her stomach. God, it has been so long since she has laughed so much.

The rooms they were staying in weren't so fancy, but it was comfortable. Arisa was sharing a room with Sandy.

"Goodness!!! That was hilarious!! The look on Lord Glenn's face!! Hahaha!! " Sandy laughed as she went towards her bed to unpack her things. Seems her and Arisa will be sharing a room. The said girl couldn't help but smirk with a hint of pride. Sothis was just cackling.

"Seems I made Lord Glenn jealous." Arisa mused.

"Most likely. Anyhow, I just came to unpack a few things. Wish I could stay longer to enjoy the room, but a job doesn't get itself done. I'll be going now. The whole team along with the Captain will be returning later in the day. We're going to be mapping the route we will be taking. Your father wants to make sure the place is secure since there has been a rise in bandits lately. Also, Lord Rodrigue has given permission for you to move around if you want. Just don't wander too far. Take care Byleth. Sandy said and before she left, she smirked to her.
"Try not to get the boys jealous of you are you might be declared a rival by one of them." She said and closed.

Arisa released a sigh of relief and took off her coat, showing she was wearing a nice simple button up collar long sleeve shirt with black loose pants, easy to move around in. She also had a crossbody small purse. She calls it a black hole because she literally carries a lot of things in it. Once she finished unpacking her things, she left the room (Sothis: Wait for me!) and spotted to maids chatting and whispering to each other. And like a ninja, without a sound, she walked up to them and heard their conversation. She wondered if she would hear something juicy gossip.

"Oh, my goodness, did you see?! That was Jeralt the Blade Breaker!! He's a former Knight of Serios!! To think he's going to be working here for a few days!" One maid lightly squealed.

Shit....she wasn't supposed to hear that. Especially information on The Knight of Serios. Whenever she would hear small talk of it, making sure she would not make a sound. Whenever they were mentioned, her father held fear in his voice. It was as he was about to walk to guillotine, especially when she heard Rhea's name mention.

"Yes, but I overheard that something funny happen." The other maid said.

"Oh? Spill the tea!" The other giggled.

"So apparently Lord Felix has grown attached to Sir Jeralt's daughter, who came with him." She said.

"Eehhh?! He's married!!??" The other said.

"Well no shit." Arisa thought as she rolled her eyes.

Even Sothis seemed bored at this gossip.

"Okay time to interrupt this conversation." Arisa inwardly groan and Sothis nodded in agreement.

"Pardon me my ladies." She spoke.

"Ghhaaa!!" The two maids screeched and looked down to her.

"Oh, come on!!! She's not that terrifying!!" Sothis said.

"You're not helping." Arisa resisted the urge to roll her eyes.

"Hello, I'm looking for the library. Could you please tell me where it is?" Arisa smiled to them sweetly.

"Ummm......down the hallway. Head straight then turn to the left, keep going and another turn to the left." One said.

"Thank you miss." Arisa smiled and Sothis followed her as the girl was walking away.

The maids just looked at each other and then realized who she was, but Arisa was already gone.
"Skip, Skip, to the library I go!! To the room of knowledge where everything is hold!!" Arisa sung like a little girl.

She was excited to go to the library here. Finally, she could get the information she wanted on the Church of Serios and The Knights!! History. It was her main focus. Though she knew the true history of this land thanks to the game, there were still several details missing. One thing for sure she had her eyes set on, was information on Serios, A.K.A Rhea. Making the turn, her eyes spotted the wooden doors that lead to the room of knowledge. Carefully opening the door, she gasped as she saw how huge the library was. Shelves filled with hundreds of them, ladders that you could climb to reach a specific one. She spotted one of the of the books she was searching for and a table and opened it. She slightly cringed.

"At least the language is similar to English in this book at least. Sigh...." she sighed as she turned a page.

"Want me to read it for you?" Sothis said above her and like usual, hugged her, resting her chin on top of her head.

"Maybe you can teach me to have a better understanding? Sandy is helping me learn to properly read but they are going to be busy these past few days." She said as the two looked back down to the page.

It had a picture of a saintly dressed woman that looked oddly familiar like the statue of Saint Cethleann.

"Hmmmm...the language and pictures look familiar.... where...have I seen it...?" Sothis asked herself.

Compared to the summary version Arisa saw in the video game, the books come in much more details. She knows this isn't the real history but the one altered by the Church of Serios. For the next 40 minutes, she continued to read along with the help of Sothis, correcting her on some words and paraphrases. She sighed once again as she closed her 10th book. It was all information on the 10 Elites and the Saints but there were some things that did throw her off. First, was the story of The Ice Maiden said to have betrayed one of the Ten Elites, Riegan, and transformed into an Ice Dragon to unleash her wrath upon the world, turning the land into an icy nightmare. That would be Faerghus today. Legends say when the snow falls in all four lands, that they are her tears of regret. Another would be of The Dragon of Darkness, who have said to disappear to mountains beyond Fodlan, that would be Duscur today. As she picked them up, heading to one of the bookshelves to put them back, from the corner of her eye, she saw some movements.

Shuffle shuffle

"Oh? Seems we aren't alone." Sothis said and and Arisa looked towards the direction Sothis was looking at.

It was behind the stairs that led to the top floor. She saw three dark figures, one being taller than the other two. Putting the other book back and keeping one with her, she walked towards that direction.
"Hello, is someone there?" She asked politely.

Seems the three flinched a bit and the much taller one hushed them. She internally giggled.

"Oh my!!! So, looks like I'm alone!! So sad. Well, I guess I'm going to go eat cake and enjoy tea by myself!! Oh!!! I don't want to leave my prince charming waiting!!" She chastised.

She saw the much taller freeze hearing the words "Prince Charming."

She bets 5 copper it's Sylvain.

"So, trying to lure the children out?" Sothis giggled as she flew over to the three and purposely slapped her hand on the wall, making them all feel a breeze.

"Ghhhaaaa!!" Seems that was enough to scare them, and in a blur, one little shadow ran out and hugged her tightly

"Big sis don't leave us alone!! There's a ghost!!!” And there, she successfully lured Felix out, unfortunately the boy is now crying.

"Nice job. I'm impressed." Sothis smiled and Arisa shook her as she gently stroked Felix's head.

"Hi, Felix. I knew it was you." Arisa smiled as he looked up to her and smiled.

The other two slowly came out. One, Arisa recognize who they were, despite them being children, Ingrid and Sylvain. Ingrid was an adorable little girl with blonde hair tied in two braids. Her forest green eyes blinked at her curiously as she held tightly onto a stuffed bear in her arms. The girl wore a cute blue fluffy dress. Sylvain looked like a mini version of his older self. His hair was still that dark orange-ish red hair along with his eyes. He wore a red colored leather coat with a shirt that is the same color and black pants. He indeed was much bigger than them but.... heh. She is much taller than Sylvain!!! After all, the boy is only a year younger than her!

"Hello there. Nice to meet you all. You two must be Felix's friends. I'm Arisa. I'm here with my dad and his team." She smiled kindly as she introduced herself to him.

Sylvain was a bit shy, so he didn't speak right away but Ingrid stood proudly and grinned as she ran up to her.

"I'm Ingrid!! Nice to meet you!!! You're so pretty!!! Even more than what Felix said." She said proudly and dragged Sylvain forward.

"Come on!! Introduced yourself!!" She said.

"I-I'm Sylvain." The boy said quietly.

Arisa smiled nodded.

"Information about these two when they were younger, they were crying babies and Ingrid was the brave big girl. Cute. How can these two cute boys become a hooker and Sasuke Uchiha of Fire Emblem Three Houses...?" Arisa asked herself.

She heard Sothis snicker.

"Nice to meet you all. Would you all like cake and tea?" She said as she places her book down at
one of the nearby tables.

"Yes please!! Can it be lavender tea please?" Ingrid said excitedly.

The boys nodded as Arisa grinned

"Felix, can you tell me where the kitchen is?" She asked the boy nodded.

- Different Part of the Mansion -

"Hmmm.....the road here is heavily covered by snow. Lord Rodrigue, I suggest my team of magicians and I go head to use our magic to melt as much of it as possible. If we don't, it will be very difficult for the horses to go through." Florencio spoke as he was pointing to a marked area of the map.

"I do agree with you there. However, it’s surrounding area also worries me. There has been a rise of bandits lately. Perhaps the area should be searched also." Rodrigue said as he looked over to one of his knights.

Glenn was with them, watching and listening. After all, he was going to be a knight one day.

"The terrain is also quite rugged.... Sandy." Jeralt said and Sandy nodded.

"I'll have you and Florencio scout the area. Especially the forest where the road is." He said and the two nodded.

"I must say, I'm impressed." Rodrigue said as Jeralt looked over to him, a bit cautious.

"I remember hearing stories of you as a Knight of Serios but also when you used to serve as a knight of the Kingdom. If I may ask, have you ever thought of returning to the Kingdom knights, or those of Serios?" He asked.

Florencio and Sandy took one step and Jeralt just gave them one look.

"Tch." Was all the two said and took a step back.

"I have my reasons for leaving. The first one was because my life was saved by the Archbishop and I swore to protect her. However, my second reason I chose to detach from the Knights of Serios was for the sake of my family. All my team and I chose to leave the knights. I won't go into details since that is none of anyone's business. Don't you dare drag my daughter into this." He said coldly while looking straight at Lord Rodrigue.

Jeralt's entire team of mercenaries suddenly had a dangerous look in their eyes. What not a single knight in that room, along with Lord Rodrigue, was that each of those individuals were once well feared people before they turned their lives around. Especially Florencio and Sandy.

Lord Rodrigue understood the message well and nodded.

"Seems I crossed the line." He said
"I apologize. I was merely curious. Seems I shouldn't have asked that." He said and Jeralt sighed.

"It's alright. I don't blame you. I have been asked those questions before. It is never easy." Jeralt said.

Glenn was silent and quietly left the meeting room. Yeah, he feared that mercenary team. He could tell they were ready to pounce the minute someone made one wrong move. He sighed and then remembered the girl from before. Byleth?? Was her name. That girl seriously spelled trouble. At least she wasn't Miklan, Sylvain's older brother. Where is that dastard anyway? He better not be planning to harm Sylvain again. As he walked down the hallway, he heard a few of the maids gossiping again.

"Felicia is in full panic mode!!!! Apparently one of the guests is being stubborn to use the kitchen!!" One maid said.

"Lord Jeralt's daughter, correct? I took a peek earlier. Seems everything is alright. I'm more worried about Felicia......that girl......is too strange...At least her older sister is more helpful." One maid said.

Glenn frowned hearing that. He turned around and decided to head to the kitchen. He is damned if the poor woman passed out.

Chapter 4: Snowy Blue: Part 2: Blood Red Painted Snow

Okay, so I decided to create a mercenary team in Jeralt's company. Don't worry, they aren't the main characters, so it won't cause so much effect. They are more like supporters and side characters. Our two other main characters will appear soon. You will have the first preview of one of them in the next chapter. I have also given a few clues. Anyhow, look forward to chapter 5 soon.
If one asked who the clumsy, worst cook, and cleaner was, everyone would immediately say Felicia was the one. Ah, but when it came to skills in fighting, she was the superior one to all the maids in the household, even her older sister, Flora. Ah, but when it came to ice magic, it was her sister that was superior. As of right now, since it was her day off, she wanted to try practicing cooking.

"Oh, did you hear?" She was on her way to the kitchen as she heard a few of her fellow maids’ gossip, "Seems Lord Jeralt's daughter has befriended the children. I saw them all in the library. They all looked so adorable." One maid said.

"I saw her heading to the kitchen. They were following her like little ducklings. It was cute sight." The other responded.

"Eh...? The kitchen?" Felicia went pale.

No, no, no!!! An important guest should never be in the kitchen!!! Felicia of the Ice Tribe took her job seriously and ran to the kitchen as she could but trips on her feet easily.

"Kyyaaa!!" She yelled out and was quickly caught by a familiar gloved hand.

"Goodness Felicia!! You need to be careful!! You are lucky I caught you on time!" A man with silver colored hair in a ponytail, pale skin, gray eyes and wearing a butler's clothing, said as he helped his friend up.

"Sorry Jakob. I was heading to the kitchen. Our guest daughter is heading to the kitchen to cook!!! I cannot allow such thing!!" Felicia said.

Jakob sighed. Felicia was a young woman with light pink colored hair in a high ponytail dressed as a maid. Truthfully, she also had daggers hidden under her clothing. She isn't the only one though.

"Look, usually your sister would be in charge of the kitchen today, but she was ordered to accompany Lord Jeralt and his team to guide them through the snow. How about we both go check? I'll make you a coffee to help you calm your nerves." He said.

"Thank you, Jakob!!! This is why you and my sister are engaged!!" Felicia said.

"Ssshhhhhh!!!! I don't want the other to find out!" He hushed her.

She covers her mouth and quickly apologizes. He sighed once more and the two headed to the kitchen.

- With Arisa -

"Mix, mix, mix, then add sugar, pinch of cinnamon, my own mix of honey. Milk, eggs, cream, butter. Tiny bit of baking powder. Mix it up, then add vanilla. Mix mix mix, here we have the recipe for pound cake!!" Arisa said cheerfully as she used a chair to stand on to reach the counter.
The chef, who she learned his name was Toro, smiled proudly as he watched the girl bake. Honestly, she just asked politely is she could use the kitchen to make something for the kids, which he accepted because of how polite she was. Sothis smiled as she sat on the table while the kids sat on the chairs, all watching.

"Bet you 2 coppers she doesn't know what she is doing. Usually commoners or servants cook." Sylvian said as he leaned back in his chair as he watched Byleth ask Toro if he could hand her another bowl and a bag of powdered sugar.

"Come on Sylvain. She seems like a nice person." Ingrid said as she looked over and saw Toro putting the cake in the oven.

"I wonder how her food tastes like...?" Felix said.

"Well...at least it's not Felicia's cake." Ingrid said and all three of them shuddered at the thought of the Cake of Death.

Suddenly everyone heard screech so loud that Arisa swore her eardrums popped. Felix was used to it as was Toro. Poor Sylvian, Ingrid and Sothis were in pain.

"My Lady!!!! Why are you cooking?!?!!?" The female voice screeched, and Arisa turned to the source.

Her eyes went wide as she recognized two familiar faces that she has seen appeared in the Fire Emblem series.

"Felicia and Jakob..." she mentally thought and seems Sothis heard her.

"Y-You. Know them...?" Sothis said weakly as she sluggishly floated over to her friend with her hand over her ear.

"Well..not exactly?" She answered back and saw Jakob using one of the plates to fan the poor woman, who looked ready to pass out at any moment.

Arisa sighed as jumped off the chair and walked over to the two. Toro watched with a playful smile as the scene was about to unfold.

"Hello there!!! I am Arisa Byleth!!! Sorry if I have caused you trouble. As an apology, please allow me to make you some tea." She said politely and gave a small bow.

"No, no, no, it's alright!!! No need to worry My Lady!! I think Felicia has had too many heart attacks today." Jakob said a bit rudely.

"Well, him being rude was true." Arisa mentally groans.

"But I insist." She said and went right back to kitchen counter and started the kitchen stove to have water boil.

"Uummmmm.....My lady...I don't think you should be making the tea. That's my job. Also, you are a guest!!" Felicia said as she saw Arisa pick out the jar of jasmine tea and she smiled at her.

Seems she has recovered. One, the main reason Arisa was doing this was one, to save everyone
from drinking Felicia's tea because it would mean the death of everyone in this room. Two, she
wanted to poke at Jakob. Clearly the man was looking down at her. Well, challenge accepted. She
will prove that she can make a delicious tea! Jakob is an expert in brewing coffee, she will prove
that she is an expert in brewing tea!!! After all, she had a whole shelf of different teas in her old
world!

"It's alright, mi lady. I've made tea many times. I like making it especially for my friends and
family." She said as the water finished boiling and she picked up the 8-cup teapot.

Jakob narrowed his eyes as he watched the girl skillfully pour the hot water into the pot and then
tipped it out. He raised an eyebrow. Felix, Ingrid and Sylvain watched from the table they were
sitting at as Sothis was smiling smugly. Felicia suddenly turned her way and the goddess froze.
The maid slightly cocked her head a bit and blinked.

"That's odd......" she thought, "I know there are only 7 people here yet...it feels like one
more..strange...." Felicia thought as she rested her chin on her hand.

Sothis just let go of a sigh of relief. The maid then turned to Arisa who had now opened the small
porcelain jar that had the sweet apple blend and put 9 tablespoons. 1 per person and one extra for
the pot. Next, pouring in the hot water, she closed the lid and let it steep for 3 minutes.

"Here," Jakob sighed as he walked over to the kitchen counter and places the tea pot and cups on it,
along with the plates, "I'll take it to the table for you. I don't want you to drop it." He said as she
looked at him shocked as he took it to the table where the children were.

"Oh!! Just a few more minutes until the cake is done!" Arisa said excitedly as she got off the chair.

"Also...thank you, Mr..." she pretended not to know his name.

"Jakob. The woman over there is Felicia." He said as he placed the tray down.

"But My lady!!! You even made cakes while I wasn't here!!" Poor Felicia said as she processed
what the girl said and looked ready to faint.

"Hahahah!! No worries dear!! Seems the little lass can take care of herself!" Toro laughed as he
watched the exchange.

"You were supposed to stop her!!" The maid cried and Arisa just smiled.

"Ahh, but it was fun helping her. All I had to do was put the cake in the oven. Don't be so harsh.
Besides, the second one she made is for us. The little lass wanted us servants to also enjoy some
food." Toro said.

"Oh!! The cakes are ready! Mr. Toro, could you take them out for me?" Arisa asked as she began
to serve the tea.

Jakob watched as the young woman served the tea professionally. How can a five-year-old know
how to do such a thing? It takes at most 2 years to full perfect serving tea.

"Of course, lass!" Toro smiled as he walked near the oven and grabbed the wooden paddle.

Carefully, sliding it under the two pound cakes, he pulled them out and put them on a cake tray.
The children all sighed in bliss as the sweet smell of vanilla hit their nostrils. Even more when they
saw Arisa pour a white glaze over cake help it absorbed the sweetness. After 20 minutes of the cakes cooling down, and one maid that fainted, Arisa was happily eating pound cake along with her tea.

"Hmmm....." Jakob said as he held his cup.

Felicia was just face flat on the table, sobbing. Arisa chuckled a bit nervously as she gently patted the woman's head. The butler sighed and took a sip of his tea. His eyes widened. It was perfect. The right sweetness, bitterness, and taste. How?!?!! Only professionals can do such a thing. A five-year-old child should not be able to do something like this yet.

Looked over to the children who were more than happy eating the cake and drinking tea, looking like they just received a gift from the Goddess. Arisa was able to gently coax Felicia and trying some and was glad she did because the woman finally relaxing eating happily. Even Toro was impressed. Jakob looked over to the young girl who made this wonderful concoction. She gave off...this strange funny feeling. How should he put it? Her eyes, they held the glint of some far more mature. He slightly narrowed his eyes. He needs to keep his eyes on this one.

- 40 minutes later -

"Ghhhaaaaaa!!! Sothis, please tell me I wasn't the only one that noticed!!! Jakob kept narrowing his eyes at me!! Did I give myself out too much?! Especially when I was making the tea?!!" Arisa screeched as she was alone in one of the guests living rooms.

She made a quick disappearance after everyone finished eating. She swears she felt Jakob's eyes burning his look into her soul. She honestly would pretend she didn't notice it at all. Sothis sighed to her as she floated in front of her.

"Trust me, you aren't the only one who nearly had their life scared out of them." She said.

"The maid...Felicia...seems she was able to feel my presence." Sothis said as she sat next to her.

The two were sitting on a couch.

"What, that's impossible. Even you told me no one should be able to sense you." Arisa said, worried.

"Correct. Not a single s---" She suddenly went silent and turned to look up to one of the doors.

Arisa followed her gaze as she spotted the other door and on it, was a metal bucket with sand, which clearly if it fell on someone, would gravely hurt them.

"That shouldn't be there." Sothis said and Arisa walked up to the door and pulled it open, quickly jumping as it fell.

The bucket fell with a crash and she stared at it. Clearly there was also glass shards and rocks. This was meant to kill.

"Tch. What the hell?" She turned to look outside the door and saw a young boy who looked about
maybe around 7 years old. He had messy red hair and almost looked like an evil version of Sylvian.

"I beg thy pardon but why is this here? And who are you?" Arisa said as she narrowed her eyes at much older boy.

"Isn't it obvious, I wanted to prank my brother and his little spoiled brats of friends. Names Miklan. What's a commoner doing here?" He said to her coldly.

Arisa's widen as she stared at older boy. This was the same man that would become a bandit and....

"First of all," she began, "This was clearly meant to kill. The sand add weight, the metal bucket, the glass shards are meant to cut. The rocks are used to break bones. This was clearly made to kill!!" She glared at him.

Miklan glared at her.

"So what? Brats like them are the reason...if..he wasn't.." he gritted his teeth and glared at her.

"A mere commoner like you wouldn't understand." He growled.

His face suddenly turned to confusion as he saw her angry face turned to one of sadness but saw her sigh. She walked over to one of the closets and opened it, she saw there was a broom and dustpan, got it, and went back to clean it up.

"You shouldn't be cleaning that up. Make him do it." Sothis said and Arisa just shook her head.

"No, it's alright Sothis. Clearly he is in pain." Arisa mentally answered back as she bent down to clean it up only to suddenly hit with a wave of sand on the face, a few pieces cut her cheek.

She dropped the pan tray, broom and slowly turned her head towards the boy, who looked at her with a very punchable and ignorant smirk.

"Good, a commoner like you should clean up this mess. You dare speak to me that way?" He said.

"Sothis."

"Do it."

Oh, how Miklan regretted his actions. 
Okay, I got to admit that cake and tea was absolutely delicious. Not bad, not bad." Sylvian said as he walked in front and Ingrid and Felix behind him.

"By the way, I haven't seen...Miklan anywhere yet. I'm getting a bad feeling." Ingrid said and Felix noticed how Sylvian stiffen.

"Hahaha!! I'm sure he's just playing around." Sylvian smiled but unconsciously rubbed his left shoulder.

Hidden under his clothing, was a big bruise that he got from his older brother.

"Sylvian...." Felix said and the older boy just smiled.

"No worries!! I'm---------" he didn't get to finish.

"GHHHAAAAAA!!!"

Everyone suddenly jumped back when the door to the guest hall burst open and out came rolling Milkan with bruised cheeks and Arisa on top of him.

"DO THAT AGAIN AND I SWEAR THESE PUNCHES ARE NOTHING TO WHAT YOU DO TO SYLVIAN!!! "Byleth roared as the boy pushed her off and lunged at her.

She lunged back those two were going at with punches. She pulls his hair and he pulled hers.

"TAKE BACK WHAT YOU SAID!!" Miklan yelled back as she punched him in the eye.

"NO WAY I WILL!!! YOU ARROGANT PRICK!! DON'T YOU EVER TAKE OUT YOUR ANGER AGAIN ON SYLVAIN AGAIN!! I WILL PERSONALLY BREAK YOUR JAW IF YOU HURT HIM AGAIN!!" She yelled.

Ingrid ran to get the adults to stop the fight between the two older kids. Arisa ran to the boy and her old instincts began to kick in as she began to use her martial arts go fight the boy.

"YOU BITCH!!" He yelled out and swung a punch at her.

Felix was terrified by what he was witnessing and hid behind Sylvian. The said boy was just in shock to see someone actually physically fighting his older brother. He could not help but feel pleased seeing Miklan suffer the pain he inflicted on him. The two boys froze when Miklan stopped them and yelled.

"THIS IS YOUR FAULT!!" Milkan yelled and charged at the two.

"DON'T YOU DARE HURT THEM!!" Arisa yelled and threw herself on Miklan before he got to them.

"HERE!!" Ingrid yelled as Jakob, Toro, and a few other servants ran down the hallways ran towards the two and separated them.

"LET ME GO!! I'LL KILL THIS GIRL!!" Miklan yelled as he was pulled back by Toro.

"LET ME GO!! I'LL KICK HIS BLOODY ARSE (Sothis: Lan--!! You know what, never mind!)
TO THE MOON!!! DON'T YOU EVER LAY YOUR HANDS-ON SYLVAIN AGAIN OR I WILL HAUNT YOU TILL THE DAY YOU DIE!!!" Arisa yelled as she was being held back by Jakob.

Sylvain’s eyes widened when he heard that. No one...has ever stood up for him like that.

"What is going on?!"

Everyone turned and saw Florencio had returned early today. Miklan huffed as he finally cooled down and Arisa hissed like a cat at the boy.

"My Lord, we...had to stop a fight between these two." Jakob answered as he finally as he let go of Arisa.

The girl had a busted lip, a bruised cheek, a few cuts on her face. Miklan looked ten times worse. The girl pointed her finger at the boy as if she was about to send him to execution.

"This prick put a bucket filled with sand, rocks and shards of glass on top of one of the doors in the guest room!!! He's lucky it didn't fall on me or any of the kids because it would have hurt them!! I let it fall on the floor and decided to clean it but this.....this.....Arrrrghhh!!! Can someone cover the kids ears before I say my next words?!" She said and Felicia did just that as did two other maids to Felix and Ingrid, "Son of BITCH LOOKED DOWN AT ME AND KICKED THE SAND WITH GLASS SHARDS AT ME AS I CHOSE TO CLEAN IT UP!!! NOW HE BRAGGED HOW HE HURT HIS BROTHER!! I'LL SKIN HIM ALIVE!!" The girl roared with so much anger at him.

She understood his anger. She honestly hated the Crest System, and saw the flaws it has caused, the negative effects on society. But she also why it was established. She understood the two sides of the coins. That's why she always wanted to know the facts first before she made her decisions. But one thing she will never tolerate, is abuse. Especially that.

Florenceo had never seen Byleth so angry before and saw the older boy glare at her. These two for sure were going to kill each other and left alone. So this herself was surprised. She was beginning to regret not stopping the girl from lashing out.

"Look here you commoner!! You have no right to talk to me like that!!! Take back what you said about me being an arrogant prick!" Miklan yelled.

"Never!!" Arisa yelled back.

Good thing they were being held back again.

"Okay that's enough!" Florencio said as he looked down at the two.

"Both of you apologize to each other this instant!" He said.

Arisa just gave one look that absolutely scared the hell out of Miklan that made him so silent and run a different direction completely. Felicia was going to go after him but stopped when Florencio said to leave the boy be.
Arisa growled as she was finally let go by Jakob and walked over to Sylvian and Felix.

"Are you two alright?" She smiled to them.

"Am I alright?! You look horrible!!" Sylvian said and froze when she patted his head.

"This is nothing. I'm just glad you, Felix and Ingrid are safe. If I haven't discovered that bucket, you three would be hurt." She said.

Felix started crying as did Ingrid. Florencio sighs as he walked over to the girl and bent down to have a better look at her face.

"Look at you...already causing trouble and it's only the first day. Sigh...luckily my healing magic will fix you up." He said as his small magic circle appeared above the girl and her bruises disappeared, her cuts, and busted lip healed.

"Thank you." She said and he shook his head.

"Don't think you're free. You're in trouble young lady!! You could have gotten hurt! Well...you did but that's not the point!!" He said and she couldn't help but giggle.

Arisa turned to everyone and vowed to them.

"I'm sorry I caused everyone so much trouble today. Really." She said.

"My lady please raise your head!!" Jakob said.

Today was just one thing after another.

- Later on -

Once again, she was in the guest room. Miklan had shut himself away in his while Florencio, after giving her a huge scolding, had to return with the rest of the team. He came to check on her to see if she was alright. Unfortunately, he was going to tell Jeralt about the fight she had gotten in. She begged him not to, but he did not budge one bit. So now, here she was, sitting on a couch and reading the story of Loog and The Silver Maiden. The girl sighed as she closed the book and groaned into her hands.

"I overdid it.... I acted on impulse....I did too many mistakes....I acted like a child and lashed out.....I'm such an idiot...." she muttered as she saw Sothis appear and patted her head.

"It's alright. I understand your anger, but you do the right thing. If you haven't intervened, those children would have been hurt by that boys’ actions." Sothis said and Arisa chuckled dryly.

"Thank you....this is the second time I had encountered such a situation. I still acted impulse.....To be honest...you saying I did the right thing....means a lot...." Arisa said.

"What do you mean?" Sothis said.

Sothis noticed that the children have come in and chose not to say anything and decided to see if
the children would be silent and hear the girl talk. Seems they did.

"A long time ago....I saw a boy being bullied. My aunt and I were buying some things. We noticed a group of boys of ganging up on one. One of them was about to pull off a knife on them and we intervene. We made sure the boy was safe and made sure he got home safely because the others were on the verge of following him. Once we made sure the kid was safe, we returned to the store an encountered the brat there. He kept mocking us and I nearly lashed out on him. My aunt stopped me on time." Arisa chuckled dryly.

"Both my parents said I should not intervene and even my friend began to think the same. I kept thinking; did I do wrong? Was it my mistake? Should have I? Did I make things worse? I honestly started crying because they all began to point out the mistakes I made. I was just angry. Why couldn't they see that I wanted to help the boy? That I saved him from nearly getting killed? I was just...sigh...the situation reminded me of Sylvian and my baby brother. " she said.

Everyone was silent as they continued to hear her talk.

"I was picked on, my little brother was bullied and picked on...Sylvian is picked on by his brother...I just saw my baby brother in Sylvain and my siblings in Ingrid and Felix. That's how I am...no one messes or hurts my family or friends. Sigh....I'm just glad they are okay. That is what is important to me. I haven't met the kids long but...I care about them...more than anyone thinks." Arisa smiled sadly.

Sylvian was silent as he saw the girl degrading herself. This was the first time he had heard someone speaking truthfully. In his first 4 years of life, many have just seen him for his Crest. His brother blamed him for something that he had no control of. So, hearing someone truthfully care about him, and even his friends, going as far as to even get into a physical fight.

"I still have much to learn....incluso si soy mayor de lo que parezco..." she said.

Arisa turned when she felt a hand on her shoulder and eyes went wide as she saw it was Sylvian and the children.

"Sothis!!" Arisa mentally yelled and saw the goddess was smiling.

"I think it would have been best if the children heard you." Was all the goddess said before she disappeared.

"Thank you." Was all Sylvian said.

He truly was thankful. The boy suddenly began panicking when she saw tears start falling from the girl's eyes.

"Sylvian made a girl cry!!" Ingrid glared at him.

"I'm disappointed." Felix said.

"Oh, come on!" Sylvian said and they all turned when they heard Arisa started laughing and suddenly hugged all three of them.

"Thank you all. I truly am happy." Arisa smiled as she patted each of their heads.

"So...umm...can we call you big sister?" Ingrid asked.
"Of course!! I'm your big sis Byleth!!" Arisa said proudly.

"Wait, I'm older than you, aren't I?" Sylvian said.

"I'm 5 years old and you are four. Plus, I'm taller than you." Arisa snickered as she saw the boy's pride shattered.

But even Sylvian couldn't help but laugh. Indeed, Arisa was more than happy to see a real smile on the boy's face.

[ ---- ]

"Tag you're it!!" Ingrid giggled as she tagged Felix on the back and made a dash from him

"No way!!" Felix yelled out as he raced after the girl and Sylvain kept dodging his touches like some damn ninja.

Arisa couldn't help but giggle as she watched the children play. She sat at one of the couches as she watched the kids playing tag. She wanted to finish reading the book of Loog and the Silver Maiden. She's honestly glad to have such an opportunity to read it in person. She was still struggling a bit but Sothis was helping her reading it, correcting her on pronunciation and with words she couldn't read.

"It's pronounced like this, Za-na-dos." Sothis said as she was pointing to one of the words.

Arisa nodded and was going to continue reading when a voice called her out.

"Hey you!"

Everyone turns to look to the right, only to see Glenn glaring at her with arms crossed.

"Can I help you?" Arisa said as she closed her book.

She had a pretty good idea that he must have gotten the news that she got into a physical fight with Miklan. And she would do it all over--- well may more on the tame tamed side. Glenn glared at her. Oh, he definitely heard about the fight. He was on his way to the library when he overheard Felicia and Jakob speaking to the other servants that the fight between Lady Byleth and Miklan should be kept among themselves. If the Lords of Gautier heard about this, there will be trouble. Then again, he had to agree, Miklan deserved that beating. He had passed by the boy’s room and he had to take a step back after seeing how beat up the boy was before Florencio healed him. He witnesses the magician give the boy a scolding that was just as scary as the lectures his mother gave him if he got into trouble. The face Miklan had, was priceless.

"I don't know who you are or how you made my brother call you.."Big Sis", but I don't like you." He said.

He definitely didn't like it one bit. Maybe it was his pride? After all, the girl was younger than him
and looked like a frail thing. How can this girl leave Miklan like some ragged beat up doll? Then again, Ingrid was the same. His future wife was beautiful flower but when wronged, she unleashed her thorns,

"Oh, now I remember. This kid is basically the version of Felix when he is older." Arisa thought as she put it down and just smiled.

"I beg thy pardon my lord. I just wanted him to be safe because he told he was lost and was crying." She said back in a sarcastic tone that she would use against Theresa when the two girls were roasting each other.

*The burns are still there...sniff.* Glenn didn't like it one bit. Who does she think she is?!

"So now you're mocking me?!" He said.

Arisa stood up and the children stopped to watch. Glenn stood tall as the two were the same height despite the age difference. The two had a stare down till she suddenly lifted her hand and had two fingers on his forehead. What came next, he did not expect.

"Ouch!!" She flicked his forehead.

"Didn't your mother teach your manners? It is very wrong to be rude to a lady. The proper way to introduce yourself is like this." She smiled at him and did a small vow.

The boy hissed as he placed his hands on his forehead, hoping to smooth the pain. It hurt alright. His mother does the same thing!

"It is a pleasure to meet you Lord Glenn. I am Arisa Byleth, a mercenary in training. And now it is your turn to properly introduce yourself." She smiled to the boy.

Glenn glared.

"I am Glenn Ciron Fraldarius." he said to her coldly and then she suddenly smacked him on the head.

"That is not how to properly introduce yourself!!! You are using a cold tone what's more, glaring!!! Do want wrinkles on your face already?!" The girl said sternly.

Yeah. She definitely reminded him of his mother, and it was terrifying.

*Hell, like no fury like a woman scorned.*

Sothis had her hands over her mouth to keep herself from bursting out laughing, as did a few servants that were passing by. Glenn had turned red and looked down to the floor as the girl continued scolding him.

The next 2 hours were Arisa scolding Glenn and giving him lessons on how to properly speak to people. The poor kids (especially Sylvain and Felix) ran for their lives thinking they were next. Sothis was had broke at this point and was laughing the entire time as the girl continued to lecture the boy.
"She did what?!!" Jeralt said as they were scouting the forest near the road.

Lord Rodrigue was not too far away and just like him, many looked towards the mercenary's way. A young woman with blue hair, dressed a maid was a bit worried. That is Flora.

"Yeah.....she beat that boy like a ragged doll. Also, I gave her a good scolding because of the number of curses she was saying." Florencio chuckled a bit nervously.

"Well, we know that the Captain's daughter can put up a pretty good fight." One of the men, Zack, said from one of the trees he was on.

"You're not helping, ne!" Rin yelled out from up above since she was using a wyvern that was lent to her.

"Sigh......I'll talk to her when we return. Did she say the reason why she fought the boy?" Jeralt said and Florencio smiled.

"Truthfully, she actually did state her reason. She confronted the boy because he wanted to hurt his younger brother and the children. And as you can tell, this angered her very much and she pounced at that boy." Florencio explained as he caught the dagger that Zach threw at him.

Lord Rodrigue just stared and Flora giggled. She knows a good Assassin when she sees one.

"Hmmm....I guess that's a good reason." Jeralt chuckled as he caught the next dagger that was thrown.

"That's two daggers found. Spread out the search. Seems our suspicions were correct about this area being a hide out for bandits and assassins." Jeralt ordered his team.

"Yes Sir!!" His team yelled a spread out.

Lord Rodrigue was impressed as he watched the mercenaries scout the area. He had heard stories of Jeralt, The Blade Breaker. Truthfully, it was one of the main reasons why his friend and King, had chosen to hire such man. To see him in action.

"Yeah, just heard....his daughter left the boy like a rag doll!!" One his men whispered to the other.

"You know what they say, never underestimate a woman. Their anger is the one thing no man wants to face." The other responded.

"Like how pissed off your wife and sister the other day by accidentally pouring salt instead of sugar into the coffee?" One snorted.

"It was an accident!!" The other argued.

Rodrigue couldn't help but chuckle. Indeed, hearing the news of Jeralt having a daughter was a bit of a surprise. The girl was kind and his son Felix has gotten attached to her. The way she acts, she is polite. He wondered if she makes a good wife for his son. Perhaps he should propose such an idea to her father. Then again, Jeralt is a father and he knows very well how protective fathers get when it comes to their daughters.
Yeah, maybe not a good idea.

- Hours Later: Night -

"Hmmm....looks like dad is coming late today." Arisa said as she was in her room alone.

Her only company was Sothis. The goddess was still giggling over what had happened earlier with Glenn.

"That was spectacular show!!! I couldn't be more satisfied than watching you teach the child a lesson he needed!!" Sothis wiped a tear from her eye as she saw Arisa sitting on a chair and writing in a journal at the desk.

It was a simple green leather journal that she had personally bought. She was also surprised it came with a lock, which she gladly appreciated. Arisa chose to write in Japanese so if one day someone discovered her journal, they wouldn't be able to understand it. She does hope it will be found one day far, far, far in the future. Pretty much when she is already dead, and her descendants live on. If she ever gets married. Back in her previous life, she honestly took classes to learn Japanese because she honestly wanted to have a better understanding of the culture. Yes, some of her friends teased her that she was doing it because of anime (*maybe a little*), but she wanted to try something new. At least she doesn't speak in broken Japanese. She is a tiny bit of a weeb but not so much so that people will cringe out or get annoyed.

The struggle with Japanese ......was real. Countless nights of studying, power points, projects, coffee, no food, and crying breakdowns paid off well. Seriously, who the hell invented kanji??! That was a nightmare to remember them all.

"Yeah, but now I'm worried I traumatize the kids." She said back with a worried chuckle as she continued to write.

Sothis smiled and floated to her. Her eyes became a bit confused as she saw the extremely foreign language though some of it did look familiar. Unfortunately, she could not read it. Curses.

"I never seen this language before. You humans have so many. It's amazing how much knowledge that brain of yours has." She said.

Arisa smiles to her sadly. Knowledge huh? Honestly, it's both a blessing and a curse.

"Yes, we do. I know 4 different languages and a little bit of a fifth one. I wanted to travel to different parts of the world and teach astronomy to many others." Arisa began and looked out the window.

"You be surprise how much there is out there. The different kinds of people. The incredible undiscovered lands, food, spices, cultures, so, so, so, so many things." She said.
Her eyes filled with sadness and nostalgia. Only now, the wave of "homesickness" was hitting her again.

"Child, why are you crying? What's wrong?" Sothis began to get worried as Arisa began sobbing lightly.

Home. Earth...she missed it all.

A few of the girl's tears had fallen in her journal, showing her pain. She couldn’t say goodbye to mother, she wasn't able to say goodbye to her beloved siblings. She wasn't even able to say goodbye to her friends and the rest of her family. She died alone. Her last bit of life, alone. The cold hospital room, her eyes were becoming heavy as she laid, looking at the window, looking at the stars. Even if it hurts to move just a bit, she still reached out her hand, as if she could touch the stars. At that point, her eyes closed, and her hand dropped heavily down. The single lone tear that fell from her eyes, she was happy, seeing the stars one last time. She missed home. It wasn't the same exactly as her old home.

"I'm okay Sothis." Arisa smiled sadly and wiped her tears away, "I just remembered something. That's all." She said.

Truthfully, this was something she wanted to bare alone but one day, she may open up to someone. For now, she will write away her memories in books, because she does not want to forget them. Even if they were both painful and full of love, she wanted those memories of old to stay with her. They shaped her into the person she is. Sothis looked at her sadly and then hugged her tightly. It surprised Arisa, and the warmth felt like a mother comforting her child. Sothis for some reason felt she understood the girl's pain despite not fully understanding her situation. She only knew a certain amount like the girl. But for now, she shall comfort her. For this means so much to her.

"It's alright. I don't know what happened, I may never know, but if you wish to tell me one day, I will be here. I will listen to you cry. I will listen to you scream. I will listen to you when you are angry. So, one day, I do hope you can open up to me as I shall do without you." Sothis smiled kindly as she gently wiped the tears off Arisa's eyes.

Thank you Sothis. Really." Arisa smiled to her.

"Now, why don't you go to sleep now? It is getting late. Don’t want your father to catch you now, would we? " Sothis said and Arisa nodded, closing her journal, and putting it in her bag.

"I do wonder how things will go tomorrow?" Arisa said as she jumped on her bed and laid down.

Just as she was going to close her eyes to sleep, she realized something. Should...the children remember her? Should she be involved in their lives? Should she.....

She suddenly sat up as it dawned on her the impact is creating. One...what exact changes is she creating? Honestly, fear began to cloud her judgement. She was afraid. She really was. What danger would these children get into if they got involved with her? Especially since Rhea is still out searching for her. Seriously, at times, both Sothis and her feel shivers crawling down their spines. No... she needs to do something. But...it may be the most painful decision she will make.
"Ummm...Sothis...can I ask you something?" She said as she saw the goddess turned to her.

"Yaaawnnn....what is it?" Sothis yawned as she floated over to her and laid down next to her.

"Is it...possible for you to teach me a spell to erase someone's memories?" She asked.

The goddess's eyes suddenly narrowed as she sat back up and stared at the girl with pure confusion. Why would she ask for such a spell? Hmm...the memories are foggy, but she knows she definitely knows a spell like that. Her knowledge is ancient, that she knows.

"Yes, I could. But tell me, why you would want to learn such spell? First of all, we don't even know if you are able to use magic yet." She said as she saw the girl avoid eye contact with her.

Arisa was hesitant but spoke.

"I....sigh...Felix, Ingrid and Sylvain should not remember me when I leave. I.....don't want "a certain person" to come after them. I won't erase their memories of me completely, but at most, for them to be a blur and not remember my face. They have forgotten me but yet have not." She said.

Does such spell actually exist in this world? Arisa remembered it because from one of her favorite manga she would read in middle school. Alice in the Country of Hearts. She loves that serious.

"Why?" Sothis asked sadly, "Why would you want these people to forget you? I know you grew to care deeply for them. No. You already cared deeply about them. As if you have known them your whole life!! Why would you want the ones you love to forget you?!" Sothis said as she held the girl by her shoulders.

The feeling of being forgotten, it was fear that both had deeply rooted inside their heart.

"Because...because fate won't be kind to them!!! There will be a time where I may become their enemy instead of their ally!! I......I just don't want them to be trapped in fragile memory of me!! I.....I may...have to take their lives one day...." Arisa said.

Sothis looked at this girl in bitterness and sorrow. Even her own feelings seem to merge with this girl. When the feeling of sadness, sorrow and even anger felt so familiar to her. This girl has seen the paths of time. Even if the girl did not let her see her memories, just the emotions, the inner turmoil this girl has, was enough to grasp the situation. The goddess sighed and understood. She gave the girl a hug before she looked her straight in the eyes.

"Very well then. I will teach you it if you are capable of using magic. We still have one more day before we head off to guard the king and his family. Tomorrow morning, you will wake up and go to the training grounds. Alright?" She said and Arisa nodded.

Honestly, what is that girl thinking?

- The Next Day -

Bright and early she got up indeed. Her father had come in late at night to check on her before he went to sleep. Sandy seemed almost like a walking popsicle stick. She must really hate the cold.
The woman had gotten up an hour earlier than her, got dressed, got her supplies and headed out. Arisa snuck a tiny letter in her bag saying she wished them all good luck and to be safe. The girl sighed as she combed her hair, put it in a high ponytail and put on a gray colored winter dress that was easy to move in. She wore black tights with short over it and also black boots. As she quietly left her room, she spotted two maids whispering to each other.

"Time to hear the tea spill." She thought and like before, not a single sound was made as she walked over to them.

The words that left the two maids’ lips, made her morning become bitter.

"Can you believe it? Tomorrow is the second anniversary of the death of The Queen Consort....." the maid smiled sadly to her friend.

"Sigh...this will be the second time his highness will attend the memorial. I wonder if the young prince remembers her?" The other said.

"The boy was an infant when she passed away. The memories are nothing but blurs." The other said.

"Even so, I'm sure the King has told his children of how lovely his wife was. Though, I admit, I still worry for their safety. There has been a rise of bandits lately." She said.

"I see....so that's why my father was hired." Arisa finally out loud, and a monotone voice. The maid’s eyes went wide as they slowly turned towards the young girl's voice, who smiled sadly, looking to the ground.

"I'll be going now. Thank you." She politely vowed to them as she turned away.

As she left, one of the maids fainted from shock and her friend caught her. This was information they should have not spoken!!!

After passing the library, barely escaping Jakob's wrath from stealing a few pieces of bread and fruits from the kitchen, Arisa arrived at the training grounds with a faint of heart. The room was made of stone, it reminded her of the Knight's hall in the monastery. One area was a big empty field that was used for sparring. There were target practice line up along with wooden and stuffed dummies. The walls were aligned with practice weapons. She could hear a few horses not too far way. Meaning the stables were close by. She should visit Red Hare after her training. As she walked a bit deeper into the room, she heard grunting and panting. At the other side of the room, near a wooden dummy, she spotted Glenn. The boy was practicing his sword skills as he trusted his wooden sword forward. She was very impressed by the skill the boy had. His charges were smooth, and his attacks hit hard. She swore she saw some chips fly off the wooden doll. Glenn stopped when he felt someone staring at him and turn to the direction, he felt it coming from. He saw it was the girl and glared.

"What is she doing here?" He thought as he narrowed his eyes.

Arisa merely sent him a small wave as she walked over to the other side, where there was a wooden dummy, mostly used by archers to practice. She also noticed a few burn spots on it. Seems it was also used for magic practice.

"Alright, now let's start with something simple." Sothis appeared and Arisa nodded.
The goddess was not blind. She felt the bitter mood the girl was in.

"What's wrong? Is this about what you heard a few minutes ago?" She asked and the girl nodded.

"Child," Sothis floated to her and held her hands, "It's alright. I know you feel sorrow but being like this won't change anything. You yourself must be that change. So, will you remain glum like this or continue forward?" She said.

She honestly wanted this girl to be herself. Even if not one can see it, Arisa was constantly holding herself back. If she wanted, she could have easily hugged the hugged children and showered them in love and kindness like she did with her siblings in her old world, but she held herself back. The feeling that she doesn't any of this is still there. And it will be, for a very, very long time. Sothis couldn't help but smile warmly as she saw the light lit in Arisa's eyes once more. It was started for the long road that will come to head in the future.

"Alright, now, concentrate." Sothis ordered as the two turned to the wooden dummy.

"Stand straight, your back must not arch. Bend your knees just a little bit as if you are about to attack physically. Not too forward either. For now, we will start with a simple wind spell to see if you are capable." Sothis said as she saw the girl follow her instructions.

Arisa straighten her posture, and raised one hand towards the dummy, making sure she was at least 6 feet away. Next, she bent her knees a bit. The position she was in was like the palm technique she learned in her martial arts class. With her hand raised and her palm facing the doll.

"Good. Now, imagine there is a glass cup in front of you. Slowly pour water into it. But do not pour that water too fast. We don't want it to overflow. Concentrate that energy to the palm of your hand. Do not rush it. Relax. Clear your mind. Like a budding flower bud, gently let that flower bloom in your hand." Sothis said as she saw the girl follow her instructions.

Glenn stopped his training and raised an eyebrow as he watched Arisa was in a foreign fighting position but seemed, almost relaxed. It was a strange sight.

"What is she doing...?" He thought as she stabbed his sword to the ground and leaned on it a bit.

His eyes widened a bit as he suddenly felt his Crest react. His hand was over his chest as he felt his heartbeat increase a bit. He had never had this reaction before. Especially his Crest. He looked back to girl and his eyes widened as he noticed it. A tiny green flicker a few inches from the palm of her hand.

"So magic. Ha, its tiny." He snickered.
Seriously? That was the sorriest excuse of a spell he had ever seen. Even Felicia could do better, and she was horrible when it came to ice magic.

**Whoosh!!**

A gust of wind hit his face suddenly. That shouldn't have been that rumored ghost.

"What the?" He rubbed his cheek.

It now stung a bit. What the hell? Too bad he couldn't see that it was Sothis trying to smack him for looking down at the girl.

"Bigger.....it needs to be bigger..." Arisa thought and the flicker was growing even more. It looked like a small flower bud and becoming much more...sharp.

Glenn's eyes widened which caused the goddess to turn back and grin proudly as she saw her teachings bear fruits.

"Open your eyes." Sothis smiled as she floated back to the girl.

Slowly, she opened them, Arisa's eyes went wide as she saw the transparent green colored shaped blade that floated near her hand. It looked similar to one of the blades that Jakob carries (yes, she found them and was very much afraid) but a bit more deadly.

"Not bad, not bad at all for your first try. Now, throw it at the dummy." Sothis pointed to it.

Arisa nodded as she took a deep breath and pushed her palm forward as if she was striking a person.

"Haayaa!!" She yelled as she threw the blade and it stuck into the wooden doll.

It was a hit. The two girls couldn't help but feel prideful as the blade was starting to disintegrate but those expressions morphed into shock.

**Crack! Crack!! Crack!!! BOoom!!**

The blade dissolved in a small explosion that created cracks around the chest of the wooden doll. The wood cracked like it was glass and there in the center of it, was a miniature hole. They weren't huge, but if they did hit a real person, it could hurt them badly. At most, it would kill them. Arisa looked at her hands as they began to shake a bit. There it was again. **Fear.**

"Hey."

The girl smelled out of it as she turned to see Glenn looking at her with arms crossed. Glenn stared
at her. He had an uneasy feeling with this girl. Like if she would best him.

"That was magic right?" He asked and she nodded.

"It's...my first time casting a spell." She whispered.

"Not bad." He said as he uncrossed his arms and pointed to the doll "But you're gonna need that blade to be bigger if you want to do real damage. Aren't you a mercenary in training?" He asked.

"Is that problem?" She responded back blankly.

That threw him off. She was the daughter of a mercenary, yet, he could clearly tell she hated fighting. He might as well hear what she has to say.

"If I could, I would sit in my room all day and read books, draw and sing. I enjoy learning new things. But I hate fighting and I don't want to hurt someone. Sigh...I don't know why you don't like me, and I get you got jealous of me that Felix called me "Big Sister," but," she looked at him straight at his eyes, "I don't plan on holding back to become stronger." She said.

Glenn was silent but smirked. Yeah, this girl was afraid. She wanted nothing to do with fighting but was forcing herself to learn the skills of survival. He could relate. He was once the same after all.

"Alright then. Good luck. You know, talking to you, it almost felt like I was talking to an adult." He said.

Honestly it did feel like that. She seemed wiser than she looks. Arisa twitched at that comment but nodded.

"I get that a lot." She smiled.

"So, how about we spar? I heard your dad has been teaching you how to use a sword." He said.

"I guess but I don't like the big swords. I want a rapier." She said.

She was dead set on getting her hands one or else she'll make one herself. Glenn raised an eyebrow at her but pointed to the sword rack to the right, next to the wooden swords. Arisa's eyes lit up like Christmas lights when she saw them.

"A RAPIER!!" She said excitedly, ran to that rack like a rabbit and grabbed one that was the right size for her.

"Aaaahhhhh!!" She shook excitedly as she looked at the slender weapon in her hand.

Sothis shook her head but decided to observe to see what happened next.

"Well damn, I never seen a girl this excited over a sword." Glenn said and she grinned.

"So, that sparring match? You still up for it?" She smirked.

He couldn't help but smirk back as he grabbed his own. The two quickly went to the shelves and put on the protective gear. Two sword styles, completely different. The boy held his sword in the traditional style of the Kingdom and Arisa held the practice rapier like she was taught.
"Ready, set, en garde!!" Both yelled and charged at each other.

[ ---- ]

"Thank goodness that ended early today!!! That blizzard looked like it was brutal today!" Jeralt said as he and Lord Rodrigue and the rest of everyone came back, all groaning and perhaps some just let themselves fall on the floor and refused to get up.

"Captain......don't ever....make me go up the snow hills again..." Sandy said from the floor.

Rodrigue laughed as did the rest of his men. They were already used to this landscape and temperature.

"Don't worry, you get used to it at some point!! I'm sure you are all looking forward to a warm meal. I can assure you; the chefs make the best meals here in Faerghus!" Lord Rodrigue said as Florencio helped his sister up.

"That I believe!" One of his men yelled out.

They all began to walk to the training room to put away their weapons, but opening the doors, they did not expect the sight they witnessed.

"Not bad!!!! You're better than expected!!" Glenn yelled as he grinned through his mask as his sword clashed with Byleth.

"Not bad yourself!!! Finally, a worthy opponent!!! Our battle will be legendary!!" Byleth grinned as the two were locked in a heated sparring match.

Neither of them noticed that their fathers were at the door.

"Well, now...." Jeralt said as he crossed his arms and smirked proudly as he watched the two kids sparring, "seems my sword lessons have been paying off." He chuckled.

Lord Rodrigue couldn't help but chuckle as he saw the two still going at it.

"Seems your daughter is quite the sword. I'm impressed. She would make a fine sword Master one day." He said.

Jeralt nodded and then both turned when they heard a yelp and saw Byleth's wooden rapier pointing down the knocked down Glenn, who glared.

"My point." Arisa smiled proudly.

"Dammit!! I was so close!!" Glenn growled.

Arisa giggled as she reached her hand to him and he took it, as she helped him up.

"Wonderful match!!"
"Not bad kiddo!"

Both turned as they took off their masks and saw it was their father's. Jeralt ruffled his daughter's hair as Rodrigue placed his hand on his son's shoulder and nodded.

"We're impressed. It has been awhile since I seen you have that much fun Glenn." Rodrigue said and the boy grinned proudly.

"Yeah, I guess it was, but I got one more thing to say before we head off to breakfast." and he turned to Arisa like an executioner.

"On this day forth!!! I declare you my rival!" He yelled.

Arisa was just trying to process what was just said as she heard Sothis snicker.

"WHAT?!?!"

Sothis was now a laughing mess as she saw the two kids begin to argue with one another. The adults couldn't help but laugh at this predicament.

The day was no longer bitter but had turned sweet.

- The Following Day: Death Anniversary of the Queen -

Once again, this time she got up early with the entire house. Everyone got themselves dressed. Felicia, Jakob and Flora will be going with them also. Arisa had gotten dressed and headed to the stables to quickly check on Red Hare. The little pegasus snorted at her angrily, and he could he demanded why he has not visit him.

"Sorry Red. Been busy." She apologized to him as he shook his head.

She saw him flap his wings and both her and Sothis squealed as they saw him fly up a bit and circled around them. She had a pretty good idea the other pegasus had been helping him. She didn't want to leave him behind, so she begged her father to let her bring him along. Jeralt gave in and let the little foal come along, but he will stay inside the wagon because they will be going a very long distance to the royal cemetery.

She heard the formations discussed on how the royal carriage would be guarded. The formation was, the king's carriage in the middle, Jeralt, Rodrigue and six other knights with their horses would be guarding the front. Rodrigue and Jeralt leading the front group. Sandy was in charge with the group in the back. Florencio was at the right side of the wagon with three other people and there was another group of four on the left. There were also two wyverns and pegasus riders. The
formation was meant to heavily guard the royal family. She watched in silence as she was feeding Red Hare in the back. Arisa wore a green colored fur cloak for extra protection from the cold. After all, the Holy Kingdom of Faerghus was built in a harsh cold environment that forced the people to survive. Underneath her cloak, she wore a long sleeve winter dress that went all the way down to her ankles. She wore boots that she could run in. Looking out a bit, she was amazed by the beautiful white snow that covered the trees. The royal carriage was in the center and she could see there were a few glass windows that were covered from the inside with curtains. The was a small back window and she did see a bit of movement. She giggled as she saw a small hand wave from the inside, and she couldn't help but wave back. Her bet it was Dimitri or one of his siblings.

"Neigh.......neigh...."

"Huh?" She said as she suddenly saw Red Hare shaking.

"What's wrong?" She asked as she gently hugged the little one, worried. She had never seen Red Hare this scared. The last time she saw him this scared was when she first met him. Suddenly, she felt this strange sensation at the back of her neck. It felt...dark. She didn't like it and gulped as she turned her head to look through a small crack in wagon's cloth. There. It wasn't visible and none of the adults could sense it. She noticed a shadow hidden between the trees and her eyes narrowed it. She isn't a fool.

"Sothis, I need you to do me a favor." She said.

"I see wasn't the only one to notice." Sothis appeared as she floated next to her and petted the foal to calm him down.

It worked a bit.

"They aren't hostile right now, but they clearly plan on attacking their target, which is the king and his family." Arisa said.

"If they attack, I need you to use your time pulse. The first time they attack, we have no idea from where or time." She said.

Sothis nodded and understood. Seems this girl is learning fast.

"Very well then." She smiled.

"Think you can stir up some.... warning?" Arisa grinned.

Sothis smiled as she flew out of the wagon and the sky. All the creatures noticed her and a few of them got scared.

"Whoa!! What's wrong?" Lord Rodrigue said to his stallion as it took a step back.

The shadow twitched at this. Sothis smirked as she raised her hands and the wind began to pick up suddenly, shaking the trees violently.

"WHOOOOAAAAAA!!!" Many began to yell as the wyrens, pegasus and horses began to get scared.
Sothis grinned suddenly as she made the trees shake violently at the direction of the shadow.

"Arrghh!! Curses!! Fall back!! Some mage noticed us and is creating this wind!" The shadow whispered and they withdrew quickly before the wind got worse.

"Take that!" Sothis said and flew back to the wagon.

"Why are the animals suddenly glaring at me?!" Sandy said as she saw all the animals glaring her way.

"What did you do?" One of the knights said.

"Nothing!! Seriously, I did nothing!!" She said back.

Sothis felt bad for Sandy but quickly flew out and apologized to all the animals, which seems to have worked and they just turned away.

- 2 hours later -

For a cemetery...it was a beautiful white color because of the snow. Yet, Arisa could not help but feel the air filled with sadness. Even Sothis could feel it. Spirits of those that have passed away. Some have chosen to keep walking this world while others have passed onto the next life.

"Kyuuu!!" The fluffs all quickly flew inside Florencio's cloak, and into their little cage he has.

She existed the back of the wagon with Red Hare behind her, who flew out.

"Alright. Just stay by my side." She said softly to the foal.

Arisa ran to her father's side and stood next to him as everyone stood in formation. She put on her hood to hide her face but also to protect it from the cold. Trumpets sang their song as it was announced the King and his family had existed out of the carriage. She couldn't help but be awestruck as she watched the royal family enter with such grace. King Lambert Egitte Blaiddyd, in all his glory, dressed in his royal clothing stood quietly as he sent a nod of approval to Rodrigue and Jeralt. Next to him, was two young boys and a little girl. One boy caught her attention in particular.

"Dimitri..." she whispered to herself.

The young Dimitri was a small boy short blonde hair, azure colored eyes, light peach skin with a bit of blush on his cheeks. He wore the usual clothing of children of the Kingdom to protect them from the cold, it was also the color blue.

"He looks adorable!" Sothis said and she couldn't help but agree more.

He was adorable in person and she honestly want to run up and hug the boy but then she didn't want to get looked at weirdly, so she held back a lot.

Arisa smiled as she saw the boy run over to his group of friends, Ingrid, Felix, Sylvain and......who is that? Confusion filled her features as she squinted her eyes to have a better look. There was a little girl with light cream orange colored hair, her eyes were a gray color. Her hair was in a long braid, similar to Mercedes. Her dress was.... oh god.....who was the horrible person with the sense
of fashion that chose feathers went well with the dress?!

"Your highness, it's an honor." Arisa heard an all too familiar sickly female voice that thank the heavens no one saw her gritting her teeth.

Arisa began to look around and noticed there was only a few chosen selected people here. Plus, the guards. Of course, there had to be one of the most despised women in the game here. Cornelia. Truthfully, the woman had a lot of potential to be a more fleshed out villain in the game, that she admits but she will never like this woman for the hell she put Dimitri through.

"Thank you everyone for coming. It has been two years since my wife has passed away. I thank you all, friends and family." The King said as Dimitri ran back to him.

His little sister giggled, and his older brother sighed. She could tell the older one didn't like being here.

"It is an honor your highness." Everyone said and vowed.

Arisa silently watched as the knights surrounded the royal family and the guest, leading them to the grave of the First Consort. Arisa noticed that there was a church priest who saluted the king. Jeralt and his entire team internally frowned as they had a closer look at the priest. He wore the typical clothing of those of the Church of Serios.

"Byleth, keep your face hidden." Jeralt said and she nodded.

"You two, look!!"

Arisa turned towards the direction of the excited voice. She couldn't help but smile as she saw the older prince point to Red Hare. She saw the excitement fill Dimitri's and his little sister's eyes.

"Red Hare, go." She whispered and the little foal neighed happily as it flapped his wings and flew towards the three royal children.

It gently stopped in front of them and proudly let his mane flow. The king couldn't help but chuckle and sent her a smile as he knelt.

"Can we pet it?" The little girl said and that was more than enough for Red Hare to walk up to her and nuzzled her cheek.

The little girl giggled at this as did the boys. Dimitri backed up a bit.

"Dimitri, it's alright. Look." King Lambert said as he reached out his hand for Red Hare to come closer.

The little foal nuzzled his hand. Dimitri was hesitant but did the same. The worried face turned to one of bubbling laugh as Red Hare fully snuggled to him.

"Whoa, whoa there!! Hahaha!!" Dimitri laughed.

Many of the adults could not help but smile at the adorable sight but a few of them sent Arisa a
glare. That glare of theirs quickly turned to fear when they saw Jeralt and Rodrigue stand in front of the girl.

"(Whistle!)" She whistled as she heard the priest cough to have Red Hare return to her.

"Sorry." She mouthed to him and he chuckled and said it was alright.

She saw the children pout (oh, is that Glenn glaring at her?) as Red Hare return to her but nodded to the children that they will get to play with him later. Seems that cheered them up a lot. Reminding her, she needed to learn the other two siblings’ names along with that girl with the horrible feather dress.

After a few minutes passed the memorial mass began. The priest began the speech and spoke the holy prayers. Honestly it reminded her a lot of the catholic masses she was forced to go on Church Sundays with her mother. To her, they were boring as heck but she respected her mother so she would go with her. The typical speech plus songs sung. The one of this world was similar expect the songs were towards the Goddess and the 4 Saints. She mentally groans at this and was trying hard not to fall asleep. She swore she heard someone snore and saw Glenn smack Sylvain and Miklan awake. As the speech finished, flowers were placed one by one on the tombstone, to show respect to the queen. Words said by family and friends, showing how much, they missed the queen and hope she is doing better. A few females were crying, and Arisa could tell a few of them were fake as hell.

Seriously......

She sighed as a few more minutes passed and saw the adults talking to one another. King Lambert was speaking with her father and Lord Rodrigue. She spotted another familiar face. She saw a man with orange colored long hair tied in a ponytail with a neutral face. He carried a little girl in his arms. She recognized the child was Annette. Then the man must be her father, Gustave Eddie Dominic. Next to him must be his brother and his wife. Her eyes then followed over to the children, where Felix, Sylvain, Ingrid, Dimitri's two siblings, the unknown girl and Glenn were. Miklan was far away from them, of course. Sandy and Florencio were talking with Jakob, Felicia and Flora. She saw Flora blush about something that Sandy whispered.

"Huh? Where's Dimitri?" She thought as she noticed the boy was not with the groups.

She made a quiet escape as she began to walk around the cemetery. Before she did, she had Red Hare go to the children to distract everyone from her. It worked, because the children were a giggling mess. Heck, even Miklan cracked a smile. She shivered as she kept walking deeper into the place. The tombstones were either made of marble (fancy as f----.*slapped*) and other expensive stones. She saw a few names. She nearly screamed as she could have sworn, she saw a woman dressed in white look at her void of emotions and then disappeared into the mist.

"Hmm?" Finally, she had found that the boy had wandered to a barren tree.

She let go a sigh of relief and stared at him from a distance. Unfortunately, she could not tell what tree it was because there were no leaves on it. The boy stared at the barren tree sadly as if he was looking for something. She smiled sadly and quietly began to walk toward him but...
Shing!!

Crack crackcrckrfk!!!

Her blood ran cold.

"DIMITRI!!!"

The tree branch suddenly broke and fall towards the prince.

"NO!" She screamed and that caught the attention of everyone, including the prince.

Arisa ran as fast as she could and barely managed to push the prince out of the way.

"Ghaa!!" Dimitri yelled as she pushed his chest and his eyes widened as they met forest colored ones.

"BYLETH!!" She heard her father yelled as she finally noticed the tree branch, was only a few inches falling on her, and the look of horror Dimitri had.

The voices of adults screaming and gasping, and the one that broke the tree branch, laugh.

"Damn....." She mentally cursed and closed her eyes.

At least he was safe.

"You fool."

Chapter 5: Snowy Blue: Part 3: Lukewarm Thoughts: End

Now, before every single knife and pitchforks are thrown at me, let me clear a few things up. First off, it will be very rare for a character from a different Fire Emblem series to appear. In this case, I chose Jakob, Felicia and Flora from Fates. Why you ask? I wanted this chapter to be more on the light side and have some fun. This chapter was also meant to expose the thoughts that are going through Arisa's mind and the fear she has. I wanted to have a different take on the approach of my OC. We begin to see a bit of her childish side, which died off during her first 12 years of life. Being turned into a child again, but this time being healthy. She is beginning to experience what it is like to have a childhood. So, at times, you won't see her maturity but the more childlike side of her that she had closed off.

Jeralt, Florencio, Sandy and his team were the first ones to make her open up and show the
child side of her. As the story continues, we begin to see more and more, but also how much she grows more. Honestly, she is still holding back, by a lot.

Next, we have Miklan. Now, the game didn't give much detail, but it is mention that Miklan has tried to kill Sylvain and physically hurt him. Meaning abuse. As you play the game, to see more and more of the small details and who each character was fleshed out. As you saw, Arisa did lash out on the boy. She pointed out each mistake she made.

Now, this is actually based on something that did happen to me just recently. It really did affect me badly. The version in this story is a summarized version. If you want the full details on that, please read the full version in my art book on Wattpad.

Now, Glenn. We honestly don't know much about him. I wanted to create a character for him based on the information we have. Now, why did I make Dimitri have siblings? It is stated in his character info in the game that he does have siblings, but we don't know how many. To flesh out his character more along with his father, I decided to give him two siblings. An older brother and a twin sister, who is younger than him by 5 minutes.

Do they have Crest? I am not answering that question till later on in the story.

Cornelia. Yeah...I really do hate that woman but seriously!!! She had really good potential than the roles Nintendo gave her in the Azure Moon and Crimson Flower Routes!!

Will Arisa be too OP?? Not really. But her main focus will be reason, swords, and riding, bow, brawling, and the enlightened one classes. Sadly, the dancer class can't be unlocked for Byleth in the game, so I'll take advantage and have her learn it in this story. Now, as for the others, yes, Female Byleth in my game I have her Master those classes. Currently working on Assassin class. Her weaknesses are axe, lance, heavy armor and faith.
Chapter 6: Mourning Souls: Memories Blur

"Shshshshshshs~"

Deep, deep, in her mind, the small little voice giggled.

"Shshshshshshsh....How sweet...."

It always whispered. It so faint. Far too faint. She could not understand it at all. Yet, it was there. Always there.... her mind gripped at everything to keep that string of sanity intact. Still....

"Don't you want this to be over...

[ ----- ]

"YOU FOOL!!"

As if time stopped with the sound of a single heart pulse, Arisa saw the world become slow through her eyes. The cackling slowed down; her father's running steps began to become still as stone. The snow that he stepped on became still in the air. The looks of horror became frozen on the faces of the adults. The children looking their direction in shock. The small yet barely noticeable smirk Cornelia had turned to one of shock. Dimitri's face of terror was still as stone. Everything around her became still as stone. The entire place turned purple, seeming as time swirled back.

"What?" Arisa looked around the area she was in, she quickly stood up, recognizing the stone room.

"What were you thinking you fool?!" Sothis roared down from her throne as she abruptly stood up and pointed a finger down at her like some executioner.

"I'm sorry!! It was the first reaction I had!!" Arisa countered back.

She really did not wish to face or ever see the wrath of Sothis in her life.

"Honestly, what are you accomplishing with that little stunt?! It's like you're trying to get me killed, you fool!!" Sothis yelled furiously.

She really was furious. This idiot thinks she could save the child by giving her life?! Has she forgotten that the two of them are one?! That technically they are the same person!!?
"I'm sorry." Arisa muttered as she looked down to the ground in shame.

It was just that natural instinct to protect someone. It was something that was always with her. It's always her first reaction when she sees someone she cares about in danger. That instinct to protect.

"Sigh...well it's fine. After all, if you don't know the value of your own life, you're not going to protect it very well, are you? " Sothis sighed as she sat back down and rubbed her eyes.

"Sigh...course not. Ha!! Such arrogance!! You may be an adult spiritually but are you truly one?!” The goddess scolds the girl.

Arisa gritted her teeth. Did she value her life? No... she does...does she?

"You pushed the young boy and let the tree branch fall on you!!!” She said.

"Yet, all is well, as I have stalled the flow of time for now. You would have died had I not intervened." Sothis sighed with arms crossed.

"Think hard what your next move will be. The position of the assassin. The position of the boy. The distance. The speed. The earth. The wind. The scent. The touch. Think of every single detail before you take the next steps. This is only temporary." Sothis said as she saw the gears in the girl turn.

Arisa nodded and then it hit her. That's it...that's it!!!

"Sothis, I know what to do but you're still going to be mad at me most likely." She said.

"It better not cost us our life." The goddess argued angrily.

"No, it won't. At most a few bruises." Arisa said with a nervous chuckle.

"Already more damage?! How many bruises?!" Sothis said.

[---]

The hands of time were turned back before Arisa's eyes. She saw how the tree branch mend it's back. The assassin's laugh sounded strange backwards as did all the voices of the adults yelling. The people that were running towards her and Dimitri went backwards. The looks of shock and horror returned to neutral ones. The children turned their attention back to Red Hare. Everything felt so strange. The color returned to normal as time resumed once more. This time, she was ready. The tree branch began to crack and this time, Arisa sent a surge of magic through her body and lunged towards Dimitri. The tree branch was a few inches from falling on both but not this time. Shock filled the boy as warm arms wrapped around him tightly. She held him to her chest and twisted her body. Making sure her back hit the tree trunk.

"AAAAHH!!" She screamed as the air was completely knocked out of her lungs.

Her actions completely threw off the assassin as their eyes widened in shock as he watched from his spot.

"BYLETH/DIMITRI!!"
The tree branch fell a few inches away from them and Dimitri was in shock as he stared at it. Arisa's hood had fallen off and he saw her face in pain, gritting her teeth, her warm grip around him tightened as she held him to her chest. Her lungs burned but she screamed with all her might. She isn't letting that son of bitch get away!!!

"AN ASSASSIN IS HERE!!! THEY ARE IN THE TREES!!! THEY ARE IN THE TREES!!"
She screamed out and the assassin flinch at this, making a run for it.

"There!!" Sandy yelled as she saw him jump over one of the tombstones.

"Capture them!!" King Lambert ordered as he, Rodrigue, Sandy and Jerelt ran after them.

"Florenicio, help the prince and Byleth!! The rest of you protect the others!!" Jeralt order the knights and his team.

King Lambert and Jeralt both had one goal in their mind. To capture the bastard that dared harm their children. Arisa groaned at the horrible pain she had gotten on her back. She didn't care right now but looked down worried to the scared to death prince. Dimitri was shaking in her arms and she hugged him more closely to her.

"It's alright, it's alright, you're safe. You're safe." She whispered words of comfort to him.

She would do this all her siblings, regardless of their age. Even her parents and friends when they needed comfort. The young boy looked up to her and she smiled kindly to him. He couldn't help but feel warmth rise in his face as he saw the radiant smile the girl gave him.

"It's okay." She placed her forehead onto his as she spoke softly, "You're safe. I won't let anyone hurt you. You're safe Dimitri. It's okay." She spoke like a mother comforting her child after they had a nightmare.

"Are you two alright!!?" Florencio ran up to them, beyond worried and next to him was also Cornelia, who looked worried.

Truthfully, Arisa asked herself why that woman was joining her uncle.

"We're okay. I'm j---hisss!!" Arisa hissed once she felt the full effect now.

"Aaarrghhh!!" She yelled out as she felt her back pulsing and perhaps a few scratches that were most likely bleeding.

"Florencio correct?" Cornelia said and the man nodded.

"Please take the prince. I am a doctor also. I'll need to check her. Seems she took a full blow on her back. I'm worried it might have hurt her spine." The woman said.

"Alright." He nodded and turned to the children, "Your highness, please come with me." He said softly.

Dimitri shook his head and held tighter onto Arisa. No way, no way, no way!!! He didn't want to let her go!!! No, he would not!!! She's hurt!! It felt like it was his fault and that he needed to stay with her!!
"Your highness, please." Florencio said.

The boy was stubborn and tighten his grip. Well, hello there Crest of Blaiddyd......? (Arisa: Oh noooooo...!!!!) The boy glared and Florencio swore he felt a small spike of magic rise from the boy. And this greatly worried him. After all, all those of Blaiddyd bloodline, regardless if they had a Crest or not, had the strange gift of inhuman strength. Don't tell him the boy already grew an attachment to his niece?! The girl saw the predicament going on and mentally sighed. Sothis was cackling. Arisa turned to the prince and spoke softly. She be damned if he accidentally broke her spine from hugging her too tightly.

"It's alright." She smiled as she gently removed his arms from her, "The doctors are going to make sure I'm okay. They want to make sure I didn't break my back. I promise we'll see each other again. Okay?" Arisa said.

Dimitri was hesitant until she gently cupped his cheeks and placed her forehead on his.

"I'll be okay little one. I promise." She said once more.

Dimitri looked back and forth between the adults and her but eventually nodded and went to Florencio. As the boy took the older man's hand and walked with him to join his friends and siblings, he stopped for a moment to look back at the girl that saved his life. Cornelia had picked her up and saw the girl in pain. He was worried. He really was.

- A few minutes later -

In a room that was neatly cleaned, a few beds spread out like they were in a nurse's office, at a table not too far, Cornelia went through the shelves, picking at the jars and taking out a few medical herbs from them. She had asked the girl to remove her dress to have a better look at the injury she had suffered. Indeed, it was a bad one. A few scratched but luckily very little bleeding. Still, the bruise was bad. Arisa laid on her stomach on one of the beds with the back of her dress open, fully displaying the giant purple bruise. She was muttering a mountain of profanities in Spanish and Japanese, but thankful no one understood a single word she was saying.

"I hate this......" she internally groaned into a pillow and Sothis appeared.

"And who's fault is that?! First off, when you said a few bruises, I thought you meant maybe on the shoulder. You didn't tell me it was your whole back!!!" Sothis growled.

Arisa rolled her eyes as she turned her head to the left as she watched Cornelia grind the herbs using magic and then mixing them to become a smooth green paste. Her eyes wandered around and she honestly questioned why the hell is there a whole guest manner in a cemetery? Then again, this is the royal family she is talking about. She wasn't paying attention when Cornelia was behind her till, she felt a surge of pain on her back as she felt something cool touch it.

"Ooowww!!" Arisa screeched as Cornelia applied cream on her bare back.

She hissed loudly and struggled to stay still as Cornelia also used spell to help the bruise heal faster. Magic can only do so much from the outside. It can't do much internally. That's were Arisa's modern knowledge comes to play. She'll use it eventually.

"Hold still. You hit yourself quite badly on the root of the tree. Sigh....the cream should help with
bruising and the spell I cast should make the healing process faster." Cornelia said as she placed a small bandage pad on.

The woman's hand froze.

"How....interesting..." she thought as she felt a strange sense of magic from this girl and wanted to investigate but couldn't because she suddenly felt a horrible sense of dread at the back of her neck.

She could not see that it was Sothis who looked at her coldly with a glare that many would say would be the wrath of the goddess. Sothis would not allow a single person to dare hurt this girl. Arisa sighed as she sat back up and Cornelia helped her closed her dress.

"Thank you miss." She said and slightly bowed to her as she got off the bed.

"It is no problem. You saved the prince's life. Hopefully they have caught that Assassin by now." Cornelia smiled kindly.

Both of them walked back to the hall where the others were. Arisa braced herself for a yelling once she opened the doors but what happened next, threw her off completely.

When they arrived, Arisa got tackled down by an army of 4 kids and one foal.

"Gaaahhh!!" She screeched loudly as she was knocked down to the floor.

"Wawawwhhhhhhhaaaaaaaaaa!!" She heard crying and began to frantically waving her hands as she saw it was Sylvain, Ingrid, Felix, Dimitri and one sadly/crying Red Hare.

"Sis are you okay?!" Ingrid cried; her hair was a bit of a mess.

"Are you hurt?!!" Sylvain said, worried.

"You're not dying, are you?!" Dimitri looked her frantically and she shook her head.

"Biiggg sssiissss!!" Felix cried and it was honestly cute.

Arisa laughed nervously as she had them back away a bit so she could breathe.

"I'm okay everyone. Really." She said a bit worried as she gently patted their heads till she was about to walk over to Dimitri.

The boy had the same idea. Dimitri walked up to her, bowed his head to her.

"Please raise your head!!" Arisa screeched as she saw a few people gasping.

Gustav couldn't help but chuckle as he saw this. It was something that ran within the royal family.

"Thank you so much!! Are you okay?" Dimitri asked worried.

He blushed a bit as she felt her warm hand pat his head. She nodded and spoke.

"I'm alright your highness. I'm just glad you are safe. It is my job as a mercenary to ensure your safety as well as your family and friends. Hope that...unwelcome guest has been caught." Arisa bowed to him.
Dimitri was about to speak when the doors to the hall open. King Lambert along with Jeralt and Rodrigue came in. She saw that Sandy wasn't with them and noticed about 2 knights and two people from her father's team missing.

"The Assassin has been restrained and will be taken to dungeon back at them kingdom for further interrogation. They won't speak easily so we have two mercenaries for extra reinforcement." Rodrigue announced as Florencio walked up to Jeralt and the two began discussing among themselves what they were going to do to the bastard.

Arisa sighed in relief as she heard that. She was more than happy that the assassin was caught. Though no one noticed but Sothis did, because she chose to appear and watch over her friend, Cornelia "*teh.*" She hid the sour scold she had with her feathered fan.

"Arisa, keep an eye on that woman Cornelia. Seems she has a bone to pick with the King." Sothis said as she flew behind her and hugged her neck like she usually does.

At this, Arisa narrowed her eyes slightly. She swears if that hag is already making plans... She didn't notice that the king along with his two other children had come towards her till Dimitri said "Dad!!"

"Your highness!!" She quickly vowed to him as did the other children.

"Raise you head child. Thank you for saving my son. I don't know how I can ever repay you."

King Lambert smiled at her kindly and ruffled her hair.

"Thanks for saving my little brother. Hope you aren't hurt too badly." The older boy said.

His blonde hair was a bit spiky and it reminded her of Corrin for some reason. He had brown colored eyes instead. Most likely from his mother.

"Thank you thank you!!! Big brother safe!!!" The little girl said.

She had one blue eye and one brown eye; her blonde hair was in twin curled pigtails.

"There is nothing to repay your highnesses. I am just glad the prince is safe. That is more than enough." She said as she lightly vowed once more.

"What is your name?" Dimitri asked.

Arisa was hesitant but looked over to her father, worried. He nodded and she was still worried. Would it be a sin if she gave her original name instead of the birth name she has in this world?

"My name is...Kiana," and that idea went out the window because her dumbass chose to give the name of one of her favorite characters in Honkai Impact 3 instead.

Jeralt smacked his hand over his face and groans. The other 4, Ingrid, Sylvain, Felix and Glenn were confused at this, but Glenn stopped the others before they said anything. He honestly wanted to see what would go down.

"Hmmm.....nope you're lying!!" The little blonde one grinned and walked up to her.

"I'm Lestia!!!! The one with the porcupine hair is my big brother Zander and you already met my
little brother Dimitri (*Dimitri: I'm older than you by 5 minutes!!*)!! Now, what's yours?” The girl is now known as Lestia smiled.

"Sigh....you got me. It's Arisa. I was honestly wanted to do a small joke." She chuckled as the girl smiled to her.

"Yup!! There!! Now...." she grabbed her hand, suddenly grabbed Dimitri’s hands and put them together.

"Brother, you may now kiss the bride!" Lestia said happily.

The king could not help but laugh at the faces his sons and Arisa was making. Poor Jeralt felt it was far too early for something like this to happen in his daughter's life.

- On the way back to the Palace: Inside the Royal Carriage -

"Nice going Lestia!!! I think you just made that girl hate us!!" Zander said to his younger sister as she sat next to their father, who was chuckling.

"No, I did not!!" Lestia argued back.

Their uncle, Rufus, sighed at this as he watched his niece and nephews argue with one another. Her turned to his younger brother and spoke.

"Anyhow, I heard from Rodrigue that you offered Jeralt a position as a general of the Kingdom Knights, since he is a former Knight of Serios. Can't say I'm for the idea but he has proved his skills along with the rest of his companions." Rufus said.

"I did. He rejected it.” King Lambert laughed.

Rufus did a double take and looked at his younger brother shocked.

"He did what?!" Rufus said shocked.

"A position offered to him, by you!! The king, and he turned it down?! Is the man mad or such?! Who on earth would turn down such a position?!" Rufus said.

King Lambert smiled but shook his head. The children were silent as they heard the adults speak.

"It is alright. He honestly had a good reason.” He said as he looked out the window as did Rufus.

Jeralt was riding his horse and with him was his daughter, who seemed excited. Next to them, flying not too far, was the small red pegasus. He saw them talking with the man named Florencio and the woman named Sandy. Rufus sighed, as he finally understood.

"For the sake of his family. He is already where he belongs.” Rufus said as he couldn't help but smile sadly and shake his head as he turned back to his brother.

"I still think he would have made a wonderful addition to the Kingdom." Rufus said.
Dimitri looked out the window and stared at the loving family. He saw her laughing and even scolded sometimes. She protected him and she called him by his name, not his highness. The only reason she did call him that was because there were either adults present.

"Brother likes her~" Lestia teased.

"I do not." Dimitri pouted.

Zander sighed. He was the oldest of the three. He was the same age as Glenn.

"Hey uncle," he turned to Rufus and smirked, "That lady Sandy, she's single. Think I got a chance?" Unfortunately, he and Sylvain were very much alike.

Damn skirt chasers.

"You and Sylvain have been together for too long....." Dimitri grumbled.

King Lambert sent a glare to his older brother who just looked away. Lestia was just confused at this and looked over to the girl named Arisa.

"Hey Dimitri," she said, "I like her. She seems fun." Lestia smiled.

---

- Outside -

"We'll be going up ahead to pack all our belongings. Byleth, are all your things in your bag?" Sandy said from her horse and the girl nodded.

"Yup!! All set!!! Also, sneak me some butter cake from the kitchen." Arisa whispered that last sentence because Jakob was only 4 horses away from them.

Jeralt, Sandy and Florencio chuckled at this and the woman nodded before she with Florencio's team went off.

"Kiddo, how are you feeling? Is your back alright?" Jeralt said to her and she nodded.

"It stings a little but the medicine the court mage used helped a lot." She said, referring to Cornelia.

"I see. Truthfully, I was scared I nearly lost you." He said and she hugged him tightly.

"I'm okay Papa!! I'll be more careful from now on. Also....am I still in trouble because of the fight...?" She laughed a bit nervously.

"Yes, you are. You're grounded. Curfew is at 8pm and no sweets for a week." Jeralt stated.

Arisa looked like someone just murdered her the minute she heard she wasn't allowed any sweets. Even Sothis was in horror.

"PLEASE, ANYTHING ELSE BUT MY SWEETS!!" She begged.

Not too far away, Jakob had a satisfied smile.
The older woman stared out to the young dark-haired green girl. She felt it. That girl held a Crest in her blood. Yet, seems she has yet to awaken it completely. Perhaps she may be needed a push. She shook her head. No, that would not work. Cornelia rubbed the back of her neck. It felt like someone was burning their stare into her soul when she was about to use a small amount of her magic to trigger the Crest within the girl earlier that day.

"Tch." Really, the assassin had to mess up.

If it wasn't for that girl, the prince would be dead. She would have focused her attention to the twin sister since she bore a minor Crest, but she did not know if it was one of Blaiddyd. It is confirmed that it is possible for one of Blaiddyd bloodlines to bare a Crest of Riegan. But the chances are lower that 1%. The older prince was useless because he bore no crest. What's more he was nothing but a laid-back fool and skirt chaser like his uncle.

Then there was her....... 

That....girl of House Martritz.....

Once more she sho----

"Hmmm..hmm..hmm~" Cornelia turned her head to the young girl that sat across from her, humming a cheerful toon as she was knitting.

"Hmmmhmm~" the girl hummed as she didn't notice the stare her mother was giving her.

"Ymir." Cornelia spoke coldly and the girl flinched, looking up to her.

"Yes mother?" The girl now known as Ymir said.

"Why did you bring your knitting kit?" She asked.

"I-I felt it was going to take a long time to get to the cemetery so...I decided to knit to pass time. Also....Ingrid wanted me to teach her how to knit. To make a scarf for...Glenn..." the girl spoke shyly.

"Did I give you permission to do such an activity that commoners do?" Cornelia said.

"N-No mother..." Ymir said as she looked down to her hands.

"Put them away. I don't want to see such revolting activities done by you again. And stop humming. It irritates me." She said and the young girl did just that.

Ymir. She was a young girl with the same colored hair as Cornelia but wore her hair in a long braid. She wanted to wear a normal black dress, but her mother made her wear the horrible black feather dress that matched her mother's. Honestly, she wanted nothing more than to rip off the bloody dress. It was itchy, uncomfortable, hard to move in, tight and far too fancy for her taste. It's
like her mother is trying to purposely humiliate her. But...her thoughts wandered back to the little pegasus. That warmth it’s nuzzling and playing with them. Animals did not judge people. They did not look down on others. They cared about people regardless of who they are. They know when they see a bad person. She sighed as she looked out to the green haired girl. She looked so happy...she wished she had gotten to talk to her, but her mother would never allow her to do such a thing.....

"Don't you want this to be over......?"

There it was again.... that whisper....

- 6 Hours Later: Kingdom Capital: Fhirdiad-

After a whole six hours of going through the snowy road, Arisa could not believe her eyes as they were at the gates of the Kingdom Capital: Fhirdiad. Unfortunately, she won’t be able to enter for sightseeing because her family already had to leave. She had decided to say her goodbyes to the children. What the poor girl did not expect was being hugged by five wonderful children. Dimitri, Lestia, Ingrid, Felix, and even Sylvain were all hugging the girl in a group hug, and one that she could not escape unless she spoke the right words.

"No, don't go!!" Dimitri cried as he looked at her with puppy dog eyes.

"My heart.... this hurt!!" Sothis weeped.

"Stay big sis!!" Lestia did the exact same move as Dimitri.

"Are they trying to kill us with all this cuteness?!" Sothis was melting.

"We want to play more!!" Felix said.

"Ppplleeaasee!!" Ingrid begged.

"Maybe we can get to know each other better!!!" Sylvain said.

"This is quite the predicament. Your daughter has won the hearts of all of them!!" King Lambert chuckled as both Rodrigue and Jeralt sighed, watching the children, refusing to let Arisa go. Zander mentally groans and walked over to the group, trying to pull his little sister and brother off the girl but damn!!! They had grips of iron!!

"So, how are things for you?" Arisa heard Sothis laugh and the girl just sighed as she tried to wiggle herself free.

Seems that was a signal for the children to finally let go.

She smiled to each of them kindly and thanked Zander for trying to help.

"Everyone, I promise we'll meet again one day. So please don't cry because you will all make me
cry. This isn't goodbye forever." She said.

"**Good!!! Let's guilt trip her!!!!**" Lestia thought as she made her puppy eyes bigger.

*My my......quite the schemer we have...*

Dimitri came up to her and hugged her once more. The girl was a bit shocked but hugged him back once more. He let go of her and nodded.

"Okay...but...." he smiled and held his pinky up, "pinky promise that we'll meet again?" He said.

*This was it......she needed to do it.*

The rest of the children did the same with their pinkies up and Arisa just melted.

"*Pinky promise.*" She said and their pinkies connected.

None of them noticed that her eyes had become a brown shade of color. She cupped Dimitri's cheeks and gently kissed his forehead. The boy's eyes went wide, and a few girls can be heard squealing. Dimitri blinked as he looked up to her eyes. Weren't they green...? King Lambert laughed at this while Sandy just patted Jeralt's back, who has turned to stone. No, it was far too early for boys to already have their eyes on his daughter!!

"That is my promise to you Dimitri. I will be seeing you again one day." Arisa smiled kindly to him as she hugged him tightly.

"I'm looking forward to it." Dimitri smiled and hugged her back.

She did the same to Felix, Sylvain, Lestia and Ingrid and a head pat to Glenn and Zander, who the two became embarrassed. She got into her wagon and she waved goodbye to the children as they all wished her good luck and hoped to see her once more. Jeralt was internally taking notes to keep an eye on the boys if they ever meet his daughter again.

As the wagon rode off into the sunset, and passed Cornelia's carriage, it was only for a moment, but Ymir's and Arisa's eyes made contact before they turned their attention back to their parents.

"Sighhhhh...." Arisa let go of a long sigh as she laid on the blankets that were set for her to sleep on.

Sandy was riding her horse next to her father. The two adults talked about the mission the fine reward they got. What's more the look of shock Sandy had when Jeralt told her he turned down the offer to become a general of the Kingdom Knights. Arisa's brown colored eyes had turned back to green, as she hugged her cloak closer to her and made herself into a burrito. Sothis appear and looked down sadly at the girl.

"You cast the spell, didn't you?" Sothis said as she floated down and snuggle down next to Arisa.
"Yeah...when I kissed their foreheads and when I patted Glenn's and Zander's heads. I cast the spell. Now, my face will be nothing but a blur to them. Even my voice." Arisa said.

Sothis sighed and looked at the girl sadly. To go so far...for the children's sakes.

"For you to go so far......even if this causes you pain, it's better for their sakes. Arisa, you're a strong girl." Sothis smiled sadly.

Arisa nodded and truthfully, she was holding back tears. She didn't want any of them to forget her. But this was an important and painful choice. She saw the dangers each one would face if they became friends with her. Even more because the Kingdom were devoted believers of The Teachings of Serios. The Crest system...just them knowing her spelled their doom. She needs her mind to stop thinking about this.

"In time flows......see the glow...of flames ever burning bright...on the swift.... river's drift, broken memories alight...aaaaahhh.....eeeeeyaaaa.aaaaaaaaaahhhhhh...."  

Arisa began to sing softly, remembering this song was one of her favorites to listen to when she was doing homework. The Song of Nabateans. It was also sung in the dream she had a few weeks ago. Sothis was silent, as her eyes slowly went wide as a blurry memory returned to her.

"That song.... I feel that I have heard it in the past......" Sothis said as Arisa continued to sing.

"Actually...It is not that I have heard it. I....Did I once sing that song to someone? No. There's more. I wrote this song...Oh but how can that be so?" Sothis said.

"What's wrong?" Arisa stopped singing.

"Tell me...if that were true, how could you be singing it? Unless...no...no..." Sothis said, suddenly exhausted.

Arisa smiled sadly and spoke.

"I used to hear a woman singing this song. I loved hearing her sing it and I began to sing the song myself. You can say...it held a lot of emotions that I am familiar with." Arisa said.

"Interesting. Who is this woman?" Sothis asked.

"We'll meet her one day. I'm still 15 years too young to meet her." Arisa said, referring to Rhea.

"I see. Out of curiosity, what is her name?" Sothis said.

"Well, she goes by Rhea, but her real name is Serios." Arisa said.

"Serios......Serios....I know that name...Yaaawwnnn....I'm going to sleep. Sweet dreams Arisa." Sothis said and fell asleep.

"Sweet dreams Sothis..."
"Hyaaa!!!" With a staff in her hands, Ymir created a fireball using her magic and aimed it at the wooden golem that was coming her way to attack.

"Kyyaa!!" She yelled and quickly dodged the wooden sword coming her way.

The fireball hit it, but it didn't do enough damage. Why was it always fire magic her main weakness...?

"Grr......" she forced herself up and noticed the disapproving looks of the servants watching.

She hated every single servant in this household along with the butler that served her mother. All the previous servants that were here in this mansion were kind and loving. Their loyalty was to her father, who had passed away 1 year ago. Each servant and chef were fired and kicked out. They were all replaced with the current ones that had skin pale as white stone. She gritted her teeth and screamed as the wooden sword hit down on her shoulder with force. She felt it crack.

"Tch...weak like usual. At this rate, she'll mange..." her mother's butler sighed in disappointment.

"Weak....weak...." those words repeated themselves in her mind as she held her shoulder.

"Shshshshshshshsh~ my aren't we are in trouble..."

The voice...it whispered again. But. Much more clearly. Ymir fell to her knees, praying that the butler, Lawson, would stop the wooden golem, but no.

"Aren't you going to stop it?" One maid said to him.

"Of course not. By Lady Cornelia's order, the girl is to learn her lesson." He stated and the maid just shrugged.

"Might as well let the brat die at this rate." The maid said and many others snickered at this.

"Shut....up...." Ymir whispered as the wooden sword came down on her once more but this time.... One maid narrowed her eyes as she noticed one of the flower vases in the room had frost growing on it.

"AAAAHHHHHHHHHHHHH!!!"

All the servants screamed and ran for their lives as the entire room sudden was frozen over and huge crystals of ice covered the walls and floors of the training field. Ymir was the lone girl that was on her knees, looking at the golem with wide but void eyes. When she snapped out of it, she screeched. She looked up and noticed a strange symbol that dissolved too fast before she had a good look at it. The golem in front of her shattered like glass to the ground. Lawson's eyes were
wide, but he grinned as he went to report what just happened to Lady Cornelia. Ymir quickly stood up and ran to her room, closing it shut.

"Wha...wha...." she gasped and ran to the restroom and removed her dress quickly, looking at herself in the mirror.

"My shoulder...it's healed?!" She screeched.

"My my...."

She covered her ears, not wanting to hear the whisper again.

"Everything is a liar...." she heard and shook her head.

No, no, no!! She refused to hear these whispers!!! They are all fake!!! They are made up!!! She needs bath...that's right!! A warm bath will help her clear her mind!! She always loved a nice warm bath.

- Cornelia's Office -

"The entire training room is frozen?" Cornelia could not believe her ears.

"Correct my Lady. I wish you were there to see it but.... such power and coldness!!! It is possible that she possesses a major crest!!" Lawson said.

Cornelia hummed as she stood up. She wanted to see the place herself.

"Let us go Lawson. I wish to see this myself." She said as he opened the door to the hallways.

The two walked to the training room and as the doors opened, Cornelia's eyes went wide. Each wall was covered in ice. The floors were frozen solid. The giant spears of ice had an eerie unnatural color blue. Cornelia could not help but smile seeing this as she was about to walk into the room but was stopped by her butler.

"My lady, I would not recommend touching anything in the room. Let me show you what I mean." He said as he walked over to flower vase and picked one.

He threw the rose onto the floor and it instantly began to freeze.

"I don't even want to imagine what would happen if any of us touched it. Have you contacted Solon?" Cornelia said and Lawson nodded.

"Of course. He will be arriving tomorrow along with the investigation team. They will remove this ice with the utmost care." Lawson said and she nodded.

"Now as for my daughter.... seems she inherited the Crest my Oh so lovely husband hid so well from me. Were any of the servants able to see what it looked like when she activated it?" Cornelia said.
"I'm afraid not." Lawson shook his head, "The Crest Symbol disappeared before any of us had a chance to see it. One of the servants did describe it felt as if they saw someone standing over Lady Ymir." He said.

"What? Someone was next to my daughter?" She said, shocked.

"From what they described......" Lawson said.

"It was evil!!! Pure evil!!! It laughed and giggled!!! It mocked everyone!!! It said everything is a liar!!!!!"

Cornelia was silent and placed her hand at the back of her neck again. There it was again...that feeling of dread. She needs to investigate this. Something just did not feel right...

- City Capital: Fhirdiad: Palace -

"You been awfully silent Lady Lestia. Something the matter?" A young girl with short bobbed red hair, dressed in a white lab coat with the royal blue mage dress of the Kingdom. Though it was heavily modified to suit her style, much to the horror of all the servants.

She wore black knee-high boots and a single green colored gem earring. Her eyes were an ivory color, but she wore a medium see through veil to cover her face.

"Hey, Emily, can you answer a question for me?" The princess said.

Lestia love visiting the infirmary in the palace, mainly because there was a single girl that would listen to her rants and because that girl was pretty much blunt with everything and didn't have a single problem pointing out everyone's bullshit. For a two-year-old to get along with a 10-year-old, that is extremely rare. Also, because the girl was very well-respected doctor despite her age. She was also a Crest bearer from a family that has served the royal family for generations.

"Depends what it is?" Emily said as she was busy circling the errors in a medical report. Damn these adults.

"Okay, so what happened today. The girl I was telling you about, she tried to erase my memories." Lestia said it like it was nothing and Emily did a double take hearing that, accidentally slamming her head onto the table.

"What?!" Emily said as she looked at the girl in shock.

"Yeah. But I can tell she didn't want to do it. Arisa didn't want to do it, but she felt she had to." Lestia said and Emily just groans.

"Bullshit!" The red-haired girl said.
"First off!!" Emily pointed to her, "Why the hell would she do that is she did not want to?! Is that girl some idiot or something?! If she didn't want any of you to forget then why would she do that in the first place?!
"Maybe she was forced to?" Lestia shrugged her shoulders.

"No way!! Obviously, she is afraid." Emily sighed as she sat down next to her friend.

"Why would she be afraid?" Lestia said and Emily just shook her head.

"I think that girl, Arisa? May be a Crest barer like us...." she said saw Lestia instantly frown.

"Now before you say anything, let me explain. First off, everyone thinks you bare the same Crest as your twin brother but in reality, you don't. And it's thanks to the hidden ability of yours that you can hide the identity of that Crest. Second, that girl may know more than what anyone thinks. Third, she may have been doing it for the safety of every single one of you. That girl sounds wiser than her years. Look, I'm saying this from personal experience. She wants you to forget her but not forget her. Know what I mean?" Emily said as she finished her explanation.

"I kinda get it. Still, if everyone else has forgotten her...then I'll be the only one to greet her with, "Welcome back!" If we meet her again! I like her!!! You should have seen the way my brother was looking at her!!! Ahh!!! I can totally see her as my sister-in-law in the future!!" Lestia swung her legs excitedly while Emily just had a bead of sweat ran down her face hearing that.

"Princess, has anyone ever told you that you are terrifying?" The older girl said and Lestia just gave her a cunning smile that would remind you, the reader, of a certain schemer.

"And who's fault was it leaving that book of human anonymity wide open? Your fault people think I act like you!! Your fault I don't act like a two-year-old!" Lestia grinned.

"True. Anyhow, have you seen any changes of behavior with your brothers and friends?" Emily asked.

Lestia sighed and nodded. She looked out the glass window and into the starry sky.

"Yeah. Ingrid said that she wanted to play with "big sis" but she doesn't remember who that is. Sylvain said that even though he doesn't remember who stood up for him, he will forever be grateful to them. Miklan has been refusing to even go near Sylvain but doesn't know why. Glenn is mad. He can't remember who his rival is. Felix says he wants the apple blend tea and pound cake, but Jakob can't even come close to the taste of the one she made. Zander is like, oh well. "But I know they are a pretty girl!". As for Dimitri...." she looked over to her friend worried, "She really did have a big impact on him. She did save his life after all. And he's getting frustrated he can't remember their face nor voice. I do think he'll be back to normal in a few days." Lestia said.

Emily nodded and looked out to the starry sky too.

"I hope so. At least your older brother isn't like that one kid you met in the Empire when you went to get some clothing. What was his name again?" She said.
Lestia stood up and began doing a silly pose with her hand under chin.

"I am Ferdinand von Aegir!!" Lestia said proudly in a mocking tone.

There was a good 15 seconds of silence before Emily burst out laughing and was rolling on the floor, holding her stomach.

"My sides!!! That is too much Lestia!!! Ahahahaha!!" Emily repeated slapped her hand on the floor repeatedly.

"I will admit, he was kind of cute. Not my type though." Lestia giggled and Emily wheezed as she looked up to her friend.

"What is...ahaha...your type then...ahaha!!" Emily said.

"Hmmmm.......Is it bad that it's someone like Glenn and that kid...Linhardt?? I think that was his name." Lestia said.

"Wait wha...?" Emily just looked at her friend like she grew a second head.

- With Dimitri -

Dimitri couldn't sleep. He just couldn't. He kept tossing and turning. Seeing a blurry image in his mind of someone he said goodbye to today. He couldn't remember. He knows they were kind. That they promised him something...but what?

"Why....why can't......" he mumbled to himself and back up, frustrated.

He was trying to remember. Who? Who were they? Who? They were gentle and kind. They were warm. They had a radiant smile. Their eyes.... especially their eyes. We're they green.... or brown? Why....it was nothing but a blur.... why?! It was like a foggy memory in the distance. It was going away. He didn't want it to go away. A frown appeared on his lips.

"Name....what was.... your name...?" He asked himself.

He remembers he asked their name. But not even that he could remember. It... was frustrating. The face was nothing but a blur in his mind. He wasn't the only one experiencing this. Felix, Ingrid, Sylvain, Zander and even Glenn could not remember her face. Why...?

Arisa did not know how much this affected Dimitri and it will show itself in the future.

- Back with Cornelia-

Sitting in her bed after getting out of a nice relaxing hot bath, Ymir was reading a book about weapon forging. It was her favorite thing to read since her father was a former blacksmith. He would talk about the types of weapons he would create and how he and her uncle would work
together to invent new ones. Her mother on the other hand, did not like it one bit. She called it a foolish dream. Ymir hated that. She wants to build. To create. It was always that feeling inside of her to create and build. If she could, she would read and study the art of weapon forging all her life. Ahh, but being the daughter of a prodigy medical mage, much more, royal court mage, was not something she liked. Not one bit. Especially since she was always made to do extreme magic training that would kill a normal child if she did not bare a crest.

"Ymir, come here." Cornelia's voice suddenly rang in her head.

She flinched hearing the voice of her mother and put the book down on a table. She got off her bed and existed her room, heading towards the office down the main hall.

"Lady Ymir, Lady Cornelia waits for you." Lawson said and the young girl nodded.

She knocked on the door and heard her mother's voice to come in.

"Yes mother?" The girl said, nervously.

"Good, you are here. Come to me." Cornelia motioned her with her index finger.

Ymir was afraid. Very much afraid. She prayed to the goddess that she was not in trouble for the huge mess she caused in the training room. As she walked up, a magic circle appeared underneath her and her hair glowed a light blue color. Above her, a strange symbol appeared. Cornelia face held no emotion as the circle disappeared and so did the symbol. Her hair turned back to normal and saw her mother with an eerie calm joyful smile.

"How lovely!!! You possess a major crest!!! You truly are the heir to this household." Cornelia said joyfully.

"Mother, what is going on?" Ymir asked and her mother simply smiled.

"Today is a day of celebration. In three days, you will begin your training in ice magic. I have very...high expectations for you." Cornelia smiled.

Oh, she did. Especially now that she knows her daughter bared the mayor Crest her husband hid. Now the question was, what crest was it? Solon will tell her in a few days.

She dismissed Ymir and the girl, once she left the room, bolted to her own. She hugged the book she was reading to her chest and wanted nothing more than to cry. How she wished for the old days where she would visit her father in his workshop and watch him forge swords with the strange tools he had.

"Papa I miss you......."

Chapter 6: Mourning Souls: Memories Blur: End
Ghaaa!!! I'll explain, I'll explain!!! (Dodging angry swords) Why did I throw in like, like 5 new characters? One, like I said before, this story takes place during Byleth's/Arisa's childhood years. They will be having crucial roles in the future. Especially Ymir, Emily, Lestia and Zander. Ymir is the most crucial one of all because she will be one of the major keys I have plans for. Lawson was created to give more character and to show the more vicious and cunning side of Cornelia that she hides when she is with the royal family. As we all know, she didn't show her true colors till the time skip in the Azure Moon route and a bit in the Crimson Flower route. She is barely mentioned in the Church and Golden Deer Routes. I wanted to give Cornelia the spotlight that is needed. Especially how we find out who she was truly working with. Lawson is a character created to give more effect to this.

Ymir. But that isn't her real name. Ymir is the name her mother, Cornelia, gave her after her father mysteriously passed away. Now, in the actual game, Cornelia doesn't have a daughter, but this story is an AU. So, I'm going to have fun. More about Ymir will be revealed. She was inspired by Mashu from Fate Grand Order, Seele from Honkai Impact 3 and Christa from Attack on Titan. This also ties with the goals of Those Who Slither in the dark. She'll have main role soon.

Emily and Lestia. Their true purpose has yet to be revealed but I decided to reveal a bit of their character and personality in this chapter. Zander has yet to show his true colors like the other two. Emily, Lestia and Zander won't be appearing for a good 4-5 chapters. Maybe a few flashbacks but that's it.

The impression Arisa left on Dimitri is similar to the impression Byleth left to him when the game first starts. All these are key points for the character development that is yet to come. We see it but slowly as we progress through the story. That's why I created Emily and Ymir especially. Emily specially to call out people. XD
Chapter 7: Tropical Winds: Part 1: Stop at Dadga

- 1 month later -

After returning to Remire Village, Arisa was welcomed by good yelling from the village elder, Bara. The old woman was a bit taller than her and had tan wrinkly skin, wore a red cloak, and had a cane with an eagle head carved on it. The old woman was beyond furious once her eyes landed on the young girl that mounted off the young red pegasus. Her grandson, Zach, began praying to the sky gods to protect Lady Byleth from his grandmother's wrath. A few of the villagers by were watching and they too, began to pray but to the Goddess of Fodlan. The minute the Elder and Arisa made eye contact, the girl bolted and hid behind her father.

"Young youngsters these think you can sneak away?! Why I ought to throw you into the boat and send you Fodlan's Fangs at this rate!!" The old small woman barked as she pointed her wooden cane at Arisa, who desperately hid behind her father.

"Grandma.....I am really..really sorry..." Arisa said as she peaked from behind her father.

A few of the villagers laughed while a few were a bit nervous because of the harsh way the old woman was scolding the child. No one blamed her though. Elder Bara has been the village elder for over 50 years and unlike other elders who were very well open that they hated outsiders that were not from Fodlan, she was a kind but strict woman that had Fodlan and Birgid blood running through her veins. She looked more like her father minus her reddish purplish pale hair. She was caring woman who took care of the children in the village. She also greatly respected Jeralt and his company for the things they have done for the village.

"Don't let it happen again!" Elder Bara said.

Jeralt sighed at this and spoke.

"Elder Bara, I can assure you that this won't happen again. If my daughter sneaks away again, I can guarantee she will be punished properly." Jeralt said.

"I hope so!!! Honestly, she reminds of you in your younger days! Seriously, I hope she doesn't get your drinking habits!" The elder said and sighed.

"Papa, what does she mean by your drinking habits?" Arisa asked and saw Sandy and Florencio cover their mouths.

Truthfully, the two were trying not to laugh because they knew very well how Jeralt gets when he drinks. The man coughed and just ruffled his daughter's hair.

"Nothing you need to know kid." He said.

"Grandma, can I make it up you?" Arisa said.

Elder Bara smiled a bit too cheerfully and all the villagers along with Jeralt and his team knew that smile far too well.
"Actually, you can." She smiled.

Arisa swore Florencio was going to make a run for it but was grabbed by the collar of his neck by his sister. The man wept and his doom was set.

"I am traveling to Birgid in two months. I think it's a good opportunity to teach you a lesson." She said.

Sothis was watching through the girl's human eyes and truly it was a sight to behold. The village elder was an interesting one. Strict yet kind. Harsh yet gentle. Cold yet warm. Someone the goddess could relate to.

"Oh. Umm....did you want me to watch the house and do chores while you are away? I can do that!! I promise to also feed the cats and I won't let Red Hare near the garden!" Arisa said and the said pegasus just neighed.

"Nothing like that child. You're coming with me." The elder said.

"It was nice knowing you Byleth!!" One of the village kids said and the other children told him to shut up.

"Pardon?" Arisa said shocked.

"You heard me child!! If you're going to be a mercenary like your father, you need experience!! Faerghus was one thing but the world outside Fodlan is a different story." The elder said and turned away to head back to her home.

""Don't spend your days sitting around waiting for something to happen. Get outside and make it happen! Live like a warrior, be at one with nature, fearless in the moment.... because this moment will never happen again so don't waste it!"" Elder Bara said and left with a satisfied grin.

"What just happened?" Both Sothis and Arisa said as they looked over to Jeralt.

The man sighed as he heard Zach laugh at bit nervously at what his grandmother just did.

"I am... very sorry about that. Grandmother has always been like that." He chuckled a bit worried.

"It's alright Zach. I'm still worried that now she's making us go. When was the last time Elder Bara had hired me for a job?" Jeralt sighed as they headed back to the wagons to unpack everything.

"I think the last time you were hired was 10 years ago. Still...things between Fodlan and Birgid are tense since...." Florencio said as he trailed off.

Arisa was looking through her own memories again to find information on Birgid.

"If I remember.... Petra was just barely born. Time to redo math again. I'm currently 5 years old. Born in 1159. I arrived at this world on August 26th, 1164.... it's been two months? … So that makes this year and day.... October 5th (Sothis:Wrong??), 1164. Petra is 15 in 1180. The war between Birgid and the Empire ends in 1175. 11 more years.... till that day comes." Arisa thought and heard Sothis sigh.

"The amount of information you just spoke. I admit, it hurts my head, but its information needed. Despite things being tense, we'll see how things turn out." Sothis said as she appeared before her
friend as the two headed to the forest nearby.

Her father said for her to go play while he and the others unpacked the wagons. Arisa walked to the lake nearby. It was a small spot from Byleth's memories that she loved to disappear to. The place was relaxing, calm. Red Hare followed her and Sothis gladly seated herself on the pony.

"(Snoort)" Red Hare glared at her and Sothis stuck her tongue out.

"Don't worry, I'm light as a feather." Sothis said.

"(Neigh!)" Red Hare said.

"I beg thy pardon!!! I do not weigh like a potato sack!!" Sothis growled.

"Well those two aren't getting along...." Arisa thought as she made it to the lake.

She could hear Sothis and Red Hare arguing. Honestly, it was a funny sight. She sat down near the lakebed as she let those two argue away and took out her journal. She began to write all that she experienced in Faerghus and her encounter with the children. This journey honestly also helped her fully understand the language of Fodlan. Goodness, it was nightmare to remember. She sighed as she flipped through the pages and found the one, she was originally looking for.

*Search for information. Remember to write all the routes. Don't forget.*

It was the lone sentence that made her worry more. She already had 4 journals written with all the information of the four routes in the game. Crimson Flower, Azure Moon, Verdant Wind, Silver Snow. She had to. She must. She wrote like a mad woman that first week she arrived and locked away those journals to make sure not a single person ever got their hands on them. Only she knew the true location of them. She had that fear that she will eventually forget her previous life and wanted to be prepared if that fear did come true. She sighed once more and touched one of the plants next to her. She giggled a bit when she managed to make the small dandelion bud on it bloom.

"Sothis, what do you think Brigid is like? I read that the place is full of beaches, and tropical forest. The people there practice shamanism, which let them use powerful curses and communicate with spirits." She said and her face became blank as she saw the goddess and Red Hare still fighting.

So much for a conversation!

Arisa just groans. Oh how she wished Wi-Fi existed in this world.....

- 2 months later -

"Uuuuuurrghhhhh!!!
"Get used to it child!!! Eventually you will earn those sea legs of yours!" Elder Bara smirked proudly as she was at the high balcony of the ship, they were riding in.

Poor Arisa now had to get reused to riding on a boat and it was an utter nightmare. Jeralt gently rubbed his daughter's back while Sandy stood proudly at the crow's nest. It was a two-week journey through the Empire to reach the Fodlan's Fangs dock to take a ship to Brigid. Of course, the sailors there warned them to be careful but also heard some very discriminating remarks made by a few. Jeralt's and Sandy's glares was more than enough to silence those fools who knew nothing. Elder Bara had told them to stop it and that she was used to such remarks already. Arisa didn't like it one bit and when she made sure none of the adults were looking, she sent a mini lightning bolt at those fools. It was a sight to behold to see them scream and embarrass themselves. Also, she wanted to take her anger out on them because she couldn't bring Red Hare with her. Tch.

"You sure Florencio will be alright taking care of the company?" Sandy said.

They brought Zach, Ili and Ra with them this time.

"He'll be perfectly fine. Besides, the others are there to help him out. Have more faith in him Sandy." Jeralt said to the tan woman from high above.

Sandy sighed and shook her head.

"I'm more worried that he's going to forget that we have at least two trading routes proposed to us by a noble from the Alliance and also Almyra!!" She said bitterly.

"Funny how a former Almyra citizen speaks so coldly of her homeland. Maybe I should remind of the history between Fodlan and your homeland?" Zach and and Sandy narrowed her eyes.

"Zach." Elder Bara said and the man kept on going.

"Hey, I still haven't forgiven the people of Almyra for the death of my parents." He said back.

"That's enough!" Sandy said and jumped down, landing in front of the man.

"You still have anger then you might as well take it out on me since I am a former citizen. Unfortunately, we're on a boat is wait at least a few more days till we reach the land. Tch. (I swear this son of bitch!!! I why I got-------)" the woman turned away cursing in her native tongue and went back to the crow’s nest.

A few of the ship's sailors rolled their eyes. It was expected of their common customers. Especially Sandy and Zach. Those two don't exactly get along despite the older woman being the man's General. Elder Bara sighed as she looked out to the sea. Truthfully, that anger should be directed to the Empire.

"We'll be making a short stop at Dadga in two days!! We need to get supplies to repair a part of the boat. They found a leak." The captain yelled out and Jeralt walked over to the man.

"How bad is it?" He asked.

"Unfortunately, bad. One of the sailors screamed at the sight of an octopus while the chef just caught it and said it was today's dinner." The captain said.
Both Sandy and Zach cringed. They aren't fans of seafood. That much they can agree on.

"I'll go check it out." Sandy sighed as she went down below the deck.

"(WHAT IN THE BLOODY HELL?!?! WHAT THE HELL IS WRONG WITH THIS WOOD?!
WHO MADE THIS F-------)" The rest of sentence were curses in the Almyran tongue.

"I'm going to go help her. She isn't exactly a fan of water." Jeralt said and ran down stairs.

Zach just groans and left to the rails. Arisa followed him and was struggling to have a better look.

"Here. This should help you." Zach sighed as he picked up the girl and put his over shoulders.

"Wwwhhhhaaaa!!" The girl squealed excitedly as she saw how beautiful the ocean looked.

The bright colors of blue and green, the reflection of the light in the water surface. She could see a few schools of fish and a few unknown species.

"Amazing isn't it? Brings back memories when grandma used to bring me out here a lot." Zach said.

"Zach, out of curiosity, are you from Brigid or here on Fodlan? Or a mix of both?" Arisa asked.

"Hmm. Truthfully Lady Byleth, I was raised here in Fodlan. But my father is from Fodlan and my mom is from Brigid. I was born in Brigid but raised in Fodlan." He said.

"Amazing!! So, you know both cultures then?" She asked.

"Sort of?? Grandma loved the ocean and would bring us here to go spearfishing. Thus, my specialty is water magic. Which, is extremely rare." He said a bit bitterly.

"You sound like you don't like water." She said.

Zach shook his head.

"I wouldn't say I don't like it. It's more towards I'm worried." He said.

Why is having this conversation with a child?

"Then, why are you mean to Sandy?" She asked.

She is pushing it, she knows it. Zach frowned but looked out to the ocean.

"My parents went to serve the Empire army to help fight off the Almyran soldiers at Fodlan's Throat. They didn't come back. I was...your age. Grandma held no grudge, but I did. Yeah, I know Sandy wasn't there, but I still can't help but feel angry when I see her!! She's from Almyra!! A former warrior of that place yet she...speaks of it so coldly...like she hates it." Zach ranted.

"Ow!" He screeched as he felt his grandmother's wooden cane poke him in the ribs.

"What was that for!?" He said.

"Honestly, ranting in front of a child! Then again, she is wiser than her looks say." Elder Bara said as she looked over to Arisa, who blinked like an owl.
"Grandma Bara, what's it like in Brigid and Dadga?" Arisa asked and the old woman smiled fondly at the memories.

"Forest green as the eyes could see. The spirits of the land would sing their songs. The people live in harmony. Fruits of different colors. Unknown tastes. Colors both bright and dark. Spells of unknown. Hmm...brings back memories of my younger days." The old woman smiled.

Sothis appeared and was silent as she listened to woman as her eyes looked over to the ocean.

"It's funny how much the spirits of the land pass through these realms. I'm a shaman after all. And you girl," she pointed her wooden cane at Arisa, "A kind spirit protects and watches over you. I can't see her unfortunately, but she's here, watching and listening." Elder Bara smiled and walked away.

Sothis was frozen like a statue while Zach was nervous. He was afraid of ghosts.

"Arrghhh!!! I hate seaweed!!"

Both Zach and Arisa turned towards the stairs that lead below the deck and Zach could not help but burst out laughing seeing Sandy completely wet and pieces of seaweed stuck all over her.

"Whooooaah Zachi!!" Arisa screeched as the man nearly dropped her off the ship by accident.

"Whoa!! Sorry Lady Byleth!!" He said and quickly put her down before Jeralt cut off his head for nearly dropping his daughter.

"Sandy, when are we going to eat, ne....." Ra said as he laid on the wooden floor.

He was hungry and absolutely had the worst sea sickness ever. Thus, to try and calm down, he lays down.

"My aren't we desperate for food......pig." Ili said with a snicker.

"What was that you spoiled princess, ne?!" Ra glared at her.

"Oh, nothing pig. Just that a certain man has been smuggled too much food lately." Ili said.

Ili was a former noble from Morfis. At times, her bratty and snotty personality came out but only at certain people. In this case, with Ra.

"Just f-----" he didn't get to finish his sentence.

"AHEM!" Jeralt said and the man froze at the glare his captain gave him.

"I mean..just kiss already!" He said quickly.

"Just fuck already, is what he wanted to say. I'm surprised to hear the curse words from my old world here." Arisa thought and smiled.

Sothis gave a glare and the girl flinched because it felt like Sothis was her mother when it came to her cursing.
"I will never kiss this pig!!"

"Curse you Zach, de!!"

Elder Bara could not help but laugh at these interactions. Oh, the memories they brought. Especially when she challenged that beast during her younger years. She traveled to Sreng and her foolish self has chosen to challenge the beast in the desert. He called himself Macuil. The only reason she didn't proceed further to challenge him because of the young woman that was with him. Her hair was beautiful mint color and dark forest colored eyes. Her hair was long to her knees and her clothing was that of a Saint.

"Please leave!! My husband does not like humans!!"

She sighed and wondered how that young woman is. Melody was her name if she remembered correctly. She was kind and always apologized for the hostile attitude her husband had towards her. Speaking of that, she looked over to Byleth. The girl had that green colored hair. She frowned and looked over to Jeralt. Only a few selected know the real reason why Jeralt left the Knights of Serios and she was one of those selected few.

"I fear time will eventually catch up soon...."

- Two Days Later -

"LAND!!! SWEET LAND!!!" Arisa screamed in pure joy as she ran off the wooden stairs that were placed for everyone to get off the boat.

"Watch it Byleth!!" Ili yelled out as she got on her wyvern.

If Ra, Fiona and Zach are the owners of Pegasus, then Ili, Sandy and Rin were the owner of wyrens.

"Got you!" She yelled out as she scooped the girl up.

"Scrreee!!" Her wyvern, Damayo, roared happily.

"Oh, come on Ili!!" Arisa pouted as the woman just giggled as she seated the girl in front of her.

"How about a fly up?" The woman grinned.

"Whoooo!!" Arisa yelled happily as they flew above the clouds.
Jeralt shed at this while Ra just groans.

"I can show you the world ~" Ili sang.

"What the fuck...? That song exists here in this world?" Arisa thought she was going insane hearing a familiar song from her childhood.

"Shining, shimmering, spl---ow!!" A pineapple came out of nowhere and hit her right at the side of her head.

Arisa caught it and saw it was a few birds flying nearby.

"Caw,caw,caw!!" It was freaken cockatoo group that laughed.

"Arrghh...you brood chickens!!! Get them Damayo!!" The grown woman yelled angrily as she pointed her finger at the group.

Damayo just shook his head and dove down to return to the others, no matter how much his Master wanted to kill those damn birds for ruining her moment.

[ ---- ]

"(Good evening Elder Bara!! It's been so long since you have come to visit here in Dadga!! What's the occasion?"") One of the shop vendors said as he recognized the old woman.

"(Ah!! I see Zach is here as well. You grown boy!!)" He said.

They were all talking in their native tongue.

"(I guess I have. Grandmother said she wanted to visit the temple for the Shaman festival. You know, to pay respects to our ancestors.)" He said.

"(Baaaa!! You speak too soon Zach. Did you forget it is also your magic revealing ceremony?! You are turning 25 soon.)" She said.

"(Eh?! It's that time already? Also...umm...)" he pointed towards the sky and Zach instantly began groaning as he saw the raging Ili screaming at the group of cockatoos in the sky as her wyvern landed on the sand, "(Is that your...friend of Fodlan?)" He said.

"(Unfortunately, y---ooww!! Grandmother!!)" Zach screeched when Elder Bara poked him in the ribs again.

"(Yes. The woman and the others are from Fodlan. I wanted to show them around our homeland. I think it's a good opportunity for that child to learn of the world.)" She said referring to Byleth.

"(I guess. Also, I keep a look out if I were you...)" he whispered and Zach narrowed his eyes, (Those...messengers of the Church of Serios are in Brigid. Be careful. Especially the man Jeralt...I don’t know the situation since he never talks about it, but I know he does everything to protect his daughter.)" He said.

Elder Bara sighed and looked over to the ship.
"(I know...and if those damn followers try anything....)" she muttered and only Zach and the vendor felt a shift in the energy of the forest.

"(The spirits of this land will show them their place.)"

- Later at Night: Inn -

"And I swear those damn chickens ruined my moment as I flew to the sky and sung my song!!" Ili said angrily with arms and legs crossed, pouting.

"Yet used to it, ne." Ra snickered as he ate his dinner.

They were all currently in the dining room on the first floor of the inn. It was Arisa's first-time trying food from Dadga and the girl loved it. She was more than happy eating the meat, stews, the different dishes and spices mixed in these foods.

"She has the stomach of a black hole...this is her fifth plate of tamales..." Sandy said as the girl happily continued eating.

"She's Rosa's daughter alright...." Zach thought as he took a sip of his beer.

"Eat more slowly!" Elder Bara scold the girl and Jeralt laughed.

"How can I?! All this food is delicious!!!! How can I not give my thank you to this amazing land with this amazing food?!" Arisa said with her mouth full of rice.

Everyone laughed at this as the girl continued to devour her food. It really was a joyous sight.

[ --- ]

Dark purple eyes watched the table with a bored expression as they looked at each person at the table one by one. There was the Elder Shaman, who she has only spoken to once. She sighed as she continued to eat her food. Well, they are going to Brigid soon, might as well sneak onto the ship. Her parents were away to Fodlan anyway. Two days of planning. Should be enough time.

- The Next Day: On a Fodlan Ship -

"Brother, look at all these different colored fish!!"

Light mint colored eyes looked excitedly to the ocean waves and schools of fish swimming near
the ship. Her medium length curler hair bounced happily as she skipped excitedly over the wooden floor. She was beyond excited!! This was the first time her brother has allowed her to come out of hiding after so long!! Oh, she wonders if she will ever get a chance to meet (her) again!! She was like a mother to her. Well, technically her brother is father pretending to be her brother for her safety but right now that does not matter!!! She was just beyond excited to have fun!

"Flayn!!! Be careful!! I don't want you to hurt yourself!"

Flayn puffed her cheeks as she stopped running as she turned to her brother. With short length pristine combed green hair, a small gold chain on his head. And a bit of a goatee, and pristine blue clothes a representative of the Church of Serios, Sir Seteth, advisor to the archbishop, Lady Rhea.

"You worry too much brother!! Besides----" she suddenly stopped speaking as her eyes went wide and turned to look out to the sea.

"Flayn? What's wrong?" Seteth worried.

"Sniff...sniff....this scent.....I know this scent!!" Flayn said she sniffed the air.

"Umm...Flayn?" Seteth said as he saw the girl run around a bit till, she pointed to the direction of north.

"Sandy!!!! I smell Sandy!!! She must have been on a boat to Brigid also!!" Flayn said cheerfully.

Seteth froze the mention of that name. He never introduced Flayn to anyone. How...?

"Flayn, how do you know Sandana? I don't recall ever introducing her to you." Seteth said.

Flayn smiled and shook her head.

"I met her many years ago. She would travel a lot and stayed in Zanados for some time. True, at first, she was cold at first, but she eventually opened up. She was very kind and would tell me stories of the world and Almyra. The different cultures and plants. Oh!! Especially the different kinds of fish there is!!! She...she's...she's like a mother to me." Flayn said.

"Oh!! See these hair ornaments!! She made these for me!!!" She said excitedly.

Seteth's mind suddenly began to swirl with millions of questions. First off, he made sure that his sister was well hidden!!! How on earth was anyone able to discover her location?! Second, why was Sandana in Zanados? Was this before she became part of the church or after? Now that he thinks about, during her time in the church, every month she would leave on a one-week trip. She would always take with her books, trinkets and other things. It was strange. Then it dawned on him. She would leave to Zanados to visit Flayn.

"It's been so long. I hope I get to see her again." Flayn thought as she happily looked out to the ocean.

She was heartbroken when Sandada said she won't be able to come and visit her anymore due to some very difficult situations. But even so, every month through the past years, she still wrote to her and sent her amazing gifts. It was more than enough and Flayn loved her more than anything. She was like a second mother to her.
"Oh, brother. I forgot to ask, but how do you Sandy? Is she an acquaintance of yours?" She asked.

"More towards......an old friend?" He said.

If he said that the two were dating for some time and it did not work out, he doesn't want to imagine the disaster that would happen.

"Oh....I see." Flayn said a bit disappointed.

Why did she sound so disappointed......?

- Back at the Inn -

"Achoo!!" Sandy sneezed as she was getting her bed ready to take a nap.

Jeralt, Zach, Ra, the sailors and captain went to go buy the materials needed for fixing the ship.

Elder Bara decided to take Lady Byleth around town to show her the culture of Dadga and perhaps try to teach her the language of Brigid. Ili went to go help the cooks in the kitchen since the woman loved cooking new dishes. She had a rivalry with Fiona when it came to cooking. The woman sighed as she lay on her bed, thoughts swirling through her head. The argument she had with Zach was still bothering her. A lot. Usually the arguments the two have wouldn't bother her at all, but today, it just...really...really did. She raised her bandaged right hand and gently unwrapped it. On the top skin of her hand, revealed a beautiful gold color symbol that looked similar to a peacock feather. She stared and stared at it. How many memories this symbol had.

*The Crest of Serios.*

She was born with no Crest. She was born with no inhuman sight and heightened smell like a wolf. She hated blood. She hated fighting. She hated.... her own people. She hated her own homeland. Those fools of the royal family accused her mother and father of treason. The result, execution. She remembers the deaths and screams of her beloved siblings and mother, father. She hated Almyra for the false accusations that were placed on her family. They served the royal family for generations yet...in the end...the result was bloodshed. She sighed once more. She had no memory of how she received this Crest. Just that woman shares her blood to her. Her brother damaged his pride for her sake. He was proud Assassin, but he was willing to throw that pride of his away for her sake. She chuckled lightly.

"Sure, brings back memories..." she couldn't help but smile at the old memories of how she met Florencio.

They were 10 years old when they met. As she closed her eyes to sleep...

"Sniff-----!!" Her eyes suddenly shot wide open as a two all too familiar smells entered her nostrils.
She quickly sat up and bolted to the balcony on the second floor. Many of the people there were confused at the woman suddenly running but shrugged their shoulders. Once she was there, she looked out to the ocean, eyes narrowed and widened as she an all too familiar ship with a certain symbol on the flag. She re-wrapped her hand and narrowed her eyes as she jumped down from the balcony. A few people screamed but it was normal to others. She needed to find Jeralt and the others, fast.

- In town -

"This spell is used for the protection of the spirit. It is said to bring good fortune to those you have a heart of gold." A young woman said to Arisa as the girl was looking at the different varieties of charms that were being sold.

It reminded her a lot of the Japanese, Mexican, Chinese, African and bunch of other charms from different countries she loved to buy as souvenirs, however these charms had actual spells. Elder Bara smiled proudly to the young woman.

"(You done well Fui!!!! The charm spells are mastered, and your business is doing well. But don't get cocky.)" The elder said and the woman smiled, nodding.

"(Thank you Elder. If I may ask, is that your granddaughter? I been hearing her whisper to herself and she has a decent amount of knowledge of charms and incantations.)" Fui said.

"(Florencio has been teaching her magic. She's quite the quick learner.)" Elder Bara said happily.

"(I see. Then how is Zach? He....has been gotten over his fear of.... water...?)" Fui asked and the Elder sighed.

"(It's difficult.....but I have faith in him. The ancient spirits of the waves will guide him. I'm sure of it. And maybe the child as well.)" Elder Bara said.

Fui nodded and saw the young girl walk up to her with a small green little string doll with seashell eyes, a small peridot heart shaped gem in the center.

"I like to buy this one please!!" Arisa said.

"Oh? Interesting but good choice. It's a common one parents buy to protect their children." Fui said as Arisa looked at her confused.

"Ufu. The gem in the center is a peridot. They are said to be the tears of the volcano goddess, Pele. They symbolize strength but they also are said to keep nightmares away. This one has no spell, but it's the natural spirit of the stone that will protect you." Elder Bara smiled as she looked at other charms.

"Oh!!! Spell of love! Charm of good luck!!! To bring fortune and gratitude!!! Ooohhh!!!! There are so many!!!!! Arisa, I can't choose!!! To think that humans created such things!!!" Sothis's excited voice rang in her ear as she looked over to the overly excited goddess who went back and forth looking at all the charms and other things.

"Seems your friend is excited." Elder Bara said to Arisa and she nodded.
"She wants a charm but can't choose." Arisa said.

The fact that Elder Bara can tell Sothis is protecting her is a bit scary but at least she couldn't see her, only feel a certain amount.

"Hmm....maybe...oohh!!! This one!!" Sothis said and pointed to a small pendant with a strange colored stone.

Arisa picked it up and Fui raised an eyebrow.

"That's a moonstone. I'm...very surprise you spotted that. You know, those that wear moonstone are said to be protected on earlier life. They said to bring peace, protection and wisdom. Your friend has a good eye. " Fui smiles while Sothis beamed with pride.

"I made an excellent choice!!! So, you will buy it right?" Sothis said.

At least Arisa was not looked at weirdly when she would speak out loud to Sothis. Apparently, it was common here for people to speak to spirits. The culture is shamanism after all.

"Well, since you chose it. I will. Plus, I love collecting things like this. How much for them?" Arisa said and Fui fisted her right hand and had two fingers out on her left.

"20 copper coins." Fui said.

Arisa internally cringed.

"So, the same price as the souvenirs in my old world. Well, since this is my first time here, I'll make an exception." Arisa thought as she nodded and paid for the two charms.

Fui helped her put on the pendant and Arisa wore the little doll on her purse. Both girls, goddess and human, beamed with joy as they wore their charms with pride.

- With Jeralt, Zach and Ra -

"What do you mean this is 2 silver coin, de?!!"

Ra was arguing a on old friend who lived in Dadga. He was vendor of wood and a bloody expensive seller. Also known as the RIP OFF!! The man smirked proudly at the red wood he had.

"Ra, de!!! You still haven't learned the value of wood, de!! Ought to study!" The vendor laughed.

"Studying my arse!!!!! You bloody ripping us off, de!!" Ra said and the two men began arguing over the price of wood.

Jeralt couldn't help but laugh watching this and Zach shook his head.

"Captain, should I intervene or just leave them be?" Zach said and Jeralt just nodded.

"I trust Ra will get us a good deal. For now, let's just get the rest of the materials. The captain of the ship and his crew are at the docks checking the rest of the ship to make sure there isn't further
damage. Besides, we're getting a good reward to protect them from Pirates." Jeralt said as the two began to walk through the town market.

"I guess but seriously that friend of his is a rip off. Red wood, yes, it's rare but it doesn't cost that much!! Well...at least not here in Dadga and Brigid." He said and Jeralt chuckle.

"That is true. Also, how are you feeling? I noticed you been tense these last few days. Is this about your coming of age ceremony?" Jeralt said and Zach avoid his eyes.

"If you don't want to talk about it, that's alright." The captain said and Zach shook his head.

"No...it's alright. Might as well talk about it. Umm, do you mind if we stop at one of the food stalls to sit down and eat while we talk?" He said.

"I don't mind. Besides, it's almost the midday so might as well." Jeralt said.

The spotted a pho stall and decided to eat there. They paid for their food and sat down to wait for their orders.

"You remember when I first met you right?" Zach said.

"Of course, I do. How can I forget you nearly drowning? You were 15 back then." Jeralt said.

Zach met Jeralt 10 years ago on one of his missions through Brigid. He was on his way back to meet his group of knights when he encountered a group of boys push someone off the docks and into the water. The sound of gurgling and screams of a child were heard and when Jeralt yelled at them, they ran, and he quickly jumped into the water to help the soul. He managed to pull Zach out. The boy was bruised, cuts, and what was worse, his hands tied. That was also how he met Elder Bara and earned her respect and gratitude for saving her grandson from those boys. Since then, the boy grew a fear of water and refused to even go near a lake, pond, beach or ocean ever again. He used to love swimming but now...

"Since then...you know my fear of water. Honestly, it's ironic." Zach laughed dryly as he took a sip of the drink he ordered, "I love my magic. Especially because it was considered an extremely high rarity and could grant me the status of a noble, but I don't want any of that. Being born of both Fodlan blood and that of Brigid, is difficult. I'm ostracized on both sides yet the only ones to have accepted me are those of Remire Village and only a few of the church.... Even before we left the church, many of the knights didn't like me. It made even more afraid and as you seen before, I fell into a depression." Zach said with a bitter smile.

Jeralt understood well. To be an outsider on both sides, it was difficult. He had seen many things through the years, both sides of the coin. There were times he chose to ignore it but other times he spoke. It wasn't until he met his wife, Rosa, that truly opened his eyes.

"I know there are times the past haunts you and I understand that. It isn't something one can forget, and it can never be erased. The question is, will you continue to let it chain you down or break free?" Jeralt said to him and Zach chuckled.

"Funny. You sounded like my father there. He would say those words often." Zach said.
"Found you! Oh, thank goodness!!"

The two turned to the right to see Sandy looking out of breath and a little pale. Zach was very confused. He had never seen Sandy this worried before. The last time he saw he like this was years ago when she was nearly caught by Almyran forces during a job.

"What's wrong?" Jeralt said.

"Fodlan Church ship. They are stopping here in Dadga for a day." She said and instantly Jeralt gritted his teeth.

"Who was on the ship?" He said and she nodded.

Zach knew what this meant and stood up. He had one of the servers pack their food so they can take it with them.

"Thankfully Rhea is not there. But there are still bishops with power there." She said.

"Unfortunately, we can't leave immediately. The captain said the repair will take at least all day and we won't be able to depart till tomorrow morning." Zach said as he had the food packed.

"What do we do? I'm worried they will recognize you Jeralt!! Or worse!! Me of all people!!" Sandy said.

"Calm down. For now, let's all go meet up at the inn. Thankfully they aren't staying there and will most likely sleep on their ship because too many of them think they are higher than others. We'll tell Ra and Ili. You go find Elder Bara and Byleth. For now, we'll continue things normally. Sandy, you have that device your brother gave you right?" Jeralt said.

"Of course, I do." She said.

"Good. Also, make sure to use your cloak." He said and she nodded.

[ ----- ]

"Aahhhh!!! Look at this fish brother!!! It's orange and has black stripes!!! It's so cute!!" Flayn said excitedly as she was looking over the wooden dock to a small coral reef nearby.

Truthfully, she was looking at a clown fish with small school of other fish.

"Flayn be careful there!! I don't want you to fall----!!!" Too late.

"Whaa!!" The girl accidentally fell into the water, sigh.

"Flayn!!" Seteth yelled as he ran over the deck but what he did not expect was a water bubble to float up with Flayn looking confused but also giggled as it popped and dropped her on top of her brother.
"Heheheh!! Be careful next time lass!!"

Seteth was groaning in pain because she landed on his back. The girl's eyes widen as she saw a strange small creature laugh. They had webbed feet, scales, and a tail. They laughed as they flew to her and circled around them.

"What is this creature?!!" Seteth said angrily as Flayn got off him and she giggled.

"You never seen water spirits before? Yeeesshh!! And I thought that girl from the Empire was shut it!! Anyhow, welcome to Dadga!!" It giggled as it spun circles around Flayn.

The girl giggled excitedly.

"What is your name? It is a pleasure to meet you!" Flayn said.

"Can't say my name but seeing a fellow spirit is nice!!! Rare seeing those of the dragon kin too!!!!!" It laughed.

Seteth and Flayn froze hearing "dragon kin" as the water spirit just smiled to them.

"Don't worry. I won't say anything. It is a promise of us spirits after all. Good luck! Bye bye!!"
And the spirit smiled and disappeared into the waves.

The two siblings looked at each other worried at this. They need to be careful.

"Burn in the eternal flames!!! Mwhhahahahaha!!!" Arisa cackled as she tried to cast a fire spell in a small pot filled with herbs.

It was an epic fail. That's what she gets for mimicking time skip Dimitri's line. The Male vendor laughed hard at this and Elder Bara could not help but chuckle.

"And fire magic is not my best thing......" Arisa sighed as Sothis laughed.

"You can cast fire magic, but it isn't as strong. It'll take a few years to build it up. You get used to it." Sothis smiled.

Arisa groans and Elder Bara patted her head. The vendor smiled and casted the spell for her into the pot and had fire burning in it. Arisa couldn't help but stare at it. But what she didn't expect....

Her head hurt......it suddenly began to hurt. Not at full force where she is screaming. But still pains, where she hissed and placed a hand on her head. She heard...voices...they sounded familiar but one....she didn't completely recognize.

"You abandoned us!! You Abandoned me!! You hid who you were!!"
"Please understand!!! It had to be done!! Even if it hurt me, I wanted the safety of you all!!"

"I'll make you regret making us forget you....."

As if arms came from the flames, they wrapped around her neck and began choking her.

"Ah--aahhh!!" She couldn't breath and she raised her hand to try and reach to the person choking her.

Her eyes widened as her hands seemed larger, the voice more adult like.

"S-Stop," she croaked.

Her body froze as void eyes investigated her own.

"I'll make you regret P--------"

"Byleth!!"

She snapped out of it and was shaking. She looks around her and saw Elder Bara looking at her worried as well as the vendor and Sothis.

"Are you alright?!" Sothis said and quickly cupped the girl’s cheeks, looking at her beyond worried.

"(I think the child saw some sort of vision. It's...an extremely rare thing to occur)" The vendor said in his native tongue and Elder Bara sighed.

"(Most likely. Do you have that protection charm of the conscious?)" She said and he handed her a small red gold chain that goes on the head.

"(Keep it Elder Bara. I think that child needs it more.)" The vendor said as he nodded, and the elders thank them.

"Byleth dear, come here." Elder Bara called out to her and the girl walked up.

She placed the gold chain with the red gem on her and the girl blinked.

"Don't take it off. Believe me, it's for your own good." She said and the girl nodded.

"Why don't we head back to the inn? It is midday after all!! I think Ili may have finished cooking!" Elder Bara said cheerfully.

The two waved goodbye and began to head back to the inn. Unfortunately, the two went past Sandy without even knowing it. The woman was wearing her cloak.
Sandy was just in a turmoil of emotions when she saw the ship of the Church of Serios. She had many good memories but also so many hurtful ones. The fact that she was able to see that Seteth and Flayn were here made it much worse. She loved Flayn. She was like a daughter to her. She was 23 when she was still an assassin and had chosen to break into Zanados to see if she found any treasures there from the rumors. There was also news of demonic beast in that area, what's more, it was greatly closed off by those of The Church of Serios. Her mind had chosen to go and see if she could take anything worth of value. How that backfired. She found nothing but ancient ruins and wanted nothing more but to leave until the unexpected happened. She met a young girl there. She was confused to why the young girl was there she told she lived there and that was her home. Sandy was more than confused by this and called her naive. The girl was stubborn but kind. Guess that was what made her live in Zanados with the girl for a year. At first, she was cold to that girl. Even lectured her on how she had not known much. The most Sandy was able to do, was able to teach the girl to make medicine because making actual food meant that Sandy was going to die from food poisoning. She continued to walk through the marketplace, looking for the Elder and Byleth, but sighed in relief as she finally caught their scents that were heading back to the inn.

As she continued to walk, she did notice the sound of running footsteps heading her way as she continued to walk. She needed some time alone from every. So, the forest was the perfect place to relax in. As much as she hated Almyra, the tropical forest always brought her fond memories of her time with her siblings. They would always go to the forest to escape their studies of military tactics. Now she finally heard running footsteps but assumed they were going to go past her until she heard words, she never thought she would hear ever again.

"Mother!!!"

She spun around like a tornado and time slowed down as she saw the familiar mint green hair and eyes. The owner of the eyes smiled in pure joy as they jumped towards her and caught them
quickly. Her hood came off, and she thanked the goddess they were near the edge of the forest.

"Gasp!!" Sandy gasped as she caught them and quickly put them down, by holding their shoulders.

But their arms hugged her tightly and she felt their head on her chest.

"Sandy it's you!! It's been years!!! How I longed to see you again!!" They cried.

"Flayn....." Sandy muttered as she was debating to hug the girl, but she did.

Sandy smiled sadly as she hugged the girl gently and rubbed her head softly as Flayn cried on her chest.

"It's alright. It's alright. There, there..." she said and Flayn finally calmed down and sniffed.

"It's been so long!! Look at you!! You're so beautiful!!!!" Flayn said finally letting the woman free and she looked beautiful.

She had grown into a wonderful woman.

"Thank you F-----!!"

"Flayn!!! Where did you run off to?!"

Sandy gasped and quickly grabbed the girl’s hand and ran into the forest. Sandy is not ready to see Seteth. Absolutely not.

"Sandy, wait. That's my brother!!" Flayn said and Sandy looked her way.

"Flayn I know but I can't let him see me. Please understand." The older woman said.

Flayn was confused but she could see the pain and sadness the older woman had. It reminded her of Rhea. Once Sandy knew they were far away, she let go of Flayn's hand.

"Sandy, what's going on? For you not to see my brother.... did something happen?" She asked.

Sandy looked at the girl unsure if she should speak but decided to, but at most, what happened between her and Seteth.

"Flayn...just...promise me you won't say a word to your brother that you saw me here. That is all I am asking for."

Chapter 7: Tropical Winds: Part 1: Stop at Dadga
Now we will start to see some drama starts. So, for this story, I decided to have Flayn and Seteth have some interactions with our characters. I wanted to do a quick double check on some information and on chapter 2, I will be fixing some errors I made.

Seteth came to the Monastery in 1162 and Flayn came there in 1179. Now, truth be told, Sandy met Seteth before he came to the Monastery. A 10 years before Arisa/Byleth was born. As we all know, the player (Byleth/you) can be set to the month and day you were born. In this case, I chose August. Yeah, it's a mess when it comes to numbers unfortunately. Though Flayn was kept hidden, I decided to have her come to the church much earlier. Of course, Seteth doesn't let her leave the church grounds at all, like in the actual game but there will be a few rare moments where he will bring her along.

The vision Arisa had. It's one of the small little glass shards that will begin to lead up to what I have planned for future chapters. Now, one of the characters I wrote here, the one with purple eyes. They are not an OC. And if you know only one certain character was born in Dadga, then you know who it is.

Elder Bara? She is mentioned around chapter 2 and 3. Arisa was supposed to stay with her, but our little witch chose to sneak away. Now, if you were a parent, grandmother, brother sister, etc., then I am sure you know how much in deep trouble someone gets when they sneak out someplace without permission? Elder Bara is inspired by Baba from Magi the Labyrinth of Magic. We also see things like spirit's and such, which the beliefs of fairies/fae did exist during medieval times and for many generations to come. Things like demonic beast, wyrens and magic such exist in the game, so decide to add a few more touches.

Brigid and Dadga. I did look up information on them from the game and it helped me build up this chapter and the next two I have planned.

And yes, my OC’S will have character Profiles and Paralogues. So, expect some soon!!
Chapter 8: Tropical Winds: Part 2: Cutting Ties to A New

Seteth was becoming more and more worried as he could not find Flayn at all. It was becoming more troubling because she had said she had found Sandana. He had many questions for the woman. How did she meet Flayn? Why was she in Zanados when that place is forbidden to the public? What was her motive? Why did she leave the Church of Serios? Does she still hold a grudge against him because their beliefs clash? Sandana called him arrogant. Foolish, even a hypocrite for showing his disdain to those of other faiths and those who do not follow the Church of Serios. The woman was a free bird. She loved traveling, speaking freely. She was not afraid to be blunt when needed to. The two, were complete opposites. While he is a man strict, order and discipline, Sandana was wild, free, and a complete utter wreck at times. Honestly, he felt she would get along well with Manuela.

He sighed once more as he continued to walk through the crowd in the shopping district, honestly trying to find his sister.

"Whaaaa!!!! I swear!!! This is why I hate being short!!!" He heard a child say and he couldn't help but chuckle as they passed by him.

But what he didn't expect was to see they had dark green colored hair. His eyes widened as he watched them leave, the girl was smiling and seemed to be talking to someone.

"No, I am not lost Sothis!" The girl said and before he could even make a move to go after them, they disappeared into the crowd.

"Could that girl.... no..... there were only six survivors. That girl must just have similar hair color, that's all." He thought and shook his head as he continued ahead.

He was starting to panic and decided to close his eyes, hoping he could sense Flayn, that was only until one of the shop vendors spoke.

"You, young man!" He turned to the vendor that spoke to him.

"Can I help you?" Seteth said a bit coldly.

"Well, no need to hostile. Yeesh...no wonder women these days prefer being single." The vendor and a few of the females nearby couldn't help but laugh at the face Seteth was making.

"Anyhow, you're looking for a girl with similar hair color as you correct?" The said and Seteth nodded, "I saw one head to the forest. Most likely off to see the paratos or wind silkies. Just do be careful, the silkies aren't exactly fond of men." They said and Seteth thanked them, leaving towards the forest.

[ -- ]

Indeed, this is why he hated traveling in places of humidity and heat. Oh, he wished he would have brought that ice bracelet to cool himself down but no, he thought he wasn't going to need it and look how things turned out! He grumbled as he swatted away the leaves and tree branches, one of them smacked him back. What's worse, there were bugs, they were biting him!!
"(Spit!) Ughh!!! This is why I don't travel to the tropics!!" He spit because a fly got into his mouth.

As he continued to walk for a few more minutes, he heard sounds, almost mumbling. Walking slowly towards a tree, he was finally able to hear clearly and recognized the voices.

"That's all. I hope you can understand that's why I left the Church and why I can't bring myself to see him." That was Sandana's voice.

Because of the humidity, Sandy's sense of smell was messed up, so she was not able to notice that Seteth had hidden himself. He saw Flayn was very disappointed for some reason.

"That's why you and he aren't together?" She muttered sadly.

Sandy smiled sadly as she patted the girls head.

"When I first met you, I was 25 years old. I was quite young back then. I didn't have a Crest. I'm basically became immortal without a choice." Sandy said.

"Wha?" Flayn said confused and Sandy raised her right hand and unwrapped it.

The girl gasped when she saw the Symbol of the Crest of Serios on it.

"If I was a normal human, the day I almost died, I was 34. Now........look at me. I haven't aged one bit. It's been.....61 years since I last aged. I'm basically 95 right now. My brother threw away his pride for my sake. I drank...Rhea's blood and now look at me. You're still you Flayn. You're......in a way still human. You're kind, innocent. Compared to me, who did so many unquestionable acts in my younger years, I much rather you....be happy. Than to be associated with someone like me." Sandy smiled sadly and Flayn hugged her.

"I know our beliefs are different and so are my brothers but...can't you him at least speak to each other? To come to a mutual understanding. You still love him, don't you?" She said.

Sandy was silent as she avoided eye contact with the girl.

"I don't care about your past!! I know you're a good woman and have always treated me kindly like a mother!! Please, reconsider." Flayn said.

"That's enough Flayn."

Both women's eyes went wide as they turned and Seteth made his presence known. Sandy looked at him in horror and ran. It had been 10 years since she had last seen him. He had not changed one bit. She gritted her teeth and her chest hurt. She couldn't bring herself to ever face him again.

"Sandana wait!!" Seteth yelled out and was about to run after her but the wind suddenly became strong.

"Ghaa!!" Seteth yelled as he was pushed away by the wind and Flayn quickly ran to him worried.
"Leave you of man of the dragon kin!!! You dare open the scars of a wounded soul!!! Begone from this forest!!"

The two siblings’ eyes widened as the saw a small feathered creature. The ariels glared coldly at them until their eye’s landed on Flayn.

"Daughter of Dragon Kin, you are free to roam this land as you wish. You are a kind soul who accepts." They smiled and left, repeating their warning to Seteth.

Flayn helped him up then glared at him.

"So, you judged her beliefs......I think I'm starting to understand how she feels." Flayn sighed as she began to head down the road that lead to town.

"Do you even know what she was in the past? An Assassin, she and her brother were hired to assassinate Rhea!" Seteth said as they walked.

Flayn sighed and shook her head.

"I know...she told me her past.... I’m very certain she didn't tell you any of it because of the judgment you would have given her." She said and he stiffened.

"I'll respect her choice of her wishing not to see you, but brother...." she turned to him, "I hope you learn to accept her for who she is. Regards of her past." Flayn said the man was stunned as she walked ahead.

- 30 minutes later: At the Inn -

"So yeah, that's what happened." Zach said to Ili and Elder Bara as the women were setting up plates for lunch.

"I'm worried. The fact that The Church of Serios will be in Brigid worries. If I remember correctly, they are "trying" to help Brigid and The Empire to come to a friendly term." Ili said.

Before they began talking, they had Byleth head to the kitchen to get a few things. They didn't want her to hear any of this. Jeralt was more than strict when it came to keeping or even mention the Church of Serios in front of his daughter. Elder Bara was silent as she had her eyes closed. Truthfully, she was listening to the voices of the land. She opened her eyes and chuckled.

"What's wrong?" Zach asked.

"Seems the land is aware. No need to worry, the land will make sure we are all safe. The ariels already sent a warning to one of them." She said.

Ili and Zach looked at each other confused and both screeched when the entrance door slammed open, Sandy stormed to her room, the door slammed shut loudly.

"What happened to her?" Ili said, worried.

The woman put down the plates and ran upstairs to speak to her friend. Elder Bara frowned while
Zach was confused.

"She had an encounter with her past. Zach don't do anything stupid today. I think that girl has had enough." She said.

"Grandma! I got the bread!!" Arisa's voice rang cheerfully as she came out of the kitchen.

"Umm...did something happen? The air is tense?" Sothis said as she saw the silence and tense air.

Arisa internally frowned. It just felt like things were going downhill today. From the joyful day they had to suddenly a broody and almost...gloomy. She put down the bowl of bread on the table and looked over to Elder Bara.

"Is it okay if I go around town for a while?" She asked.

"Just make sure to wear that cloak of yours, alright?" Elder Bara said and Arisa nodded as she grabbed her cloak from the hanger and headed to the town.

[ --- ]

In reality, she wanted to go to the forest to visit the place. She overheard a few towns people say that there were sometimes gems found in the small ponds and rivers of the forest. She also brought some food with her just in case she encountered a wild animal or got hungry. Sothis appeared and floated beside her, amazed by how green and beautiful plants of the tropics were.

"Oh, what plant is this?" Sothis said as she floated to a strange looking one that looked like it almost had teeth.

"Oh, it's a venus flytrap." Arisa said.

"Why is it called a fly trap?" Sothis asked.

Arisa pointed as she saw a fly nearby and it landed on the said plant. The look of shock on Sothis when she saw it snapped shut and trapped the fly in its mouth.

"It a carnivorous plant. It eats bugs." She giggled she saw the goddess made a face of disgust and backed away from the plant.

"Never mind then." Sothis said as they continued to walk.

Once in a while they encountered a few lovebirds, budgies, parrots, and even a cockatoo. It was a sight to behold seeing Sothis interact with these birds. It was a cute sight. The birds were very welcoming and Sothis couldn't help but laugh when a few of them landed on Arisa's head. One big white cockatoo started pecking at Sothis and that was a fight Arisa would definitely want to see again.

"Do you know which pond or river nearby I can find crystals?" Arisa said.

A few love birds chirped and flew ahead, meaning they would lead her there.

"Come on Sothis! And stop fighting with that cockatoo!!" The girl said and Sothis smacked the cockatoo away and bolted before it went after her.
The other birds that witness this were laughing among themselves.

[ --- ]

"Not bad." Her purple eyes gleamed as she had found a good amount of crystals she could sell.

This was a secret location she had found a few months ago and was more than happy it was just her. The number of natural gems growing are worth a good amount of money. Especially from those who use magic and those from Brigid. They always paid a good amount for these gems because of the spiritual value. She had good haul today as she continued to sift through the waters. Her eyes suddenly went wide as she heard the bushes rustle and quickly hid to make sure no one found her. She let go a sigh of relief when she saw it was two love birds but that was short lived when she saw a little girl walk out from behind the bush.

"Thank you love birds!!" The girl said happily as the two birds chirped and left.

She internally grumbled because like usual, it's always the birds. At least it wasn't spiders. She was quite as she watched the girl walking near the lakebed and removed her cloak. It was that girl from the inn.

"Hmm...okay...it was like this...." the girl said as she placed her cloak down and walked into the water.

"Eeep!! Cold!!" She screeched a bit but giggled.

She was silent as she watched but froze a bit when she saw the girl spotted her bag of crystals she collected.

"Hmm?" The girl was confused as she approached the bag and opens it to look inside.

"These are amethyst and quartz. Decent sizes also...." she muttered.

"Hey." She decided to come out and approach this girl.

Arisa turned when she heard a voice call out to her and eyes widened when she saw the much older girl. Black silky hair tied in a ponytail with smooth combed bangs to the right side of her face. Dark purple colored eyes, light colored skin. The girl wore a simple blue shirt with black pants that were rolled up.

"Oh...is this yours?" Arisa said as she held out the bag.

"Yeah. Hand it over." The black-haired girl said as she reached out her hand.

Arisa sighed and handed it to her.

"I got to admit. You found some pretty good size ones in there. I'm Arisa!! What's your name?" Arisa said.

The older girl looked at her blankly for a moment but spoke.
"Shamir." She said.

Arisa froze. This was Shamir...Shamir. SHAMIR?!?!? Okay, she knew Shamir was from Dadga and it never once crossed her mind that should encounter her ever. So, to actually meet her at a young age, was both surprising but amazing.

"Hey, you there? You zoned out." Hearing Shamir's voice made her snap out of it and she smiled.

"Nice to meet you Shamir!! So, here looking for crystals also?" Arisa asked even though she knew the answer.

"Yeah. I didn't think I see anyone in this spot. It's rare to see the birds actually take a liking to someone. Especially us humans." Shamir said as tied her bag to her belt.

"I see. I guess I was lucky?" Arisa said.

Shamir just gave her a blank look and pointed to her left.

"If you're looking for crystals, they are a little bit more on the deeper side so be careful." She said and Arisa nodded.

"I'll be alright. I can use my magic to walk on the surface." She said.

Shamir was a bit confused until she saw the girl float a bit over the water.


"Right now, the most I can float is about 10 minutes, unfortunately." Arisa said as she floated over to the deeper side and Shamir went after her.

"Well, for me it goes up to my waist, for you, to your neck." Shamir said.

"By the way, I saw you in the inn. Are you heading for Brigid?" She asked and Arisa nodded as she picked up a light blue quartz.

"Yeah. Grandma Bara is going there for a festival. I'm excited." Arisa said as picked around colored quartz and put it in her own bag.

"Seeing all those people, I'm guessing you're a mercenary in training huh?" Shamir said.

"Yup." Was all Arisa said as she continued to pick up some crystals.

"Wait, I leave that one." Shamir suddenly said as she pointed to the golf ball size quartz Arisa had in her hand.

"It's still growing. I put that one back if I were you." She said.

After 20 more minutes and one very soaked Arisa and Shamir diving into to save her, the two girls were satisfied with their findings, but Shamir gave the young girl a scolding for not being careful when she warned her of the deeper side.

"This should make it up??" Arisa laughed a bit nervously as she used some of her wind magic to dry their clothing.
Shamir glared at her but sighed.

"Thanks." She said and put on her shoes.

"Want to head to town to get something to eat? By the way, you're paying for food as payback for me saving your behind earlier." Shamir said and Arisa pouted.

"Fine. You win. It's the least I can do." She said and the two headed to town.

Scents, sights, food, so much to see without being restricted this time. Arisa felt much freer with being able to walk around like this. To be honest, she was a bit wary of Shamir because she had the same personality as her much older self, compared to Felix, who was a sweet cinnamon bun as a child and went through a full 180 when he got older. But she understood why he went through those changes. It was the same result with everyone in the game. Each person had a reason why they became the person they are in the future. Shamir was no exception either. After all, in 11 more years, this land...Dadga, will be no more. The girls walked through the town till they stopped in a small food stall.

"Oh!!! Spicy chicken feet and rice!!" Arisa said happily as she saw the food they were serving.

"You actually like chicken feet?" Shamir cringed.

"In my defense it's tasty." Arisa said back.

"What can I get you girl?" The stall vendor said.

"I'll get the spicy chicken feet and rice please!!" Arisa ordered.

"A Babute." Was what Shamir said.

"Alright. It'll be ready in a bit. That will be 13 copper coins." The vendor for said and Arisa paid.

The two girls went to sit down at a wooden table nearby.

"Babute??" Arisa said to Shamir and the girl nodded.

"It's ground beef, curry powder, and apricots." Shamir said.

"It sounds good. Also, I don't remember seeing you at the inn. Are you staying there?" Arisa asked and Shamir nodded.

"Honestly, just for a day and was planning to sneak onto the ship go Brigid to go. My parents are away at Fodlan. I live her in Dadga. Three villages away from the coast." Shamir explained.

"I see. I don't think my dad would have a problem letting you join us. You could have just asked?" Arisa said.

"I could have, but then the adults ask where my parents are. I plan to be mercenary. I don't plan to stay in just one place." Shamir said.

Arisa nodded as one of the servers brought their food and they thanked them.

"So, why are you here in Dadga?" Shamir said as they began to eat.
"Well," Arisa took a bite of her chicken feet, "Like I said before, my family and I are going to Brigid. The reason we're here in Dadga is because there was a leak in the boat. They'll have it repaired tonight and we'll be going tomorrow." Arisa said.

Before Shamir could answer, a blur of blue went past by them and nearly made them spill their food.

"Comeback you vodyanoi!!!"

Shamir sighed but couldn't help but laugh with many others as they saw the fae giggle as it managed to snatch a small bread loaf to eat. Arisa was just beyond shock seeing a fae. She knows dragons, wyrens, pegasus, witches, vestals and all that exist in the world of Fire Emblem, guess that means fae also?

"I'm guessing that's your first time seeing a fae huh?" Shamir said and Arisa nodded slowly as she turned back to her food.

"Well, might as well get used to it. Dadga and Brigid especially are lands connected to nature and spirits. We do practice shamanism after all." She said.

"Yup." Was all Arisa said as the two girls ate and talked.

Honestly, the talk the two girls were having was pretty well. Shamir talked about how she was the daughter of mercenaries also and was already at a young age taking jobs. She loved using the bow, and how she hated spiders. Arisa said, like her, was mercenary. She loves sweets, traveling, basically the things she loved to do in her old world expect not saying things like she loved video games, otaku culture. She especially talked about how she loved learning about magic. Magic did not exist in her old world. That was fact. So, learning magic in this world was something she was beyond happy to learn.

"You like teaching about the stars?" Shamir said a bit confused as the server picked up their plates since they finished eating.

"Yes. You be surprised what there is out there!!" Arisa giggled as she began to explain a bit of the solar system, galaxies and black holes. Poor Shamir felt like she was suddenly in a math class.

"Whoa whoa whoa!!! Too much information that my brain hurts!!" She said and Arisa giggled a bit nervously.

"Sorry, I overdid it. I just love teaching people of the stars. It's called `Astronomy." She said.

"Huh...interesting. So, the stars, sun, and moon can also be used to tell the direction of things and time. I like that. Especially when hunting or long travels." Shamir smirked.

Arisa smiled as the two girls got up and began to head back to the inn.

- With Sandy -
"Ahhh...so you reconnected with you daughter???? And ex-lover." Ili said very confused to Sandy, who was laying on her stomach and face buried in her pillow.

The woman does a muffled whimper while Ili just chuckled nervously.

"Well, it can't be bad right? You love the girl as your own daughter, don't you? Isn't that a good thing that you have reconnected with her after so many years? Maybe even speak properly with your ex-lover?" Ili said.

Sandy mover her head and looked at her blankly.

"I'm perfectly fine with reconnecting with Flayn but Seteth is another story. He's...part of the Church of Serios." She said the mood of Ili instantly shifted to one of coldness.

"I see....so he's part of the so-called holy church?" The woman's eyes became void of emotions.

The reason Ili was no longer a noble has a big reason to do with Church of Serios. The woman was originally the daughter of noble sailor. Her family is said to have been the direct descendants of those who bore holy blood. In reality, it was a lost Crest. She possesses a minor Crest and it was considered dangerous. Those of the South Church especially saw her family as a threat. Though they were outsiders of Fodlan, they were one of the few people outside of Fodlan that possess Crest. And that was considered a sin by those of the Church. The South Church planned an ambush on her family for 3 days before her 14th birthday. The result....

Ili clapped her hands and smiled.

"Never mind you can just tell him to completely fuck off next time!!!! His sister is an exception of course because unlike that hypocrite of her brother, she is an innocent one!!" She said a bit too happy for Sandy's taste but the woman won't judge her for it.

Ili has not forgiven the Church at all.

"Changing the subject...we'll be heading out tomorrow. Let's..leave Dadga with good memories and not sour ones." Sandy said as she stood up and smiled to her friend.

Ili sighed and gently rubbed her shoulder.

"Sorry.....I overdid it again..." the woman said and Sandy shook her head.

"It's alright. Your anger is understandable. Like I said to you and the other girls, if you start heading down the wrong side, I'll be the ones to pull you back. That's a promise not only as your general but as your friend." Sandy held her hand and Ili nodded.

"Thank you. Truly...now, shall we go eat? I'm sure Elder Bara is fuming right now." Ili giggled lightly and Sandy agreed.

The two women got up and headed downstairs but only to witness the said old woman giving not just Lady Byleth but...

"Wait, that's Shamir. I haven't seen her since she was a baby." Ili said and rushed over to see what was going on.

The two young girls were on their knees, eyes looking down on the floor as Elder Bara scolded them for being gone for 1 hour and much more, eating food when they were getting lunch ready.
"We're sorry...." Shamir and Arisa said as the old woman huffed.

Indeed, the rest of the day.... was full of wonders.

- The Next Day: Early Morning -

"All aboard!!!! The ship is ready!!" The captain yelled out from the ship to those of the land.

There were a few other passengers going to Brigid also because of the festival that will be going on. Shamir spoke with Jeralt if she could be allowed to join them on their mission. It also took Arisa to convince him and even proposed a deal she helped out in selling a few crystals they have gotten.

"Alright, but make sure to stay with us. You're still young as a mercenary." Jeralt said as the two girls first bump.

They smirked at each other proudly as they boarded the ship but were still waiting for Sandy.

"She's usually not this late. Should I go look for her?" Zach said as he was on the crow’s nest.
Ili was on her wyvern, flying nearby and she shook her head.

"No. She spoke with Jeralt. She needs to take care of some personal business. All I'll say is that it's a family problem." The woman said and Zach was just confused.

"She has family?" He said.

Instantly, Damayo roared angrily at him, and he screeched loudly. Many burst out laughing at this because the man jumped and hugged the wooden pole.

- With Sandy, near the docks of the Church Ship -

With a brown colored cloak hiding her identity, the older woman smiled sadly as she saw Flayn run up to her.

"Sandy!" Flayn hugged her but also more importantly, how Seteth was with her.

"Sandana...." Seteth whispered as he slowly walked up to the woman, who gently removed her hood and looked at the man with no emotion.

"Seteth, it has been 10 years. You haven't changed." She said.

Flayn was silent as she back a bit away so the two may talk.

"I could say the same thing. You...haven't challenge either." He said.
There was an awkward silence on Seteth's part and a tense one with Sandy, but the woman sighed and spoke to break the ice.

"I haven't forgiven you for judging others but.... if that is you belief, then so be it. All I was asking for back then was that you respect the beliefs of others and not show hostility towards them. I get you have a deep distrust to us humans...." she said sadly.

Seteth was silent at this as she continued to speak.

"I don't know what happened to you in the past but......being stuck in it will do you no good. I'm taking the steps necessary to forgive the royal family of Almyra. It's......a long path. I'm already atoning for the sins I have done......" she said and handed him a green jade necklace.

"I'm giving this back." She said.

"You....still had it all this time...?" Seteth said.

"I did." She nodded, "Could never bring myself to get rid of it. So now" She took a deep breath and looked him in the eye, "Goodbye Cichol. May we never cross paths again." She said and shock filled the man and Flayn.

Sandy walked past him and smiled to Flayn sadly.

"I hope you do well. You know, I figured out you two were actually father and daughter a long time ago. Out of respect, I chose to remain silent. I'm sure you two have your reasons. I won't say anything. Take care Flayn...no...Cethleann....I hope you are able to create your own path." The woman patted the girl's head one last time, but also kissed her forehead.

Flayn was shocked as she saw the woman holding back tears.

"You really are like a daughter to me, ya know that don't you?" Sandy grinned and left as she put back her hood.

Seteth was silent as he looked to the bracelet in his hand and gritted his teeth. The wave of emotions he was feeling, could be described. Flayn's lip quivered as she walked away to return to the ship, leaving her father in silence. Indeed...today was different.

- Hours Later-

"Urrrghhhhhhhhhhh!!" Arisa once more was suffering at the hands of sea sickness.

Shamir could not help but laugh at the agony the younger girl was going through as they were only 2 hours away from Brigid.

"You got to get used to it Byleth!! You'll never be a mercenary at this rate!!" Shamir laughed as the girl glared her way weakly and with shaky legs, walked over to her.

Despite looking pale and green, Arisa pointed at her.

"I will get used to this!! Just you watch!! I'll become a strong mercenary, even stronger than you!!" Arisa dared to declare.
Shamir just chuckled and patted her head.

"Yeah, good luck. We'll see how strong you really are when you do your first human kill." Shamir said.

Now that made Arisa completely recover.

To kill.

To take a life.

The trauma from the day of the assault at the Kingdom came back and haunted her. The sight of fighting, the sticky red substance that splattered on her face. The scent of iron was coming back to her. Arisa shook and Shamir took notice, beginning to regret saying her words. Seems even the others took notice till the girl looked up to her.

"Yeah. Till that day comes, I'll train this mind and body of mine till the bell rings for my blade to strike. Till then, how about we train together? Seems like a good deal for my fellow mercenary rival." Arisa said.

Jeralt could not help but nod hearing the words of his daughter. He felt proud. Sandy was silent the entire time as she watched the girls speak. The words she said to Seteth, came back to her. She had discovered their identity when she was cleaning the Saint statues in the church. The two resembled the statues of Saint Cethleann and Saint Cichol, so much to her eyes. Their scents were the same. Flayn had Seteth's temper sometimes, and his smile. She began to put two and two together, resulting in her discovering who they were and that they were father and daughter. She respected their choice because of how Flayn would complain to her about how Seteth was beyond overprotective of her. She sighed once more, part of her regretting in a way cutting contact with both. Not only for their sakes, but for her own. Though she said she hopes to never cross paths again with Seteth, she knew damn well such a thing is impossible. She'll keep her promise in not saying anything. That is something she will keep her word, no matter what.

"Pirates!!!!!"

Her eyes narrowed hearing that words as she stood up and removed her cloak. They spotted a ship with a black flag and the woman took out two metal fans. In truth, these fans she stole from the Church of Serios became they resonated with her Crest. The fans seemed as it was pulsing, alive.

"Formation!" Jeralt yelled and the Captain looked at him confused till he saw Ili and Ra mount their creatures.

Shamir readied her bow as Arisa took out the metal rapier she bought at the kingdom, and she fingered gun. The tip of her finger, electric sparks were forming. Zach sighed as jumped off the ship and stood perfectly at the surface of the water.
"Shield of Leviathan!!!!" Zach yelled as a huge wave of water grew around the ship to protect it.

"A sailor ships!!! Watch out, there are mercenaries on it!!!" One of the pirates yelled.

"Nothin------" the other pirate that spoke dropped dead by an arrow that hit the heart.

Shamir, with narrowed eyes, was the one to release it. Arisa could not help but be amazed how Zach was manipulating the water. Indeed.

"Zach the water bender..." she internally laughed, and it was silenced once she saw Ra and Ili charge at the pirate ship.

It was an unbelievable sight. Ili drew out her lance and charged at the enemy pirates like a true wyvern rider. The movements were graceful yet deadly. She would take down anyone who dare cross blades with her. The woman's lance stabbed through two more and jumped off her wyvern. Ra like before, his movements were beyond that. True to his blade, he was feared. Warping herself to the ship, Sandy spun with grace as she used her fans to block and cut her enemies. In a quick second, she warped Jeralt to the ship. The blade about to come down on him till he caught with his hand, crushing it. There, true to his name, The Blade Breaker.

"Support from the distance!! Watch the archers!" Jeralt yelled and Shamir, Zach and Arisa saw them.

"Sothis, a little help!" Arisa internally yelled and the goddess nodded.

"We need to take down those archers. Have Shamir aim 45 degrees to where the net is!!! Have it break down so it can cause the archers to fall!!! You know what to do from there!!" Sothis said.

"Shamir, aim at 45 degrees!!!" Arisa said and the girl looked at her confused till she looked at the ship and smirked.

"Got it!" The girl yelled and sent a deadly blow at the net, cutting it.

"Ghhhaaa!!" The archers screamed as the net underneath their feet came undone.

The unfortunate ones fell to the water and Arisa grinned as she jumped, floated near Zach.

"THUNDER!!" She yelled as a lightning bolt fell to the water surface and electrocuted the fallen archers.

That was officially her first kill. She managed to kill 4 archers. Arisa looked at her hands and once again they were shaking. Taking life....

She jumped when she felt a hand on her shoulder and saw it was Zach, who looked at her sadly.

"It's alright." He smiled at her sadly, "It's never easy. Now, let's finish this!" He said and she nodded firmly.

Shamir smiled sadly as she saw her friend was able to calm down. It was never easy to kill. To take a life. But that was reality at times, a slap to the face. Her eyes went wide as they heard an explosion at the pirate ship and flinched when Sandy and Jeralt suddenly appeared behind her.

"That was too close!!" Sandy said as she saw the fire from their ship.
Ili and Ra flew out of the smoke but there was one man alive on the ship...he drew his last breath as he threw his axe at Ra but....

"RA!!"

Ili pushed him out of the way, the axe, with horrific sounds, lodge deeply in her chest.

"ILIIIIIIII!!" RA yelled in horror as the woman began to fall towards the ocean.

"No, no, no, no!!" Arisa screamed as she flew towards the woman falling.

"SOTHIS PLEASE!!!!" She cried.

This was the first time seeing someone she cares about being killed before her eyes. She heard her father and Sandy scream. Elder Bara covering her mouth in shock. This power...now...it truly was the time to use it. She didn't care if it hurt her, even of the possibility that her body was not ready to wield such power. She didn't care. All she wanted was to save someone she cares.

"You know what to do." Was all the goddess as said as Arisa screamed at the top of her lungs.

"TIME PUUUUULLLLSEEEEEEEEEEE!!!!"

Her body burned. Her lungs burned. This surge of power as she screamed at the top of her lungs. Time pulse began to sing its song as the world turned violet around her.

The waves began to turn backwards, Ili began to return up, the axe flew back to the pirate's hand. The look of horror on Zach returned to one of joy. The life in Ili returned. Time pulse sung its last note, and this time, she was ready. The pirate once more raised its arm, throwing the axe but it was then stabbed in the arm by the sword of a child. The scream the girl did was enough for Ili to look back and just barely dodge the axe that flew her way. Anger filled the girl's eyes. The name, the Ashen Demon was born as Arisa roared furiously as she kicked the pirate to the flames. She didn't care if she just caused a man to be burned alive. She was angry, angry. She panted as she continued to hear the screams of agony till the man turned her way.

"You.....Ashen Demon...."

Dropping dead to the ground he did. Arisa fell to her knees and coughed violently. It was too much. That was her first experience ever using time pulse. The power was still far too great for her body to handle and it burned. Sothis was crying and screaming, telling her she would be alright, that she was sorry for not thinking it would cause this much effect on her body. She could hear voices and in a blurry vision, saw Ra jump off his pegasus and run to her. She couldn't make out what he was saying, but her vision becoming black.
"Is she okay?!!" Shamir said worried as Elder Bara came from under the ship.

"She's alright. Just tried from the fight. This was her second fight after all. And her first...to take human lives." The elder said.

Jeralt was worried as he went in to see his daughter and closed the door. The minute Arisa saw him, she jumped off her bed, ran to him and began crying in his chest. The others outside the room could hear the young girl's cries, and Elder Bara sighed sadly as she looked to the others.

"Let them be. For now, let us go up to the deck." Elder Bara said.

"Elder, I am worried. Do you think...this path of a mercenary for the girl is a good idea?" Sandy said as they got up and saw the passengers and the others talking happily to each other despite the incident that happened years ago.

"The girl has a kind soul. Too kind to be exact." The Elder said as Shamir looked back, worried.

"5 years, that girl lived in isolation until a few months ago. Look at her now," she turned to the group and looked at each, one by one.

"Tell me, would you have preferred the girl live with no knowledge and complete innocence till the day she breathes her last, or you would have preferred she learns and grows, so she may be a strong soul?" She said.

Sandy was silent as she listened to the woman speak.

"No answer eh? Well, let time speak and it shows you the answer." Was what the woman said.

Shamir was silent as she looked out to the sky. Truthfully, she left her family a year ago. Too many mouths to feed, too little money. She left so they may live. Of course, she would never admit she left to Byleth. Knowing the girl, even for a short time, would offer her to join them. She closed her eyes and sighed. Not yet. Not yet.

- 1 Hour Later: Afternoon: Brigid -

"We made it on time for the festival!!!" Elder Bara cheered joyfully as they got off the boat.

It was an amazing sight for the two young girls as they saw the festival and the people. Different colored clothing, feathers, the clothing of those connected to spirits. Heck, there were clearly many spirits flying around. Currently, Jeralt had his daughter over his shoulders, to give her a better view while Ili, still partly shaky from nearly getting cut in half, was surprisingly being a bit clingy to Ra. Perhaps it's because Ra nearly saw the woman die had Lady Byleth not interfere. The scream the girl did was enough to make Ili look and see the incoming axe. The woman's life flashed before her eyes but enough to make her barely dodge.
"Well......I think those two are finally going to confess." Zach smiled to himself as he saw Ra and Ili talking to each other civilly and maybe a blush here and there.

Rin will be happy.

"Zach, come!!! We're going to the temple!!" He heard his grandmother's voice and internally sighed.

- Later at Night -

Indeed, Arisa was amazed by the culture of Brigid. As she watched many men and woman of Brigid come to it, she saw many were excited. Some had face of horror that remind her of Bernadetta. Others were cheerful. Annnnnnddddd......far in the hidden alley, she spotted Ra and Ili kissing Oh so deeply passionately.

"I'll just pretend I didn't see that." Arisa thought.

She felt Sothis shutter at this. Rest in peace virgin goddess eyes. While Jeralt carried her on his shoulder, Sandy was doing the same but for Shamir. The two girls grinned at each other as they heard the music start, meaning the start of the festival. The dances and music of shamanism began to play. Men played drums, the women dance, both genders sung the vocals to the music. Arisa nearly didn't recognize Zach because of the clothing he was wearing, that of a colorful one. Elder Bara wore the traditional clothing of a shaman and she waved to them. Zach joined the rest of those his age in the dance. It was amazing and many their bodies glower, revealing the magic they used. Many gasped when they saw Zach's magic revealed because water magic was extremely rare but nonetheless, many cheered. The festival lasted throughout the entire night. Many drank and sung, celebrated. She even saw a few people getting married. Ra and Ili aren't going to be two happy about it because those two are absolutely drunk and just got married together by a male Shaman. Elder Bara was just laughing and said to let it happen because true, right now they will regret it but the result of it will be not too far. Zach had wandered off to who knows where but after 1 hour, he had returned, soaking wet but a complete grinning mess. He had chosen to confront his fear of water by joining the other men his age at the swing in a nearby coral reefs. At first, he was afraid but, after forcing himself to jump in, he had no regrets. He had an amazing time and perhaps encountered a female water spirit that he likes.

The rest of the week they stayed in Brigid was truly one to remember. Weather there were both sorrowful and joyful memories, they were the ones, Arisa was more than glad to have. She hasn't exactly perfected the language of Brigid but she was getting there. Learning more about the culture, the people there, and learning some powerful spells. Truly wonderful time. Sothis watched and was more than happy to see the world.

- A Days Later -

"You sure you don't want to come back to Remire Village with us?" Arisa said sadly to Shamir.
The older girl shook her head.

"I'm alright. My home is hear in Dadga. But hey, if anything ever happens, I promise I'll head to the village there first." Shamir chuckled.

They had returned her back to Dadga after the festival. Honestly it was hilarious sightseeing Ra and Ili in horror, finding out that they have been married while drunk.

"Then, can we write letters to each other?" Arisa said.

"Not sure, it'll be hard since I'll be traveling a lot, but we'll see. Also, here." Shamir gave the girl simple aquamarine anklet. "It's....my thank you. I... never had this much fun before. I hope your journey back to Fodlan is safe. Goodbye Arisa." Shamir smiled sadly.

Arisa lips quivered and hugged the older girl tightly and looked her firmly.

"This isn't goodbye!!! We'll meet again one day!! That's a promise!!!" She said and Shamir couldn't help but burst out laughing.

"Alright then!!! It's a deal!!! Let's see if you're taller than me by then shortcake!" Shamir said.

"I AM NOT SHORT!! YOU'RE JUST TOO TALL!!"

Chapter 8: Tropical Winds: Part 2: Cutting Ties to A new: End

[ ---- ]

And the tropical adventures are done!!!!! Quite interesting huh. Honestly, I almost got hit with writer's block, but the next two chapters will not focus on Arisa/Byleth but will be Paralogues to Sandy and Florencio.

Now, some of you will be asking me a few things regarding Seteth. I decided to do more research on his character and honestly, he's a bit hard to write. Shamir? Yes, Shamir is from Dadga and I looked it up to confirm it.

Now....time for the deadly timeline to help you all have an idea how much time had passed.

Arisa arrived in August: Verdant Rain Moon

It took all of September to arrive to the Kingdom: Horsebow Moon

They stayed for all of October there: Wyvern moon.
It took another month (November) to return to Remire Village: All of November: Red Wolf Moon.

Two Months to travel throughout the Empire, Both December and January: Ethereal and Guardian Moon.

Till February: Pegasus Moon: They traveled to Dadga.

So, Arisa has now been in the 3H world for 7 months now. Already meeting new and familiar faces. So, how will this go? Will we get a time skip? We'll see :3
With burned skin, the scent of iron, the look of horror as she felt the once smooth hands hold her shoulders. A sad yet proud smile looked at her full of love as they handed her rust covered sword. The scent of burning flesh filled the air, the scent of ashes and cinders. Burned bodies everywhere she looked.

"Live...live on......."

[ ---- ]

Her eyes snapped open as she laid still on her bed, looking at the ceiling in shock. She took several deep breaths to calm down her pounding heart.

"5....4...3...2...1..." repeatedly said those numbers as she took those deep breaths.

Once she knew she was calm, she sat up and let her blanket fall of her. She always slept naked because it felt more comfortable and she could move much more freely if needed to. She stood up and looked at herself in the mirror. Multiple scars, her body wrapped in bandages. The most recent one needed to be changed and clean. Her long black hair touched the floor and she grimaced a bit.

"I need to cut it." She muttered as she walked over to her drawer and opened it, pulling out scissors. Taking them, she began to cut her hair, locks of black hair fell to the wooden floor, she made sure they fell in a certain pile because she will be selling it for a good amount of money. Her black hair was worth a lot more since it was that from someone from Almyra. A couple minutes passed, and she was satisfied with how she cut it. Up to chest at most. It was a little crooked, but she didn't care. She walked to her closet where her usual clothing of sleeveless black shirt, black tights with knee length shorts and a simple black cloak. She put her clothing one and combed her hair, her silver eyes never leaving the mirror. She picked up a small thin brush and dipped it in a small little jar of black paste, it was eyeliner. Using it to create her wings, she nodded once she was done, she grabbed her bag and left the room.

Walking down the hallways, she looked at them blankly. The place they lived in wasn't the best but at least it was way better than living in a cave. She reached the stairs and climbed down, only to hiss as she heard a slightly feminine scream and turned to the owner.

"WRRRERYYYY??!!?!!??" The owner of the scream had his arms up as he exaggerated as he looked at her in sorrow in horror.

"Why did you cut your hair Sandy?!" With purple hair in a ponytail, dressed in a white lab coat, and a black shirt, khaki colored pants and black shoes, Sandy looked at Florencio with a blank face but rolled her eyes.

"I needed a haircut. Don't cry Florencio. It's been a long time since I've cut. It was bound to happen." Sandy sighed as she looked over to her brother and friend, who was weeping.
"But still!!" He said.

Once more, she groans but just shook her head.

"Anyhow, is breakfast ready? I'm heading out to the Red Canyon. Heard some rumors that there's some good products over there. Who knows? Might mug a noble or two and give the money to a few kids." She said as she walked to the table and sat down.

"You're an idiot. You really think there's treasures in that place? Well, maybe because the Church of Serios forbids people from going there." Florencio said as he placed down a plate of red rice, ham, and eggs, along with a cup of peppermint tea.

She thanked him as he sat down and the two began to eat.

"Any jobs so far?" She asked and he nodded.

"Request to poison a lord in The Kingdom, another from The Empire. Another from a town, and so on so forth. Seriously, the pay is pretty good but damn...I don't like this time one particular..." Florencio said as he handed her a black colored envelope.

She opened it and it was a request to kill a lord in the Kingdom near Blaiddyd territory but also...

"Even the children and wife......" She frowns and saw Florencio sigh.

"I did a bunch of digging and in truth, the man sending this request is a bigot because the wife of the Lord chose to marry him." He said and Sandy laughed.

"So jealously?! Haha!!! You know what to do Florencio. Expose the man for targeting the innocent." She smirked and he smiled back to her.

Sandy knew that smile far too well. Florencio may be a dastrad at times, but he knows when to take the necessary steps to expose the corrupted nobles. He did research on the wife of the Lord also and turns out she was a commoner who the Lord and the client had fallen in love with. But the girl chose the Lord and not the client. The client was an also a Lord of the Kingdom and let hell break loose.

"You know me so well Sandy." Florencio smiled as he was handed back the letter.

The two continued to eat as they discussed their plans on what to do. Sandy was more than happy with the plan Florencio. As the woman put on her cloak to leave, she strapped on her sword to her waist and left out the door.

- Underground City: Shambhala: Black Market -

Only so few knew of this underground city in the Empire. The technology here was beyond advance compared to those up in the surface. Sandy and Florencio were part of an organization called Those Who Slither in the Dark, or TWSD for short. Unlike the majority of those people who looked like walking corpses because their skin is pale as paper. Their goal was to destroy the Church of Serios. Florencio and Sandy had different goals in mind.
"Hey Acio!!" Sandy spoke to the pale colored old man who was opening his shop, barely.

The old man glared at her and rolled his eyes.

"Yeah yeah. I got the weapons you need. Plus, that acid poison that your brother ordered." The old man grumbled as he opened the doors and she followed after him.

He took out a box with multiple small blades, made of uranium steel. They had a strange glow as the woman picked it up and observed each one by one. In it was also a strange device called a wrist bow.

"Deadly little thing. Not bad. 3 gold coins of I remember correctly?" She smiled.

"Make it four because that bloody steel was difficult to get my hands on." Acoi glared.

"Only if you can get me that katana, I been asking for how many months now?" Sandy said.

Acoi groans pulled out the damn sword and she smiled.

"Weapons, katana and acid. Pay." Was all the man said.

Sandy paid him 5 gold coins for the trouble he went through to get what she needed. As long as he was getting paid, he was more than happy to get the supplies she needed.

"Going to the surface, now are we?" Acoi said and she nodded.

"Yeah. Getting some nobles killed like usual. They really bother me a lot." She said

"So, need anything from up there? Since ya know, I owe you for the supplies?" She said.

"Wootz steel. Need at most 3 of them." He said and Sandy gawked.

"Finnnneeee!!! I'll see if I can get you some. See you old man." She said and waved as she left the shop.

"Drop dead," Acoi said.

"I HEARD THAT DASTARD!!"

- 2 Months Later: Garreg Mach: Oghma Mountains -

"Haha!!" With her mother's sword and a wide grin on her face as she killed off a giant wolf that nearly attacked the caravan she was travelling with.

"Oh, thank you!!!" The merchant said as the wolf dropped dead to the ground.

"Yeah whatever. Just drop me off near the mountain side. That's all." She said as she began to cut off the wootz steel off the wolf.

The merchant gulped as he watched the woman cutting the wolf like nothing.
"Are you a mercenary?" She heard a little girl as.

"Yeah. Just traveling through Fodlan." She said and her bag was filled with all the wootz steel she got and turned to the merchant.

"I gutted it and skinned it. You can sell the meat, skin, and bones for a good amount." Was all Sandy said.

- Hours later -

She thanked the merchant for dropping her off, but he wouldn't stop thanking her for the wolf meat, bones, and skin. She said it was nothing. But he gave her a warning of what is going on in the mountains.

"Be careful, there are many demonic and unknown beasts roaming those mountains. The Church doesn't allow anyone to enter them."

The woman just rolled her eyes as she began her way through the mountain. And through those hours, she understood why people were forbidden to enter.

The woman jumped backwards as she barely managed to dodge one of those Demonic Beast. She couldn't believe her eyes when she saw it. For some reason, the thought of "it was once human" ran through her mind as she jumped back once more. With her katana held in right hand and her mother's sword in her left, she growled like a feral beast. She was running low on energy. She spotted a bridge and ran towards it as fast as she could, even more by sending a burst magic through her body. She was more than happy that the beast did not follow. Now that she has a better look, the place was in deep fog. She was on her guard as she continued to walk a head. A few more minutes and the fog cleared, revealing a ruined ancient looking village. Moss growing on stone walls, ancient words written on a stone tablet. She frowns. This place.....the feeling of sadness and sorrow filled her as she continued to walk deeper into the place.

"What happened here.....so many...sorrowful cries and whispers....." she muttered.

Unknown to her, gentle green eyes watched hiding away, curious but confused. What was human doing here? Was she a bandit? Thief? Ooohhhh!! She was curious!!! Maybe she should talk to her!!!

"I swear......bloody treasure my arse!!!" Sandy growled as she looked around the place. Worst of all, it was getting late and she could only imagine that the creatures here got more active at night. She began to walk around, collecting tree branches that have fallen, using wind magic to cut them. She was thankful she did keep some of the wolf meat with her. She found a stone house that luckily the roof top of it had not broken down. She sighed as she began to unpack her bag. Once that was done, she walked out and began putting tomes around the house to create a barrier and protect her. It was an extra protection barrier. She sighed as she went back in and started the fire. With that done, she set up her sleeping bag. She could feel the temperature dropping and was not liking it.
"I need to get herbs...." she muttered and luckily the forest was close.

With a sword in her hand, she was careful as she walked. She picked edible mushrooms, rosemary, mint, was surprised to find a truffle that were edible and shot down at least 2 quails. She made sure they were males before she killed them. She found a pound and was relieved.

"Good, salmon and catfish." She muttered and aimed, waiting for the right moment.

"Got you!" Using her wrist bow, she shot two arrows and pulled the two fish out.

They were nice and plump.

Snap.

Her eyes suddenly went cold as she turned and shot one arrow towards a tree, it hit the trunk. She felt someone was watching her for some time and was not liking it.

"Who's there?! Come out before my sword is brought down in your throat!" She said.

"Please wait!! I mean no harm!!"

Confusion filled the woman as she saw innocent mint colored eyes peek out and slowly the owner of them walked out. She held a strange gold winged staff and wore a short long sleeve black dress with gold embroidery, a little bit of ruffles with ribbons. She had mint colored hair curled cutely.

"A child?" Sandy gasped.

"What is a child doing here in this place? Much less...almost alone?" She thought as the young girl slowly walked up to her.

"I am sorry to have startled you. I saw you enter the village and was curious as to why you are here. Perhaps you were sent or lost? I am interested to what brings you to such a place isolated from the world." The young girl said.

She spoke so formally. Was she a noble? Sandy relaxed as she put down her hand and made her bow disappear.

"What are you doing here kid? This place is pretty in ruins. Did you get lost or something?" Sandy said coldly.

She needs to keep her mask up. The girl huffed.

"How rude. I was merely saying I do not wish to cause you harm. As for your question, I live here. Zanado is my home." The girl said.

"Wait what?! You live here?! Who's the idiot that put you here?!!" Sandy said, shocked.

"Ummm....well...." the girl was a bit nervous.
Sandy sighed and walked past her.

"Head home girl. I'm not about to become your baby sister." She said coldly and headed back to the village.

"Please wait!!" The girl called out and Sandy gave her a dry look, "I have not spoken to people in such a long time!! May I at least know your story?" She said.

Sandy groans but nodded.

"Come on.... I'm not about to leave you here....bloody hell....I'm Sandana but call me Sandy if you like. And you kid?" She said as they walked.

"Oh!! Right, I am Flayn. I am so happy to make your acquaintance." The young girl now known as Flayn smiled as she did a small bow to her.

Sandy began to question herself if she picked up a lost kitten or a complete idiot.

- 1 hour later -

"Oh, my goodness!! This wolf meat is superb!!! Usually it is very gummy, but it tastes so tender!! And the fish also, it reminds me of home cooking!! You said this recipe is from Almyra, correct?" Flayn said excitedly as she sat across from Sandy.

The said woman couldn't help but smile a bit as she saw the girl eating happily. She did notice the staff the girl had but looks like it was important to her, so she won't take it.

"Yeah. Honestly, you seem like you haven't eaten in years. Glad you enjoyed it." She said.

She noticed the girl smiled sadly and realization hit her.

"Ah. Sorry if I offended you." She said.

"No, it is alright. I honestly have not eaten in a long time. So... this fish...and meat. I thank you very much for sharing your meal with me." Flayn said.

Sandy sighed and nodded.

"It's alright. You can have seconds if you want. I made enough to feed four people." She said.

"I can?!" Flayn said excitedly.

Sandy could not help but chuckle. So much for her mask. She took that off.

"Yeah. Go ahead." She said as she served the girl a second plate.

Flayn squealed in joy as she ate and Sandy in a bit of a silence. Truthfully, she hasn't felt this calm in a long time. Maybe because the only one she can be herself with is her brother. She heard Flayn choke a bit and handed the girl a cup of water, which she happy took and gulped it down.

"Ummm...so what brought you here to Zanado?" Flayn asked.
Sandy was silent but decided to speak.

"Since you're a child, I'll tell you. There were rumors that supposedly there were rare treasures here." She said and Flayn was silent as she continued to speak, "But of course it was just rumor and there is no treasure here. Still, I admit, these ancient ruins are better left alone. I can hear the whispers of sadness and sorrow here." She said.

"Whispers?" Flayn said a bit softly.

Sandy looked over to her a bit concerned but continued to speak.

"Yes. Something happened here. This place is filled with both sorrowful and joyful energy. I'm sure this place was once filled with people. That's the most I can sense." She said.

Flayn was silent for a few moments and Sandy took notice.

"And you?" She said, "Why are you here?" She asked.

"Oh!!! I.....I was injured for a very long time. I just recently recovered and awaken from the comatose state I was in. My brother brought me here my safety." Flayn said.

"And where is he now?" Sandy said.

"Currently, he will be away for two years to speak with his Lord. It's a political issue." Flayn said.

It wasn't a complete lie. Her brother really did have to leave for some time. Sandy scoffed at this and shook her head. Who leaves a child? But then again, she can tell the girl wasn't abandoned.

"Must be one of those overprotective ones. Ughh..." Sandy internally groans and shook her head.

"At least you aren't abandoned. That's good. N------" The woman suddenly shut her mouth and stood up, with sword in hand and quickly turned off the fire.

Flayn was alarmed by this and Sandy went "shhh..." softly to her. That's when the young girl noticed it. There was a demonic beast and to the utter horror of Sandy, it's the same one she fought earlier today.

"Flayn, stay here and do not leave this barrier......" She whispered.

"What?! You're going to take it on yourself?" Flayn whispered back and Sandy nodded.

"Yeah, I am. It's still pretty injured...If I can land one good shot at its heart...." Sandy muttered as she began to walk out.

"Stay here. That's an order." Sandy said to Flayn one last time before she went out the door.

Regret? Absolutely.
Sandy yelled with all her might as she slashed at the demonic beast and managed to blind it. It roared in agony and she was getting tired. The roar it did call forth at least two giant wolves that the older woman was barely able to kill them. She was angry. If Florencio was here, he would have used his dark magic to kill these monsters. Unfortunately, magic is not her best choice right now. And for her to use her steel bow in this night, it's suicide.

"RROOOOOAAAARR!!" It roared again and this time, she------

"HOLY LIGHT!!" Her eyes went wide as a pillar of light blasted the beast from under its feet.

It roared in agony.

"SANDY NOW!!" Flayn's voice yelled and she took it.

The woman charged at the beast and stabbed her sword in its heart. It trashed around with all its might, but she didn't let go, not one bit.

"RAAAHHTTT!!" She plunged the sword deeper and this time, its movements became slow and fell to the ground with a massive thud.

Sandy coughed as she pulled out her sword and backed away, having a better look at the massive beast.

"Are you alright?" Flayn ran up to her worried.

"I'm alright. I'm more worried that you disobey me and came out when I said not to!" The woman said angrily at Flayn, who looked down to the ground.

"I'm sorry...." the girl muttered but was suddenly surprised when she felt a warm hand patting her head.

"Sigh...it's alright. Then again, if you didn't, I would be dead. Thank you." Sandy said with a small smile.

Flayn looked up to her a small blush and both of their eyes widened in shock suddenly when they saw the demonic beast turned to ashes. Left where its body was, was a piece of metal next to a strange stone with a symbol on it. Sandy was confused as she picked the two up. She recognized the metal was uranium metal but the other one?? No clue. She shrugged her shoulders and put it in her bag. She turned to Flayn, who gasped.

"You're injured!!" The girl pointed to her shoulder where there was a deep gash.

"Huh....I didn't notice." Sandy said as she touched it.

"One moment!! I'll use my healing magic." Flayn said as a soft green light began to glow from her hands.

"Ahh....it's warm." The woman thought as she closed her eyes.

A few minutes passed and her shoulder was healed.

"Thank you." She said.

"Ummm...if it be alright, you can stay with me in my home. It's small but it's better than living out here." Flayn said a bit embarrassed.
Sandy could not help but chuckle as she patted the girl's head once more.

"I'm a stranger but I'll take you up on that offer little one. For now," she turned to look at the two wolves, "Think you can help me carry these?" She said and Flayn nodded excitedly.

- The Next Day -

It was a small stone house enough for 5 people. There were three bedrooms, a kitchen, a nice bathroom and a small living room. Currently, Sandy just woke to the smell of something burning and bolted to the kitchen, making sure someone did not break in. She thanked whatever God is up there in the skies that she was wearing her nightgown and not sleeping naked like usual. Instead, she saw Flayn putting out a fire and a pot filled with...some purplish thing. Oh lord....is that fish head!!!??

"Sandy, good morning!!" Flayn said happily.

She was wearing an apron and it was a bit messy.

"What are you doing...?" Sandy asked.

"Oh!!! I made breakfast for you!! Fish stew!!" The girl said excitedly.

The older woman slowly nodded to herself as Flayn had her sit down and placed a bowl of......purple stew in front of her.

"I hope you like it!!! This is to show gratitude for yesterday!!" Flayn said.

Sandy nodded and stared at the purple stew in front of her. The smell was strange, she saw herbs mixed in, a damn fish head.... oh god...bubble popped!!!

"Well...it might be edible...." the woman thought as she picked up her spoon and had a spoonful of it.

"So?" Flayn said as she noticed the woman was silent after the spoon of stew enter her mouth.

The next thing Flayn knew, Sandy's face fell flat on the table, her mouth frothing and eyes void.

"SANDYYYYYYYY!!!"

/ --- /

"I'm so sorry!!! I'm so sorry!!!" Flayn wept in her hands as Sandy laid on the long sofa.

She was pale but still smiled.

"I-it's alright. Just......I'll handle cooking for the time I am staying here." Sandy said as she drank
the stomach medicine her brother had given her.

Thank goodness she always brought with her that medication case with her. She took the most powerful one.

"You're...terrible at cooking...That's a fact..." Sandy said and Flayn cried.

"I'm so sorry...my brother has always been the one to do the cooking and had never taught me how." The young girl said, and Sandy sighed.

Ooohhhhh, Sandy would feel horrible if she left this girl alone here!!! She clearly can't cook for herself, there are beast here, she lives alone, can she even sew?!?

"I'm going to regret this most likely..." the woman thought as she stood up.

"Flayn, I'm going to town. I'm going to buy supplies." She said.

"Oh...you're leaving?" Flayn said sadly and Sandy shook her head.

"No, not yet at least. I'll be staying here in Zanado with you for a while. If that's alright with you?" She said.

Flayn's eyes sparkled like candles and she nodded!!!

"Of course!!!! You can stay here as long as you like!!! I know it's only been two days since we met but I feel safe with you!!! I haven't felt this way in a long time!" Flayn said happily.

Sandy could not help but chuckle seeing the girl so happy.

Honestly, it was extremely rare for someone to melt the barrier Sandy would put around herself. This young girl for some reason, felt she could talk and be herself with.

---

- 2 months later: With Florencio-

The man had received 4 boxes filled to the brim of Wootz steel. Plus, another box with herbs. A highly valued material in Shambhala. The man did not know what to do with it all till he saw the letter it came with. Using his pocketknife, he opened it and his eyes went wide.

_Florenceo, the four boxes of wootz steel are for Acoi. They are my payment to him for the weapons I ordered. As for the 5th box, they are rare herbs I found in Zanado along with that highly valued Zanado fruit. I'll be traveling for a year. Hope you understand. I'll send you a message if I need anything alright. Take care._

- Sandy.

Florenceo repeatedly slammed his forehead on the table and screamed into the pillow he grabbed.

"Why does she always do this to me?!" He cried but smiled sadly.
He knows she must have a good reason for leaving for a year. He does wonder what caused her to do such a thing. He got up and took the boxes to Acoi, who's eyes nearly went out his head when he saw the four boxes of wootz steel. It was a funny sight, the only thing the old man complained was that he now owes Sandy a favor. Florencio could not help but laugh hearing this. Yeah, things were going well.

- With Sandy -

"I hope he got the letter..." Sandy muttered to herself as she was looking to the sky.
She wore a regular black dress and her hair was in a high bun.
"Sandy, how exactly do you plant these flowers?" She heard Flayn yell out from nearby.
The older woman could not help but chuckle.

Indeed, she needs this. For once, Sandana felt she was home.

(Parologue 1: Part 1: The Shadow and The Innocent)
Paralogue 2: Part 1: Memories of Hatred

- Imperial Year 1164: County of Varley: Takes Place 2 months before Arisa Arrives-

As much as he hated being back in the Empire, Florencio needed those medical herbs in County of Varley. Goddess, why must always find himself back to this wretched place that brought nothing but bad memories from his younger days? He sighed as he walked through the gates of the town, ignoring a few strange looks from the villagers. Some thought he was a noble because of his clothing, he ignored those comments. He kept looking around, surprised by how much had changed in the town. He walked towards a medical herb shop next to a bakery and entered. Immediately he could tell that one of the shop helpers was about to yell at him, thinking he was commoner till he pulled out a simple glass card size tablet with gold lettering and an official stamp from The Church of Serios.

"I'm a doctor before you yell at me." Florencio said but internally smirked as he saw how pale the shop helper became once he saw the card.

Very few doctors in the Fodlan have ever passed the grueling medical exams to become high ranking professionals. Enough to be a court mage if they wished. There are only 5 doctors in all Fodlan that have the seal. Florencio happen to be one of them. It was extremely rare for him to use the card.

"I-I'm sorry. Right this way Sir. What herbs are you looking for?" They said and he smiled.

"I need these herbs from this list." He handed the helper the list.

The man's eyes went wide once he saw what was on the list. The herbs that Florencio needed, were very expensive but heck, he could easily grow them properly in his garden. That's one of the main reasons why he always buys these expensive and rare herbs because he won't have to come back to buy them later.

"Uummm...sir, this one in particular, we're out. You need to speak with Count Varley to get permission to enter his garden to pick it up." The helper said.

Florencio frowned and groans in his hands. The other shop helpers looked at the man in pity because they all knew it was a huge pain it was to speak to the Count. Florencio sighed and spoke.

"Please have the herbs ready in 4 hours. I'll be heading up to the Count......also, here." He handed the shop helper a 5 silver coins which their eyes went wide at the sight of it, “Use it to buy everyone a drink. Trust me.... I can tell you all need it." Florencio said and left out the door.

He heard everyone in the shop cheer and heard a woman yell, "PARTY AT THE CLUB TONIGHT!!" He couldn't help but chuckle hearing this. Then he heard the shop owner to tell everyone to shut it. Florencio couldn't help but laugh as he left towards the town to head to the Count's house.

- 40 minutes Later -
In front of very gates, he despised so much he stood. He saw two guards there and walked up to them.

"Good morning. I am here to seek permission from Count Varley to pick mullein from his garden." He said and showed his official card.

The guards gasped at the sight of it and one of them quickly ran to the mansion to inform the Count. Florencio internally growled and wanted nothing more but to leave, but his old pride of an assassin kept him from doing that.

"You may come in." The guard said and escorted him to the mansion.

"Horrible taste of red as usual...." he thought to himself as he saw a few red painted walls and more when they entered inside the mansion.

He knew this place inside out from his years of sneaking out of the mansion from his old days. He noticed the air here was still stiff like usual, but it felt...different for some reason. Almost...cold.

He shook his head as he waited in the entrance room of the mansion, looking at the paintings of the wall. One of them was the typical one from the church. The other was one of the family. The count of the house, his wife and one little girl with timid eyes.

"Good Evening Doctor!! Forgive me for being so late!! My daughter's training can be a hassle at times!"

It took everything in Florencio not to frown at the voice of the Count Varley as he turned back to him with his usual closed eye smile.

"No no!!! It is alright. I understand that training can be difficult!" Florencio smiled.

It was fake. It was a mask he wore to hide his utter disgust he had towards the Varley. He hated how they treated commoners and many others unequally. Count Varley smiled to him and spoke.

"I heard from my messenger you wish to pick a few herbs from my garden." The count said and he nodded.

"Yes. They have recently run out in the herbal shop and I didn't want them to go through so much trouble, so I decided to speak with you myself." He said.

"I see. Understandable. Would you like to have tea before you go to the garden? I allow permission to pick the herbs you wish." The count smiled.

"Ahh!! Thank you very much for the offer but I am alright. It's a custom of mine but I brought some Albinean Berry blend as a gift." He said as held a small metal square box with gold print on it.

"Ah!! You are too kind. Thank you very much." The count said as he took the box.

"I'll have a maid escort you to the garden. I do hope you enjoy your time here Doctor." The Lord said.

"I will." Florencio said.
That was a complete utter lie.

Walking through the hallways, Florencio kept his closed eye smile as the maid walked him towards the back of the mansion where the garden was. He noticed the woman was very tense. She wasn't the only one. He noticed all the servants were very tense. The man knew why.

"It's okay." He suddenly said, making the maid flinch.

He let his forced smile go and spoke softly.

"I won't hurt you or others. I don't know what Count Varley said to you all, but it is alright. There is no need to be so tense." He said.

The maid was suddenly afraid, and Florencio sighed as he reached into his pocket, pulled out a small pouch and handed it to the maid. The woman was confused until he spoke.

"I counted there are 20 servants here in the mansion total. There are 20 gold coins in that bag. Each servant is to take one coin each." He said and the maid's eyes went wide and about to protest till he spoke again.

"This is an order as your higher up. Pretty sure Count Varley gave you all orders not to speak to me. I understand. This will be my only order from me. I know most aren't getting paid so this should help you all. Remember, one gold coin each. It should be enough to help you all for 4 months." He said.

The maid wanted to cry and thank him, but she couldn't. Florencio smiled kindly and spoke once more.

"All of you have endured much. I know you can do it." He said.

- A few minutes later: Garden -

It was a lavish and beautiful garden filled with flowers and herbs. The man was more than happy picking the herbs he needed and others. He smiled a bit as he saw a few flower spirits and hummingbirds playing near a few rose bushes as he continued to carefully harvest them.

Not too far, lilac eyes watched curiously as he was tending a few of the flowers that weren't properly watered. The owner of those eyes hissed in pain as their back sting. Seems that was enough for Florencio to turn their way.

"Someone there?" He said.

Florencio stood up and walked over to small berry bush that rustled a bit. He looked behind it and heard a small squeal. It was a young little girl with short purple frizzy hair, dressed in a white dress, boots and was holding tightly onto a teddy bear. Florencio sighed as he recognized the girl. It was the same one from the painting. But his eyes narrowed now that he had a closer look at the girl.

"You're hurt." He said and the girl gasped, shook her head rapidly.
"Now little one, come here." He said and once again the girl shook her head.

Florencio groans as he bent down and spoke softly to her.

"It's alright. I won't hurt you. I want to help you." He said.

The little girl was a bit hesitant but slowly walked up to him. She had a better look at him now. Long purple hair, wearing a dress that those of Gremory wear with a witch hat. He really did look like a woman.

"Can you.... make the pain go away?" The girl spoke a bit scared and he nodded.

"I can. May I?" He asked.

The girl nodded and he gently places his hand over her head. A green magic circle appeared underneath her, purple glowing flower petals surrounded her and tickled her. She couldn't help but giggle at this and awed when the petals turned to sparkles and disappeared beautiful. The pain all over her body was gone. What the girl did not know was that every time he did this, a small flash of the individuals memories flashed before his eyes. The man was doing everything in his power not to stand up and go kill the Count of House Valery. He saw the cruel and grueling training the girl was going through. That why she had cuts and bruises all over her.

"Thank you so much!! Ummm...Mr.....?" The girl said.

"Florence. But call me Dr. Lilac if you want to." He smiled at her kindly.

"Okay. I'm Bernadetta. Nice to meet you Dr. Lilac!!" The girl is now known as Bernadetta grinned.

Florence smiled kindly and patted the girl's head as he stood up, gently taking her hand.

"How about I show you around the garden? Is there any plant you like?" He said.

"Oh!!! The carnivorous plants that my uncle grows near the fountains!!! I love those!!" Bernadetta said excitedly.

Florence laughed a bit nervously hearing that but didn't mind.

"Alright. Let's go over there." He said.

If phones had existed in this world, I can guarantee the maids nearby would be taking thousands of pictures of them together. They thought they looked like mother and daughter.

- 2 hours Later -

"Now, if you knit the string like this, it will make things easier. Careful now." He said as he was showing the girl how to knit.

He had politely asked one of the maids if she could bring him yarn and knitting nettles, which she gladly did. Many of the servants had come up to him and thanked him for the gift they had received. "Gift" was the code word for the money they received. As he was passing by one of them, they heard they wished their Count was as kind as him. Florencio internally smiled bitterly.
Part of him wished he could say he was Varley but the other half of him didn't. He didn't have the Crest of Indech. He wasn't born with a Crest. He looked over to the young girl who happily hummed. Bernadetta felt safe around him. Happy, compared to the cruel training her father is putting her. "The Perfect Wife", was her father's way of saying. Florencio gently patted the girl's head once more. As he was about to speak, he saw the girl's eyes brighten as a man with similar hair color as she walked towards them.

"Uncle!!" The girl said cheerfully as the man walked up to them.

"Good afternoon Bernadetta. Oh!! And hello Dr.!! I was informed you came to pick herbs. Is it to your liking?" Lord Varley said.

Florencio noticed that this man was not filed with malice. Usually the flower spirits would immediately go away, including the hummingbirds. This man most likely treats Bernadetta kindly, like a human being.

"It is. Thank you very much. I was originally going to just pick herbs but seeing this little one made me stay a little longer." He said as he patted the girl's head, who squealed happily.

Lord Reines Von Varley was the younger brother of Count Varley. He was a well-respected man among the commoners compared to Count Varley, who was hated and feared. Lord Reines smiled kindly as he saw his niece squeal. How long has it been since he has seen her happy like this?

"Ummm, Doctor, may I speak with you privately?" He said and Florencio nodded.

"Of course. Bernadetta, I'll be back in a bit." He said and she nodded.

Florencio and Lord Reines walked a bit further down the garden to make sure no one heard their conversation.

"Doctor...there is something I wish to ask you? Did you... notice anything strange with my niece?" He asked.

Florencio was silent as he recognized the look in the Lord's eyes. He was testing him. To see if he was trustworthy.

"If you mean the bruises, cuts, almost broken shoulder and red marks around her wrist and ankles. Yes, I did." Florencio said brutally honest, causing the Lord to look at him surprised.

Florencio's smile finally dropped as a cold shadow swept over his eyes. They almost looked like they were glowing as he looked down at Lord Reines.

"Tell me Lord Reines," the air around him became cold like ice, "Why is that child being abused by her own father?" He spoke with zero emotions, not giving a damn about his kind appearance being shattered.

Lord Reines looked down to the ground in shame and spoke.

"I can't do anything even if I wanted to.... she bares a minor Crest of Indech, making her the lone heir to House Varley. I can't do anything...I wish I could take her away but that would land me execution. I truly care about her." He said and Florencio was silent as he listened to the man speak.

"Crest....again....cruse this damn system of inequality!!!!!" Florencio mentally roared as his face became stone cold.
"I see. Tell me, have you heard of a former maid named Michael?" He said.

The Lord was confused at this sudden topic but answered.

"Yes. She no longer lives but her name is used as an example to the maids and servants of the consequences they will suffer if they disobey my brother unfortunately." He said.

Suddenly the air around them just became ten times colder.

"Oh, I see!!! Ha!!! Well, seems Count Varley is really wishing to receive divine punishment at some time in his life." Florencio said.

"Doctor...will you report what is happening to my niece?" Lord Reines asked.

"Unfortunately, if I did, that would land me a target on my back. But..." he places his hand on his shoulder and spoke, "If you need me to take her away, I will. If things begin to escalate to extreme, contact me through the spirits of the flowers and I will come." Florencio said firmly.

The Lord's eyes went wide and smiled sadly.

"Thank you...t------!!" There was suddenly a high pitch scream and both men bolted back to where Bernadetta was.

[ --- ]

"Stop it Papa please!!! It hurts!!" Bernadetta cried as her father hit her again.

The girl was knitting peacefully till she heard footsteps walk up to her and a hand suddenly slap her.

"You foolish girl!!! How many times have I said not to do commoner activities?!!" He hit her again.

The girl cried as she tried to protect herself from the incoming hit that was about to hit her again, but it never came. Instead....

"GHAA!!"

Her eyes snapped open as she saw her father was thrown back by a gust of wind. Her jaw dropped as she saw it was the flower spirits hissing like cats as they circled around her, as if protecting her.

"Eh...? Eh? Eh?" She was in shock still till she saw one of them land on top of her head.

"You filthy creatures!! How dare you!" Count Varley said angrily but the spirits hissed back.

"My, my!!"
The two humans and spirits turned towards the approaching Florencio, who had a closed eye smile.

"It is quite rare for the messengers of the goddess to protect humans!! It sure is a surprise to see them so angry. Ufu." He chuckled as Count Varley stood up, shocked.

"Messengers of the goddess?" Count Varley gasped as he was still recovering as he looked over to his daughter.

The flower spirits hissed at him and Florencio spoke with his smile.

"Oh? Count Varley, you did not know? Fae are said to be the messengers between the goddess and the people of Fodlan. They give their blessings and protection to the land by the order of the goddess. They say if a fae is angered by the actions of a human, they will curse them. Divine punishment from the goddess." He opened his eyes and still spoke with his smile, tilting his head a bit to the right.

His eyes almost looked like slits. He was angry. So very angry. But he was grateful that the flower spirits interfered or else he would not hesitate to kill the man. Count Varley paled hearing that story. It wasn't a complete lie though. Florencio smiled as he walked over to Bernadetta and the spirits looked at him confused.

"(It is alright. Thank you for protecting the girl. If you hadn't done it.... I would have killed the man...)

"We don't like to see this human cry!!! She gives us offerings and is a pure soul!!"

"Keep protecting her. Thank you."

"Yes, yes!"

"What are they saying?" Count Varley said and Florencio turned to him with his smile.

"They have taking a liking to your daughter. They said not to scold her anymore or they will place a curse on her and take away her Crest." He said happily.

That immediately made the count turn pale but also angry. The part of taking away her Crest was a lie to put fear into the Count.

"That's impossible!!! Such a thing should not-------!!!" He backed away again when they began to hiss.

Florencio chuckled and Lord Reines was getting worried. Bernadetta hugged her bear tighter.

"I...see...Very well, Bernadetta! Make sure to behave well from now on!" Count Varley said and left.

There was tense silence till Florencio let go a sigh of relief. He bent down on one knee and gently touched the girl's cheek. His hand glowed softly, and her bruises healed once more. The flower
spirits were silent as they watched till he spoke again.

"Are you okay?" Florencio said softly.

Him saying that, was enough to make the girl cry and suddenly hugged him tightly. She cried on his shoulder and he whispered softly "there, there", hoping to calm her down. It worked a few minutes later.

"Better?" He said and the girl nodded.

Lord Reines smiled sadly as he watched this.

"Dr." He said and Florencio turned to him, "Can you...come and stay here for 3 days each month? I think it would be helpful." He said.

Florencio knew what the man was thinking. To prevent Bernadetta's father from causing more damage. What's more, with him, as someone of higher power, will help.

"Of course. Let me speak to Count Varley first. I will make my presence known." He said with a smile, but his eyes held a sly one.

He will not let this child be alone.

- 30 minutes later -

"Pardon?" Count Varley looked at him shocked.

Florencio smiled as he was in his office speaking to the count.

"Yes. I would like to come to stay for 3 days each month to train Lady Bernadetta. I have taken a liking to your daughter and she seems to have the potential to become a wonderful user of the bow and lance. I would like to train her." He said.

"Oh!!! It would be an honor for a High-Ranking Doctor like you to do such a thing." Count Varley said.

"Truthfully, I'm making my power known to scum bag like you. How low the noble adults have dropped of this house. Only the girl and her uncle are good souls." Florencio thought as he opened his eyes.

"If I may ask, I heard that the name of a former maid is being used as an example to teach the servants a lesson. If it be alright, may I hear the story behind it?" He said.

He wanted to know more information and his history after finding out he was of Varley bloodline many years ago.

"Oh, that old story. Well, many years ago, some filthy maid and a stupid noble of this house had an affair. Of course, the maid was kicked out along with the child because he was born from a commoner and had no Crest. The story is used to show the servants of the consequences they will suffer. Doubt the hag and child survived anyway. Punishment from the goddess." The Count said
Florencio was doing everything in his power that to murder the man on the spot. He took a deep breath and smiled.

"Oh, I see!! Count Varley, what would you do if that child was alive?" He said.

"That child is most likely dead. Doubt he survived." The count said.

"Well, I hate the one to break the news, but the child survived, grew up to an adult and is very much alive. He was born with a Crest." Florencio said.

The part of being born with a Crest was a complete lie though.

"What?! That's impossible!!! How do you know this?" The count said shocked.

Florencio simply smiled.

"Well, I am a doctor after all. Doctors of the high rankings have access to past medical records. You are speaking of this made me remember a particular record." He said.

"Is there more?!" The Count looked scared.

Florencio inwardly chuckled and just smiled.

"The rest I cannot say Count. It would break the law of privacy. Other than that, I thank you for your time here. I will come back next month to train Lady Bernadetta. I do hope she is well. Thank you for your time. I got the herb I needed. Have a good day Count." Florencio smiled and left before the count could say anything else.

[ --- ]

"You have to go? Noooo!!! Please don't!" Bernadetta cried as she hugged Florencio.

Florencio smiled sadly and bent down to her, gently holding her shoulders.

"I'm sorry Bernie, but I have to go. But I promise you this." He said and the flower spirit that has been sitting comfortably in her head, floated in front of her with a smile.

Its glowed purple and became a purple flower earrings that Florencio put on the girl. He smiled warmly to her.

"I'll come back each month. I'll be truthful, as a Doctor but also a mercenary, I travel a lot so there may be times I won't be able to come sometimes. I will write letters but also, the little one in your earring will protect you." He said and stood up.

Bernadetta sniffed and nodded.

"Okay....keep that promise!!" Bernadetta smiled widely as she hugged him.

Florencio smiled as he waved farewell to the young girl, who went back to her uncle. As he turned away, the smile he had turned to a frown. Not towards the girl but her father. He hated the adult
nobles of Varley, that was a fact. Now through the flashes of the girl's memories, it was made clear that the children who bore the Crest of Indech suffered. He was not happy. He was angry.

_How long must this sick twisted system live.....? Why didn't you just kill the man like you Oh so wanted to?

He froze once he was out the gates of the mansion and walking down the path to the town. The inner dark voice of his.... how many years has it been since he had heard it? No, it never went away, it was always there. But till now, it never did speak loudly in his mind. He shook his head and continued to walk.

_There there. Trying to deny me. I thirst blood.....give it to me.....it's been so long since our blade as killed someone we so wanted to murder._

"Silence." He said to himself as minutes became 40 as arrived at the town, heading straight to medical shop.

His herbs were packed, and he summon a strange particular staff. Like Sandana, he stole a relic from the Church. This staff in particular can be used without a Crest. He looked at the crest stone on it and sighed as he mounted the staff and took off. He should have arrived back to Remire Village in a week, thanks to the speed the staff went.

_Multiple Personality Disorder_

In this time and age, such sickness were not identified. Others would say it was a rare disease, or a curse from the goddess. Or an actual curse done by a dark mage. Florencio developed this during his younger years. There were times he could control it and at times he could not. The only ones who knew of his second persona were Jeralt, Sandana and his wife. She accepted him regardless of his sickness.

Florencio looked back to County of Varley and frowned. Maybe one day he will introduce Lady Byleth to Bernadetta. They are only 3 years apart and maybe they will get along.

That day will come in the future.

_(Paralogue 2: Part 1: Silent help)_
If you have played the game, then you know why Bernadetta is the way she is. I recommend watching her support conversations to learn more.
Her prey was running swift like a deer. That's because her prey was a deer. She wasn’t going to let this one escape. She made a bet after all. If she could manage to hunt down one deer by herself, she would be allowed to have the first sip of the sugar cane cider from Sreng. Sugar cane did not grow in Fodlan after all, but thanks to her love gardening and help from her uncle, she was able to successfully have a few grow. Of course, they are nothing but seedlings, so they have yet to be harvested till fall.

"There!" She mentally yelled as she heard the cry of the deer get trapped in the extra net she had set up.

With a smile on her lips as she climbed up a tree and stood on a thick tree branch, she readied her arrow, aiming to do an instant kill on the deer.

"I still hate doing this no matter if it's an animal or human...." she muttered as she steeled herself and her face became void of emotions as she was set to release the arrow.

The woods became still, only the small rustles of leaves could be heard. The deer looked up to her direction, it's big brown eyes almost made her crack.

"May you be reincarnated in the future. Thank you and I am sorry." She said and released her arrow.

Truly, she really did look like an Ashen Demon but her other name she had earned.....
of her boots because she used wind magic.

"Not bad, not bad. You improved in your form of landing and this time only a minimum amount."
She heard the voice of the goddess as the said girl appeared before her with her hands behind her
back, lightly swinging her legs.

"Well, I have a great teacher after all." She said and the goddess smiled proudly till she spoke.

"Florencio is amazing." She said.

"HUH?! How dare you?!" The goddess huffed till she began laughing.

"I'm joking Sothis!!! You're still my number one teacher." She grinned and Sothis huffed but gave
her a small smile.

"So, Arisa, you won the bet then?" Sothis grinned and Arisa smirked smugly.

She turned back to the deer and smiled sadly as she bent down to remove the arrow from its chest.

"Thank you..." she muttered softly as she removed it.

She will never get used to the feeling of blood on her hands. She picked up the deer like it was a
sack of potatoes and swung it over her shoulders. It was going to be a good 10-minute walk. As her
and Sothis begin their journey back Remire village, Arisa couldn't help but look back at the
memories of her past life and also this one.

"Look at you. Two years ago, you would turn stiff as a log at even the sight of an animal being
killed, now you can hunt." Sothis said as she floated next to her.

"It's still hard to believe it's been two years. Time sure went by fast. I still hate killing. I'll never
ever get used to it." Arisa said.

Sothis nodded to her and couldn't help but smile at the now 6-year-old girl. Arisa had grown quite
a bit. She was much taller than the girls in her village. Since she was the 4th oldest of all the
children in the village. Her once dark teal hair had grown long to her waist. It had streaks of light
brown hair growing. The same hair color as Jeralt's. Everyone in her father's company was in shock
when they saw she had begun to grow brown hair. It mixes well with her teal colored hair. Jeralt
honestly had a swell of pride grow inside of him because she was growing the same colored hair as
him. Her eyes had turned to a shade of both green and brown. The green faded halfway to brown.
Truthfully, looking into the mirror, Arisa thought she looked like a fusion of her old self and
Byleth, it was becoming more and more obvious as the years went by. Even her skin had turned a
little bit of a tan but that was because of sun burns. Curses. She wore a simple black shirt with
black baggy pants easy to move in. On her head, she wore the red jewel chain. And around her
neck, the small little yarn doll and charm she got in Dadga. Arisa's black boots made no sound as
she walked, both fortunately and unfortunately habit of walking silent like a ninja never went
away. After a few more minutes, they arrived at the village and standing near the gate, were the
three oldest ones.

"Dammit!!! She won!!" The second oldest, a boy, screeched while the others laughed.

"I won the bet!!! Hand over that jug of cider!!" Arisa grinned proudly as she ran over to them with
the deer.

Florencio was nearby, his eyes went wide when he saw his niece carrying the deer and ran over to
the group.
"Byleth, did you go hunting?" Florencio screeched loudly and the entire group turned pale.

"Yeah...." Arisa grinned a bit nervously.

The man sighed and looked at everyone in the group one by one before he spoke.

"You are all lucky today is the Half Moon celebration!!! Now get your behinds back to your homes or help with the celebration!!! Byleth, you're helping prepare the deer because you hunted it down!" Florencio said Arisa groans.

She hated preparing animals they hunted.

"Don't you groan at me young lady!!" Florencio said.

"Fiiinnneeeeee." She said as one of the kids strapped on her waist a half milk jug size canteen.

"Thank you." She said to them and they wished her good luck.

Following her uncle, well godfather, to Elder Bara's houses, where many of the women were helping cook, one of the women smirked at the sight of the deer.

"So, you went hunting even though your father and a few of the men already went to search, ne?" Rin said with arms crossed as she walked over to her.

She was wearing an apron because she was in charge of getting the meat ready.

"Made a bet with the kids and it was worth it!! Sugar cane cider!" Arisa said with a big grin as she put down the deer on an empty table.

Rin sighed as she took a step back as a little girl ran up to her.

"Aunty, Aunty!!! Papa and Mama are arguing over the potatoes again!" A little one-year old girl said as she ran up to her.

Rin groans into her hands and Elder Bara laughed not too far away.

"What I tell you child?! Something amazing did come from that marriage. They fight like newlyweds!" Elder Bara chuckled as she went back to cutting vegetables.

Today was the half-moon celebration during the month of the Pegasus Moon, also known as February. The year was now 1167. It was still hard to believe it had been two years since she had become part of this world. She learned many things. One, for sure was that Florencio would go to the Empire each month for three days to train a girl, or more specifically, Bernadetta. Arisa nearly fainted from shock hearing that, but nonetheless, was happy because she knew of Bernadetta's traumatic history in House Valery. The fact that Florencio was going those three days each month to check on her and much more, to make his presence known to Count Varley so the bastard wouldn't dare go to the extreme to hurt the girl. Learning that Florencio was one of the only 5 highest ranking Doctors in all Fodlan was reassuring. Also, because his pen name was Doctor Lilac. Arisa was looking forward to meeting Bernadetta in the future and possibly save the girl, have her join the house she will chose.

Another thing that happened was that Ili and Ra this time now had officially did fall in love and at
first, they did regret getting married drunk. But that soon changed to joy and love, the two getting married the Fodlan traditional way. They now had the blessing of both Brigid and Fodlan. A year later, Ili gave birth to a beautiful baby girl who is named Kama. Ra and Ili were proud parents of that little troublemaker girl. Ili was on maternity leave for a full two years to fully recover along with Ra so he could be with his family. Arisa herself was trained by her father, Sandy (Godmother) and Florencio (Godfather). At age six, her father had begun to take her with him to their missions. Truthfully, like before, she will never get used to taking a life. Every time she did, she had grown the habit of muttering a small prayer to them before she plunged her blade into them. Those that managed to get away or survive, have given her the name that Byleth had, The Ashen Demon, but also.... the Angel of Death. That other name she did not know about. Ah, and let's not forget Sothis. The goddess had learned so much of Fodlan through the young girl's eyes but also with being surrounded by so many amazing people. Sothis loved humans. She knew they could be cruel and merciless at times. They could betray and back stab, but she also saw the beauty and good of human life. She saw the joy and sadness, the ups and downs many went through. Being one with Arisa, Sothis had begun to understand humans more and more. It also brought her a few small fragments of her memories back. They were still foggy and blurry, but she knew, she once had a family. A long time ago. Though she could not remember them, she knew they were out there somewhere. For now, she enjoyed being with Arisa and her family. Another thing, Sothis was a monster when it came to training Arisa in ancient magic.

The poor human girl barely managed to survive the mental training. Reminding her, she will be turning 8 years old this year. As for her father, Jeralt was more than proud of his daughter. Though he didn't exactly express his emotions very well, his affection towards her and training was more than enough to show how much he loved her. He trained her in the sword, the skills of a merchant and mercenary.

By now, Arisa had now fully developed her own sword style. It was a combination of the fencing style she learned in her old world but also the sword style of Fodlan. She had her rapier modified so it can turn to like a chain whip, like the Sword of the Creator. She was damn she will prevent Jeralt's death and began practicing manipulating her sword in a way. What's more, Red Hare had grown beautiful. Zach had taught her how to properly ride a pegasus. A bit of a horror to Jeralt because Red Hare loved showing off his speed and Arisa loved going crazy fast in the sky. She described Red Hare's speed like it was a rocket. Her skills in dancing and brawling she loved. It scared a good portion of the boys because her martial arts skills. Sandy showed no mercy in training her in dance. Plus, being the fourth tallest in the village made things made things much more fun. She was 5'4 in her old life and just prayed that she would be tall when she got even older. Arisa experienced what it was like to have a childhood. She learned the names of all the villagers and everyone in the company. She wanted to forever have them in her heart. Truthfully, she just recently come to terms that this was her new life and finally accepted it. There will be times she will be lost in past memories, but she is finally taking the first small steps to move forward. Even with the knowledge of what the future holds, was still a huge burden on her back. She kept it hidden, far too well. Reminding her, she really, really, really, missed playing the piano and violin. Unfortunately, pianos do not exist in this world. Violins, sure. BUT THEY WERE BLOODY AS HELL EXPENSIVE THAT ONLY NOBLES COULD AFFORD THEM AND VERY FEW DO!! She never wanted to forget to play them so in a separate notebook, she wrote down everything she could remember of music notes. She also would sometimes pretend she was playing them by air playing with her fingers.

"Alright, the deer is gutted, skinned, meet cut to the right sized and also the bones removed!” Arisa
said as she put down the butcher knife.

Indeed, the deer was cut down well.

"Byleth, go help Sandy with the bread. She needs a few extra hands." She heard Fiona say as she was busy mixing the mash potatoes.

"Thanks Fiona!" Arisa said and went to wash her hands.

The girl made a few water bubbles float. Zach had been kind enough to teach her some water magic spells. She felt like Azura and would sing Lost in Thoughts All Alone at times. The girl arrived at the next room where Sandy was busy mixing batter in a bowl.

"Good Byleth!!! Need you to take out the sour dough bread from the oven and cut them up!"
Sandy said in a bit of a rush as she was trying to get everything done.

Arisa nodded and went to do just that.

Another two hours passed almost everything was ready. During that time, her father and the hunting group had come back with a fine hunt. A nice big boar and a rare moose. It was a tradition of Remire Village to hunt only one moose every year during the Half Moon celebration. So, when Jeralt learned that his daughter went hunting without permission because of a bet, you bet as punishment he made the girl prepare the moose.

"I hate this....." once again, the girl was skinning the damn animal while Jeralt watched.

"Seriously kid, you went hunting alone over sugar cane cider?" Jeralt sighed.

"In my defense," she said as she cut a leg, "Sugar cane is extremely hard to get, and it doesn't grow in Fodlan. It took me 6 months to finally be able to grow a small seeding adapted to the soil and weather here." She said.

She turned to him and patted the canteen on her waist with a smug grin.

"I get the taste if thy sweets first!!" She said proudly.

"Oh no, give that here." Jeralt said and walked towards her.

"Catch me if you can!" She giggled and ran around the table.

"Get back here!!" Jeralt said and the man ran after her in circles.

Arisa giggled happily, dodging her father and Jeralt couldn't help but chuckle also.

"Got you!" He picked up the girl by the waist.

"Oh no!!" Arisa gasped but giggled as he spun her around and then put her down.

"Now, hand over that cider." He said.

Arisa groans but gave it to him anyway because he knew she had a sweet tooth and would most likely drink down the entire thing for herself. That was true though.

"Good. Now finish cutting that moose. It's almost time to bring everything out." Jeralt said.
He had to go help set up the fires where the meat will be cooked. Sothis appeared and grinned to her.

"So, looks like you won't be having your hidden sweets tonight. Punishment for the bet!" Sothis grinned.

Arisa gave her a playful glare but shrugged.

"Come on!! Got to bring the food out!!" She said and ran to the kitchen to help out.

- 1 hour later: Stables -

After helping bring out all the food, Arisa was finally able to relax until the food was ready. The girl had decided to visit the stables to see how Red Hare was doing. She brought a full basket filled with vegetables he loved to eat. Once she entered, she heard a very loud neigh that she knew immediately it belongs to her friend.

"Sup Red Hare!!" Of course, during her time alone, she would revert to old form of slang language from her old world.

Red Hare's eyes lit up as she walked over to his section. The girl giggled as he nuzzled his nose on her face. Like before, he had grown to a beautiful strong pegasus. He is technically still in his teen years but still, he was beautiful. He was especially prideful in his long mane red hair. Arisa took the liberty of braiding it and combing it so it would look shiny and clean. He flapped his wings and snorted lightly.

"I know. I got you your food. Enjoy it Red. You deserve it after putting up with me these past two years." She said.

Sothis nodded and sat were Arisa would sit on Red Hare. The said pegasus no longer minded and now had a civil relationship with the goddess. Remire Village had many stray cats and dogs around. Another thing about Remire Village is that Florencio has a barrier around the place. He isn’t about to let bandits raid the place if her, Jeralt or Sandy were away. It also kept away the spies of the Church of Serios so they could never locate them.

"Stop it." Arisa giggled a Red Hare chewed a bit of her hair.

She took out a green hair ribbon and used it to put her hair in a high ponytail with her right and left long bangs lose on both sides of her face. They display how the brown hair transcend to the teal color. Her eyes especially.

"Enjoy the food. I'm going to go change!" She said and waved goodbye.

"Wait for me!!" Sothis said and flew after her friend.

- In Arisa's Room -
With the door closing shut, Arisa ran to her closet and began to look through her clothing of what she will wear. It was still winter after all and it wouldn't be spring till next month. Sothis looked in and pointed to a simple blue dress with her dark green cloak. Arisa had many cloaks.

"Why not this one? I haven't seen you wear it in a long time." Sothis said and Arisa picked it up.

"I haven't worn this one since my trip to Faerghus 2 years ago." Arisa thought as she looked at it. She smiled sadly as she hugged it to her chest. The faces of Lestia, Zander, Dimitri, Felix, Sylvian, Ingrid and the rest appeared in her mind. She did wonder how they were doing and if they are well. Especially Dimitri and Sylvian. She really did think of the all as siblings.

"I miss them..." she thought as she looked back to the dress.

She was far too small for it back then and now she finally fit in it perfectly. The girl nodded and began to remove her clothing. Of course, Sothis sighed as she looked over to the mirror. Arisa had a few scars but the main one that always stung was the one at her chest. It was a slash mark over her heart. The girl swiftly changed into her dress and put on her other black boots. She grabbed her green cloak with fur and did a twirl in front of the mirror.

"You finally fit in it!! Wonderful!" Sothis said and the girl did a small bow.

"Let us go my lady. I shall escort us to the food!" Arisa and Sothis smiled.

"With pleasure my dear student. Ooohohoho!!" Sothis and Arisa instantly cringed at the rich people laugh.

"Really?" The girl said and the goddess just looked at her confused.

"What is wrong? I saw one of the village girls doing it. Thought it would make me look better." Sothis said as the Arisa began to walk down the hallway of her home.

"Unfortunately, that laugh is usually used when you are being a brat. Sorry Sothis." She said and goddess pouted.

"I thought it made me look good!"Sothis said.

"I guess...? Just, don't do it again. Please." Arisa said.

Sothis grumbled but agreed. Perhaps it would be better to wait for when the time was right.

- Later at night -

"HHHHHEREEEYYYYYYYYAAAAAAA!!! WHOOOOOOO!!!" Florencio yelled out completely drunk with his mug of ale high in the air.

The man had a horrible alcohol tolerance and was dead drunk by the third mug. Many of the villagers laughed as the watched the calm and graceful doctor turn to a complete drama queen. Sandy had covered Arisa's eyes as she watched her fellow friend's get drunk as heck. Tonight, was a day of celebration so it was alright. Arisa just happily ate her deer ribs. She showed them the recipe for barbecue sauce and looks like everyone liked it. It was their first time eating it. To Arisa, she didn't know how much she missed this familiar taste. It still felt strange eating it on deer meat,
but it still tasted as good as the one on the boar meat. She saw her father got in a group with a few men along with poor Zach dragged on along with Jorah. They were all drunk and were singing and at some point, Fiona joined them till Rin pulled the drunk woman away. Now she understood why Jeralt was embarrassed when ever one of his past drinking episodes was mentioned. If she had a phone, she would totally be recording it to show her father the next day. She giggled she pulled out the canteen with the sugar cane cider she managed to snatch back and took a big long gulp of it. Luckily Sandy had went to give the group water to help them sober up a bit. They were going to have a horrible hangover tomorrow. The half-moon celebration was to celebrate the winter harvest and also to thank the Goddess for protecting them through the winter. Arisa let go of a blissful sigh as she finished her giant gulp. The girl could not help but smile as she wiped her lips, watching Sothis dancing happily with a few fire aerials near the big bonfire that was made. She looked around and saw a few the wyrens had fallen asleep because of the warmth of the flames. One of them had a few of the children under its wing as if protecting them. It was cute. She wouldn't trade anything right now for this amazing moment. She yawned a bit, seems like sleep was coming to her. Arisa was starting to feel a bit cold and walked up a bit to the fire and sat near it. She saw Elder Bara nearby and smiled warmly. Once more, the girl could not help but stare at the fire, lost in her thoughts.

"On an ocean of stars
Lo, an angel they see
Untouched by the war
That the waged......"

Sothis turned towards her as she saw the girl seemed to be in her own thoughts as she had begun to sing a song she had never heard. Elder Bara went silent as she listened.

"Lain low by their scars
A people wounded, but free
Seek what lies beyond
This dark age

The seasons they turn
Winter to spring
Dulling the pain and
Erasing the sting

The seasons turn
Summer to fall
Time’s warm embrace
Begins to heal all

On the wild, at first light
The jasper lion will run
Hark an anthem he drums
Can you hear?

The people fresh from the night
Rise and listen as one
The land that they were promised
Is near

And though I am gone
Just ash in the wind
One life surrendered
So yours can begin

Courage my children—
This is your song
I am the Earth—
I will make you strong

A world riven by pride
Repairs at last
And now its makers can be at rest
Our vision come to pass
The seasons, they turn
Memory fades
But when my name has been lost
To the grey

I will sustain you
Year after year
I will protect you
When dangers appear

And though I am gone
Just ash in the wind
One life surrendered
So yours can begin

Courage my children
This is your song
I am the Earth
I will make you strong

Arisa has zoned out completely as she had sung the song and just finished. She sighed and noticed both Elder Bara and Sothis staring at her.

"Something wrong?" Arisa said as she sat up straight.

"I never knew you could sing so beautifully but...the song was also filled with sorrow. I'm curious, what's the story behind it?" Elder Bara asked.

"Well...it's about a goddess who surrender her life to allow her people's lives to be lived anew, free of the influences of the gods. She finally laid to rest with her brother, the goddess expresses her belief that their vision for their people's happiness can finally come to pass. She refers to herself as "the earth", who will "sustain you year after year"." Arisa said a bit sadly.

Truthfully, she was talking about the story of Mila and Duma from Fire Emblem Echoes, Shadows of Valentia. She loved listening to that song especially. Elder Bara nodded and turned to look at the fire.
"Quite a story. You read it in one of your books?" Sothis and Arisa nodded as she saw the Elder about to speak.

"Knowledge holds many things dear. Be careful who you share it with." The elder smiled warmly to her and Arisa was a bit confused.

"By the way, your father didn't tell you this, but they will be heading out to Duscur in 3 days. Just a heads up because knowing you…just make sure not to get discovered." Elder Bara chuckled and left.

Both Sothis and Arisa blinked like owls to each other but grin.

"You ready for another adventure?" Arisa said and Sothis nodded.

"But of course!! I am always ready for some fun." Sothis snickered.

"Same! But for tonight, let's get ready for bed. I'm getting tired. Yyaaawwnn." Arisa said and stood up to head back to her room.

Indeed, tonight was wonderful.

What Arisa did not notice, was her shadow wavered only just a bit. It wasn't just hers. Elder Bara's eyes narrowed at her own as she saw it ripple. She placed her hand on it and frowned.

"These feelings of sorrow and pain....Who are you? Who are you calling out to?"

-Dream-

"Where are you.....?"

"Please come back...."

"Don't leave me!!"

Dark. The place was dark. She could hear a female voice screaming and crying. Her forest colored (green/brown) eyes kept looking around everywhere.

"Hello?" She yelled out but only heard weeping once more.
"Papa....mama........I'll kill....you...."

*Her blood ran cold as the voice suddenly became filled with malice. But not towards her, but to someone.*

"You'll pay...you'll pay....how dare you take them away from me!!!!"

*The shadows began to form in a giant creature. It almost looked similar to an Elder Dragon Namielle from Monster Hunters. But...this one looked more sinister.....shadows covered all its body as it rose it's head and roared down at Arisa. The girl screamed so loudly as it brought down its jaw over her.*

- End of Dream -

Arisa shot awake from her bed and her heart beating rapidly. Sweat running down her face as she shakily got out of bed and went to the table near her desk. There was a jug of water and she poured herself a glass. She gulped it down and let go a deep breath she had been holding onto.

"Yaawwnnnnn...good morning." Sothis's voice was heard the goddess appeared and yawned.

She looked at the girl confused, noticing the girl was in almost a shock state. There was still sweat running down her cheek and the girl taking deep breaths to calm down her pounding heart.

"Arisa, are you alright? Did you have a nightmare?" Sothis said as she gently touched the girl’s cheek.

She also noticed the red gem on the girl's gold chain had a crack on it.

"I'm okay...and yeah...a nightmare." Arisa said as she heard to the restroom to take a bath.

"What was that dream.....?" She muttered to herself as she filled the tub with warm water and opened jar filled with dry lavender.

She threw a small handful in. This bath should help her clear her head.

- 1 hour later -

Dressed in her usual long-sleeved button up shirt with her ankle length black skirt with black tights underneath, black boots, her rapier on her waist, and her green cloak, Arisa headed out to the company to get some information on the trip to Duscur. She put her hair in a high ponytail like yesterday. It felt more comfortable and decided to tie like that from now on. She walked into the building and grabbed an apple from the fruit bowl that was near the entrance. Sandy placed it there
in case anyone wanted to have a snack during the time of days.

"Morning Acia and Helena!" Arisa said as she walked up to a front desk where the two women, she called out were at.

"Morning." Was all Acia said and Helena smiled.

"Morning Evergreen!! We're just getting some paperwork done. Plus, the new shipment of umbral steel is heaven!!" Helana said happily as she was counting a few silver coins.

Acia and Helena were part of Sandy's team. Acia is a former criminal from the Alliance. She had stolen money from House Gloucester to feed her younger siblings. That resulted in her getting arrested till Sandy made a deal to set her free. Truthfully, the woman bribed the guards with gold. Acia and her siblings were then taken in by Jeralt's company and since then, Acia was more than grateful. She no longer lived a life of thieves and her siblings now lived happy lives here in Remire Village. Helena was a Gremory from Albinea. She left her home country to travel the world and eventually chose to settle down here in Fodlan. Thus, the woman was an amazing merchant but a bit on the greedy side. Arisa wondered if she would get along well with Anna if she ever met her. Also, the woman had a strange habit of putting nicknames on people. Evergreen was the nickname she put on Arisa because of the colors of her hair and eyes.

"Oohhh!! So, who's the one making weapons with the steel?" Arisa said.

Helena and Acia both sigh in sadness as they looked at each other then back at her.

"Unfortunately, we do not have a blacksmith that specializes in this rare metal. Till then, we'll just have it stored in the warehouses until we hire a good one." Acia said.

"What about Zoltan, the Master Swordsmith?" She said and Helena spit out the tea she was drinking.

"I'm surprised you know about him." Acia said.

"Well, yeah. Dad told me he was the one that made his lance after all." Arisa said.

Acia nodded and slapped Helena on her back to help her out. That just made the woman cough more.

"The man is a stubborn bloat. He lives in the Kingdom. Difficult to get a hold of and consider yourself lucky if you even manage to get a hold of any of the weapons he has made." Helena said, now recovered.

"Okay then. Then who made my rapier?" Arisa asked.

"Zoltan, of course. It was your 7th birthday present after all. Plus, it was very difficult to make it like a whip. I'm still surprised you came up with that plan. Zoltan honestly loved the challenge of making a sword like that. It is made with umbral and wootz steel like your father's lance. Anyhow, why are you here so early in the morning, Evergreen?" Helena said.

Arisa smiled to them cutely.

"I overheard Ares say that they are heading out to Duscur in a few days. So, wanted to know a few things." She said.
Helena and Acia looked at each other blankly and shrugged.

"4 in the morning. Make sure not to get caught. Your best spot to hide is in the barrel where the clothing is since hardly anyone checks it." Helena said as she went back to filing paperwork.

"Thank you!!" Arisa said and left with a smile.

Once out the door, Acia turned to her fellow friend.

"Was that really a good idea? Sandy and Florence will have our heads if they learn we told her the time of Jeralt's departure." Acia said.

Helena giggled.

"Might as well see what goes down. No one can stop that girl when she sets her mind on things. Reminding me, how did that date with Ares go?" Helena smirked to Acia who just gave her a blank face.

"Please just shut it. And yes, it went well." Acia gave her a small smile.

"So are you still a v------"

SLAP!

- 3 days later -

"Bag of Black Holes?" Sothis smiled.

It was the name Sothis gave to her friend's bag because you could literally find anything in it.

"Check." Arisa grinned happily back to her.

"4 months of clothing?" She said.

"Check!" Arisa's smile seemed to grow.

"Finally, do you have everything you need?" Was what Sothis said.

"Of course!! We wouldn't be in this barrel if I didn't." Arisa said.

It was 4 in the morning, Sothis and Arisa were inside a well size barrel. She wore a black fur cloak that was made by Florencio to completely hide one's presence. She stole it from his office. Florencio had a talent for designing clothing. This cloak in particular was created using the feathers that ariels had shed and also some, wyvern scales, and wootz steel. It was designed to hide a person's presence but also protect them from danger. The wyvern scales were a bonus because it made it fireproof. Plus, it was so warm and comfy!!

"So, two weeks we hide again huh? Sandy and Florencio are staying behind this time. Your father
is taking Ares, Teme, Yofos and Jorah. Not a bad team. I overheard it will take at least 4 months to get to Duscur. So, any information?" Sothis said as she sat down next to her.

"Let's wait two weeks before I tell you anything. Still wish I could have brought Red Hare with us, but he would attract too much attention. I have yet to master the shirking spell I learned from Helena." Arisa said and they felt the wagon begin moving.

"I personally agree that he was not brought. Though I must admit, he would have been a great help. You two make an amazing team together. If you had joined the knights of either the Kingdom, Empire or Alliance, I do believe you would have been a highly respected one." Sothis said.

Arisa nodded as she took out an apple and began to eat it.

"I do agree with you on that but there is something I don't like the glorification of death in knighthood. I don't want to die, people believing I died for the sake of a country. If I die one day, I want it to be for my own beliefs." She said.

Sothis was silent as she heard this.

"I know it sounds like I'm cold but still....I think I understand a bit better now of Felix's mentality when he is older." She said.

"Of c----wait, what do you mean when he is older?" Sothis said and Arisa mentally slapped herself.

"Oh look!" Arisa laughed nervously as she pointed to the red gem on her gold chain, "Elder Bara fixed it." She said.

Sothis knew the girl was avoiding the question but shrugged. She'll know the answer eventually.

- 2 weeks later -

"Sothis, the time has come." Arisa grinned widely as she carefully crawled out of the barrel and quietly walked towards her father, where was sitting at the front of the wagon, steering the horses.

Sothis snickered evilly as the girl got closer that's when it happened.

"Off to an adventure we go!!! Yahooo!!" Arisa yelled happily as she jumped on her father's back and pointed to the sky.

"WHAT ON EARTH?!" Jeralt was completely shocked as he saw his daughter suddenly appeared out of nowhere and had climbed on his back.

The girl had wide grin and the men were all having heart attacks.

"SHE SNUCK INTO THE WAGON AGAIN!!" Ares, Yofos, Jorah and Temes all yelled in union in absolute horror.

"We made sure to check every single barrel and crate!!! How the f-----" Yofos was silenced because Jorah slapped his hand over his mouth before he finished his curse.

One does not simply tell Arisa to stay behind at home to study. Oh no no no. The girl has been having a thirst for adventures since arriving to this world and no amount of isolation is going to
keep her from doing that. Jeralt groaned into his hands as his daughter simply giggled and hugged him. At this point, it is to be expected. This time the job was taking place near Duscur. Duscur is a peninsula on the northern coast of Fódlan, to the west of Sreng. It is part of the territory of the Holy Kingdom of Faerghus. This adventure takes place way before the Tragedy of Duscur. This was during the time it was still an independent country.

Sothis finally burst out laughing and the horses looked her way and glared. One of them shook their head. It was Yofos's horse, a wonderful black female stallion that was often called the mother of all the horses because she was the oldest. Sothis smiled as she floated near the black stallion and giggled.

"Come now all of you!! You should all be aware that she is a wild child!!" Sothis giggled.

"I'm excited!!" The girl cheered until she got a smack on the head by her father.

"Ow!!" She screeched as she held her head and glared at him with puffed cheeks.

She'll take full advantage of acting like a child despite having the mentality of an adult. Tantrums unfortunately are something she can never bring herself to do. Dammit.

"How many times have I told you not to sneak on kid?!!" Jeralt said to her.

Arisa pouted and pointed to him, a twinkle in her eye that reminded Jeralt of his wife. That was not a good sign.

"You can't keep me in the village forever!! My coming of age ceremony comes 8 more years!!! I found out about the village tradition of allowing their children once they turn 15 to leave on a journey on their own if they desire! I spoke to the older boys! I want practice!" She said.

Stubborn was the word used to describe her. Exactly like her mother. Oh, well you look at that. Seems Temes has looked away at the mention of the village tradition. So, it was him who mentioned it.

*Have kids they say. It'll be fun they say.*

(Chapter 9: Duscur Dawn: Part 1: Road to the Shadows)

[ ------------------ ]

And a two-year time skip has happened!!! Yup!! It's time for the appearances of one of main OC's who will stand by Arisa's/Byleth's side. Her appearance will be made next chapter. Now, some of you asked when will our protagonist meet Edelgard and Claude. Well, Edelgard will be actually more towards 13 or 14 possibly?? Claude will be more towards 16 or 17. Now, before all the you unleash Time Skip Dimitri on me, I have a plan laid out. That's
because there will also certain reunions and a possible encounter with a certain Archbishop.

That's all!!!
Arisa hated hunting. Arisa hated killing. Put her in charge of a hunting group, they more than likely to have a hunt. What none of those people knew was that the girl with the mentality of an adult, absolutely hated the sight of blood. One, because the majority of her previous life was spent in a hospital room. Two, she would often be coughing or vomiting blood similar to Okita Souji from the Fate Series. Three, she lived in peaceful times during the modern era. There was no need to hunt to survive. Much less, you didn't have to worry constantly that you could be killed. So, the actual task of killing always made her want to vomit. Weather it may be a human or animal. Or any kind of life. So, how does the girl cope each time she has to kill? She shuts down her mind and enters a void-less phase of no emotions. Her eyes and face become cold as stone, no emotions. She lets her survival instincts take over as she temporary locks away her humanity. Even so, it always leaves a bitter taste in her mouth. Since her first kill 2 years ago, Arisa mutters a prayer to each soul before she takes their life.

[ ---- ]

Jeralt sighed in defeat as pointed to inside the wagon. His daughter was just like her mother. Wild and free. Rosa was the same despite never being allowed to leave the monastery grounds. She would manage ways to sneak out though.

"As long as you complete your studies for these past months, you're allowed to continue with us. Got it?" He said to her sternly to her.

Arisa nodded.

"Good. For now, you'll help me hunt something for us to eat. This is a good opportunity to teach you to catch bigger prey." Jeralt said.

Arisa was always hesitant when it came to hunting. She wasn't a big fan of killing animals, but she understood that it was need for survival. Especially in this world since it was almost that of medieval times. She came from a world of peaceful times after all. She fixed her rapier that was gifted to her on her 7th birthday on her waist. Her father approving, she would master the sword as she gets older. She also grabbed her silver bow that was given to her by Sandy and the dagger from Florencio. She learned that the dagger came from the Kingdom. Funny. The tradition of those from Faerghus was to gift a dagger as symbol to cut one's own path. She was having some Edelgard and Dimitri flashbacks from the game. She sighed while the rest of the team stayed behind to help set up the camp. Jeralt, Arisa, Yofos and Temes left towards the forest. She noticed Sothis fly a head to have a look out. She did overhear that they needed to be careful because there may be wolves.

"The suns still out. We need to hurry or else it will become difficult to hunt at night." Temes said from above them.

He was jumping from tree to tree. Temes was from Hyrm territory in the Empire. He grew tired of the injustice going on and left/forced himself out. He was an orphan as a child and eventually became a mercenary. He later joined Jeralt's company at age 13, Imperial year 1160. It's been 6
years and he is the 3rd youngest in the company. He is currently 19 years old. As for Ares, he
came from the Kingdom. He is the son of a former knight. He wanted to live a free life and not be
held down by the codes of chivalry. Unfortunately, Arisa must describe the man a bit similar to
Merlin from the Fate Series. Minus him being a half incubus of course. He's a normal human with
a damn skirt chaser attitude. But most of the time he is respectful like a knight. Yofos came from
Brigid. He's Zach's older cousin from his mother's side. He's older than him by 2 years. Meaning
he's almost 30. Oh, a lot of people like to tease him because of who's he married to. The thing is,
the man is married but to another man but also has a woman. Yeah, it's complicated. He has a wife
and husband, basically an open relationship. His husband and wife are honestly amazing people
and at times, Arisa likes to call them aunty and uncle. Unfortunately, his wife had the same love of
frilly dresses like Sandy, which terrified Arisa. Luckily his husband always saves her and bakes her
sweets. As for Jorah, he came from overseas, from a country called Hyras. It's between Sreng and
Albinea. It was also known as the Country of Flowers. Many of the foreign flowers come imported
from there and Jorah as a merchant from there. He chose to become a mercenary because he needed
another source of financial support. He's still learning to talk the language of Fodlan and he has
improved a lot over the years.

"Seriously, Lady Byleth? The last time you snuck on like this was 2 years ago!!" Yofos said as the
girl walked next to him.

He had his axe strapped onto his back and mini bow on his wrist. The girl rolled her eyes but
grinned.

"Hey, at least I get some practice. Besides, Dad kept hidden from me about the village tradition!!
You bet I'm going on a journey when I turn 15!" She said.

Jeralt sighed as he continued to walk and sent a glare to Temes, who just avoiding eye contact.

"Come on boss," Temes said as he landed like a ninja at another tree, "I get you want to protect
your daughter but she's not going to stay a kid forever. I mean, what are you going to do the day she
gets a lover?" He said.

Suddently Jeralt had an aura of murder around him and just one look from him made Temes fear his
life.

"I'm joking!!! I'm joking!!" Temes screeched and the others laughed.

Arisa giggled as they continued eventually leading to an area where there was a lot of vegetation.
She bent down as she saw a few familiar mushrooms and took out the mini dictionary Florencio
had given her. She nodded to herself as she looked back to it and called out to her father. There was
a good amount and they were all edible!!

"Papa! I found a good number of edible mushrooms!! I can make a stew for us." Arisa said as she
pointed to the small bunch that was under a fallen log covered in moss.

"Not bad. Wait," Jeralt pointed to a strange pink colored one that was next to the bunch "that one is
poisonous." He said.

Arisa looked at it and then turned back to him.

"I know. But the poison can be removed by boiling it for 10 minutes. It's also can be used to make
poison to hurt our enemies!" She giggled evilly at that last sentence.
"I don't want to get her mad ever." The rest of the group thought as Jeralt chuckled.

"Alright then. I also see you found some herbs. Oh, perfect. Even wild yams." He said as he saw her digging using her hands and pulled out the yams.

"If I remember correctly, those can be used as medicine." He said as she shook them to remove the dirt and put them in her small basket.

"Yeah. N----!!" She couldn’t finish her sentence when Yofos suddenly went "shhh!!" and everyone went silent.

"ARISA!! COME QUICK!!"

That was Sothis!!! Arisa mentally slapped herself for forgetting that her friend went ahead to explore the place!

"Ccchiirrrpp!! Chiirrrpp!!"

"Wait, that's an owl!!! Papa, it's stuck!!" Arisa recognize the sound and ran towards the direction it was coming from.

"Wait, Byleth!" Her father yelled but the girl was already far head from everyone.

The worst back was that she was wearing a black cloak that made her blend in too well with the shadows of the forest. Arisa ran till she reached the place of the sound. She went silent as she listened to the sounds of her surroundings. It was near an area where there was thin stream. She kept listening and heard a frantic voice near a pine tree. She walked towards it and there, hanging tangled in vines, was a small white feathered owl, struggling to move.

"Good, you're here!!" Sothis flew to her quickly and shook her shoulders.

"Help me set free the bird bef-----!!" Both girls froze once heard the sound.

Hiiissss...

Both slowly turned to see a copperhead snake. It slowly slithered towards the owl, who was frantically trying to set itself free and that's when the snake noticed Arisa, who suddenly became the said Ashen Demon.

"NO, YOU DON'T!!" She yelled, grabbing her dagger and lunged at the snake.

"HIIIIISSSSSS!!" It opened its mouth wide and lunged at her, she barely manages to dodge its attack.
"Argghh!!" The girl grunted as she bent back and Sothis used her own magic to make the ground underneath the snake rise.

That was enough and Arisa managed to slash its head off clean. It dropped to the ground twitching and its head nearby. Arisa looked down at it coldly as it gave it's finally his till it died.

"Huff.....huff...." she panted as all her emotions returned back to her and turned to the owl, who chirped.

"There, there." She said and carefully removed it from the vines.

"Are you two alright?" Sothis asked, worries.

"We're okay Sothis. And thank you." She said and the goddess nodded as both turned back to the baby owl.

"Chirp." It chirped and she smiled as she held it in her arms.

"You're safe now. Be free!!" She grinned and spread her arms to let it be free, but it flew and landed on her head.

Sothis giggled at the sight of this.

"It seems to have gotten attached to you. Red Hare is going to be quite frustrated. Ufu!!" Sothis giggled.

"Really?" Arisa sighed as she looked up to her head.

The owl chirped and just snuggled closer Arisa sighed and grabbed the snake head and body, threw it into her bag.

"I can make stew now." She thought.

"Pardon?! You're going to eat that snake?!!" Sothis screeched and the girl just nodded.

"In my defense, it's one of the few creatures at the bottom of the food chain when it comes to humans. So yeah, I'm eating it." Arisa said and Sothis grimace.

After 10 minutes, she found her father and the group. She got a huge scolding but also a laugh when she showed her father the owl that has become attached to her and the snake she killed. Temes screamed like a schoolgirl and passed out at the sight of the severed head and body. Jeralt was happy that karma got the man back. Though the man was surprised that his daughter managed to kill a snake.

"Also, can I keep the owl? I promise to train him." She swore.

"I have to agree on that one. Owls are rare and difficult to train but with the proper care, they make excellent hunting partners as well as messengers." Yofos said as he studied the snow owl on the girl’s head.

"I'm not sure...." Jeralt said.

"Well, I don't think the owl is going anywhere..." Temes groaned as he was recovering from his shock and pointed to where Arisa was.
"Can you land on my shoulder?" She said to it.

The owl chirped and flapped its wings, gently landing on her shoulder.

"Good...girl??" She said.

The owl chirped twice, meaning yes.

"Good. Now, fly to that tree branch." She pointed to a small tree a few feet away.

It nodded and did just that. Sothis was honestly impressed by how well the owl was obeying. Maybe in time the girl will get a loyal dog? Now that would be a fun sight.

"Good job. Now come back." Arisa said as it flew towards her and it landed on her shoulder.

"Good girl. Here, fish we caught earlier." She gave it a small piece of dried fish she had in her bag and it happily ate it.

"Sighhhhh...." Jeralt buried his face in his hands and groans.

The two other men chuckled at this but were happy to have a new member to the group.

"And the village calls her the animal whisperer. The animals love her." Yofos said as they continued to walk.

"Alright. You can keep the owl but make sure to train it. Like with Red Hare, he is your responsibility. Got it kiddo?" Jeralt said to his daughter.

"Of course!" She said.

- 2 hours Later -

After two hours of searching, they had finally hunted a deer down. Thankfully she wasn't put in charge of cleaning it this time once they had returned to the camp. Ares and Jorah were surprised to see the snow owl. Ares was happy since he did used to train owls back in his old days before he left. He was more than happy to teach the girl proper lessons. The owls in the Kingdom were highly valued and were usually used by knights as messengers or for hunting. In his case, he trained them as messengers and his father trained them to help in hunting. He will teach her both.

"Dinner is ready!!" Arisa and Jorah yelled to let everyone know the stew they made was ready.

She had cleaned the snake properly, cut the meat into bite sizes and added to the stew. Jorah showed her how to do it since snakes were common in his home country, unfortunately. Along with the deer meat that was cut, the stew tasted divine. She overheard the others saying thank you to the Goddess for this hunt. Now, the little white owl she decided to name her Feh. One main reason, Fire Emblem Heroes, Feh was also the name of the owl in the game. Feh honestly was attached to her and loved snuggling on her cheek, sleeping on her head (RIP my hair!) and sleeping inside her cloak. She is still a baby so hopefully Arisa will be able to raise her properly. Hopefully.

"Now this snakeskin and fangs..." she muttered to herself as she looked snakeskin and the snake fangs she got.
"The skin can be used for a new head band and the fangs at most I use them to make needles for clothing, and also a fishhook." She thought.

"Chirp." Feh said.

"No, I'm not going to eat this." She said.

"Chirp chirp." It said.

"Eh? Of course not!! The bones can be used for medical purposes." She said back.

"Chirp chirp chirp." It gave her a blank look.

"I'm not throwing them away!" She said.

The men along with Sothis were watching in amusement.

"Jeralt, good luck with your daughter." Ares said.

All that could be heard was Arisa arguing with Feh as Jeralt was groaning a bit. But the man didn't mind. He was happy to see his daughter growing. What worried him though more was losing track of the spies of the Church. Sandy reported that they seemed to be getting more active. That something big happened. He did hear that one of the main noble families in Duscur went silent and suddenly cut ties with many merchants in Fodlan. Thankfully his friend and fellow mercenary/merchant, Anna, was the one that told him that information. It will take at least 4 months to reach Duscur, with passing through Faerghus also. Being in the Kingdom especially the moment he needed to be careful. Jeralt looked over to his daughter who was chatting with Jorah and smiled sadly.

"I wish you could see your daughter Rosa. She reminds me of you."

- 4 months later: Garland Moon: June: The Coast of Duscur -

With the wagon loaded after getting the wheels fixed, they had finally arrived to Duscur. It was at the northern coast, west from Sreng, just over the mountains that separated Keilman from the Kingdom. There were gates to enter the place. From what she remembered; the place had many scattered towns that each specialize in one trade. Her father's job was to secure a trading route that had recently been invaded by bandits. Pretty much to take them out. One thing did not change though. The damn cold weather!!

"I swear I can never get used to the cold. Achoo!!" Arisa sneezed despite wearing warm clothing.

The girl hugged her cloak closer to herself and Ares just shrugged. He honestly didn't feel cold, it was the same with her father. Well that's because both are former Kingdom Knights.

"Damn you both." Arisa, Jorah, Temes and Yofos all thought as they looked over to the two perfectly fine mercenaries.

"We're getting near Duscur. I think you'll like it. I haven't been there in years." Jeralt said as the girl nodded.
"Chirp!!" Feh said and flapped its wings proudly, messing up Arisa's hair.

"You're lucky have my hair in a ponytail." She said.

Everyone still thinks she looked funny with Feh perched on her head. Arisa watched as the guard at the country borders were handed a metal card with a what seemed like the symbol of the Church of Serios. From what she learned, it was required for merchants and mercenaries to have these to be able to travel outside of Fodlan and back. It was like a passport. What she didn't know what that her father was going under a different name to use it. The guard approved and allow them to cross the gates. The girl looked out the wagon and her eyes sparkled at the amazing sight.

"Only if Sothis could see this but she's asleep." She thought.

Indeed, the goddess was asleep. The village they were in was lively and filled with many stalls of unknown things. Strange food, different clothing, ooohhh!! So many things! Arisa remembered that the people of Duscur practice polytheism and worship a pantheon of different gods. So, she wasn't surprised seeing different statues of gods being sold in stalls. Her eyes went wide when she spotted a few familiar instruments being sold.

"The rumors of this country having rich materials is true." She whispered.

"This town in particular specializes in trading spices and glass." Yofos said since he heard her whisper.

The people of Duscur have dark tan skin and silver color hair. She did notice some had different colored hair because of what seemed like a natural plant extract used as a hair dye. The people were welcoming and kind. Some waved as the wagon went through the streets. She saw children running around happily. The clothing worn was similar to those Fodlan but also a mixture of different cultures that she remembers from Earth.

"It's amazing....." she smiled sadly.

How could anyone destroy such a beautiful place? She closed her eyes and thought. If only the Tragedy of Duscur never occurred. She knew such a wish was impossible and was not looking forward to when the time comes. If she could...at least save or cause one difference during that time....

"Mommy look at the owl!"

The voice of a child made her snap out of it and turned towards the direction the sound came from. Near a well, she saw a young boy who looked familiar and his mother. The boy was pointing at her, well, more towards Feh.

"Stop that sweet!" The mother said and she saw the pout.

The group chuckled at this and Arisa lightly tapped Feh, who chirped.

"Feh. go." Arisa and Feh flew to the little boy and landed on his head.
The boy giggled as did the mother and then Feh returned to her.

"Thank you!!" The boy waved and she waved back.

"That was amazing wasn't it Dedue?" The mother said, Arisa's eyes went wide when she heard that and turned back to see the mother and her son but the two were already walking away with a wooden bucket filled with water.

The boy was happily talking and grinning.

"Dedue....." she muttered to herself.

"Already having fun kiddo?" Jeralt chuckled and the girl put on a grin.

"Yup!!" She said.

"We'll be staying for a week, so I'll let you explore around. Just don't go crazy." Jeralt said.

"No promises!" Was Arisa's response.

"Come on Lady Byleth!!" Ares said.

"Give us a break please!!" Yofos partly choked.

"I don't want to see another dead snake!" Temes said.

Jorah just groans.

"Hey!!" She turned to them and glared.

"Keep complaining I can guarantee you all will find not just a snake but spiders in your pillows except dad!" She said.

The waves of sorrow fell on the men and Jeralt burst out laughing.

- 3 days Later -

"So that's the news!! Seriously Jeralt!!! I'm angry!! The fact that the noble family of this town completely cut ties with so many merchants is infuriating!!! You can't just do that!!" A young woman with dark pink colored hair tied in a side ponytail, brown clothing with a strange symbol on it and a sword on her waist. She wore a brown gold skirt and dark brown tights with sandals.

"I know how you feel Anna, but we can't do much. Whatever is going on must be the reason." Jeralt said.

The woman known as Anna sighed and nodded.

"I know but there have been rumors going on." She said and the man leaned in a bit closer to hear.

"First off, many of the common folk here are really worried. The noble family here are said to often come to town to check on the people and help them out. They are well respected and loved by the people. Not to mention that the Elder of this town is also part of the family and has not been
seen. It has been 3 months since the noble family has come to town. Especially their daughter who is friends with many of the children here." Anna said as she crossed her arms.

"That is troublesome. I'll ask a bit around and see if I can find anything else. Will you be staying here for a while?" He said and Anna shook her head.

"Honestly I was hoping I could tag along with you for a while. The merchants of Duscur have been very weary and I don't exactly want to have a target on my back. Besides, you'll be taking out the bandits from that trading route soon." She said with a smile.

"Great..." Jeralt sighs, "Alright. I don't mind. Might as well introduce you to the team I brought with me. Also, I think y------!!" The man didn't get to finish his sentence because he heard screaming and saw a group of kids running away laughing and with them was his daughter.

"You damn kids!!! Come back here!!" One of the vendors yelled out covered in chicken feathers and a few chickens were running.

"We're sorry!!" Byleth yelled out and the Duscurian children laughed as they ran.

Anna just chuckled and Jeralt let go of a long sigh.

"So that's your daughter huh? Got to admit, she's fast." She said as she patted her friend's shoulder.

He saw his daughter ran towards him and grinned. Feh was on her shoulder.

"Care to explain what happened?" Jeralt said.

"One of the kid's cats got inside a chicken pen and I offered to help get out. Unfortunately, the pen was old and broke down, releasing the army of chickens." She said and got a flick on her forehead but by Anna.

The girl's eyes went wide when she saw her.

"Hey there kid!! So, you're Jeralt's daughter. You look a lot like Rosa." She smiled.

"Anna." Jeralt said and the woman raised an eyebrow.

"So, you haven't told her...." Anna muttered.

"Rosa?" Byleth said and looked over to her father, confused.

Jeralt sighed.

"I suppose you are age to know a few things. Rose is your mother's name. She loved running around and causing trouble at times, like you." Jeralt said.

Arisa blinked.

"This is the first time you tell me about mom! I'm glad to learn something about her!! Thank you, papa!" She said.

Jeralt smiled softly and ruffled her hair. Anna couldn't help but smile seeing the exchange. It was a rare sight seeing Jeralt smile, and by the exchange alone, she could tell he was truly proud of his daughter.
"Captain!! We got trouble!!"

The three turned when they saw Yofos running towards them.

"What's wrong?" Jeralt said as the two adults stood up.

"Pirates!!! They are trying to enter the docks!! The other three are currently fighting them off!!" Yofos report.

"Well, don't just stand there, let's go!!" Anna said and the three headed over to the docks.

[-----]

"ARRGHHH!!"

Truly she did look like an Ashen Demon as she cut down the pirates. Many of the merchants that were at the docks were evacuated along with the citizens that were there. Those that were fighting were experienced warriors of Duscur.

"Ha!!" One Duscur man yelled as he punched one of the pirates into the water.

Anna held her axe as she sliced through enemies. Her happy face was replaced with one of anger and seriousness as she jumped and cut off the heads of enemies clean.

"Enemies in the sky!!" A woman yelled and they saw 4 wyvern Riders.

"Tch!" Ares said and switched from his Woa Do to an iron bow.

He dipped his arrows in a small bottle with a black liquid and turned them on. It was oil and the arrows were on fire.

"Burn down!" He yelled and fired four arrows.

The wyvern riders screamed as the arrows pierced them and set them on fire. They screamed and fell off their wyrens to the ocean, dead.

"AAAAWWWHOOOOOOO!!" Arisa yelled out a primal cry, gaining the attention of the wyrens.

"Got to thank Ili for teaching me that one!" She said and ran towards one of wyrens that landed.

She climbed onto it's back and pulled it's reins.

"Skkkkkkaaaaaa!!" She let out another primal yell and it was the command to follow her.

Seems the wyrens understood as she rode it up high and fired arrows to the pirates. Anna was impressed as she saw the girl command the four wyrens.
"Look out!!" She heard a tells and screamed as a sword came down at her.

Blood splattered as the woman dropped to the ground, the giant gash going over her chest to her stomach. The life began to leave her eyes in the pool of blood.

"ANNA!!" Arisa yelled and activated time pulse.

She wasn't about to let a death happen on her watch! Her limit as a child is at most 3-time pulses. Her chest ached as she activated it and watched as time reversed.

"Look out!!" The scene played again but this time Yofos caught on quickly and sliced the pirate's arm down before it came down on Anna.

"Thanks!!" She grinned and turned back to fighting.

Arisa let go a sigh of relief as she saw the last of the pirates be taken down and did the primal howl of follow and land. She mentally thanked Ili for also teaching her how to ride wyrens, but also her calls. Ili's family was actually well known for training wyrens.

"Everyone alright?" Jeralt said as his daughter landed and ran up to them.

"Yeah. But pirates shouldn't have been able to get on the docks!!! The security is always tight!! How was this even possible?!" Anna said.

Arisa was getting a bad feeling as she was looking around. Now that she noticed, many of the town’s folks have been very reserved. As her father's team and Anna went to treat any of the injured, she walked up to a Duscur sailor, who looked angry but not towards her.

"Sir?" She said and the man turned to her and sighed.

"What's going on? I've heard that the docks are usually secured. If that is true..then why did pirates manage to get in?" She said and the man sighed.

"We don't know. The Amaryllis family would never let this happen. We're all worried about what is going on." He said.

She knew he must be referring to the noble family that oversees this town. The girl looked around once more and towards the ocean.

"Just what is going on?" She muttered.

Another 2 days passed, and it was time to leave Duscur. Anna will be going with them since it has been awhile that she hasn't spoken to everyone in Jeralt's company and wanted to see how they were doing. Arisa looked over to the town and was worried.

"You seem troubled. What is on your mind?" Sothis appeared before her as the girl board the back of the wagon.

"Despite the good deals we got plus the reward for getting rid of those bandits, bonus because we now have 4 more wyrens added, I still feel something isn't right. With the information we got, the noble family should be taking care of this town. I'm just glad Dedue isn't part of this town but one that's 2 days away. His mother and him came to this one to buy a few things." Arisa said.
"Dedue? That was the name of the child who Feh was playing with right?" Sothis said and Feh chirped.

"Yes. I did talk to him a bit and learned he was friends with the daughter of the nobles here. They treat everyone as equals except the younger brother of the Lord. He is hated by many." Arisa said and Sothis looked at her worried.

"I understand. For now, let us just hope that everything is alright. It is night after all, and your father and the rest are leaving." She said.

Indeed, the cart began to move, and the girl sighed.

"I hope so Sothis. I hope so."

- In a different location: Midnight -

"Grrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrr...rrraaahhh!!!"

With teeth baring to people like a feral beast, a young girl growled as she was on all fours, with a dagger in her hands. She was covered in blood as she had just broken out of the cell, she was held captive in. Her body was covered in cuts and bandages, but she didn't care. She wanted to leave, and she was getting out now.

"Boss, we can't get near her!!" A man yelled out to his leader, who gritted his teeth.

"Capture her!!! She has the necklace that has the entire family fortune!!" Their leader yelled and his men charged at her.

"RRAAAHHHH!!" She snarled, cut them down like wood and bolted out the glass window she managed to break.

"Ow!!" She yelled out as she held tightly onto her purse she managed to get back.

She hissed as she rolled down the grass hill and managed to stop herself from hitting a rock by digging her hand to the ground.

"Hhrhrrrrr..." she growled like a feral cat let go.

She needs to run.

"Follow us!!"

"Hurry!!"
"Gogogogogogogo!!"

The whispers of the shadows of the night said and she listened as she began to run down the hill. Barefoot she was and it hurt, but she didn't care. She would not let anyone, especially that bastard get their hands on her. The shadows kept whispering, telling her which direction to go. She could barely hear the voices of those commanded to go after her.

"Crrri!! Criiiii!!"  

She spotted a familiar orange coat of fur and smiled.  

"Puka!!! Let's go!!" She yelled out to the fox that did it's laugh and followed her.

"Follow the road!!"  

The shadows said. She ran and her hood nearly fell off, but she managed to keep it from doing that by tightening the strings. She gritted her teeth as she ran and finally let her first tears fall.  

"Criiiii...." the fox whimpered, and she smiled to it sadly.  

"We'll...come back one day.... that’s a promise." She said and the two continued to run.  

20 more minutes passed, and she could hear the waves of the coast. She smiled but the relief was short lived.  

"Found her!!"  

She gasped and her fox hissed. Both began running and she could hear the voices of the shadows begin to become angry. They were becoming one with her emotions. She is angry. No, enraged was the word to describe every single emotion inside her right this moment.

Run.

Run.
Don't stop.

Don't look back.

How could they...?

How dare they?!

The voices of the shadows all yelled together as she ran. She ran as fast as her feet could take her. Panting and trying to get air into her lungs. Her silver light pink pigmented colored hair was covered by her hood but made a quick turn to the men running, beginning to mumble. She had to get away from those who wanted her dead. She would not let them get their hands on her!!

"Sink...sink...fall..." she chanted and heard a few of them scream.

"Come back here!!" They yelled despite the pain she made them go through.

She bolted again and this time towards the woods. Her fox barked for her to follow him and she did just that. She held tightly onto the necklace she had. It contained her entire family fortune that was left to her. For that reason, those men who were paid to kill and take the necklace. What they didn't count on was her awaking her power.

Run Amir!!

She was lost but she could tell they were on her trail.

"Yeehehehehe!!" Puka laughed and he ran towards an unknown area of the road.

"Where, where, where.....?!" She mentally screamed, she could tell they were getting closer.

Then she spotted it. A wagon filled with people. Seems they were leaving Duscur.

"There she is!" She heard and her eyes went wide in fear.

She didn't have time! She bolted towards the wagon and carefully made sure not to make a sound. She found the back entrance and slowly snuck in. She became stiff once she saw the men appeared but...

"What's going on?"
"Who are you?"

"You better not be thieves."

She held her breath, her fox hid underneath the wagon. She nearly screamed when she felt a hand on her shoulder, till the moon light revealed a kind yet worried smile.

"Shhhh....." young girl with forest green with brown colored hair, light green eyes, gently place her index finger on her lips and smiled.

She simply pointed to a crack and motioned to watch. Indeed, that was the best choice. She even noticed the owl on the girl.

"Who are you men? We aren't looking for trouble. We're already leaving Duscur." Jeralt said and Anna oh so casually made the tip of her axe shine to show how sharp it was.

The men gulped seeing how big the man was, not to mention they were also outnumbered if they tried to pick a fight. Heck, they immediately recognized Anna because she had beaten them to a pulp before. They tried to scam her, and that situation went south.

"No no-good sir. We're just looking for a fox that escaped us. Sorry for the trouble." One said nervously.

"Fox huh? You guys might want to head towards the north side of the forest. Shouldn't have gotten too far." Jorah said as he pointed to the opposite direction.

Truthfully, he noticed the infant fox hiding underneath the wagon. Even the wyrens they had hissed at the men. They definitely weren't about to mess with these people.

“I see!! Thank you!” They quickly left with their tails between their legs.

"Get the hell out of here before I change my mind really leave you without legs for trying to scam me!!" Anna yelled as those men screamed.

Amir sighed in relief and looked over to the girl who saved her. The girl smiled.

"Thank you." She mumbled, finally relaxing a bit.

"No worries. I don't think you're safe staying here. I think it's better you come with us." The green haired girl said.

"I don't even know you." Amir said with a blunt tone.

"Yeah, but would you rather stay and be killed, or leave Duscur and be safe?" She said back.

Her eye twitched.

"Fine." She sighed frustrated but nodded.

"I'm Arisa Byleth. But you can call me Arisa. And this Feh. My snowy owl." She pointed to the show owl on her head.
"Chirp chirp!!" It said.

The scent of iron finally hit Arisa's nose and her eyes went wide when she noticed the bloody mess the girl was.

"You're hurt!!" Arisa said a bit too loudly and Amir's eyes went wide in horror.

"Byleth, is everything alright?"

Before Arisa had the chance to hide the girl, Jeralt had looked in and his eye went wide.

"Jeralt, what's wro-----ooohhhh." Anna said when she saw the other girl.

Before he could say anything, Arisa spoke.

"Please!! She needs to come with us!! Those men were chasing after her and will kill her if they find her!" Arisa said.

The others looked at each other worried and Yofos spoke.

"I'm sorry boss but I have to agree. I think it's better if the girl comes with us." He said.

"Are you crazy man?! We'll be dead meat if they catch us trying to smuggle a citizen of Duscur out to Fodlan!!" Ares said.

The men began to begin arguing with themselves till Anna told them to shut up.

"Arisa, will you take responsibility?" Jeralt looked at his daughter.

Arisa nodded.

"Of course, I will. I'm not about to leave a defenseless person behind. That goes against my beliefs as a mercenary." She stated boldly.

Jeralt chuckled and nodded.

"Alright then." He said and turned to the other girl.

"What's your name kid?" He asked.

The girl was hesitant but spoke.

"It's Amir...Amir Volgani...Amaryllis." Amir spoke softly.

"Kiiiiheheheheh!!" That's when the fox finally made its appearance, which slightly scared Anna because of its sudden laugh.

"And that's Puka...my friend.." Amir smiled faintly.

"Well then Amir, welcome aboard." Arisa grinned and stretched out her hand to shake.

Amir stared at it but nodded and shook her hand.
"Thank you. I'm in your debt." She said and smiled kindly.

"For now, kid, let's get you treated." Anna said as she jumped in and closed the back.

"We'll keep an eye out in case those maggots come back." Jeralt said and Anna gave him a thumbs up through the curtain.

"Byleth, help me too. Amir, could you remove your cloak please?" Anna said and Amir nodded.

She still hissed since she was in pain. Now that she thought about it, all the pain from her wounds were now coming to her. The girl dropped to her knees and began crying softly. Arisa was worried and gently hugged the girl.

"It's alright. You're safe. Let it all out." She said and Amir did just that.

She began crying loudly and buried her face in Arisa's chest. The others outside looked over to Jeralt who sighed and shook his head.

"Amaryllis....that's the last name of the noble family of this town in Duscur. Just by looking at the girl, it's safe to say...she the lone survivor." Jeralt said.

"We're taking her in, right?" Temes said.

"Of course, we are you idiot! Who the hell in their right mind leaves a kid like that?" Ares said.

"Heartless people, that's who." Jorah said.

"Alright, enough. I think the girl has been through enough. Luckily the second wagon we bought is for the wyrens since they can't stand the cold. We'll have Anna use an extra protection spell around it." Jeralt said and others nodded.

The rest was a long night back to the gates.

- 3 days later -

"Alright. You're clear." The guard said as he finished checking the wyvern cart and they left.

For safety measures, they waited at least three days till it was clear for Amir to come out. The young Duscur girl was wearing a black dress that Arisa let her borrow. A few modifications had to be made on it because it was a bit too tight for the girl. Currently, it was morning and they were passing through a snowy field. Amir was silent as she was seated next to one of the wyrens that was asleep. A warm ball of light floated inside the wagon to keep it warm. On Amir's lap, was the fox named Puka. Anna was at the other wagon speaking with Jeralt and the others of the girl's situation. The girl was almost fully recovered from her injuries thanks to Anna but also Arisa.

"So, what's your name?" Arisa said, hoping to start some small talk with the girl.

Amir just gave her a side glance and spoke in a monotone voice.
"Like I said...Amir Volgani Amaryllis. And this is Puka, a Sierra Duscur Fox." Amir said as she petted Puka, who purred.

"Can I ask why were those men chasing you? You got to have a reason why. I don't think it's simply because you stole something," Arisa began.

Amir just glanced to her.

"Money. They want money." Amir said, her tone becoming a bit bitter.

"I see.... then why were you covered in blood and injured?" Arisa said.

Arisa was pushing it on purpose. She needed answers. Amir was getting irritated by these questions that should be obvious but growled her answer.

"Those men killed my family. My uncle hired them. He was after the family fortune and the strange power I possess. Happy with my answer?" The girl growled through her teeth.

Arisa put her arms in defense up and scooted a bit closer to the girl.

"Are you after revenge?" She said and Amir's eyes went wide.

"N-No. That goes against my grandmother's teachings. As much as I wish for him to pay. I can't go back. Not as I am now..." Ymir muttered softly.

Arisa was silent as she waited a few seconds speak before she spoke again.

"Then, would you like to work in my dad's company?" Arisa said.

"I-I don't mind." Amir suddenly became shy, which Arisa thought was cute but also completely unexpected.

The girl did save her after all. She helps a complete stranger. Not to mention that they literally helped her leave her country.

"You saved me, without even knowing who I am...so....please!!" She suddenly bowed, which scared Arisa and Puka jumped on top of a wyvern by the sudden commotion.

"Everything alright?" Jeralt asked as Anna was holding back her giggles.

"Let me serve you Byleth!! No...Lady Arisa Byleth!!" She yelled.

There was an awkward silence and Arisa burst out laughing. She was not expecting that at all!!! First, the girl is cold and suddenly she's a complete cute mess?! Oh, her sides were hurting from laughing hard.

"Chiiirrp!!" Feh pecked at her repeatedly and the girl screeched while the fox laughed.

"Ow!! Okay I get it! I get it!!" She said and sat normally.

"Ummm..." Amir's ears had turned red and she was shyly fiddling with her fingers.

"Sorry sorry about. But, why me? True, I managed to save your life, but I don't think you need to serve me. We're equals, regardless of status. Besides, aren't you a noble? " Arisa said as she fixed
her messed up hair.

"Not anymore...I think it would be better to remain like that." Amir smiled kindly and removed her hood, revealing her face. She was a dark skin girl with light pink pigmented silver colored shoulder length hair, and pink colored eyes.

She also wore the same earrings Dedue wore but on both ears.

"Oh, my goodness she's cute!! She reminds me of a mini Kahlua Shuzen minus the blonde hair and 3-year-old mentality." Arisa inwardly squealed.

"Cough!! But I could make an exception for you." She said and Amir's eyes sparkled like Christmas lights.

"By any chance are you good at hunting?" She asked.

"I am trained in the sword and also how to be merchant. I'm good at hunting too!" Amir grinned.

From the outside of the wagon. Jeralt and the rest couldn't help but chuckle listening to conversation.

"Looks like she'll fit right in!! But hearing she knows the way of a merchant, a possible future competition." Anna said and the men groan but laugh a bit.

"Hey, you two, we're going to be passing through the Tailtean Plains. We'll be getting medical supplies there and staying for a month. Amir, I think this will be a good time for you to get to know everyone. Also, since you will be staying with us from now on, a good opportunity to teach you what it means to be a mercenary." Jeralt said.

"Agree!" Arisa said.

"Plus, I owe dad for this.... I’ll be the one to teach her." She sighs.

"The Tailtean Plains huh? I remember its territory in the Kingdom. Part of me hopes I run into Dimitri to see how he is doing, another part of me hopes we don't. But....maybe...sigh..what am I thinking....." Arisa thought and sat down.

Her and Amir began talking, finding they had similar interests. Though Amir was more of a tomboy who loved being in the wild and Arisa was more feminine type, the two did like many of the same things. She also learned that the Duscurian girl was one year older than her. Meaning she is 7 years old.

Drats.

Arisa was really hoping she be the big sister!!

- Location: Unknown-
Far underground, into the unknown, a man with skin pale as a corpse, black eyes, a large head, purplish pale hair and wore strange black clothing, stared in amazement at the field of haunting blue colored ice that was collected again.

"Seems my daughter had a tantrum today. To unleash this much is becoming more and more frequent, however; it's unsettling." He heard a female voice and did not need to turn as he heard the sounds of heels click on the stone floor as their owner approached.

"You would be mostly be joyful with this amount of power being released Cornelia." The old man said as the woman stood next to him with a frown.

Strange devices were connected to the ice and many magicians circled around it.

"Solon, this is a dangerous game to call forth the one that sleeps in this ice." Cornelia said.

She was feeling that pressure again at the back of her neck. Solon merely chuckled.

"We shall see. To call forth the user of this Lost Crest, will bring us closer to our dream." He said and turned to mage.

"Begin the ritual!!" He said.

The mages nodded as one of them threw into the field a corpse.

The magician began to chant a strange yet eerie language. The symbols written on the floor began to glow, the corpse burst to blue flames, turning to ashes. The haunting colored ice began to glow and....

"Aaaaaaaahhh........aaaaaahhh....AAAAAAAAAAAAHHHHHHHHH!!!!!"

And inhuman cry began to fill the room as the ritual continues. Solon smirked as the ice glowed and began to form the silhouette of a woman that floated in the center of the magic circle. The magicians stopped their chanting and gasped in shock once they saw.

"I-It was a success!!!!" Cornelia said till she saw Solon narrows his eyes.

"No. Something isn't right." He said and that's when Cornelia felt the same pressure this time at the back of her neck once more.

The silhouette curled itself to a ball then stretched out, screaming its inhumane cry.

"HUMANS!!! HUMANS!!! BEGONE!!" It roared, it's form cracking as it cackled madly.

"Prepare the barrier!!" Cornelia ordered and the magicians immediately began chanting.

Black colored chains came from the ground as they wrapped around the silhouette’s wrist and ankles.

"La, la!!! La,la!!! LalalalalallalalAaaaaassalsjshamlala!!!" It roared.
"THE AGONY!!! THE PAIN!!!!" Solon watched void of emotions as the silhouette laughed madly.

Cornelia was very unsettled. To think this thing exists inside.....she shook her head.

"YOU!! ALL!!! TTAAAAAAAAHHHHTTTTOOOOOOOOORRRRRSSS!!" It roared one last time before its form shattered to dust.

The magicians and others fell to their knees, panting, in pain. The spikes of ice had turned to dust, nothing was left.

"So, this ritual was a failure also. "She" is rejecting our offer to settle her goal with the Fell Star." Solon said and turned to walk away.

"If she refuses to return, what can be done?" Cornelia said.

Solon stopped and gave her a side glance.

"The one that bares the lost Crest holds the answer. That girl may become her host someday soon. Might as well begin the preparations." Solon said.

Cornelia was silent but nodded.

"My husband hid far too many secrets of that Crest. Seems it is time for it to all come to light." She smirked.

Unknown to them, back at Cornelia's mansion, Ymir was awake when she should be asleep. But it wasn't normal. The girl was staring to her mirror that was across her bed with a frightening smile. The color of her eyes had turned red and her pupils to a strange symbol.

"Everything is a liar!!"

(Chapter 10: Duscur Dawn: Part 2: Cries of Shadows: End)

[ ------ ]

And here we have one of my main OC'S, Amir!!! I have been working on her and my other main oc for quite some time. In my anime one shots book, I have two prototype chapters of this book there. I wanted to see how things turned out and eventually did decided to turn those prototype chapters to an actual story. I'll see if I can draw the child versions of Arisa/Byleth, Amir and Ymir so you guys can see how they look like.

Now, why did I choose to add Anna? With the recent release with the 3rd DLC of the game, Anna is a recruitable character. Also, during one of her conversations with Byleth after....Jeralt's death, she says she had known him before she met her, meaning they were
friends. Yeah, that conversion made me cry. Also, her profile states she is 35 years old. (What the hell Nintendo?) Anyhow, she unfortunately doesn't have support conversations, nor can you romance her, so I know how those that have her as their waifu are in pain. Anyhow, here in this time, I did the math and Anna is 21 years old when she meets Arisa/Byleth. Anna will have support conversations in this story.

The next two chapters will also show the villain side of Cornelia and some of the goals Those Who Slither in the Dark are going to do. Ymir is my third main OC and will play a key role when our Protagonist meets Claude and Lysithea in like 5-6 chapters.
"Papa, papa!!" With her pink pastel orange hair tied in two pigtails, the girl ran happily into her father's workshop.

The smell of iron, metals, filled her nostrils and it was a scent she liked. The sounds of hammers banging down on molten hot metal as it was being shaped to something new. Different tools hung around the walls; each one had a role. The girl grinned as she moved swiftly in the overalls she wore with a plain red shirt. She had snuck into town to see her father work. Though he was a noble and didn't need to, he still loved working with the townsfolk and loved helping around. Especially in the blacksmith two shops away from a bookstore her uncle owned. Many of the shop workers smiled as they saw the girl pick up a hammer and run to man with dark spiky blue hair and goatee, wore black overalls with a blue shirt and thick black boots. He currently was wearing his reading glasses as he was writing down measurements on a piece of paper.

"Papa!!" He turned to the direction if the familiar voice and...

"OOOOFFF!!" She rammed her head at his stomach, knocking the air out of him.

Many laughed at the sight as the man held his stomach and laughed a bit.

"Morning [-----------]!! Snuck out of the house again?" Her father said and the girl grinned.

"Yup!! Mama is busy today so I'm staying here!" She stated proudly as she showed the hammer in her hand.

"Hmm," he picked her up and sat her on one of the benches, "I don't think you're ready for making a dagger just yet. But," he picked up a brick size block of wood and handed it to her. "Why not practice carving first? I promise when you're older, I'll teach you how to use the forgery. Alright?" He said and she pouted.

Her gray eyes narrowed as she crossed her arms.

"But I want to learn now!! I want to use a scythe like you do papa!!" She said.

Her father laughed a bit nervously hearing this as he lightly touched the strange necklace on his neck. He sighed and bent down a bit, patting her head.

"I know my little Snowflake, but you have to understand my scythe isn't exactly easy to use." He said as she showed her his necklace.

"When you're older, I'll teach you how to use it. And one day, this relic will belong to you. Until then, you got to start slowly. One step at a time. Like that saying, slow and steady wins the race." He said and she sighed.

"Yes papa...I'll take my time." She said.

"Good. Now go visit your Uncle Rensen. He got a new collection of books about how to use a lance." He said and her eyes sparkled.
"Okay!! And take care of Papa!!" She said and waved goodbye as she ran out of the shop.

The man could not help but smile as he saw his daughter run but it suddenly turned to a frown as he heard one of his workers cough violently.

"Careful there." He quickly ran over to them and helped them sit down.

One of the other workers brought water.

"Boss, the plague is spreading. Thankfully it hasn't affected us here in town but others around Faerghus is a different story." The worker said and he sighed.

"I know....and I don't have much time either. Considering how my wife and I aren't getting along lately." He said.

- Present Time: Imperial Year 1167: June -

"Oooohhhhhhhhhhh......" She groans into her pillow as the sunlight entered her room.

Despite being summer in Faerghus, the night became cold as winter and it would make her sleepy. Though the cold never bothered her anyway, lately it has. A lot. Her body ached from the grueling magic training she has been going through, not to mention she hasn't been able to sleep well at all. Add that the amount if stress and anxiety she has been having, trying to satisfy her mother, everything was just....it all just felt so slow. Luckily, today her mother would not be home because she had to leave for a job. The problem was, the damn servants of this house. Thankfully, she had her own little secret passageway only she knows about. Her father was the Lord of this town before he passed away when she was three years old. Ymir forced herself up and climbed off her bed. Her hair was a complete mess and she looked like she risen out of a well. The girl walked to her bathroom and turned the water to fill the tub. While waiting for it to fill, she removed her clothing, showing the bruises and few scars she had. She grabbed a small jar filled with dried lemon zest, lavender and mint leaves, and threw a handful into the water. This should help her relax a bit. She also took out the healing potion she snatched from her mother's medical room and poured it in the water, making glow a light blue. With that done, she gently went in and sighed in blush as she snuck herself into the warm water. The potion was already working, and she could see her injuries healing till they were gone. Indeed, this was her blissful time. Also, that whisper was not bother her. It was strange.

- 20 minutes later: Dining room -

As usual, she sat eating her breakfast alone. She ate slowly as she looked around. The only ones in the room were the two maids who were silent with eyes closed. The girl sighed and decided to speak.

"How long will mother be gone?" She asked and one maid spoke.

"Lady Cornelia will be returning in three days from her job at the capital. For now, you will be
going through your studies till she returns." She said.

"Your lesson plans for today are history, dance, music, and military tactics. You are to remain in your room to study these." The other maid said.

Ymir sighed and thanked them. The two just grunted. Well excuse me! The girl finished her meal and headed back to her room, locking the door, just in case someone chose to come in. Not that anyone ever came to check on her anyway. She went to bed, pulled out her purse, picked in a notebook, pens, and a pouch of money, nodding to herself. Ymir then turned walked to her bathroom and lightly tapped the shelf near the window. It creaked and opened, revealing a doorway that brought a smile to her face. Escaping to town was easy.

- 1 hour Later: Town -

Dressed in her usual gray dress, a happy tune she hummed, Ymir walked out of the woods and to the town. The scents of food, wood, and many other things made her grin.

She looked forward to seeing her Uncle again since it has been two weeks since she had spoken to him. She walked to a nice-looking building that had a fire lamp hanging outside. Unfortunately, it was still closed so she decided to go to the next building that was 3 shops away. As she walked there, she bought herself a warm cream puff and happily ate it as she arrived. The building was abandoned but only she knew how to get in. She walked towards the back and took out a special keep. Putting it into the lock of the back door, she opened it and went in. She closed the door and sighed as she looked around the familiar place. The forgery was empty and only ash was in it. It seems to not have been used in years. The shelves with boxes of metals were covered in dust. Tools on the wall have fallen on the floor. Different stations were empty. The shop once filled with life, was alone. She sighed and put down her bag on a table that was not covered in dust. She walked to strange little black empty cage and smiled softly.

"(Wakey wakey wide awakey.)" She spoke in a strange language that many would look at her like she is crazy.

To others, it sounded like gibberish, but to a certain few, it was an ancient language said to have been lost in time. A small little flicker appeared inside and heard a giggle come from it.

"(It's been so long lass!!!! Glad to see you back!)" The flicker grew a bit bigger and turned to a humanoid miniature figure. Its skin was color read, with hair in a bun and a dress of Flames. Its feet were paws and it smiled to her.

"(It has, Firo. I snuck out. Think you can help me make a blade?)" Ymir said.

The fire Sprite named Firo grinned as she flew out of the cage turned on the forgery. Ymir smiled as she saw the forgery light up. Life was brought back to it, the place seemed more alive. The girl ran to the next-door room and quickly changed out of her dress to overalls and a blue shirt. She put her lose hair up to bun and wore goggles on her head. She had been secretly practicing forging blades with small basics her father taught her, she wanted to forge her own dagger. The girl walked out and sent a thumbs up to Firo, who was eating the piece of bread that she had brought. It was her offering to it.
The girl walked to box that had brass nuggets. She picked out 5 of them and put them into the metal bowl used specifically for metaling metal. The girl put on her goggles as she used long metal tongs to put it in the fire. Waiting for the metal to melt, the girl went to get the cast used to turn it to a block. From there, she will begin to draw out how she wanted to shape her blade. In Faerghus, blades are considered tools of destiny. As a way to cut a path to a better future. She sighed as she placed the cast down and went to the desk to draw her dagger. Even if she had such a blade, cutting her own path was not easy. She was the heir to her home, House--- House.....now that she thought about it....what is the name of her House? She paused as she put her charcoal pencil down and stared at the fire where Firo was happy humming a tune.

"What..did dad say was my last name again....?" Ymir muttered and closed her eyes to think.

"The name mom gave me is Ymir....but the name my dad gave me is [-------]....my middle name is Xiang.......but....last name is.....wait...why can't I remember?" She thought and grumbled.

Maybe she should ask Sylvain or Glenn the next time she goes to visit them. She needs to punch Miklan when her mother isn't looking. Yeah, she should definitely do that.

"(Hey Ymir!!! The brass is ready!)" Firo said and that made her snap out of it.

She grabbed the thick welding gloves that were hung on the wall and put them on. With that, she grabbed the metal tongs and began to carefully pull out the bowl with the molten brass. She was using a bit of magic to increase her strength but also keep herself cool. Despite only being 3 years old, Ymir was a talented girl. The downside was the grueling training she goes through by Cornelia.

"(Careful now.)" Firo said as she poured the molten brass into the cast to shape it to brick.

Ymir let go of a sigh as she waited a few minutes for it to stop bubbling then used her ice magic to cool it down. Grabbing another metal pole, she stared at it nodded.

- 3 hours later -

"(Not bad. But you need more work. Why not ask your uncle?)" Firo said to Ymir as she was sitting down, looking at the dagger she forged.

She had a scowl on her face looking at it. The dagger had a warp, it wasn't straight, there were chips on the end, showing she put it into the oil too fast. Yeah, she was disappointed with it. She threw it at the wall where it shared to pieces. There multiple pieces of broken metal on the floor. Those were her past trials.

"(I can't.....not as I am now....I don't want to cause trouble for him...)" she muttered as she just let go of another disappointed sigh, closing her eyes.

Then why not just make him listen to you?

Instantly her eyes shot open and frantically began to look around.
"No, no, no, no!!" She dug her fingers into her hair, scared.

"You don't exist!! You don't exist!!" She began to say all of a sudden.

\[Haha~ I exist. You have to stop denying me [---------] You can't run away from me forever.\]

"YOU DON'T EXIST!!" The girl suddenly yelled, catching Firo a little bit off guard but he knew what the girl was going through.

After all, her father went through the same thing. Ymir's and her father's Crest were a bit on the special case. It wasn't exactly normal like the rest of the Crest. This one...you had to be extra careful with it. One wrong move and it would trigger a disaster. Ymir took deep breaths as she stood up and went to the back room to change into her original clothing. Once she made sure she put everything back in its place, plus taking the small little black cage Firo lives in, she left the building, locked the door, and headed to the bookstore where her uncle was. She needs to take her mind off that voice.

- Near the Road: 2 Days Away -

"Hyyaaa!!"

"Haa!!"

The sounds of wooden swords clashing and the yells and grunts of those practicing, Arisa was getting massacred in the practice spar she was having with Amir. The Duscurian girl held two wooden swords like a bushido samurai, if she had to put it in better terms, similar to the dual wielding blade techniques of Minamoto Musashi. The girl twisted her body to the right to dodge Arisa's thrust. Jeralt was surprised this sword style technique. Arisa suddenly screeched when Amir suddenly went in a spread-out leg position and kicked her off her feet.

"Arrghh!!" Arisa said as she landed on her back and just stayed on the ground, arms and legs stretched out, panting.

"Sword level training with her is way past Dad's training level...." she thought as Amir loomed over her with a blank look.

"That all you got? Your posture isn't straight, your back is hunching! Your hair needs to be tied!" Amir said, looked down at her friend while gently tapping on of her wooden swords on her back.

"Hahahaha!!! Losing so badly!! I never seen you so beat down!!" Sothis laughed as she sat on a barrel, watching the sparring exchange.

"No fair!! You been gone for two weeks and till now you appear when I'm getting murdered in
It has been two weeks since they have departed from Duscur. Amir was able to open up thanks to everyone in the group. Especially with Anna because the two would mostly be discussing different trading routes and new laws and deals that be proposed in the world of merchants. Arisa suggested the copyright law from her old world and explained it to them. Anna quite loved the idea. Meaning, if anyone even dared tried to produce something that was hers and they didn't have permission, she would gladly ruin them. Arisa honestly suggested it because she wanted to share the different literatures from her old home. Back to the sparring session, Jeralt was impressed by their sparring match and did question if Amir was trained by another noble Duscurian family. The double blade wielding technique is one of the most difficult ones to master and also extremely rare in this age. Only so few know it. The girl is using not only that technique, but also that of assassins. She wielded her blades like an assassin but also sword Master. Amir also had a strange habit of going on all fours and attacking like wolf.

"Ha!" He snapped out of his thoughts as the Duscurian knocked Arisa's sword out of her hand and pointed the wooden blade at her neck.

"My win." Amir grinned.

These past two weeks have been well. The group got to know Amir better, allowing the girl to break out of the shell she had temporarily closed herself in. She laughed and told stories of how her culture was. One, was the tale of the water goddess and shadow God her family worshipped. The water goddess was said to have blessed her clan with wisdom and the shadow god strength. That explained why Arisa would sometimes see water bubble floating in the air and a couple of the shadows move. Though, Arisa thinks it could be Crest but she has chosen to remain silent about it.

During this time, Sothis watches through Arisa's eyes and listened to the stories of this girl. Humans have always been fascinating to her more and more as the years went by. Their cultures, traditions, languages, knowledge, everything about them was so strange. They all had different beliefs and teachings. Some argue that the ideals of others did not matter, and others accepted them and respected each other. So strange....it was just so strange..yet...

"It all feels so familiar.." Sothis thought to herself.

Now another mystery came to her. Byleth or "Arisa" she calls herself, was a new mystery to work with. The girl's mentality so much older and wiser. Though she had not seen the flames of war, the girl knew hardships and loneliness far better than anyone may give. Since Sothis and her were one, there were times their emotions and feelings were in sync with each other. Sothis pride herself in teaching Arisa magic. Even if the girl tried to do something stupid sometimes. At least it showed Arisa was filled with life. The girl was a mystery most of the time.

But was she really?

She could feel the inner turmoil of emotions Arisa had. Yearning to return back to where she originally came from. She still hasn’t fully accepted that this life she was now hers. There was still a portion in her heart that was still in denial. The longing of wanting to see those she left behind. It took her two years to come into terms that the life and family she has now, was her's. She was
honest to Sothis that she wasn't the original soul of the body she has. The original owner did die. That surprised Sothis greatly. She has heard stories of souls from lands far far away, that no one can ever reach, to other realms. Their knowledge at times were far more advanced than others. The original soul of the body did not want their father to be alone, thus, cause a temporary rift in time to open and allowing Arisa's soul to come in contact with Byleth. The plea to not leave her father alone was more than enough for Arisa to accept. The girl knows much more. Sothis respected her privacy and wouldn't look into her memories, even if she wanted to. The girl knew more than what she should. She had seen the paths of time. Arisa had to keep hidden her knowledge and pretend to be nothing but a child. It proved at times to be difficult. Arisa wanted to say things, explore, but she wouldn't. Sothis also knew that Arisa was afraid to be lonely, to be left alone. Afraid of the darkness and afraid of lightning. She has seen her shaking and holding her sobs when she hugs her pillows.

"Damn!! You win..." Arisa groans because she was knocked down again but took the hand Amir offered her to help her get up.

"Not bad you two." Jeralt clapped as he walked towards them.

"Come on dad.....clearly I need to improve." Arisa sighed as she walked over to the wagon.

"Perhaps it's because you have yet to find your own fighting style." Anna suggested from inside the wagon.

She was busy writing a few things she needed to get in the town they will be arriving in two days.

"Huh?" Arisa said as she put her stabbed her sword into the ground.

"Lady Byleth, each person has their way of fighting. Some prefer to fight with their fists, while others the sword. Some prefer the lance or even an axe." Amir said as she handed her a cup of water.

Arisa gulped it down and wiped her lips with her sleeve, since some of it did spill out.

"You're still learning, and it takes time. Right now, you are using a form of fighting that was taught to you. That's alright, but it's also better to add a mix of your own." Jeralt said.

"Well.....personally I really love dancing...can I...combine that with my choice of combat?" Arisa said.

Honestly, she wanted to see if she could pull of her own dancing style from back when she was an adult. It was fun scaring Theresa.

"Dancers are really amazing at magic and a small mix of combat. However, they also specialize using swords." Amir said.

"Well, that's something to start with. I have also seen you practice a form of hand to hand combat in secret." Jeralt smirked.

"Ack, I been caught." Arisa laughed a bit nervously.

Truthfully, she has been practicing karate and taekwondo. Taekwondo especially because it is a Korean martial art characterized by its emphasis on head-height kicks, jumping, spinning kicks, and fast kicking techniques. That was one of the main reasons why her brother was scared of her
when she would be practicing her kicks because she one time accidentally kicked a hole in the wall. Her mother was pissed!!!! Arisa had to use her allowance to repair it. Lesson learned the hard way.

"You tend to focus more on magic and physical combat. Perhaps that may be better suited for you." Amir said.

"Maybe...I'll give it a try at some point." Arisa said.

Everyone looked up to the sky as they heard a familiar chirp and saw Feh flying towards them with a small fish in its talons.

"Chirp!!" She chirped happily and Ares not to far couldn't help but smile.

"Looks like she's improving. She should be ready to be used for hunting by next year. Good luck Byleth." Ares said as Feh happily began to eat her fish.

"I can't help but feel she would get along well with Flayn for some reason." Arisa thought.

Well, they'll see how things are in two days. The town isn't very far.

- Two Days Later -

Arriving to the town gates, Arisa could not help but grin seeing the excitement fill Amir as the two girls entered the town. It was similar to the one in Galatea one, minus this one used more blue bricks then red. But something wasn't right. This town felt less lively.

"That's odd." Ares suddenly said and the others looked to him.

"The town should be lively.....did some happen to Lord Alexander? This town was never this.....dead." Ares said and Anna coughed.

"I guess you don't know huh?" Anna said as the wagon continued on, "Lord Alexander passed away 4 years ago. The one now in charge of this territory is the Court Mage of the Royal Family, Lady Cornelia." She said.

Ares gawked hearing this and sighed.

"So the hag got him....." he muttered to himself, and both Arisa and Amir twitched. "Captain." He turned to Jeralt seriously, "Please allow me to go see Lady Cornelia. Before I left the Kingdom, I used to serve Lord Alexander for some time. Truthfully...this town is my home." He said and Jeralt nodded.

"Understood. I'll have Yofos go with you out of safety precautions. We'll find go rent a place to stay for the month. Be careful." Jeralt said and Ares nodded.

"Thank you. Yofos!! Let's go!!" Ares said and his friend nodded as the two took off with their horses.

Amir and Arisa looked at each other worried as the wagon moved on ahead. Sothis appeared and
Arisa saw Amir twitch.

"What's wrong?" Arisa asked and Sothis hid behind her.

"Is it common for the spirits of this land to make their presence known? I sense a great one. My power is reacting to it." Amir said as she opened her shirt a bit and showed a strange symbol in the center of her chest. It glowed faintly.

"Wait...that's....." Amir quickly closed her shirt when they heard Anna behind them, and the girl looked at her a bit scared.

"Don't worry. I won’t say anything. You're not the only one with something like that." Anna winked and patted the girl's head.

Sothis sighed as the older woman got off the wagon to head into a nearby shop.

"Goodness......things just seem to be getting more and more aggravated. Even the child here can sense me. At most, she can't hear or see me at least." Sothis said and Amir was looking at Arisa funny.

"The spirit says she is worried about you." Arisa said.

"Yheheheheheh!!" Puka suddenly laughed, scaring them and Feh pecked at him.

"Ooohhh!!! Silence you stupid mut!!!!" Sothos said.

Puka glared and the two suddenly got into an argument.

"And now those two are fighting....ssssighhh..." Arisa sighed and Amir giggled a bit.

So much for some peace and quiet.

- With Ares and Yofos -

"Care to tell me some information Ares?" Yofos said as they rode up the hill on their horses.

Ares was silent throughout the whole ride and truthfully, it was unnerving.

"Lord Alexander von Aubin. Former Holy Knight of the Kingdom was one of the King’s Knights. Served 20 years of military experience in both the Kingdom and The Church of Serios. 10 years on the Kingdom and 10 in the church. He was one of 3 of Kings trusted Knight's." Ares said and Yofos was silent as he listened.

"He was the head of this land and was a kind Lord who treated his people equally. He was also the Royal Family's Blacksmith." Ares said.

"Wait, a noble that's a blacksmith?" Yofos said.

"Yeah..." Ares chuckled, "Lord Alexander was well respected because he specialized in repairing Heroes Relics, but also, in creating weapons using rare materials like wootz and umbral steel." He
"You sound like you idolize him." Yofos said and Ares nodded.

"I do. But....things became tense between his wife." He said and the two arrived at the gates of a mansion.

Ares blinked when he saw two unknown guards.

"What happened to Cele and Arc?" He thought to himself as the two mounted off their horses as they walked up to them.

"Pardon. My name is Ares and I a former knight that used to serve Lord Alexander. I wish to speak to Lady Cornelia." He said.

The two guards just turned their heads to them. Ares wish he could see their faces but he could tell they gave him a look of disgust.

"Sorry but Lady Cornelia is not here currently. She is away at the capital as the royal court mage. Now leave." The guard said.

Ares narrowed his eyes and turned to Yofos.

"Let's go." He said the two shared a look that spoke many words.

- Back to Town -

"Hhmmmmm!!! These sweets are the best!!" Arisa and Amir said with stuffed cheeks filled with red velvet cake and caramel drizzle.

The two girls were allowed to explore the town a bit while Jeralt when to pay for their rooms for at least a 1 month stay. Because it was quite a few people traveling, one of the inn managers suggested they rent a cabin that is near the forest. Jeralt had to go to the next building to that. Honestly, it was a hassle but it's better than nothing. He rented one that had four rooms. One for the girls, the other for the men to share and the last one was for himself so he could work on the documents for the next jobs.

"Lady Byleth and Amir!! Don't eat so much sweets!!" Temes said to them and the girls glared at him.

"HISSSSS!!" The girls hissed at him like cats as he tries to take the box of sweets away.

The Baker and his wife laughed as one of the Jorah gave poor Temes a pat on the back. Temes was just groaning in his hands. Jeralt just sighed while Anna chuckled as she left the shop she was in, witnessing the whole thing.

"To think that eating sweets was inherited from her mother..." Jeralt sighed.

A sad smile graced his lips as he remembered his wife. Rosa was full of life and enjoyed eating food especially. Sometimes called a "wild child." Currently they are in one of the major noble towns. This place was under the control of Lady Cornelia. A mage who cured a plague that took the life of the first consort 4 years ago. They were going to be staying in this town for at least a
month. His men needed rest and, he needed to complete a trading deal of medical supplies with one of the town vendors. Not to mention a good way to teach the two young girls new battle techniques.

"Hey dad, is it okay if I can go to the bookstore? I want to get some new supplies for my studies." Arisa said as she pointed to a nice-looking store that had glass windows displaying books.

"Alright. As long as Amir goes with you. Just don't go overboard. Last time you bought 6 books and you're running out of room in your room thanks to all the shelves of books you have." Jeralt said.

Seriously, the girl is of a hoarder and her room is a mess at times with books everywhere.

Arisa laughed nervously at this while Amir was getting a few flashbacks from her days in Duscur when she would stay with her grandmother. The old woman loved telling stories of ancient legends from around the world.

"I'll try." Arisa said as her father carefully helped her down along with Amir.

"(Puka, can you feel it?? The air is much, much colder!! Similar to the Ice god!!)" Amir said in her native tongue to Puka who was sniffing the air and growled a bit.

Even Feh had her feathers puffed out.

"Something is definitely wrong in this place. And I don't like it." Arisa thought as the snow began to fall.

A single snowflake fell into the palm of her hand and she stared at it.

It was an unnatural blue color.

- With Ares and Yofos -

"I fucken knew it!!!! That hag killed him!!" Ares punched said angrily as they were going down the hill road back to the town.

The two horses looked to each other worried and then to Yofos, who had a frown on his face.

"Ares, you better explain to me what she you mean that the Lord's wife killed him?" Yofos said and the former knight gritted his teeth.

"Around 10 years ago, Lord Alexander was in an arranged marriage with a noble's daughter. That being, Cornelia. She was mage that specialized in healing magic and is one of the 5 most respected doctors of all Fodlan. The first one lives in the Empire. The second one is her, the third one lives here in the Kingdom also, the fourth lives in the Alliance and the 5th, is Florencio, who is a freelancer. Cornelia married Lord Alexander and their relationship has always been shaky. 1160, Cornelia gave birth to a young girl. Many thought with a child born, their relationship would improve but it only worsen. But...Lord Alexander loved his daughter more than anything and would protect her from his wife's rants. 1162, The twins, the young prince and princess were born
but the queen consort passed away a few days later to the plague that was going on in the Kingdom. Cornelia found a cure and was able to cure many, thus earning her the position as a court mage from the King to show his gratitude. Sighhhhh...." Ares said.

"Deeeepp breaths. Now, slowly continue explaining." Yofos said.

"Yeah...well...Cornelia...has always been obsessed with finding out the secrets of Lord Alexander's crest. For many generations, House Aubin has never revealed any of their secrets of weapon forging, the power of their Crest and also the two Hero Relics that have been passed down in their family. Lord Alexander along with his friend, Lord Rensen, were the last members of the Aubin blood line. Since, 20 years ago, someone broke into House Aubin and massacred all the people. Women, children, men, even the elderly. Only Lord Rensen, Lord Alexander and Lady Alexandra survived. Lady Alexandra is Lord Alexander's mother. Unfortunately,...they never caught the killer..." Ares said.

"You said Lord Alexander had a daughter. Where is she now?" Yofos asked and that's when the realization hit Ares like a truck.

"SERIOS DAMMIT!!" He yelled.

"Hey!! Do not say the Saint's name in vain!" Yofos said as they reached the town.

"Sigh....sorry. I just pray that the goddess is protecting Lady A------aaargghh!!!!!" His throat suddenly had burning sensation.

"Ares!!! Wh-----oh no....." Yofos face grew pale as Ares coughed.

"Cough...What...cough!! Cough!! Was that?" Ares said as both mounted off their horses in front of a weapon shop.

"It's a curse. Well, only the individual that has the name is cursed. Ares, you can't say the girl's name...." Yofos said and the knight was really starting to get angry.

"Yofos, stay here. I'm going into the shop to speak with my father. I'm going to get a yelling when he sees me, but I need to know more of the situation." Ares said and left into the shop where his family was.

Yofos sighed as he waited outside. It has been years since he has seen a name curse. Whoever casted really did not want the girl to have her original name. So, it is possible she may be going by another one.

- Bookstore -

"Hmmm.....oh? Not bad. Maybe I can try this when I get older."

With a book in her hands, happily reading far in the corner of the bookstore, Ymir was more than happy to escape outside of her suffocating house and let herself immerse reading a book of how to create stainless steel. After what happened earlier with forging the dagger, she really needed this time to relax herself. Firo was asleep in his small little cage, used for protection. The girl hummed
happily a tune as she turned to the next page, her eyes sparking as she was reading another method used for forging metals. The owner of the bookstore, a man with light tan skin, brown hair tied in a ponytail and a small goatee, smiled as he saw her continue reading. It was a rare sight to see the girl here in town. Of course, everyone in the town knew that the girl loved to sneak out of the mansion, so they chose not to say anything. She was the daughter of Lord Alexander and kind to many people despite her fear of crowds. The girl loved to read in silence in her free time or study politics at times.

"She reminds me so much of her father. Ah, Alexander, if only you were here, your daughter would be much happier." The bookstore owner thought as he turned to see the door to his store open.

"Oh? New customers." He thought to himself.

It was rare to see travelers come in these days. He saw a younger girl with green colored hair with streaks of brown and the other a young girl who he believed may be a citizen of Duscur. He raised an eyebrow but said nothing once he saw the two girls heading his way.

"Pardon sir, which section has blank journals and ink and pens? I need a few for my studies." The green haired girl asked.

"Of course. On the 5th section, on the third shelf, you will find them there along with other supplies. There should also be a few other books there." He said.

He was a bit surprised by how formal her language was. Perhaps she was a noble of sorts?

"Ummm...do you have any on music?" The other girl asked.

"Of course. They are next to magic books also." he said.

"Perfect!!" The green haired one said excitedly and ran to the section.

"Lady Byleth, please don't run in the store!" The Duscurian girl said and sped walk to catch her.

He could not help but chuckle as he saw the young Duscur girl speed walk after the other one. He did notice the small owl that was perched on the girl's head. Snow owls are rare, so he did question how he got her hands on one.

"Look Amir!! I can totally use this for one of my spells!"

A frown formed on her Ymir's face as she turned towards the excited voice that so disrespectfully disturbed her peace and quiet. Firo opened one eye and just yawned, deciding to go back to sleep.

"She looks familiar.....have I seen her before?" Ymir thought as she narrowed her eyes once they landed on Byleth. For some reason the thought that the girl's hair should be dark brown came to her mind. She didn't know why.

"Lady Byleth......I don't think music and magic work together..." she heard the other girl say as she
saw Byleth pick up a book with different music sheets.

"Actually, it can." Byleth said as she opened it to look through a few pages.

Funny how her old world and this one share similarities when it comes to classical violin music. She still wished pianos existed in this world. Thankfully, she remembers how to build one so she for sure, once she has enough money, will build it. The girl's tone suddenly turned to almost that of an adult talking. This caught Amir by surprise. This immediately caught Ymir's attention and silently shut her book to hear the conversation. Magic and music? There is no way they can work together.

"What are you talking about?" Amir said.

"Magic and music true have their differences but they also have their similarities. Let's take dark magic for example." Byleth began as the two girls sat a few chairs away from Ymir.

"Dark magic and Black magic. They are in a form, negative emotions of humans. Music in a way is the same. It can be either happy or sad music. Now, the process of combining is a bit on the complicated side but with the correct knowledge and amount of trying, it is possible. Luckily, we can do this. Allow me to demonstrate my friend." Byleth grinned as she took out her dagger and did a small cut on her index finger.

"Arisa!" Amir screeched.

Ymir was now fully listening and seems this conversation woke up Firo.

"If you have bad intentions, or negative emotions, music mostly tends to have a lower minor. The sound is lower and more towards a base. For example.....like if you listing to a ghost story. There are times it does have a high-pitched tune in order to cause a suspense, or also to create excitement for what is to come." She said.

"Now, to good "magic"." Arisa emphasizes that word.

"Music can also bring joy. It can create emotions of positivity. Magic can be the same. It can be used to heal, to protect, defend but also hurt. Now, my intentions are to heal this cut." Arisa said as she looked to index finger that was bleeding. She could feel Sothis watching with anticipation.

Amir and Ymir were listening/watching closely. Arisa smiled and closed her eyes and sang softly. Why not simple a well-known song from her world?

"You are the ocean's gray waves~"

Both the girl’s eyes went wide when they saw a green hue of energy surround the cut and heal it. Sothis could not help but smile warmly as she saw this. The girl has improved in so many wonders. Amir and Ymir could not believe their eyes while Firo was silent as he stared at the goddess that floated next to the girls,

"HOW?!" Both Ymir and Amir yelled, causing the shop owner to raise an eyebrow and look over to them.

Arisa and Amir turned to Ymir with looks of confusion until they all heard a "Ahem!!"
The three girls turned to the shop owner, who is actually Ymir's uncle, Lord Rensen, and all said "sorry". Arisa then turned to Ymir, finally noticing her presence. When the two girls made eye contact, a strange feeling rose in Arisa. She didn't know why but, has she met this girl before?

"Hello there. I just barely noticed you. I'm guessing you were listening to my friend's and I conversation, correct?" Arisa said politely.

Ymir fiddled with her fingers and nodded shyly as she walked over to them. It was a cute sight honestly.

"Y-Yes. Y-Your conversation on music and m-magic intruded me and I wanted to listen more. S-Sorry if I-I was rude." Ymir said as she bowed her head a bit.

"It's alright. Say, want to join us?" Amir said as she patted the chair next to her.

Ymir's eyes went wide. This was the first time someone had ever offered her to join them.

"A-Are you sure? I-I..." she said shyly and intertwined her hands together.

This was her first time talking to someone other than her mother, the butler and her uncle. Arisa seemed to notice this and nodded. After all, she used to do the same back in college when she had (forced) to do presentations for her communication and drama classes.

"Of course!! My name's Arisa Byleth! Call me Arisa. And this is my friend, Amir. What's yours?" Arisa said to the girl.

"Umm....Ymir....N-Nice to meet you." The Ymir smiled shyly and shyly sat next to Amir.

Rensen smiled warmly as he saw the girls invite Ymir to sit with them. As the hours went by, he was happy to hear the girls talk so cheerfully and excitedly. Especially Ymir. She hadn't been the same since her father died 4 years ago. Currently she is 6 years old. He suspects that Cornelia had something to do with his death. Especially since he refused to speak about the Crest he was born with. Now, the one to inherit the Crest is his daughter.

"No way!!! You're supposed to use carbon first then add oxygen to turn it to stainless steel!!"

Ah. Now Ymir and Amir were having an argument on creating weapons. Arisa just groans into her hands as the two other girls argued with each other. This reminded her when Theresa and her older sister would get into arguments over Lore stories. She never tried to stop those arguments because they would always turn to her, asking (forcing) her to say who was right. Arisa would always say she neutral and never take anyone's side. Sothis and Firo were actually talking to each other and seems they were actually getting along. Feh was still perched on Arisa's head, fast asleep.

"Ahem!" He had to do again, which made them quite down.

He was happy to see the daughter of his friend so open and talking so much. As he turned to leave to the back to get a few things when the door to his shop opened. His eyes went wide when he saw who it was.

"Rensen, it has been quite some time." Ares said and the old man nearly dropped the books he was carrying.
"Ares?" Rensen said and that immediately made the girls turn their way.

"Big...Big Brother Ares!!" Ymir yelled out and the said man turned to the girls.

Ymir jumped off her chair, ran full speed towards him and....

"OOOOFFF!!" Rammed her head into his stomach at full speed.

Arisa and Amir both cringed witnessing this and Ares groans as he held his stomach and smiled weakly to her.

"L-Lady Ymir.....it's....been a long time....you were...just two years old the last time I saw you....." he said weakly and was using the wall for support.

The girl never got rid of the habit of ramming her head into friend's stomach after these years. Apparently, it was something her grandmother used to do when she was her age. Ymir's tiny small strand of hair that would stick up, moved rapidly to show she was happy. Honestly it was a cute sight.

"Welcome home!!!! I'm so happy to see you back at the Kingdom! I thought I would never see you again!! Are the others with you as well? You know, Cele and Arc? Timothy, Wu, Nightingale (Arisa: There's a Florence Nightingale in this world?!), Isaac and the rest?" She said.

Ares looked over to Rensen and then turned back to her now that he has recovered.

"It's...just me today. I'm with my friends. Oh, I see you've met my Captain's daughter and her friend. Lady Byleth, I didn't think you were here." Ares said and Ymir turned to the girls as she saw them getting off the chair and walked over to them.

"Good evening too Ares. Dad went to rent a cabin for all of us to stay in since we are staying for a month. Also, I came here to buy a few things." Arisa said.

"Umu. I personally was hoping I can a book about Duscur flowers. I want to see if I can plant a few here in Fodlan. Grandmother passed down a box filled with seeds of different varieties of Duscur flowers." Amir said.

"So.....Big brother Ares serves you now......" Ymir frowned to Arisa and the girl raised an eyebrow.

"Serves?? I think not. Ares is a respected mercenary-----" she was interrupted, by Ymir's sudden cold voice.

"Knight." Was all the pink orange pastel hair colored girl said.

"Okay? Ares is a respected knight AND mercenary in my dad's company. Yeah, he works for my dad but that doesn't mean he serves me. He's a friend." Arisa said.

"Then why does he call you "Lady Byleth"?" Ymir said.

Look at you....are you jealous....? How cute. Are you angry at her? Want her to go away? Scared?
Ymir was silent as that voice rang in her ear and Arisa spoke to answer her question.

"Look, I personally prefer to just be called Byleth or Arisa. No need for formalities. But, if they want to keep calling my Lady Byleth, that is their choice not mine." Arisa said.

Ymir pouted and turned to Ares, pointing a finger at him.

"If you call me Lady Ymir, and her Lady Byleth, then you are to also call Amir, Lady Amir!!!! That is your role as a knight!!" Ymir said with puffed cheeks.

"Leave me out of this." Amir groans.

Rensen could not help but laugh while Ares was giving him the look of "please help me".

"How about I just call you all just your names? Ymir, Byleth and Amir. Better?" He said.

"Yes!" All three girls said.

- Later at Night -

After taking Arisa and Amir to the cabin for the night, Ares accompanied Ymir to the forest where she told him was a way to sneak back to the mansion without getting caught.

"I'm so happy you're back! I won't be lonely anymore!! Also, you can help me learn how to use a lance!!" Ymir said cheerfully as they walked down a hidden pathway.

Ares gave her a small smile and patted her head.

"I'll only be here for month but if you need help training, I'll be more than happy to do it." He said.

He internally was frowning when she said she wasn't going to be lonely anymore. He learned from his father and Rensen that Cornelia had fired everyone that served Lord Alexander after he passed away. But something did not add up. About half of those that were fired have been missing since she had fired them. It didn't make sense. He knew for a fact they didn't just leave the Kingdom. This town was their home. Especially his friends Arc and Cele, who were his fellow knights. Plus, learning that everyone was replaced right after they were fired with a bunch of unknown people, was distrusting.

"What? Only a month?! Wwwwyyyyy?" Ymir whined and he chuckled a bit.

"I'm not a knight anymore Ymir." He was still getting used to calling her that name than the one her father gave her "Also, I have a job and I'm happy where I am. I've learned so much and met many new people." He said to her.

Ymir pouted and stomped her feet.

"It's not fair!!" She said, "How is you get to anywhere you want to be, and I have to stay here??!??! I hate it here!!!! Papa and everyone I know is gone but you and uncle!!! Now you're saying you can't stay here anymore?!" She said.

Ares sighed as he bent down but not before he noticed something strange. One thing he had that only Lord Alexander knew of was, he had an amazing night vision and he spotted one of the plants
nearby freeze solid.

"Ymir, I know it's been difficult since your father passed away but please try to understand." He said.

"Then take me with you!!" She blurted out.

Ares blinked.

"When you have to leave take me with you!!! I can't stand being in that mansion anymore!! Mama and all the servants look down at me and I hate the extreme magic training I have to go through!! I hate it, I hate it, I hate it!!!( She yelled as tears ran down her face.

Instantly, Ares backed away as icy spikes formed all around the ground and the girl gasped.

"This power.....Ymir....you....." he gasped and Ymir just cried.

"I hate this....I hate this power.....Mama wants it so bad.......I hate it....wwwwhhhhAaaaaaa!!" The girl began crying and be carefully walks over to her and hugged her.

If only he could call her by her real name.

"It's alright. It’s alright." He said as the girl cried in his arms.

"Lord Alexander.....what can I do to help your daughter....?" He muttered as he looked up to the sky.

Only the heavens have the answers.....

- Back with Arisa -

She was currently alone in her room, staring blankly at her journal. During the time she got to know Ymir, the girl had asked her a question that has never left her mind. It bothered her, a lot. Arisa walked to the mirror and held a strand of her hair in her hands. The light color brown hair faded to teal. But the question Ymir asked her....

"Has, your hair always been light brown fading to teal?"

"Well, it used to be completely teal, but it wasn't till last year I started growing the same colored hair as my dad. Why the sudden question?"

"O-Oh. It's just....for some reason the thought that your hair should be dark brown keep running through my thoughts. Have we....met before?"
"Well, I did see you at the Queen Consort's funeral two years ago."

"Oh!!! No wonder you looked familiar!! But, no!! I mean, have we met before that day? I feel like I met you long before that."

"Not that I know of....."

"I see. Umm....this may sound strange but, have you met someone by the name Theresa?"

"............."

"W-Well, you see, that name keeps popping up in my mind for some reason. Also, the name Arisa sounds familiar despite being foreign. Hmm...I'll have to ask Sylvian or the others about it."

"Please don't."

Arisa sighed and made her hands glow a bit and touched her hair, making it turn to a dark color brown and her eyes to her original color from her old body. The girl looked at herself in the mirror and just stared.

"Look at you."

She turned and gave Sothis a dry stare as the goddess floated over to her and circled around her.

"I do not recall teaching you how to change your appearance like this. Did you read it in one of the books you bought or invented it yourself when no one was looking?" Sothis said and Arisa just sighed. She places her hand on the mirror and it rippled, showing the image of a a young adult woman in her mid-20's, dressed in modern clothing. She was smiling, laughing, and walking beside her, was also a woman the same age as her, dressed in red summer dress and beach hat. The two were drinking coffee and talking to each other casually.

"The one with the dark hair, that's how I used to look like." Arisa began and Sothis listened.

Arisa has decided to open up a bit about her past.

"Just like you Sothis, I came from a place far, far, far away. This knowledge..and everything that I
remember....I call it both a blessing and a curse. I....really hate being alone. It's the one fear that I truly have. To be alone." She said and Sothis hugged her gently.

Arisa hugged her back and there was a comfortable silence.

"I understand.....I truly do...."

Chapter 11: Dual-Ego: Part 1: Girl of Sorrow

[ ----- ]

A bit on the heavy side this chapter huh? Next chapter were going to see some pretty intense moments. Ymir's true role will soon be revealed and how she will be one of the main key roles to the first steps to take down Those Who Slither in the Dark.
"Hey, Arisa. Arisa....Wake up pendeja!!!"

With a violent push off her comfy bed, and a screech that would rival a bird's yell, Arisa groaned loudly as she just laid on the floor, trying to properly register what on earth just happened.

"Uugggh....Sothis....why did you wake me up?" The girl groans as she pushed herself up and sat.

"Sothis? Who is that? Arisa, don't tell me you have a worse hangover than I do?" A female voice said, and Arisa just groans.

"Wait...wha...?" Arisa finally snapped out of it and blinked multiple times as her eyes scanned the room.

Gray colored walls with anime and k-pop posters taped on to them shone nicely in the morning sun. Multiple shelves with textbooks, manga, magazines, and much more were lined up neatly on the walls. There were two big desks, one to the right and one to the left next to the two queen size beds. One was simple and neatly organized. An Acer nitro 5 gaming laptop was closed and to the right of it was a drawing tablet. There were a few books stacked and small shelves filled with office supplies. Also, a nice swivel chair, color black. The right one was covered in clutter. Boxes, papers, food wraps, and a few make up packages were on it. Plus, a pile of clothing on the chair. She looked to where the sunlight was coming from and turned to see a familiar balcony with slide open window doors. Outside, you could see a small garden of flowers. Arisa then turned to the owner of the female voice, who was tapping her feet, with arms crossed and a slightly annoyed look on her face.

"Theresa...?" Arisa whispered and the woman rolled her eyes.

"Pues claro!!! Now hurry up and take a shower!!! We're going to going to be late for our class!! Did you forget, today is your class's final?" Theresa said.

Theresa was a young woman with light tan skin, dark brown colored eyes, red colored hair that she had dyed and wore sea turtle earrings. Currently, she was dressed professionally in a black female suite. Arisa blinked and looked at the mirror as she stood up. Her dark brown hair was a mess, and she wore only a t-shirt, no shorts, only her underwear and no bra underneath.
"I'm....should I be...here?" She thought for some reason and just yawned as she headed to the bathroom to shower.

- 30 minutes later -

"Theresa, my class does not start till 12 pm....it's 8 in the morning...." Arisa groans as she was driving her 2016 jeep wrangler into a Starbucks driveway, and ordered two matcha iced lattes along with two bacon gouda sandwiches.

She was dressed in a white blouse with black khaki pants, and a black tailcoat with black heels. Theresa sighed as it now their turn to pay and she gave her card to the cashier and got it back. They went to the next window, got their orders and drove off toward the highway.

"I know, but did you also forget that you have a doctor's appointment today?" Theresa said and it finally dawned on her.

"Shit. Thanks for waking me up." Arisa said.

The woman suddenly slammed her foot on the brakes, stopping the car in a violent halt, nearly crashing in some son of bitch that came out of nowhere.

"PINCHE PENDEJO!!!! PON ATENCIÓN DONDE VAS!!!" Both Arisa and Theresa roared furiously as the car sped away. Luckily, a police officer in a motorcycle was nearby and saw the whole thing. He sent the woman's a thumbs up and sped off to catch the car. Arisa let go of a long sigh.

"For some reason the thought of I should be 7 years old and not 22 keeps running through my head....." Arisa sighed as she began driving again.

After 20 more minutes, Arisa entered the parking lot of the university she is teaching at and stopped in front of the criminology building.

"Thank you. Well, wish me luck because I made the test difficult for those kids." Theresa cackled as she got out the car and closed the door.

Arisa chuckled as she made her car window go down and spoke out.

"Don't go too hard on them Tere!!! And take care!!" Arisa waved drove off.

- 4 hours later -

With a pile of papers in her hands, dressed professionally, a small box of extra pencils on her desk, along with snacks, Professor Arisa looked to her classroom of 200 students. Each one was nervous, trying not to be let it show.

“You all have 3 hours to complete your final. When you are done, come here to front desk along with your student ID. After that, you may freely leave and have a wonderful summer vacation.”
said as she began to walk to the rows and gave the first student a certain amount of papers.

"Pass them down." She said and they did just that.

After handing out the final exams, she went back to her desk and looked at them once more.

"Make sure to turn off all electronic devices, cell phones especially. If I catch you with your cell phone, if it goes off, or you are sharing answers, it is an automatic zero and you will be asked to leave. If you need an extra pencil, I have a box here at the front so you may get one. To have you kids have a bit of a better concentration, I will be having jazz music softly playing in the background because I can't stand it being quite." She said and many chuckled.

"Now, everyone ready?" She said and half the class nodded, and the other half shook their heads.

"It doesn't matter if you aren't, you're still taking it." She said and heard a couple of her students’ groan.

"Now begin!" She said and saw the students flip over their test.

"I'm fucked..." "Oh, I know this one." "Already the first question......." "This is easy." "(Whimpering)"

She had to keep herself from bursting out laughing as she heard those whispers among her students. She didn't blame them though. Even if she herself is a professor, she is still studying for her Master's degree. Her own final is in two days.

"If it makes you kids feel better, my own final is in two days and I'm fucked." She said and many could not help but laugh.

She was glad that help them relaxed a bit as she went to sit back in her desk and opened her laptop, plugged in her headphones. She needed to finish fixing some errors in her research report. The damn thing is 50 pages. She's fixed a few errors on 20 pages so far. She sighed as she began typing on her laptop and turned on the classroom speakers, letting it play softly the jazz music from the 24/7 live on YouTube.

"Gooooooddddd.....just end me.." she internally groans as she was editing her report.

During the 3-hour period, students came up to her desk, placing their test in the box she had prepared, showing her their student ID to validate them, and many said goodbye and hope she had a great time. She did the same and wished them good luck for the next semester. With the last student handing in his test, he said thank you and left. Arisa sighed as the once filled classroom of students was now empty and could not help but smile sadly as she looked. This was her first semester teaching and actually got a lot of positive feedback. Just as she was about to close her computer, the door to class opened and in came Theresa with a grin and also carrying a bag of Panda Express.

"Hooollahaa~ Ready for lunch?" She grinned and Arisa smiled.

"Yeah. Let me pack my things first and then we can eat lunch before we head home." She said.
"Home huh?" Theresa smiled sadly she walked up from behind her and hugged her.

"Theresa?" Arisa was confused.

"This world and life aren’t your home anymore Arisa. You need to wake up."

- Dream Ends -

"NO! WAIT, THERESA!!!"

Her eyes shot open as she suddenly sat up awake, yelling the name of her former friend, hand stretched out, as if reaching out to her. Her heartbeat rapidly in her chest as she panted and her hand went back down. Arisa began to look around the room frantically and let go a sigh of relief.

"I'm in the cabin...." she sighed and looked over to the bed next to hers.

Amir was sleeping upside down with Puka on her chest. Feh was perched on the bird stand they bought not to long ago, also asleep. She sighed and looked out the window. It was early morning and the snow was falling. It's now been 5 months since they left Remire village. Sigh....it's July. Blue Sea Moon.

"Yawwwwnnnn....." Arisa turned towards Amir's bed once more and saw the girl stretching like a starfish and yawn as she sat up.

"Morning...." Amir said and Arisa smiled to her.

"Morning. So, I'm planning to head to the bookstore again today. Ymir said she was going to be there again today. What time the shop open?" She asked and Amir yawned as she got off her bed and headed towards the bathroom.

"She said around 9 in the morning.....two hours from now....yaawwnnn...." the Duscurian girl yawned and went in.

Arisa could hear the shower turn on and the shuffling of clothing as the girl was getting undressed to bathe. She sighed and just sat still for a moment.

"Why did I dream of my days as a Professor...?" Arisa muttered and jumped off her bed.

She slipped her feet into her slippers that were the shapes of sheep and headed to the kitchen, where she found Anna discussing a job request with her father. She was silent as she listened.

"So strange individuals are being seen around the town huh?" Jeralt said and Anna nodded.

"Yeah. Not only is it affecting trade but the townspeople as well. I spoke with Ares about it and a few of the town folk secretly gave this job request to him. Lady Cornelia has been implying heavy taxes, even workloads on the people. What's more, people are going missing." Anna said.

Jeralt was silent for a moment and spoke.
"Yofos mentioned to me yesterday that someone placed a curse on an individual's name. They can't call them by their real name. What's more, it's dark magic. I'm no expert in magic, Florencio along with Elder Bara would know more about it. But it is alarming. Do you think the situation in this town along with this curse could be connected?" Jeralt said and Anna nodded.

"Personally, I think it is. You just don't see black magic pop out of nowhere! Besides, the amount of taxes that needs to be paid is ridiculous!" Anna said.

Arisa was silent and walked away.

"Black...magic...strange individuals....Those Who Slither in the Dark." Arisa began to put two and two together and her blood ran cold.

Every fiber in her body suddenly had a strange feeling of anger and she began to take deep breaths. She knew this anger wasn't hers. That was a for sure, but it belongs to Sothis. Arisa made sure not to ever mention them when Sothis was present because she was worried, she would trigger something. Thankfully, Sothis wasn't awake yet but she could still feel the influence of the goddess in her body. She took several deep breaths and headed back to her room.

"If Those Who Slither in the Dark are here.......then Cornelia is already making moves...." she thought as she arrived at her room.

Amir was combing her hair while Puka was still asleep.

"Bathroom ready for you Lady Arisa." Amir said.

Arisa had asked Amir to call her "Arisa" when it's just the two of them. Unfortunately, the "Lady" part will not be going away anytime soon. Now she understood what Dimitri feels when Dedue calls him "Your Highness." She really wished everyone dropped the formalities when they spoke to her. Her father didn't mind being called "Boss" "Captain" , but he too wished they dropped the "Lady" when they would address to his daughter. Honestly, there was a part of her that wanted to slam her foot down and yell at everyone to just call her "Byleth", at most.

"I'm an idiot for thinking that...." Arisa thought as she went to the bathroom and closed the door shut.

Still, what was bugging her more was the dream she had with her old friend. True, at times she would dream but they would mostly be simple things like food or traveling. But this dream in particular, she remembered it perfectly. It was a bittersweet dream of her days of being a professor and more, the times she would be with her friend.

"Why now.....? Why am I suddenly having these dreams.....?" She thought as she undressed and looked at herself in the mirror.

She gently touched the slash like scar on her chest and felt the small faint beatings of her heart. That was one of the main differences between her and Byleth. Byleth's emotions were cut off till Imperial year 1180 when she met Edelgard, Dimitri and Claude. Even her heart did not beat. But her, it's....very...very...different. "Arisa's" heartbeat. "Arisa" had emotions. "Arisa" had humanity in her eyes. The girl let go of a sigh and turned to the bathtub. She needs her bath to clear her head. As the girl went in and sighed in bliss as she sat in the warm water, a sudden thought came to her head. An activity she hasn't done since she left Remire village.
Singing.

She took a few deep breaths and thought. What song she could sing? She sighed and decided to sing the song that first popped up in her head. And it so happens to be Ballad of The Wind Fish.

Sleepers wake
Dreams will fade
Although we cling fast
Was it real?
What we saw?
I believe
Lost in dreams
We sleep on
Tossing and turning
Stay with me
By my side
Never leave
What if the worst comes?
If someday this sweet reverie ends
We too
Our memories
For real
Fade us by
Dream with me
By the sea
We watch the waves crash
Hold my hand
Think of me
And I'll fly
Unknown to the girl, Sothis appeared and was silent as she was watching the girl sing. She was amazed by how the girl's voice could hold so much emotion yet, she feels the song is telling a story. Funny how like books, a song can tell a story. The song was beautiful but also held a feeling of sorrow. As the girl finish, she noticed Sothis and smiled.

"Good morning, Sothis. Sleep well?" Arisa smiled and Sothis did the same.

"Surprisingly I did have a good sleep. Your father and you are going hunting today correct?" Sothis said and could not help but burst out laughing the second the girl began groaning and sunk half her face into the water.

You could see her blowing water bubbles.

"Get used to it Arisa~" Sothis sang as the girl got her face out of the water and pouted, "Or would you rather be stuck with Anna?" She said.

"You know what? Good point. Not saying I don't like Anna, but I get so confused when she starts talking rapidly about deals and money." Arisa said.

Once she was done bathing, she dried herself and dresses herself in a long-sleeved button up shirt with black baggy pants, her rapier on her waist, and her purse. Amir was dressed in a gray winter dress with black boots.

- 2 hours later -

Surprisingly, Jeralt decided to let the girls enjoy the day with their new friends they made. He and the rest of the team, minus Anna because she was going to set up a stall to sell goods in town, while the others went to hunt.

"So, these are all the things you are selling?" Arisa said as they were helping Anna set up her stall.

"Weapons, books, medicine, metals, fruits!! All worth amazing prices and difficult to get!! Aaahhh!!! I'm excited!!" Anna said excitedly as she put down a box.

Both Amir and Arisa sighed as they began to set up the tables and put the merchandise on them till a particular small box caught her attention. It was a small wooden box and she opened it.

"Oh, I thought I sold that." Arisa heard Anna behind her, and she looked back to the strange looking fang stone with holes.

"What is it?" Arisa asked and Anna smiled.

"It's a vessel flute. The other term I heard for it is an ocarina." Anna said and Arisa's eyes went wide that Amir thought her eyebrows shot away.

"I'LL BUY IT!!" Arisa turned to Anna with determination in her eyes, and Sothis was just
wondering what value the strange fanged stone had.

"Uuhhhh.....okay?" Anna said, taken aback by the girl's sudden mood change.

"How much?!!" Arisa asked and Anna could not help but laugh.

"Whoa!! Calm down Byleth. I never seen you this excited for a 12-hole stone. But, since you're Jeralt's and Rosa's daughter, I'll sell it to you for 25 copper." She said.

"Deal!!" The girl said and gave Anna the money.

[ --- ]

"What was that about Lady Arisa? What made you so excited over a vessel flute? They are quite common in Duscur among the younger children." Amir said as the two girls were walking through the town to the bookstore.

Arisa's eyes were sparkling and had a cheerful smile as she took the tip of the ocarina to her lips and blew into it. Her fingers moving naturally as she played a familiar tune of the song should just sung this morning. Many of the town's people stared at the two as the girls walked. Amir was just gawking the whole time as her friend played the instrument. The tune of it played smoothly. Nothing like the annoying sounds they would make when children would just blow into it. Arisa finished her song and looked at Amir with a smug grin.

"I missed this instrument so much." She grinned while Sothis was just laughing her head off at the face Amir was making.

"Okay, never mind then. It's not an annoying toy." Amir said as they were now in front of the bookstore.

Truthfully, other than the piano and violin, the ocarina was one of the 5 instruments she learned to play. Piano, violin and the ocarina she learned to play by watching online videos. Guitar and the harp she learned in the music program in her middle school and high school years. So, having one instrument she used to play in her old world was a huge relief to her. The girls went into the store, but they didn't expect....

"I SAID NO!!"

The two girls froze as the sight of Ymir stomping her feet repeatedly on the floor and her eyes furious. They were red and puffy, and obvious sight she had been crying. Rensen sighed as he looked down to his niece. Her hair was a mess, and frost was forming underneath her feet.

"I SAID NO!! I DON'T WANT TO STAY HERE!!! I WANT TO LEAVE!!" Ymir yelled out and a wave of ice spikes went towards the girls.

"Girls!" Rensen yelled and Amir spammed her hands onto the floor, and a wall of shadows formed around them.
The spikes denigrate and the wall disappeared, revealing a furious Duscur girl. Ymir gasped as she finally snapped out of it, and looked at the girls, horrified. While Amir gave her a look that she wanted to murder her, Arisa looked at her worried and sadly.

"I'm sorry...I'm sorry....." Ymir began crying and Arisa could not help but see Theresa in the girl and unconsciously walked over to her and held her hands.

"It's okay. You're going through a lot and have a lot of anger pent up." Arisa smiled to her kindly.

"She has anger pent up alright!!! She released the power of the ice god!" Amir said and Arisa looked her confused.

"Ice god?" She said.

"In Duscur, The Ice God, Boreas, god of cold north wind and the bringer of winter. His name meant "North Wind" or "Devouring One". He isn't exactly liked in my homeland." Amir said angrily as she crossed her arms and glared at Ymir, who was shaking, looking at her hands.

Arisa honestly wanted to comment that Boreas was actually a God from Greek Mythology but then again, Greek Mythology doesn't exist in this world unfortunately. So, she'll just go with what Amir said.

"Sigh...." Rensen sighed and spoke.

"Please forgive Ymir ladies. She has been going through a lot lately with her family. I have an idea. Ymir, why don't you go around town with the girls? I'll clean up here." Rensen said.

"But Uncle...." Ymir sniffed and he knelt and patted her head.

"It's alright. Go enjoy yourself." He said.

The girl pouted but Arisa nodded and gently took her hand and lead her out the store, closing the door. Amir was a grumbling mess. Once the girls left, Rensen let go a long sigh of relief.

"She's losing control of her emotions...." he said as the palm of hands glowed and began to evaporate the ice on the floor.

He has been noticing that his niece has been becoming more violent and much more expressive with her emotions. It can either end badly or worse. Just like her father....his friend. He went through the exact same thing because of his Crest. The crest his friend was very connected to human emotions. It was also the very fuel of its power. What's more, one feature not even he could ever figure out. The Crest made its host hostile to people with certain Crest. Rensen sighed once more and just prayed to the goddess that his niece can be helped.

- Forest -

"So ummm....why did you bring me here?" Ymir was a bit nervous as Arisa brought (dragged) her to an open area deep in the forest.

"Well, no one can disturb us here." Arisa smiled while Amir sat on a log not too far away with Feh on her shoulder and Puka on her lap.
"I'm going to teach you to control the power of your Crest." Arisa said boldly and Ymir looked like she just walked into hell.

"I....I...." Before Ymir could run, Arisa gently placed her hand on her shoulder and spoke.

"No, it's not brutal training. Actually, quite the opposite. Have you heard of meditation?" She said and Ymir looked at her confused.

"Medi..wha?" She said.

"Ooohh!!!! Now that we can teach her!!" Amir said and jumped off the log, running over to them with a grin.

"In Duscur, many users of magic practice a type called zen meditation. It is said to stop the mind rushing about in an aimless (or even a purposeful) stream of thoughts. People often say that the aim of meditation is "to still the mind". In other words, stop over thinking too much!!" Amir said proudly.

Ymir was just confused until Amir just groans and made the other two still down with their legs crossed.

"Let me just show you Ymir, correct?" She said and the girl nodded.

"Good. Now, close your eyes. Take small deep breaths." Amir instructed to Ymir and the girl was hesitant but nodded.

Sothis appeared and hugged Arisa like usual to watch.

"Hmmm....interesting method of training. Though it is my first time seeing this, I cannot help but feel I have seen someone do it before. The memory is a blur, but I see a young man doing it." Sothis said in her mind as Arisa watched Ymir close her eyes and take deep slow breaths.

"Focus. Breath slowly. In and out. Focus at the voices of the forest. Not mine." She said.

Ymir's once tense body began to relax with each breath. She could hear crickets, the little flaps of a bird's wings. The stream that was nearby, a few dragonflies flying by.

"Good. Now, try not to think of anything. Similar to z----and she fell asleep." Amir frowned when she heard light snoring from the girl in front of her and Arisa was just holding in her laughter along with Sothis.

"Well, it's a start." She sighed and Ymir woke up.

"Huh...? Oh!! Sorry!!" Ymir bowed her head to apologize.

"No need to apologize. It's your first time after all so it's understandable. Just, try not to do it again." Arisa snickered and Ymir nodded.

"Let's try this again, but all three of us together." Amir said and the girls held each other's hands.

They all took deep breaths and closed their eyes, relaxing their bodies, clearing their minds. As the girls began their meditation session, Sothis could not help but notice the turmoil of emotions all three had, begin to sync together. No, it was as if their powers were synthesizing together. Like two very different instruments. It takes time for a song piece to sound beautiful together when different instruments are used. It takes time to perfect the timing of each note. This was the case with these
three girls. Sothis noticed three small sparks floating a few feet from the girl's chest. Arisa's was red, Amir's a dark purple and Ymir's a light blue. They grew a bit bigger and she could see three symbols, but Ymir's seemed disturbing. It was cracked. What Sothis did not know at that time was that symbol was Ymir's crest and it being cracked, was a sign of an omen.

The three girls spent the next two hours in silence. Calming their breathing, concentrating, only silence. During this time, the voice that would whisper in Ymir's ears frowned. Through her host eyes, she was angry. Who does her host think she is trying to lock her away? It smirked as it remembers when she would once whisper her words to Alexander. But the man was not the one she wanted to take over. All she did was bring forth his feeling that he buried away so deep.

"If only you had my relic with you right now, things would have become a lot easier to make you snap." "She" whispered.

By now, she should see the chains of ice around her cracking, but they didn't.

"Wha? Impossible, she can't hear me?!” She frowned.

"I thought I heard a familiar voice. Yet, I can't seem to recall your name."

Shock filled the voice inside Ymir as a familiar figure appeared floating above her, not too far away.

"You......." the voice went silent once she saw the owner of the voice.

Sothis looked at them sadly for some reason and the voice growled.

"DO NOT LOOK DOWN AT ME FELL STAR!!" It roared at her, and Sothis flinched a bit.

"I DID EVERYTHING IN MY POWER TO STOP THE WAR BETWEEN YOUR CHILDREN AND MY PEOPLE AND LOOK WHERE THAT LEAD ME!!!!!!" It screamed as the chains of ice rattled.

"IF I NEVER WOULD HAVE MET YOU, I WOULDN'T HAVE BEEN BETRAYED!! SLATHERED!! LEFT TO ROT!! LEFT TO DIE!!" It roared at her.

Sothis was confused by what she meant her "children".

"Children? You...know my family.....?" The goddess said and the voice suddenly began laughing as it finally registered why the goddess was confused.

"Oh....oh...hahahaha!! So, she actually did it!!! So Serios really did go mad!!!!!!" It cackled and just fell to its knees, laughing weakly.

It looked to Sothis, tears streaming down it's cheeks.

"Despite it being part my fault for being naive back then.....I can't help but blame you Sothis......." it laughed weakly.

"Who....are you....? I know you!!! So, please, tell me!!" Sothis said and the voice just gave her a
weak smirk.

"Now Fell Star...that would be no fun if I just tell you who I am. Keep guessing Goddess. I'm not giving you answers!" It laughed and forcefully pushed Sothis out.

"AAAAHHHH!!" Sothis screamed and that made Arisa snap out of concentration and run over to her.

Sothis was knocked down onto the ground, covered in frost.

"Sothis!!" The girl yelled, scaring everyone as she quickly sat up and ran to the Goddess.

"What happened?! Are you okay?" Arisa said, said worried and Sothis shook her head, making all the frost on her fall off like it was snowing.

"I am alright. Seems I....entered a territory I shouldn't have." Sothis smiled to her sadly.

Arisa couldn't help but worry for her friend. Even Amir was worried despite the fact that she could not see Sothis, but she could still feel the disturbance. As for Ymir, the girl was internally screaming as she heard the voice again in her ear.

"The Fell Star dare enter the mind of you my lovely host." It giggled and now Ymir felt afraid as she felt invisible like arms wrap around her neck and hug her.

The voice giggled sweetly as it spoke.

"Ufufufu~ But something good did happen. Soon, I'll finally have a fully form so I make myself present." It giggled and disappeared.

[I--------]

"I think it would be better if we do the meditation training every day from now on." Arisa declared as the three were heading back to the town to buy some food.

The two other girls looked at her and then each other confused.

"First off," Arisa began as she turned to them, "all three of us need to focus on controlling our magical energy. Second, if we could get you, " She pointed to Ymir, "To manage to properly control your Crest, you won't have so many emotional breakdowns, but it will also improve your physical and mental health." She said and Ymir nodded slowly while Amir just sighs.

"Ymir, I'm going to ask you a few personal questions. If you don't want to answer them, I understand. But I'm asking these based on medical information and as a doctor apprentice of my uncle." She said and the girl moved to an alleyway.

"O-Okay?" Ymir said.

"First question, do you have little interest or pleasure in doing things?" Arisa asked.

"Umm.......well, truthfully, I rarely have anything interests me. My mother always had me studying
and training. I used to love eating sweets and going out to swim but even I no longer have interest in that. Let alone... hobbies." Ymir answered.

"Alright. Second question, are you feeling down, depressed, hopeless?" She asked.

Ymir was silent and nodded.

"I...feel like a failure......my mother is so obsessed with me being successful and mastering my training.....I really can't live up to such high expectations." She said.

"Third question, any trouble sleeping, staying asleep, or sleeping too much?" Arisa said.

"Yes, yes, and yes." Ymir nodded bitterly.

"I know this sounds like an interrogation, but I have to do it Ymir. Please bare with it a little longer. Fourth question, poor appetite, little energy, overreacting, or considerable weight changes?" She said.

"It is most rude to ask a girls weight!" Sothis huffed.

"Ummm....well.....yes??? I hardly eat anyway so I'm used to it. Also, I guess my mood swings have been...unpredictable lately..." Ymir said.

Arisa was not liking the answers, but she needed to ask the last few questions to confirm her theory. She was going to ask a couple other questions, but they have already been answered with her earlier replies.

"Fifth question, moving or speaking slowly that other people have noticed or being restless that you are moving around a lot?" She said.

"My uncle has told me that my speech pattern had become sluggish but also like I'm on edge all the time. It hard to stay still." Ymir said and Arisa finally noticed that the girl was tapping her right foot this entire time.

Even the shift in her body language showed it. Ymir would always flinch when someone raised their hand, or even the mention of training or sparring. What's more, whenever Arisa mention magic or Crest.

"Final question. This one is very serious, and you have to answer it. Ymir, have you ever wanted to harm yourself or even think you be better off dead?" Arisa said Ymir froze.

"I.....I.....I....." the girl was having a difficult time answering but how could she not?

Ymir has had those thoughts. No, they are still ones running through her head. But...they become much more violent. Not only those she wants to hurt herself or even be dead, it's becoming worse because thoughts of hurting others have crossed her mind. Especially the servants in her house. She wants them dead. She wants them gone. She wants everything to burn down. Even just looking at Lawson and her mother especially makes her want nothing more than for them to drop dead to the ground. It has gotten worse through these last four years.

"Yes...." Ymir answered bitterly as she gritted her teeth.

Arisa sighed into her hands and covered her mouth as she looked down to the ground and
back Ymir.

"She has depression. The question now is if she has Major or Dysthymia........I really wish I had my medical books from my old world right now......information on this doesn't exist in medieval times...." Arisa thought.

"Medicine for it doesn't exist yet here so the most I can do to help her out, especially since she is still a child, are natural remedies. Exercise, eating healthy, doing other activities like things she likes, setting goals, getting enough sleep and most of all, challenging those negative thoughts especially are the most I can do right now. I'm also worried she may have PTSD because of the grueling training she is put through. Another thing affecting her is her family. She mentions her mother a lot but even I have no clue who that woman is. The most I know is that Ymir is the daughter of a noble but who.....? Which House?" She thought as Sothis listened to her.

Arisa turned back to Ymir and spoke.

"Thank you. Listen Ymir, what you have, is very serious." She said and Ymir was worried.

"However, it can be treated. You be surprised we can actually help you." She said and Amir was raising an eyebrow.

"How can we help her?" Amir said.

"Well, let's start with something simple." Arisa smiled, "Let's get something to eat. Anything you like Ymir? Recommendations?" She said.

"Ummm...The bakery near my uncle's shop sells really good sandwiches and chai tea with milk tea. But I'm n-----" she said but was interrupted.

"Nuuuhuhuhuuhuuhu!!" Arisa shook her head.

"You're eating! That's the first step to help you. You're eating properly young lady." Arisa said with arms crossed.

Sothis could not help but giggle as she saw the shocked faces of Amir and Ymir.

"You......sound like a mom...." Amir said and could not help but laugh as she saw her friend scratch her cheek, since her ears did turn a bit red.

"I...get that a lot..." Arisa chuckled and both turned when they heard Ymir giggling.

"Alright. I'll eat. If it can help me, then I understand." She smiled.

Arisa rubbed her eyes and blinked multiple times as she looked back to Ymir. She thought she was looking at Theresa for a minute there.

"Why do you keep coming to my mind Theresa.......?"

- 2 weeks later -
"Dodge!!" Arisa thought as she dodges the wooden lance that was coming her way.

"Nice job!!" Jeralt said as he was watching the three young girls sparring.

Ymir had a look of concentration on her face as she gracefully spun her wooden lance to have it meet with Arisa's wooden sword. It's been two weeks since they have arrived in this town and also meeting Ymir and her uncle. Surprisingly, things have been going well. Ares had decided to introduce the young girl to the rest of the group. At first, Ymir was a bit afraid but after getting to know everyone with time, the girl had opened up to everyone.

"Hey, that's cheating!!" Arisa said as Ymir created a second lance using ice and came at her.

Jeralt and Ares could not help but chuckle as the girl just grinned and charged at Arisa, who did the splits to dodge the two lances.

"What the f------*slapped*!!" Temes was slapped by Jorah to keep him from yelling out that profanity when they saw the girl do the splits, which is very difficult to do unless you are flexible, which is a rare case.

Ymir was caught off guard by this and it was enough for Arisa to quickly get back up and knock the lances out of her hands. Ymir yelped as she was knocked down and a wooden sword was pointed at her chest.

"I win." Arisa panted with a grin on her lips.

"Grrr....I almost had you!!" Ymir pouted as she was helped up.

"Not bad you two!!" Ares clapped and Ymir shyly fiddled with her.

"You've improved a lot using the lance. I think you'll be an amazing paladin in the future." Jeralt said and Amir grinned.

One small change that happened during the two weeks. Ymir's mood and health had improved during the two weeks. Many noticed that the girl was now healthier looking even if it was a slow process, even smiling, and even engaging into things she loved to do again. One of those major things was training to use the lance but also mediation. Which has greatly improved her control in her magic that even the servants of the house have noticed that the girl seemed much happier and was not relying on them on anything at all. The only one that hasn't noticed yet is Cornelia and Rensen calls it a blessing. Though, back to one of the small changes.

"I'll become an amazing knight like papa!!" Two small little wings like things have grown on her head.

Arisa couldn't help but think they were the little wing antennas from the Valkyrie Trio in Fate Grand Order. It still looked cute though because they would flutter to show she was happy, or droop when sad, or flutter rapidly when nervous. It was downright fucken cute. They fluttered happily as she said that, and Anna could not help but squeal and hug the girl.

"You're so cute!! Yes, you are!!" Anna said and Ymir could not help but squeal happily as Anna rubbed her cheek on hers.

"Seems she's getting along fine with everyone." Sothis appeared and could not help but smile as she saw the pink haired girl squealing with Anna.
Amir was pouting, obviously she was jealous and was then dragged in by Anna and hugged the same way. Amir could not help but laugh along with the other two.

"Yeah, I'm glad she is. We only got two weeks left here till July is over. I wish she could come with us." Arisa telepathically told Sothis and the goddess nodded.

"Then what's stopping you?" Sothis grinned and Arisa looked at her like she grew a second head.

"Sothis!! If I did that, then that would land a target on all our backs!! I'm not about to have police come after me!" She said and Sothis huffed.

"Hmph!! Very well then!! But I'm telling you, I really do think it would be better for us to take her with us. I'm just saying what has been running in your mind." Sothis smirked Arisa sighed.

"Also, next month is our birthday." Sothis said.

"That's one more year closer to experiencing puberty all over again.....I am not looking forward to it." Arisa internally groans.

"Arisa!" She heard her name called out and saw Ymir and Amir walking towards her.

"Let's go swimming!!!" Ymir said.

"There's a nice pond not too far from here. I think we could relax a bit. Also, you kids earned it for helping Anna out." Jeralt said as he ruffles the girl's hair.

"SWIMMING HERE I COME!!" Ymir cheered happily.

Ares could not help but chuckle as the three girls ran ahead while the adults walked.

"It's been awhile since I see you laugh like that." Jeralt said to Ares.

"Really? I thought I always laughed like this." Ares said.

"Yeah no. The majority of the time you act like an incubus when chasing women. I'm surprised some poor woman hasn't given birth to your bastard." Temes said and Jorah smacked him.

"Actually........." Ares chuckled nervously and everyone turned to look at him minus the girls because they were way ahead.

"Goddess, now you done it!!" Temes and Yofos yelled while Jeralt just looked at him in disappointment.

"What's the kids name...." Anna gave him a void look.

"He's my son and was born 4 years ago. The problem is.....Cele....is still missing. Yes, I know she is my ex-lover but I'm not going to abandon the boy!! I didn't even know she gave birth because she didn't tell me anything before, I left!" Ares said in defense.

"Wait, the mother is missing?" Jeralt said.

"Remember that job request? Cele along with many more are missing. The main connection, they all used to work for Lord Alexander." Ares said seriously.

"Have any more people gone missing these past few days?" Jeralt said seriously.
"4 so far." He said.

Anna was silent as she heard this.

"Jeralt, I think it would be better if we left."

- Pond -

"Sing with me a song, of birthright and love, the light scatters to the stars above~

*Dawn breaks through the gloom, Lost in Thoughts, all alone ~*" Arisa and Sothis sang happily as they both dancing on the surface of the water.

She was dressed in a plain black shirt and short she had changed into. Amir giggled as she was floating pleasantly in the water, with Puka swimming close to her and Feh perched happily in a nearby tree. Ymir was swimming underwater happily and even spotted a few water spirits. She swam a little bit to the deeper side and spotted something gleaming on the pound bed. She swam to it and picked it up. It was the size of a golf ball and covered in mud. Using her fingers, she cleaned it and her eyes went wide, quickly swam to the surface.

"Gasspp!!" She gasped for air, catching the attention of the two girls.

"N-no way!!" Ymir shook as she felt her eyes water as she felt a sad smile come to her lips.

"Ymir, what's wrong?" Arisa said as she walked over to her and Amir swum.

"After all these years....Papa.....you hid it here...." Ymir said.

The girl turned to them and showed them a strange stone.

"Wait....that's a Heroes Relic!!" Arisa said and Ymir blinked.

"You know about these?" She said.

The strange stone was a Crest stone. It was embedded in a snowflake shape metal with moonstone surrounding it. It reminded Arisa of the relic, Rafail gem.

"This....it was my dad's.....to think....My mother was searching for it....my father hid it from her...now....it's...." Joy was all Ymir felt as she held the relic in her hands and hugged it to her chest.

"It went missing a day before my father passed away...." she said, and the two girls hugged her.

"It's okay. You can cry. Let it all out." Arisa said and Ymir began bawling her eyes out as she held the necklace to her chest.

After so long, she finally has some relief.

- Later at Night -
She had returned to her mansion like usual (unfortunately) before her mother came to check on her. It was later at night; she had hidden the necklace in a secret area in her room. Currently she was twirling her wooden lance, practicing trusting it. She couldn't help but smile with joy because of what she had found today. What's more.....

"Look at you. Glad to see you smiling."

Ymir turned to her mirror and smiled at the reflection of the faceless woman.

"You're back!! It's been so long!!" She walked up to it and the woman gave her a sad smile.

"Sorry, had to deal with a few things. I don't have much time left you know." The woman said and Ymir looked at her sadly.

"You're going away...?" Ymir asked and the woman shook her head.

"I wouldn't say that. I'll always live inside of you, even if I disappeared." The woman got out of the mirror, her body was completely seen through and gently hugged the girl.

"Will I ever meet you again?" Ymir said and the woman smiled sadly and kissed her forehead.

"Maybe one day. Till then, rest. The time for you to spread your wings is close." The woman said and disappeared.

Ymir smiled sadly and nodded.

"I hope that day comes." She muttered.

"My you're an utter fool."

The mirror again rippled, and she glared at the strange dark shadow that appeared in it. It was that voice that would whisper to her.

"You been shutting me out. Denying my existence!!! You think you can keep ignoring me for a long time?!" It said and Ymir pointed her finger at it.

"I'll keep ignoring you and won't let you win this battle!!! I met people who actually care about me. It's thanks to them I am happier and can control my power now!!! They care about me unlike mother!" She yelled and the voice just huffed.

"Hhmp. I used to think the same." It said and that threw off the girl.

It smirked slyly and smiled.

"I used to have friends, people I trust. And you know what that end like?" It said and pointed to her chest, "My heart ripped out and slathered!!! Left to rot!" It giggled and Ymir backed away as she
felt once more the invisible arms hug around her.

"Remember [--------], everything is a liar." It giggled and disappeared.

"No...the only liar is you!" Ymir said.

Unknown to the girl, Lawson mange to bear part of the conversation. He was sent to check on the girl, but he did not expect to hear the girl talking to herself.

"So, that woman is finally awakening...." he smirked and left to inform his master.

Oh, what joy this will bring her.

- 10 minutes later -

"I see.....so that woman is finally awakening. But......" Cornelia, the most fake face in all of Fodlan, was hesitant.

"But what my lady?" Lawson said and she shook her head.

"No, it is nothing. What is concerning me is that her mentality and magic are becoming stabilized. We need her power to go out of control in order for the ritual to work. How is she able to learn to control her power?" Cornelia said.

"I manage to overhear that she has made.... friends." Lawson said.

"Friends? That girl shouldn't have been able to speak to anyone else other than us and those other 6 brats!!! Who are these so-called friends of hers?" Cornelia said.

"We don't know. Also, the results of the experiments have come in." He said and handed her a document.

The woman growled at the results and threw the papers on her desk.

"Not even that woman Cele was compatible!! An utter failure like the rest of them!!" She said.

"They all became either demonic Beast, went insane, or died. None of them survive the Crest implements." Lawson said.

"Sighhhh.......Lawson." Cornelia suddenly turned to her butler and spoke, "Investigate who these friends of Ymir are. We can't afford to take any more people from the town." She said and he bowed.

"As you wish." He said and left.

Once the door was closed, Cornelia stood up threw the papers all over the floor.

"Why did you make things so difficult for me Alexander?!" She roared furiously.

"We'll.....never...tell you anything!!! My loyalty to Lord Alexander!!! Hail The Fell Star!!"
Cornelia went to a stone medium box that she had hidden behind a bookshelf. It was strange stuff. Despite it being made of bones, it was made similar to the shape of a snowflake. In the center of it, was a missing Crest stone.

"The stupid relic won't work without the Crest stone but......" her lips curved to a wicked smile that one could describe as the devil.

"Oh, I see how it is Alexander.......it never had a Crest stone to begin with..."

- 1 week later -

"A lunar festival?" Arisa said as the girls were currently in the bookshop helping Rensen with a new order of books that needed to be in their proper sections.

"Correct. It is to celebrate the last week of the Blue Sea moon. Especially because of the legend of the Goddess in this land." Rensen said.

Arisa blinked and wanted to hear more.

"It is said that when the goddess came upon this land, she blessed it flowers. She took the soulless soil in her hands and wept. Her tears brought forth the first flowers to Faerghus. Let me show you quickly." He said picked up a book about flowers.

He opened to a certain page and showed a drawing of a beautiful star shaped flower with pink flower petals that faded to green to the center of it. The second drawing next to it was depicted to glow like a rainbow during the night.

"It's beautiful. What is it called?" She asked.

"The Heaven Wolf Star. Also called Sirius." He smiled sadly.

"Hmm....a reference to Sothis name in Chinese. Not bad." Arisa thought.

"I want to see one. Where do they grow?" She asked.

"Unfortunately, these flowers no longer exist. They went extinct as the years went by due to war and the bloody history of Fodlan. They say this flower had the ability to cure anyone. Much more, that that they were said to be the direct blessing of the goddess when new children were born. So, they may live a long and healthy life." He said.

"Such a legend.... yet the flower looks familiar. Ooohhh!!! I really wish I had a body right now!!" Sothis grumbled in her mind and Arisa could not help but giggle.

"Arisa!!!! Come on!! It's time to go meditating!!" Amir called out once she was done with her pile of boxes.

"Coming!!" Arisa said and ran out the door to catch up with her friends.
"I want to show you guys something." Ymir said with a giggle while the other two looked at each other confused.

Ymir as she took out her father's necklace and instantly, Arisa was on edge.

"I have a bad feeling." Sothis appeared and stood in front of the girls.

"Umm...Ymir...I don't think trying to use your dad's relic is a good idea." Amir said and Ymir just shook her head.

"I got to!! I need to see if I can call out that scythe he used to use." Amir said as her little wings flapped.

She's been using magic to hide them from her mother. Ymir took a deep breath and closed her eyes, remembering when she would watch her father call forth his relic. She held it to her chest, and felt it pulse in her hand.

"(Relic of the children of the goddess...listen to my songs.... listen to my prayer...)" she spoke in the same language she communicated with Firo yet for some reason, Sothis could understand what she is saying.

"(Freeze all those her enter your place of ice and snow. Give your love to your children and show no mercy to those who dare harm your home. Hear my hear my plea...hear my song....hear my cries.....come...and answer me, Skadi-Ondergoed!)" Amir said as the necklace glowed a bright unnatural blue and the ground froze beneath her feet.

"Guhhhh!!" Ymir gritted her teeth as her hands were becoming covered in ice.

"Ymir!!" Arisa yelled as he used her cloak to protect herself.

"Come......on!!" Ymir yelled as she refused to let it make her fall.

Her energy was being drained and her head was beginning to pound.

"Grr....grr....RRRAAAAHHHHHHHHH!!!" She screamed a slammed the relic to the ground.

The blinding light hurt everyone's eyes and Sothis quickly disappeared for her safety. Arisa and Amir opened their eyes once the light settled, revealing a panting Ymir, with a long weapon in her hand. The hero’s relic looked like a fusion between Death Knights scythe and the Lance of Ruin. It had bone like spikes like looked like a Demonic Beast Teeth on both sides of the blades, what’s more, they twitched. The tip scythe curled in bit, almost like a spiral. Where the scythe began, there, glowing blue and pulsing, was the Crest stone but it had a much different look than the regular hero relics. This looked like it has veins growing out of the Crest stone and all over the scythe.

"I....I...I did it!!" The girl looked up to them and both Arisa and Amir gasped.

Her orange pink pastel hair has streaks of a sickly pale blue, her left eye had become the color of blood and the pupil turned to the symbol of her Crest.
"Wait....I know that Crest.....I know it...it's.....one Crest is related to Ice....The Crest of Aubin....one of the.....6 Crest Lost in History." Arisa said as she slowly walked towards her friend.

"Hahahaha!!! I did it Papa!!! I did it!!! I can wield Skadi too!!! I did it!!" She said happily, but what was scaring the girls more was that she was crying tears of blood.

"Ymir.....you need to let go of the relic...now..." Arisa said softly and Ymir just grinned, her teeth had become a bit pointy.

"Be quite Fell Star. You dare order me?" And everyone's blood ran cold.

Ymir's joyful face had become one of horror as she screamed and threw the relic to the ground. Her eye and hair had turned back to normal as well as her teeth. Ymir shook as she fell to her knees and hugged herself.

"That wasn't me...that's wasn't me...that wasn't me...." she kept repeating over and over again.

"Ahahahaha!!! I was so close!!! We were so close to becoming one of my vessels!!" The voice laughed joyfully as the invisible arms wrapped around her like some sick grotesque feeling.

"Oh [--------.]...sigh.....hahahaha....we were so close.....I would have given you the power to destroy and send this land to an ice age!!! We could have killed Cornelia and avenged your father!! But my dear vessel, your body is not ready to wield such power! Look at the pathetic and weakling you are. We be damn now." It laughed as the scythe turned back to the necklace.

What the voice did not expect.....

"Get your hands off her."

It froze as both looked towards the sudden voice and saw Arisa looking coldly not at Ymir, but at the one behind hugging her. Yet, the color of mint green was in Arisa's eyes. The voice smirked as it let go of Ymir and touched Arisa's face with a wicked smile. Its hand felt sick to the touch yet cold like ice.

"So, you finally did it Sothis. You took over your vessel just like Serios wanted." It grinned until Arisa smirked.

"Who said I was Sothis?" Instantly the voice backed away and snarled.

"Look you damn persona," Arisa pointed her finger at it, "I'm not going to let you hurt my friend nor try and take over her like you want to. Yeah, I admit, I'm afraid of you. After all, that's the natural reaction of a human. To be afraid. Honestly, you touching me, I wanted to run away and hide under a blanket. Honestly, I'm shaking right now and trying not to cry." Arisa said as the voice giggled and towered over her.

She really was doing everything not to burst out crying as the voice began to take one a shape of a faceless woman. Only her and Ymir could see her, but Amir could sense it and had taken out her daggers, ready to kill.
"Hahhah. You're older than you look. Very well then. I'll hold off for now since you had the balls to face me. But remember this vessel of the Fell Star." It smiled as its hands wrapped around her neck, "I always get my way."

With that, it shattered to snowflakes.

"Gasp!!! Gasp!!! Gasp!!!" Arisa fell on all fours, gasping for air, panting, and finally letting tears fall from her eyes, they had turned back to their shades of brown and green.

"Are you okay?" Amir ran up to her and Ymir was still in her place.

"I'm so sorry..." Ymir said whispered and Arisa was helped up.

"It's alright." She said and the girl shook her head.

"It's not alright. You saw....you saw yo----!!" The girl whined when Arisa suddenly gave her a karate chop on the head.

Ymir held her head and looked at her friend with teary eyes and a pout, while Arisa just huffed.

"I already know you're going to tell us that we should stop being friends but absolutely not!!! No way am I going to abandon you!!! We're getting you the hell out of this town!! You're coming with us!" Arisa declared.

Both Ymir and Amir looked at her shocked. Arisa sighed and hugged her.

"You remind me too much of an old friend....I'm going to help you just like I help her. So, have some faith in me? Alright?" She smiled at her warmly.

Ymir could not help but mirror the smile back and nodded.

"Okay!!"

- Later at Night -

"Okay, so you use a square formation for this then.....umm....would that apply to use magic users?" Ymir had asked Arisa as the three girls were currently back on the bookstore.

The pink haired girl had her relic hidden under her shirt and also after a massive scolding from her uncle, was reflecting at her own stupidity at trying to use her father's relic when it was clear as day her body was not ready for such power. The good thing is, the girl wasn't afraid her friends would leave her. Both Amir and Ymir swore they wouldn't and were working together with Ares to help sneak her out of the town along with his parents and son.

"Unfortunately, no. Magic users true can be on the offensive side however the number one main weakness is how vulnerable we are. We don't have a weapon to defend ourselves and it can take time to cast a spell. That's why the majority of mages are in the back to support the others. Especially when healing. Remember, this is also a limit in the distance we can cast a healing spell. You also need to be aware of the range of your magic attacks." Arisa said as bath the two other
girls were taking notes.

"I'm more of the offensive side so that would put me in the frontlines correct?" Amir said and Arisa nodded.

"Correct. Amir, you tend to focus a lot on speed when you use your swords. But you also focus on the amount of force you unleash when you use an axe." She smiled the Duscurian girl blushed hearing that.

"Yes, I caught you using the axe the other day when you were sparing Temes. Nice try hiding it from me." Arisa teased and Amir glared.

"I'm so going to knock you down tomorrow." Amir challenged.

Ymir could not help but giggle. Only one more week left in this Blue Sea moon. It honestly has been the most joyful time Ymir has ever had. It has been a long-time since she had smiled this much. She enjoyed going hunting with her friends and their group. Getting to meet Jeralt, Anna, Yofos, Temes, Jorah was the best. Reuniting with Ares who she always saw as an older brother, plus meeting his son, who she learned was his name Dominic. He's two years younger than her. Learning to control her emotions. Being allowed to cry when she wished. To be able to act human. To even enjoy studying because her mother was not making her train horribly. Her laughing slowed down. Now that she thinks about it.....her mother has been...awfully silent. Even Lawson. She shook her head and went back to talking with the girls of a possible three-man formation. One, she would be the support while Arisa could be the defensive and Amir the offensive. And when needed to, they can instantly switch to each other’s roles.

"Okay, I like that but there is a bit of a problem. We need to figure out how not to leave ourselves wide open." Arisa said.

"Why not work on your barrier spells for extra protection? It is possible to even extend the barrier to wrap around your body." Sothis said in her mind.

"True, but there is a time limit." Arisa said.

Rensen could not help smiling watching the girls as he was busy organizing documents at the counter. Every day of the month at the same time, the girls would meet in his store and engulf themselves in their studies and stories. They would talk about magic, things they liked, and much more. He would even bring them a few snacks and tea for them to enjoy. There were times the girls would even practice singing. Customers that would come in would smile warmly and didn't mind seeing the girls talking and chatting. It was funny seeing Jeralt's daughter teach music to them. Except when the arguments between Amir and Ymir began. It was amusing seeing Arisa trying to stop them. It took Rensen each to stop them because of how loud they would get. Since Ymir was introduced, Jeralt was happy to see the girls make a new friend. She would even join them on hunting trips. Poor a Ymir screamed at the sight of bugs. Arisa laughed as did Amir. Ymir pouted and them smiled as she pointed out the spider next to them. Now that made the other two girls scream for their lives. Jeralt and his men, along with Anna, laughed at the sight. The girls became closer and closer. A friendship that bloomed was a beautiful. The girls even thought themselves as sisters. Ymir was more than happy. To call this time nothing but a blessing.

However.......
"Wel----!!" Rensen had turned pale as paper when he saw who had come into his shop.

The bell that once had a happy ring, sounded dull as he looked at furious woman before him and her butler who had a smirk.

"Where is she?!!" Cornelia said coldly and Lawson pointed to the table where the girls were chattering and turned towards the direction.

"Cornelia wai---!!" He said but was held back by Lawson.

The said woman had already stormed to where the girls were. A few customers had turned pale once Cornelia was behind Ymir. None of the girls noticed her presence until the woman forcefully turned Ymir to her and slapped her. Arisa froze once her eyes landed on the one responsible for raising their hand on her friend.

SLAP!!

The bookstore once filled with warmth, had turned cold. Ymir stood in shock as her cheek had turned red and she slowly looked up towards her mother. Arisa was covering her mouth in shock and Amir could not believe what she saw. Cornelia looked down at her daughter in disgust for being with the commoners. She was a noble and should know her place. She dares escape the mansion when she isn't supposed too?! She already has enough to deal with!! Let alone the ritual is already a hassle!!

"So, this is where you have been escaping too!! Avoiding the training you have to do after your lessons you foolish girl!! We're returning back to the manner right this instantly!" Cornelia yelled coldly down at Ymir.

Ymir wanted to cry. She just wanted to live her life. Any small form of happiness was enough for her. For her mother to discover her....for Lawson to have a smirk...everything was just crashing down.

"Stop it!!! Why would you treat your daughter this way?!!"

Many gasped as they saw that it was Arisa who spoke back to Cornelia. The woman turned to her with a glare that screamed murder, but Arisa looked back the same.

"Child, stay out of this." The older woman said coldly.

Cornelia felt that the girl looked familiar but didn't know where. Lawson had raised an eyebrow as the girl floated up and pulled up her sleeves.
"No, I won't you bloody hag!!! I don't give a damn if you are the mage that cured the plague!! What you just did is physical and emotional abuse!! Apologize to your daughter and treated her like a human being!!" Arisa yelled as she pointed at her like an executioner.

Everyone was stunned to silence and Ymir looked at her in shock. In all her life, only her father and Rensen defended her like this. Cornelia had turned red from anger and raised her hand to send a magic attack to her for such offensive words.

"CORNELIA DON'T!" Rensen yelled.

"Mother please!!" Ymir yelled and pulled her left arm.

Cornelia noticed everyone around the shop staring and Arisa was being held back by Amir. The Duscurian girl was using her manic to cancel out the knives Arisa was trying to make using her magic.

"Let me go!!" Arisa yelled as she trashed around.

"(You stupid idiot!!!)" Amir and Firo said.

"Please mother!! I won't come back!! I swear!! Please!!" Ymir got on her knees and begged.

Cornelia scoffed and put her hand down. The fact that her daughter is even begging is an insult to the nobles.

"Very well then. Let us leave this place Lawson. Be honored girl." Cornelia looked at Arisa coldly, "My daughter begged for your life to be spared." She said spat and about to leave but froze.

Only Arisa could see the look of pure coldness that befell over Sothis as she looked down at Cornelia. Her once mint colored eyes hold nothing but storms of anger as the shadows cast over her face. She floated above the woman, looking down at her like a disgusting parasite. Rage, she felt. Anger. This is when her own emotions and Arisa's became one. Both human and goddess wanted nothing more than to end the life of this woman.

"You dare harm this child woman? If I had a body of my own, I would have slaughtered you and your minions." Sothis's voice was colder than ice that Arisa shivered.

Cornelia place her hand on the back of her neck, and suddenly she felt very afraid for some reason. She needed to leave now.

"Let's go." Was all the woman said as Lawson followed behind her.

Ymir, with her head down in shame, waved goodbye to her friend and followed after mother. The door slammed shut and there was a tense silence.

"Let go....." was all Arisa muttered as Amir let her go.

Sothis still held the look of ice on her face as she looked out the window, towards the carriage that Cornelia boarded. The feeling of Cornelia's neck was getting worse by the second.

- 10 minutes later -
"It's not fair!!!! If I knew her mother was that witch, I would have immediately helped her hide!!"
Arisa yelled frustrated in her room.

Rensen told Ares what happened after he took the girls back to the cabin. The former knight was furious and Jeralt tried to calm him down. He had to knock the man out because of how pissed he was. He wasn't the only one though. Jeralt and the rest were furious also. Amir was silent as she watched her friend pace back and forth in their room. Many said that Arisa was brave to have spoken to a noble like that. At this point, the girl did not care. She was definitely going to kill that bitch personally when she older, so Dimitri won't have to deal with her in the future. No.....she'll definitely make that bitch spill everything about Those Who Slither in the Dark so Dimitri can learn who the true enemy is. Not Edelgard. She knows Edelgard is not the real enemy.

"We can't do anything Arisa!! Cornelia is the noble that controls this area. We can't save Ymir....Besides...we only have a week left..we can't even get near the manor that she lives in."
Amir said.

Arisa was just pissed. Sothis felt that anger that her vessel did.

"Did you forget we were already planning to help her escape!!? No way an I am backing out of this or so call help me I'll never be able to face Theresa or my brother in the afterlife!" Arisa roared and Amir flinched.

"Calm yourself Arisa Byleth." Sothis said as she floated in front of her, placing her hands on her shoulder.

"Believe me, I am just as furious but acting on impulse would do us no good. If I wasn't a "holy" woman, I would slaughter Cornelia if I could. Then again, I don't have a body." Sothis sighed.

"Wait...." Arisa suddenly said and a crooked smile formed on her face as she slowly turned to Feh, as did Amir and Sothis.

"We may not be able to enter the mansion, but who says we can't have eyes watching?" Arisa suddenly grinned and Feh blinked.

"No no no no no!!" Both Sothis and Amir said.

- 1 hour later -

Late midnight it was. Dressed in pure black cloaks along with a fire tomen underneath their clothing to keep themselves warm, Amir and Arisa had snuck out of the cabin and the woods. The night of Faerghus felt like winters and both girls were doing everything in their power not to run back to the cabin to escape the cold. The woods looked terrifying in the dark in this land in particular. The only ones not affected were Puka and Feh, who moved around like nothing. Arisa was using a light spell to be able to see the hidden path that Ymir had showed them before. Both girls hated the darkness but if it means they can save their friend, they would gladly walk into it. It was a bit of a funny sightseeing Amir's light pink silver colored hair glow a bit in the dark.

"Chirp." Feh chirped from her head and flapped its wings in order to gently land on her arm, and Arisa nodded.

They had arrived at a good distance close to the mansion. Arisa could see a few of the windows
had lights on. Her face grimaced as she saw a couple of the servants.

"Skin pale like corpse.....those who Slither in the Dark...driven underground by Sothis and her children." Arisa thought and turned to Feh.

"Sight of Nightingale." She whispered, her own eyes turning a shade of gold, the same color of Feh's.

"Amir." Arisa and Amir stepped close, Arisa looked into her own eyes, making them also turn gold.

"What spell is this?" The girl asked.

"I came up with this spell a year ago. I wanted to increase my range of vision and eventually it led to this. We're able to see what Feh can see. We basically have the eyes of bird right now." She said and turned back to Feh.

She took put a small pouch and tied around his feet along with small little rolls scroll.

"You know what to do. Now go!!" Arisa raised her arm and Feh flew towards the manner.

"Amir, I want you to draw out the manor. We have 6 days. On the 31st is the day of the festival. We're leaving that day and breaking her out of here." She said firmly.

Amir nodded and prayed to the Goddess of the Forest to protect them.

- Inside the mansion -

Slap, whip slap!!

The sounds of screams could be heard from Cornelia's room. The sound being hit brutally. The agonizing screams of a child. The servants merely continued their work like nothing while the head butler simply was silent. The goal was to make the girl break. To break her mind. Her mentality.

"You foolish child!! You are the heir to the major Crest you bare!!! Know your place as noble!!" Cornelia roared furiously as she whipped Ymir again.

The girl could only cry as her back was bloodily, covered in ashes. Her cheeks were red from the slaps she had received. Her hands were red from the amount of magic she used to rely and defend herself. Yet, she still held tightly onto the necklace of her father.

"I'm sorry!! I'm sorry!! Please stop mother!!" Ymir cried.

Cornelia had enough and grabbed her by her hair.

"Remember Ymir! You are the heir to this household and also your job is to woo one of the Prince." She said and threw her back onto the floor, about to storm out till she noticed the girl holding something in her chest.

"No!!" Ymir screamed as her mother ripped the necklace out of her bloodied hands.
Cornelia gasped and began laughing when she realized what the necklace was.

"To think you had the relic the whole time!!! Alexander you did well hiding it from me!!" She laughed and left out the room.

Ymir cried as she hugged herself. She hated it...she absolutely hated it. The small amount of joy she had, now gone. She missed Arisa, she missed Amir. She is shaking as she stood up to leave to her room. A single strand of her hair had turned a sickly blue.

From the window, Feh was perched on a tree not far, frozen stiff as it was registering everything she saw and was horrified. Through her eyes, Amir was crying, and Arisa was shaking with anger.

"That.....bitch.....!!!" She roared and took out her sword and began slashing at a tree trunk to unleash her rage.

She gritted her teeth and spoke.

"Feh, follow her." Arisa ordered and the snowy owl did just that.

A few minutes later, Ymir was in her room, she had just finished bathing and was in pain. As she was limping to her room, many of the servants just gave her cold looks or mocked her. She was angry, in pain. Feh flew to window and lightly tapped on it with her beak. Ymir flinched but then her face turned to confusion, seeing the white owl there. She opened the window and it chirped.

"Hello?" She said horsey, her voice sore from screaming.

"Wait....you're Feh..." Ymir said as her eyes slowly went wide.

Feh gently nuzzled her cheek and gave her a small note, the girl immediately opened it. She began crying tears of joy when it glowed a bit, showing glowing letters. It was Arisa and Amir.

"We'll save you. We promise. But we can't do it alone. You're the only one who knows the place in an out. Think a map can help us?"

It read. Simple and short. Straight to the point. That was just like them. Ymir quickly ran to her drawer and pulled out a small dice, putting it in a pouch and tied it to Feh's foot with a note.

"It has the entire structure of the house. Only my father knew of this place before I was born. He mapped it out completely. I manage to take this dice before got her hands on it. Please, take this to them." She said.

The note glowed again more words appeared.

"Heard you loud and clear!! We'll get you out. I promise. One week. You can do it."

Ymir smile and nodded. Feh chirped and nuzzled her cheek one last time before it flew off. The
girl wept as she closed the window and prayed to the goddess that she will survive to escape this hell she has been imprisoned in. It hurt even more now that her father's necklace was in her mother's hand. She felt warm familiar arms wrap around and cried.

"You're here....you're here....." she wept and it was the faceless woman.

The woman smiled sadly and spoke.

"One week....you need to hold on. I promise this is almost over....just hold a bit longer [-------]." she said.

[ --- ]

Cornelia could not be more joyful as she held the lost relic of Skadi-Ondurgud!! This weapon was said to be the second strongest weapons of the 10 no, 12 Elites!! To think her husband had hidden it so well with his daughter. The woman could not help but laugh out loudly as she walked down the stairs that led to an underground lab beneath the mansion. Lawson listened as he kicked a cage that was near the entrance, only making the human inside of it laugh like a mad beast. There were multiple people trapped in cages, corpses aligned on tables, blades sticking out of them. There were humans chained by the neck. All these all either laughed in madness or each one dropping dead one by one.

"You.....hag....pay....for....this...." both of them turned on a single cage where a lone man laid on it's floor.

"Oh, you haven't dropped dead yet Arc? I'm surprised you're even still alive." Cornelia said and the man just grunted.

He was unable to move a single muscle of his body other than a few movements of his lips.

"Stupid human. You dare speak to her that way despite being at death's door?" Lawson yelled and kicked the cage.

Arc gave a smile as blood began to seep from his lips.

"Hail....Sirius...." was all he said before his body began to twitch uncontrollably.

Cornelia's face held no emotion as his body exploded. Droplets of blood spattered on her face, organs on the floor. A leg and arm left. All that was left was a pool of blood. The woman turned to Lawson and nodded. That was the sign to clean up the mess.

"He was another failure as well. Well, no matter." She smiled at the relic in her hand, "It will soon be time for you to come back Cirina. To unleash your wrath." Cornelia chuckled as she placed the necklace in the center of the snowflake like staff.

The staff began glowing and there was a click as the necklace seems to fuse with it and shrunk to the size of a Crest stone. Cornelia couldn't be happier. Till the 31st day of the Blue Sea moon, they need to prepare her daughter.
"Un...fucken believable!!! I knew it, I knew it!!" Ares roared in the forest.

Arisa had asked to speak privately with him once she made sure her father wasn't in the kitchen. She took him to the woods, where she made sure no one would hear them. She told him everything that she witnessed. She had asked Amir not to come with them because the Duscurian girl was not ready to hear such words. Arisa could only watch in sadness as Ares repeatedly punched a tree trunk.

"That's why I'm telling you this Ares. You're the only adult I can trust this information with. Not only that, I did some deeper investigation and found that Cornelia's servants have been kidnapping people for human experiments." She said and Ares froze as he slowly turned back to the young girl.

No. Right now, Byleth looked nothing like a child. She looked like a grown adult. Arisa walked up to him.

"Have you ever heard of an organization called Those Who Slither in The Dark?" She said.

"Or for fucks sake.....I never thought I would hear those words again..." he said, and her eyes went wide.

"So, you do know!! Then you can help us save Y-----!!" She didn't finish because he suddenly held her shoulders.

"That isn't her real name." He stated.

"What....?" She said.

"As much as I want to say it....I can't. Yofos was able to identify that a curse was placed on her name. This...." he took stick on the ground and began to write in the dirt "Is the most I can do. That is her real name." He said and Arisa was shocked and turned back to him.

"As for...those who Slither in the Dark...I don't know how the hell you know about them but it's the very reason why another organization was created in secret. Not even the Church knows about it. Byleth....this is real danger. We're up against Cornelia. One of the leaders. Jeralt will skin me alive if he finds out about this. Who else, can we trust?" He said.

He was desperate. He swore to protect his Lord's daughter. Look at him now....he felt like he failed. He felt a warm hand on his head and looked up to see Byleth smiling.

"I know. It's a risk I'm willing to take. You all took the risk of leaving the church for my sake didn't you?" She said and his eyes widened.

"'Now, it's my turn to take a risk.'"
She took long deep breaths to as she sat alone in the forest. She had ordered Amir and Ares to begin preparing all the gear needed for this operation rescue mission. Ares's family has already been taken to a safe place and Amir had been using magic to spread rumors of Cornelia was involved in the death of her husband. If rumors could ruin at least a small part of that hag’s reputation, she's hoping it can be enough to at least make The King have some form of distrust of her, and possibly, kick her out. Arisa was letting the side of Byleth take over. These past two years have been enough for her to learn a lot. Tactics, military formations, none which she had any interest in her previous life. Now looking at herself, even her mentality, despite that of an adult, was soaking up information like a sponge. This is where a tactician was born. She took another deep breath and opened her eyes, seeing Sothis floating in front of her. The goddess held a frown in her features and the girl have her a small smile.

"You're mad." Was all the goddess said.

There was a silence for a good 10 seconds before she spoke again.

"Are you truly ready for this? This battle against Cornelia will be real. Are you ready...to truly spill blood and accept the name, the Ashen Demon? Or...The Fell Star?" Sothis said.

Arisa chuckled dryly and spoke.

"No, I'm not ready....I'm very much afraid....I used to live a life where there was no need of constant survival yet look at me now...of course I am afraid. It is a natural human reaction. Like I told 's other self, I want to cry. I want to run away. But what's keeping me from doing that...is a single memory of a friend I cherish with all my heart. Guess you can say she was my first love." Arisa gave her a sad grin, and Sothis could not help but gently cup the girl's cheeks and gave her a sad smile.

"I always knew...." Sothis said as she rested her forehead on Arisa's, "I recovered a few of my memories....Let's stop this woman...together."

- With Ymir -

"I hate this.....how much longer.....I want to leave...." with nothing but agony in her voice, she whimpered as each step she took stun.

Ymir limped emotionless to her room. The training that has been forcefully brought upon her has been nothing but a nightmare. The servant showed absolutely no mercy and enjoyed making her scream. Cornelia would simply watch, not matter how much she plead. Her only reason she has not gone insane yet is because if the sole promise her friends made to her. Her once pink oranges colored hair had streaks of white because of the stress, physical and emotional abuse she has been enduring. It was getting her. She wanted to disappear. She wanted to lash out at everything and destroy everything. The voice was becoming louder and louder and even she was losing control of her magic. Thankfully it hasn't gotten to the point she had killed someone. But deep down, she
truly wanted to taste the blood of those that have made her suffer. Especially her own mother. She
touched her own face, clawing it to get rid of the smile that was forming. A few more minutes and
arrived at her room, closing the door, dropping to the floor. She didn't give a damn if they saw her
on the floor. She was just in too much pain to move. Her body covered in cuts and bruises. Her
back still fresh with gashes from the whips she had received from both her mother and Lawson.
She really wanted the house to burn down.

"I want to leave........I want to leave.....I...hate.....this place....." she muttered repeatedly.

What she didn't notice was that her once gray eyes had turned a dark hue of red, her pupils turnig to
her Crest symbol. Her eyes closed, allowing sleep to take her.

- Dream -

In darkness she sat, and in darkness she swam. Everything around her has the scent of iron. It
made want to vomit.

"The nightmare of the light holding my life, falling down repeats~"

She heard singing and stood up, walking towards it. Each step she took, her own hair was
becoming a ghostly sick pale blue. Each step, her skin becomes paler. But she did not know that.

"It will go on no matter where; till the time this world reaches its end."

Dancing in the shadows was a young girl figure with red eyes that glowed. Her dress was white yet
covered in blood stains, ripped in different parts. Yet what was more disturbing was the hole in the
center of her chest. She could see blood dripping from it. The girl stopped, seems it noticed her
presence and slowly turn to her with a faceless face. It grinned evilly to her, showing its fangs.
Ymir screamed and tried to run but the figure only appeared before her and cupped her cheeks. She
shook. She wanted to run but she couldn't.

"Aren't you tired? Aren't you tired of waiting for those friends of yours? The pain your mother and
this entire bloody mansion has caused you."

It giggled as it gently held onto her cheeks. Caressing them with a sick love and affection.

"Stop...just stop....I believe in them...they'll come for me...I will escape......" Ymir mumbled as her
lip quivered.

The faceless girl giggled and circled around her, smiling.
"Are you sure? Come on now....Ymir....is that even your real name.....? Don't you want to end it all.....sink this place to an abyss?" It smiled.

It made her remember everything horrible things her mother did to her. It purposely held her head with both hands, Ymir screamed for it to stop. Once again, this time, Ymir was looking not at a shadow, but at herself. Both girls had the exact face. The strange marking Ymir remembered it was her Crest. It hurt...it hurt...it hurt...

"Don't worry. It is almost time."

And the darkness swallowed her whole.

-Dream Over-

"AAAAHHHHHHHHH!!"

She woke up screaming and completely out of breath, shaking and hugging herself. Making sure she was the same person.

"Where are you...where are you...." she kept repeating, wanting to find the other faceless woman that would comfort her.

"Just one more day...Just one more day......." Ymir said.

-The Next Day: Blue Sea Moon Lunar Festival-

The town was flourish with life surprisingly on this day. Arisa also learned it was [--------] birthday. The citizens were dancing, drinking, and having fun. Some even having a little too much. While the town celebrated, Jeralt, Anna and the rest are packing their things. He allowed the girls with the company of Ares to go to the bookstore one last time. There was only one man who was not enjoying this day at all. Rensen. The man was beyond worried of what his friend's daughter. He couldn't do anything. He couldn't. He saw the other two girls discussing things and even a map. He knew the girls were planning to help their friend escape. Even Ares was helping them map out the final details before they left in 20 minutes.

"Alex....forgive me for what I am about to do..." he muttered and finally made up his mind as he went to the back and unseal vault that was hidden behind a shelf.

He took out a particular box with a strange marking on it. The engravings on it we're the color of a metallic blue and over the box, was the symbol of the Crest of Aubin. He sighed and walked over to the three who went silent when they saw him.
"It's alright. No one comes in after this time. Everyone, I wish to speak with you." He said.

Arisa was silent but nodded. Area's eyes went wide when he recognized the box. How many years has it been since he has seen it.

"That's..That's Lord Alexander's-----!" He barely forms words.

Rensen places the box down and whispered a spell that opened it. Arisa could see the gears turning like clocks, each click meant a lock was undone. It reminded her of a steampunk music box. However, the contents inside were far from a music box. It was a set of strange tools that looked like they were made of bones. Each one had the Crest symbol carved on them.

"These tools belonged to Ymir's father, the holder of the lost Crest, Aubin. He was the last of his clan who was said to help build and create the relics that resonate with Crest. For many years, it has been believed to have been lost..but in reality...by my friend's wish...I hid these." He smiled sadly.

Arisa was silent as she listens to this and sighed.

"This explains many things.......Cornelia is trying to awaken that power within Ymir. At this rate......." Arisa gritted her teeth and looked directly to Rensen, who flinched.

"Sir, I can tell you truly care about her. If you stay, it's also most likely Cornelia will come after you. Please," she extended her hand to him, "Come with us. Help us save our friend. I'm also sure my father would more than welcome you to our company once you explain the situation to him. Also, you're a minor Crest wilder of Aubin, aren't you?" Arisa said.

Rensen looked at her surprised.

"I have Crest before you ask." Arisa said bluntly and Ares began choking on his spit because not even he or anyone knew of that.

"You act more mature t------!!!"

BOOOOMMMM!!

"AHHH!! CORNELIA'S MANOR IS ON FIRE!!"

The sudden sound of an explosion sent a tremor through the entire town. Every building shook. They all ran out and Arisa's and Amir's eyes went wide. A huge fire covered half the manor. Arisa at this point said, "FUCK THE PLAN!! WE'RE GOING NOW!!" she yelled.

"Sir Rensen, please get your belongings and go with my father!!! Amir and I are going to save Ymir!! Ares, get Anna for back up!" Arisa yelled and both girls sprinted before Ares could stop them.

"Girls wait!!" Rensen yelled but they were gone.
Ymir followed behind the servants of her household that were assigned to train her by her mother. But she also one of them was new. They wore a mask of a plague doctor and it unnerved her. She sighed and just prayed to the goddess that girls and Ares were coming for her. She knows they will. But something felt different today. Like an omen.

"Wait, the training room is this way." She said as they turned to a different direction.

"Today is different. You will go through "a different " kind of training." One magician said.

Ymir was getting a really bad feeling. They arrived at a door made of metal. Ymir felt nothing but dread and began to walk back but began screaming and thrashing as the magicians began to forcefully grab her and forced her to the room. There, tables of knives, needles, and other unknown tools were there. A single stone bed where she was forcibly tied down. Her eyes scanned the room and she froze once she spotted many familiar faces in a cage. They were the former servants of her home. They all looked dead, a few laughing in madness. Reality began to sink in when she realized that it was her mother the reason they were like this.

"LET ME GO!! LET ME GO!!" She screamed when she realized they were about to do the same to her.

"They'll kill you."

She heard the voice again as she screamed for them to let her go. The magician pulled out the Crest stone and placed it on her chest.

"AAAAAAAAHHHHH!!" She screamed as it began to crackle in blue light, vein like arms came out of it and implanted itself forcefully into her chest.

"Aaareghh!!!! Aaahhhh!!" She screamed as veins began to form around her body as they chained down her wrist, and ankles to the stone bed.

Her eyes rolled back as her back arched up, her screamed becoming louder and louder as her veins turned the unnatural color blue. Her hair becoming a sickly pale blue and one of her eyes had turned red. She screamed, begging for it to stop but not even words could leave her lips.

"Don't you want this to end?"

"STOOP!!" She screamed as a blade was held above her heart. She kept screaming as the Crest stone pulsed. Yet the voice inside her smiled. It wanted to hear it from her. It can save her. All she had to do was say yes and all the pain would go away. Ymir screams were becoming gurgles of blood as her eyes landed on the corpse of Cele, who was mutilated. Her lifeless head, looking back at her.
"I don't want to die!! I don't want to die!!" Those thoughts plagued her mind as she saw the blade about to come down only a few inches from her heart. The girl, finally snapped and gave in.

I just want this to end.

"As you wish."

- Current time: Inside the Manor-

Back to the time

When I used to feel your hand in mine

Tiniest tenderness

Might it melt the ice into tears

Blood...blood....kill....kill every single one that caused her pain.

She laughed and cackled as her eyes had turned a bloody red with the Crest markings in her eyes. Her hair had turned a sickly pale blue, a scythe made of bones was in her hands. She cackled and cried tears of blood as she killed each person that crossed her path. Lawson was her first victim. Oh, how she enjoyed seeing him begging for his life before she cut of his head and crushed it in her hands. The taste of the droplets of blood on her lips was so sweet as she licked her fingers.

"Oooohh...it's been so long......" her voice was so different compared to her soft kind and timid voice.

This voice sounded demonic. Evil. She laughed in joy as she killed another servant, her scythe absorbing the blood as the crate stone was pulsing a sick blue color.

Outside the manor, Cornelia was barely able to escape the fire if it wasn't for a maid that helped her. The woman screamed as half her face was burned by the flames. Everything went wrong!!

"This wasn't supposed to happen!!" She internally screamed as healing magic was being used on her left side of her face.

The scarring was so bad that she will be forced to use a mask to hide the burn scars that disfigured her face.

"We got to hurry!!" Arisa yelled as her and Amir bolted through the underground tunnels of the manner.

What Arisa hated more than anything was the rotting smell of flesh. She has a pretty good theory
"Aaaaaahhhhhhhhh!!" Both froze at the haunting scream, yet it sounded almost like a song.

"That sounds....like Tiamat....." Arisa said and both girls began running again till they reached a brick wall.

Arisa was about to start putting in the combination but there was no need.

"Get back!!" Amir yelled as both quickly jumped back as a door crumbled to pieces.

"Oh my god...." Arisa gasped as she saw the place was nothing but burning flames.

Colors of blue, red and green filled the place. The scent of burning flesh. The people that were in cages were burned to nothing but cinders. The girls coughed as they used a spell to create an air bubble around their heads to be able to breathe. The flames were hot yet also cold. The two girls walked, despite the intense heat, then....

"AAAAAAAAHHHHHHHH!!"

"GET DOWN!!" Arisa screamed as a blade was on the verge of cutting off Amir's head.

Sothis quickly used time pulse, right when the blade was about to kill Amir and Arisa this time quickly grabbed and pulled her friend down just on time.

"Aaaaaahhhhh!!"

"Oh Ymir....." Arisa felt hot tears filled her eyes as she saw her friend become something unthinkable.

Sothis eyes went wide as she saw the young girl now a cackling monster. Amir gasped and Arisa all she could do was grit her teeth in anger at was done to her friend.

With eyes a bloody red with the Crest markings in her eyes, tears of blood fell as she cried. She sang a sorrowful song, holding a scythe made of bones and covered in blood. Her once pink orange colored hair was now a sickly pale blue. Her dress was covered in blood stains. Ymir was nothing more like a demonic humanoid Beast. Her laughing immediately stopped once they landed on Arisa. There was tense Silence was the three other girls bent their knees, ready to run or defend themselves for their lives. Ymir began laughing once again and it suddenly became a full-blown wail of agony.

"Aaaaaahhh!! Hahahahahaha!!" Ymir cry sent a powerful just towards them that made them nothing more than to run away.

"We’re....too late...." Amir said.

Arisa gritted her teeth and refused to believe such.
"Ymir is still there. I know it." Arisa said and took her rapier out.

"Are you crazy?! She isn't human anymore!!" Sothis said.

"You're right." Arisa said and stood tall.

She changed her position as if she was about to dance, her sword held almost like a dagger, "But she is my friend, and I swore I would change what I can that I was given this second life. And saving her, is one of those few steps." Arisa smiled to her.

Sothis was shocked at this but smirked.

"Alright then, but you're going to need something far more durable than that. Amir too." She smiled.

Sothis raised her hands, using what power she had to channel it into the girl's weapons. Arisa's rapier glowed red while Amir's double swords glowed black. Arisa noticed the appearances change, almost like heroes' relics they looked like, but they were counterfeit. Her own rapier liked like a thinner version of The Sword of the Creator while Amir looked like she was holding Blutgang and Thunderbrand.

"They aren't real relics, but these should last you're enough. This is the most I can currently do without damaging our body. Now go, save your friend." Sothis said and disappeared.

Both Arisa and Amir turned to each other and nodded, holding the replicas to their hands.

"Aaaahhhhhhh!!" Ymir sung again.

The two girls turn at Ymir. Arisa's eyes and hair had turned to a light pastel brown that faded to mint green, while Amir's hair had turned black. Arisa and Amir got into her position, bending their knees, and charged at their friend. The three girls, locking in a three-way battle.

[ ------- ]

Far from the world

That still makes both of my eyes blurred

Not a word could I say to wake up a dreamer

Call out my name

When you see the tide turn me away

The goddess could only watch from Arisa's eyes once more. All she could do was lend her power to the two girls, even if only for a moment. It was only temporary, but she and Arisa became one. Sothis's will was Arisa's and Arisa's will was Sothis. Through these past two years alone, she has learned more and more. She could see Arisa's rage. She could feel her sorrow. She can feel her uncertainty. But there was a part of her that she was proud of. How humans are able to continue forward. Yes, it is difficult to move on. It is difficult to forgive. It is difficult to let go of a grudge.
No one can move forward immediately. And that is the small beauty of it. Because weather it is you or someone else, a loved one, friend, family, or even strangers, you are able to witness that transformation as time passes on. Both good and bad. The goddess snapped out of it when she heard the weapons clash. It was only for a moment, but even the girl Amir was able to see her. Perhaps she should allow the girl to see her. She will be deciding when this was all over. She watched as the two girls fought against the girl that suffered cruelly at the hands of time. It was destined to happen. Ymir was at some point in time fall into madness and turn her back against the entire world. But...meeting Arisa and Amir, that path cracked. It began to turn to something else. The possibility of her being saved. Sothis could not help but smile sadly as she saw the strings of fate that were tied around the girls begun to snap one by one. As time passes, the fate that was placed on these girls, will be rewritten and create their own.

"HAAAAAA!!"

"AAAAHHHHHAAAAAA!!"

Swords and scythe clashed and created sparks against one another each time. Both girls could understand the anger that was pouring out of their friend. Just like a certain future student of Arisa's said long with many others "Let our blades speak our words." Each clash was becoming more brutal. Arisa and Amir were struggling.

"This is what it feels like to go against someone stronger than us...." Arisa whispered as she and Amir both jumped back.

It was getting harder to breathe because of the smoke.

"Cough!!! Cough!!" Amir coughed and was barely able to dodge the scythe that nearly cut off her leg.

"Search for the source!!" She heard Sothis say.

They needed distance. Amir's eyes rapidly moved all over Ymir's body till she spotted one strange thing. The source. There in the center of her chest, was a Crest stone. It pulsated blue and looked like some sick sixteenth legged spider had implanted itself on her chest.

"There!!" Amir yelled and Arisa's eyes zoomed in on it.

"If I could get yet one good shot at it....If it could be destroyed then perhaps...." her thought was quickly shattered.

"Ahhh!!" Amir yelled as she was sent flying back to a stone wall, her breath knocked out of her lungs when her back hit it.

"Amir!!" Arisa yelled and just barely blocked Ymir's attacked, that came for her head.

Ymir just laughed as she looked down at Arisa with a feral smile till...
Arisa's eyes went wide as single clear water droplet fell on her cheek. The smile on the face in front of her had turned to one of sorrow and lips quivering.

"P-please.....run....let me burn...." Ymir's right eye had turned back to a gray color, the tears that fell from it were clear.

"Ymir...." Arisa's voice cracked as she was still struggling to block the attack.

She was there. Her friend was still there. Even in all this chaos, her friend was still there.

"Please.....just let me...me burn....." Ymir wept before her face of sorrow turned to one of pure rage.

"You ask for salvation when this is what you wanted!!!!" Everyone's eyes went wide as Ymir jumped back and began struggling to maintain her sanity. Her hand was on the right of her face, digging her nails in.

A very different voice spoke from her lips. The girl screamed and trashed around as she held her head. It was just for a moment, but she nearly let go of the weapon.

"I just wanted to be happy!! That's all I ever wanted!!" Ymir cried as she threw her head back.

"Fool fool fool!!! They were on the verge of experimenting on you!!! Those of pale skin as the dead!!" The voice yelled.

Arisa suddenly went cold.

"Those who Slither in the Dark....that means....Cornelia is already starting working with them this whole time...regardless what route I took in the game." Arisa said.

"Amir, I need you to do me a favor!" She said she quickly ran to her friend and used a healing spell.

"Cough!! Thank you..Let me guess, distract them while you make a move?" Amir weakly smirked as she was helped to stand up.
Goodness, she was in pain. She felt her shoulder was cracked but she didn't care right now.

"Yeah. I'm counting on you." Arisa said and they turned to their friend who screamed.

"Just go!! Please!!" Ymir cried once again.

"Sorry Ymir but we're going to destroy that Crest stone of yours!! Hang on!!" Amir yelled and charged at her.

"YOU STUPID CHILDREN!!! RRAHHHHH!!" The voice screamed and lunged.

"Hhhhaaaaaa!!" Amir yelled as she twisted her body to the right like an ice skater and locked her arms behind Ymir.

"What are you doing!!" The voice yelled.

"DO IT NOW!!" She yelled and Arisa appeared in front Ymir, her rapier ready to thrust.

"Let's end this now!!" Arisa yelled and thrusted her sword at the centre of her chest.

"AAAHHHHHHHHHHHHH!!" The voice screamed as a blinding blue light came from the Crest stone, but Arisa refused to stone.

[ ---- ]

Once in a while
Let my shadow stand by your side
Filling the emptiness of your mind
Then disappear
Dreams can be real
When a soul is armored in steel
No more fear of right or wrong
Embraced under my shield
Call out my name
When you see the tide turn me away

"What?"
In a pure white place, she was in. Not a single person but she was there.

"Amir!! Ymir!!! Sothis!!" Arisa yelled as she kept turning to different directions but nothing.

"Glad you could make it."

She turned to the source of the voice, seeing a faceless woman dressed in an orange summer dress.

"W-Who are you?! Where are my friends?" Arisa yelled.

The woman walked over to her and smiled.

"You'll see. But you really should be going back." The woman suddenly hugged her and Arisa's eyes went wide.

The faceless woman began to slowly have a face. Arisa body shook as she hugged her back. Younger form had turned back an adult and began crying.

"It...can't be...you're....." she wept.

"Yeah.....it's alright now friend. Guess you can say this is my final message to you. You don't have to keep clinging to us. Yes, when you passed away, we were all devastated. Heck, it took me 4 years to finally able to move on. Even Christian had it rough. But..." she let go and wiped her friend's tears.

"Y-You're....You're....all....uuhhhhh!!!" Arisa began sobbing uncontrollably.

The woman smiled as she saw more apparitions of people appearing around them. Arisa all she could do was cry loudly as they all hugged her tightly. They turned as they heard the weeping of a child and saw Ymir close. The girl looked up to them and Arisa reached out her hand to her along with the woman. Ymir was afraid till a warm handheld hers. She gasped as she recognized the man.

"P-Papa!!" She cried and many more people appeared.

They were all familiar faces that she knew.

"Hey there snowflake..." he smiled and hugged her as the two groups joined together.

"Papa....Cele...Arc...Nightingale...Wu....everyone....." she cried.

Ymir gently took the woman's hand and both her and Arisa were hugged tightly.

"You two can't stay here.....but....we want you to let you know, you don't have to worry about us. Live freely." The woman said as the two girls cried loudly.

"I live inside [----------]. You'll meet someone close to us soon.....now...go back to my friend. Don't be afraid of a new dawn."
"RRRAAAAAHHHHH!!! COME BACK TO US ALEXANDRAAAAAA!!!"

She screamed with everything in her power as the Crest Stone cracked and ripped itself off Alexandra's chest. The scream of the girl died down as she dropped to the ground. Amir panted and quickly dropped her swords, hugged tightly her two friends, openly crying. Not giving a damn of her appearance right now.

"Arisa...Alexandra!!! Please open your eyes!!" She cried as the two girls were motionless in her arms.

"You........." she gasped as she heard the voice of her friend.

Ymir...no...Alexandra weakly as her hands reached out to touch her two friends cheeks.

"Called me...by my real...name....." she smiled weakly.

Arisa opened her eyes and nodded.

"Yeah......" Arisa said weakly as her hair color had turned back to normal along with Amir's.

The said girl could not help but cry laughing a bit happily as she hugged tightly her two friends.

"Alexandra."

How long has it been since she was called her true name? How long has it been since she was called the birth name given to her by her father? How long has it been since someone actually cared about her? To go so far to put their lives in danger.

"Papa!! Tell me of the story of the great Hero, Alexander the Great!!"

"Again? It's an old story that was told to me by your grandmother. She named me after that great Hero. He conquered lands; his dream was to see the sea. To explore the world!! He was a wise king!!"

Fate took a cruel turn when she turned two years old. Her father and mother were always arguing but at most, her father was never cruel to her like her mother. He loved her, treated her with kindness, protected her. How she missed his warm hugs. How she missed greeting him by slamming her head on his stomach.
"See this necklace? It has been passed down from generations to generations for 1,000 years. Usually it was passed down between the females of our family, but plague took the lives of your aunts. Training was pretty harsh, but I managed. I want you to keep this. I'm sure, in time, you'll become a strong warrior like your grandmother."

"Alexandra was your grandmother's name. Named after Alexander the Great."

"Aaahhhh...aahhhhhhh!!" Alexandra began crying as the shadows dripped away from her form.

She cried and cried all her emotions out, finally feeling relieved of pain. Arisa could not help but smile and hug her friend. Even if the flames around them burned. She didn't care. None of them did. Arisa along with Sothis and Amir, smiled and cried tears of joy as they held one another.

"Let's go home, together."

Long ago buried heart
Right away torn apart
So it hurts how it lasts
Till I draw one more last final breath
Where to go when to come
Across a land bare and dark
May it be the one for all
Burning the horizon out into none

Chapter 12: Dual-Ego: Part 2: Long Ago Buried Heart: End
HOOOOOLLLYYYY!!! This chapter was long!!! 18,945 words!!! Damn!! Honestly, I was sobbing mess writing this chapter. Literally. We can finally see Arisa able to move on. Ymir, or should I say Alexandra, can finally be at peace. This chapter I really wanted to highlight how cruel Cornelia is. Her work with those Who Slither in The Dark. The effect it causes not just Byleth but everyone in the game. Especially if you played all four routes. Alexandra was a chartered I wanted to write about the most. Also, I apologies if this chapter did make any of you uncomfortable. Heavy topics that I wrote are no joke and can be very sensitive topics. Like before, if you ever want to have someone to talk to, feel free to message me.

gObliin: Thank you very much for your concern. Truthfully, when I was younger, my health was actually very sensitive. I was going through a difficult time with my family back then. Today in present time, I’m doing better and I am receiving help. I truly thank you for your concern. I’m sorry I was so late to respond.

The next chapter will be what is the aftermath of everything that went down. Also, our characters will meet someone unexpected. Hope you all look forward to it and thank you all for everything.
Chapter 13: Autumn Winds: Souls of Resting

- 2 weeks later After the fire: Verdant Moon: August: Kingdom Capital -

"Did you hear? Lady Ymir is gone..."

"To think the fire also burned her face also."

"Hush!!! Respect the woes of a mother who lost her child!!"

"You sure? You know there's a rumor that she was involved in the death of Lord Alexander."

"Saahhhhhhh!!"

Every single whisper irritated her. Her heels clicked as she walked towards the gravestone with etched letters and covered in white lilies. Her black feathered dress was still fancy, but her face held another story. The left side of her face was covered by a white mask that hid the sacred flesh of burned skin. She was doing everything in her power not to murder the nobles who dare whisper rumors of her. She held her staff more tightly as she stared down at the gravestone. It was a foggy rainy day. Many were present at Ymir's funeral. The children were crying especially. Sylvain and Glenn hugged their friends tightly as they wept in their arms. Lestia and Dimitri cried on Zach's shoulder while their father hugged them. Cornelia hated this. She felt absolutely humiliated. As the Bishop began the holy mass, Cornelia pretended to weep for the loss of her daughter. She was quite the actress. The usually holy songs were sung, which disgusted the woman more than anything, but she bared with it. As the songs finished and they final prayers said, Cornelia could only be silent as she sat on a bench not too far.

"Cornelia, I give you my condolences." She looked up and saw King Lambert offer her a small smile.

"Thank you....sigh....first my husband now my daughter.....why...?" The woman muttered monotonically.

King Lambert could do nothing but offer his condolences to the weeping woman. Not too far, Sylvian could only stare along with Zander.

"Hey uhh...you two." They turned and saw Glenn wave at them to follow him.

The two boys looked at each other and excused themselves from their friends as they went to the empty guest room to talk. Glenn made sure to lock the door and turned to them.

"I'm going to be the first to say it. I'm suspecting foul play." Glenn said and both Sylvian and
Zander let go sighs of relief.

"I knew I wasn't the only one. Lady Cornelia looks far too calm for the death of Alexandra." Sylvian said as he crossed his arms.

Zander nodded in agreement.

"Yeah...one of the sad things is that our siblings think her name is Ymir when it isn't. What's more....." Zander narrowed his eyes as he pointed to his right eye, "The woman is shedding tears of a snake. I have been around enough fake females to know real tears from fake ones. And I know for a fact that Alex was never close to her." He said.

Sylvian agreed and turned to Glenn.

"Is there anyone we can talk to? Our parents definitely not. We'll get our butts kicked if we even say that to them." He said.

Glenn was silent for a moment as he thought.

"What about Emily?" He said and Zander instantly shook his head.

"No way!!!! Of all the people you had to say her?!" He said.

"In her defense, her and Cornelia absolutely detest each other. Not to mention she's older than us by 4 years. Also, as a bonus, is one of the five most prestigious doctors of all of Fodlan." Glenn said.

"Yeah but also the bitchy-est one." Sylvian said.

"Rude." Zander said and the boy just shrugged his shoulders.

"Look, let's agree that Emily is our best bet. Besides, she's also the number one queen of g---no, wait, that's Lestia." Glenn said.

"Unfortunately, my sister loves gossip. But I got to agree. Emily is our best bet." Zander said.

"How exactly are we going to explain this to her? We don't have any evidence of foul play. Much less information about Lady Cornelia. All we know is that she is a noble." Sylvian said.

"I don't know. But we got to at least tell her." Glenn sighs.

[ -- ]

"Oh Cornelia...if only you knew." With her usual puffy red hair, Emily sat in her own office with a smile on her face as she was organizing papers to put away.

She was in charge of the autopsy of Alexandra's body, but the body of a small child was not her friends. No no. As a matter a fact, the burned body of the child she manages to retrieve from all the corpses of the burned down mansion was not even supposed to be there.

"Body confirmed to have blood issues, blood clots, lack of nutrition, and also very questionable substances, this corpse was an experimental phase." A male voice spoke as she looked up to see a young man dressed in a white cloak to hide his identity.
"Yup. I lied that the body belongs to Alexandra. This body belongs to a victim. My little friend is alive and well." Emily smiled proudly as she put away the papers with results of the body.

"Emily.....you're taking a serious risk. If they found out, you lied about the body...." the man said, and Emily just gave him a look.

"First off," she began, "I have a very good reason to hide that my friend is very much alive. If Cornelia learns of this, she will most likely go after her. Second, my loyalty is not to the royal family but to **Sirius.**" Emily said.

"*In the past.*" The man emphasized.

"Yeah, yeah. You get what I mean. Honestly being reborn as a human is a struggle. I don't want to imagine what Serios or the others will think if they discover who I really am. Besides, Serios and I left on bad terms before I got killed back in Zanado. Unlike my little sister," Emily said as she intertwined her hands together, "I am not a tyrant. I don't agree with her methods of control. Sirius loved humans. Even if they betrayed her...she still loved humans. Yes, even I still have my distrust in humans, but I at least understand them compared to her and my three older brothers." Emily sighed.

"**Noa.**" The man said and she glared at him.

"I told you not to call me that name here. Look, is.....there any news on Mercedes?" Emily said softly that sentence and the man smiled sadly.

"She and her mother escaped House Barteles. They are already in the Kingdom." He said and the girl let go a long sigh of relief.

"We're the last blood of Lamine.....oh the irony of being reborn in the bloodline of the woman that killed me....." Emily had a bitter smile.

"Emily, shall I send my team to retrieve Lady Mercedes and your aunt?" The man said and she shook her head.

"No. I don't want them involved with me for their sakes. Remember? House Martritz is gone. I was adopted into House Zoltras because they were impressed by my knowledge of medicine. I no longer have my original Crest unfortunately...." Emily sighed and looked back to the man.

"Have our spies located where Alexandra is?" She said and the man nodded.

"She was saved by a group of mercenaries and has been taken in. But she has changed, in appearances." He said and Emily nodded.

"I understand. Sigh.....Alexander...you left a grand burden on me. Have our spies keep an eye on the town. Also..." she gave him a small smile, "I'm glad to have you back my love. Sorry my physical body isn't an adult; think you can hold out another 10 years?" She gave him a smile and the man just let go of a long sigh.

"I swear.....why do you always ask that? You know I will always wait for you. In human terms, I'm only 4 years older than you. Since....I too was reborn as humans like you." He said.

Emily smiled sadly and stood up, walked over to him and held his hands.
"I'm just glad we got lucky that our current families had actual plans of us being in an arranged marriage. Now, get your dragon ass back home before Lestia finds you here or I'll never hear the end of it. I swear that girl may be a 4-year-old, but she acts 13." Emily said and the young man chuckled.

"Well, surprisingly she takes after your mother. When it comes to her personality." He chuckled a bit nervously.

"Thank you love. Now go. I'll finish up here. I'm sure the funeral should have finished right now." She said and right when the young man was about to speak, the door opened and the two turned to see Sylvian, Glenn and Zander.

"Uuhhh.......hey Emily and Erick.........did we.....interrupt something?" Sylvian said a bit nervously.

The young man groans and removed his hood, revealing a young man with dark tan skin, spiky dark green hair and he wore a black band over his eyes. He frowned towards them.

"Yeah, you ruined the moment." The young man now known as Erick grumbled and Emily could not help but laugh.

"Now now, love. Don't scold the kids. Anyhow," she turned to them, "what are you three doing here?" She said as they closed the door.

"Ummm....can Erik leave us alone...? It's important." Glenn said.

"Let me guess, this is about Alexandra?" Emily said and the three boys stiffened.

Erik let go of a sigh.

"Yes, we also suspect foul play. Now spill it." He said.

"Well, that saves us from explaining everything." Zander said as Emily took out her staff and made tea set float to her table along with food.

"For now, sit down. I can only imagine the drama that went down." Emily sighs as the boys sat around the table.

"I have to go unfortunately. My little sister is going to be born in a few hours." Erik said and the others smiled to him.

"I wonder if she'll be tan like you?" Sylvian laughed.

"Hey!!! In my defense, I'm this tan because I was stationed in dessert for 2 years!!" Erik said before he teleported away.

The others could not help but laugh as the boy told Sylvian to shove it.

"I swear, you guys. Anyhow, back to the subject about Cornelia. What made you guys think there is foul play?" Emily said as she poured them tea.

"The hag was too calm." All three boys said, and Emily could not help but burst out laughing at their answer.

"Be serious!!" She laughed as she was holding her stomach.

"Uuggghhh....this why I protested telling her this...." Zach groans and Sylvian patted his shoulder.
"Look," Glenn said, "I have been suspecting something wasn't right since Lord Alexander passed away. For Alexandra to suddenly have her name changed to Ymir and to supposedly be in a close relationship with her mother? No. She was never close to her. She was close to her father." Glenn said and Emily was silent as she leaned back in her chair with arms crossed.

"What if I told you she's alive?" Emily smiled.

Sylvian glared at her and spoke while the others looked at her shock.

"What do you know? You were the one that said she was dead. Suddenly saying she is alive, what are you playing at?" Sylvian said coldly and the girl had a sly smile.

"Oh that. That was a lie. Alexandra is very much alive." She said.

"You....lied to my father.....?" Zander said.

Emily stood up and walked behind Sylvian.

"Now, you three. I have a very good reason to lie. Now, would you rather see Alex in a depressing situation or alive? Away from noble influence that has already damaged her Oh so much. Or," she moved to be behind Glenn, "To live freely and a better life? Even at the cost of the possibility of never contacting any of you ever again. Hmmm!! Think about it." She said coyly.

The three boys were silent as she went back to her seat and took a sip of her tea.

"Just.....where is she now?" Sylvian said.

Emily sighed and smiled sadly.

"A place where she will truly flourish. A place where she will truly call home and have a family. A place, where she is truly safe." Emily said.

There was a silence till they heard small sobs and saw Sylvian crying with a sad smile.

"I'm just.....happy to know she is alive....she is...my fiancé after all....I really do are about her..." he said and instantly Emily split our her tea and began choking on it.

"COUGH!! COUGH!!! SAY WHAT?!?! OH, HELL NO!!" the girl yelled as Glenn groans while Zander gave him a glare.

"Seriously?!" Zander said and Sylvian could not help but laugh.

"Yeah. I got a heads up my friend. Unfortunately, I don't see her like that. Glad at least the engagement between our families is gone. She's like a sister." He said and Emily just groans.

So much for a serious conversation.

- Much Further Back: During the Fire -
"What did you just say?!"

Jeralt roared to Rensen who had his head down in shame as every single person glared at him minus Anna and Ares, who were missing.

"I couldn't stop them. The girls left before I could even make a move. Right now, the entire town is distracted with the manner in flames. I believe in those girls. They will save Ymir." He said.

Jeralt was being held back by Temes from murdering the man on the spot.

The men were all worried until they heard a frantic chirping of owl flying toward them and behind it...

"WE NEED TO LEAVE NOW!!"

"MAKE WAY!! MAKE WAY!!"

"Alexandra!!" Rensen cries as he saw Anna carrying Amir and Ares had Alexandra and Arisa in his.

All three of the young girls were unconscious because of the smoke. Ares had gotten Anna to come with him as they charged into the burning manner from the backyard. They could not believe their eyes as they saw the inside of the mansion was burning to cinders and dead corpses. The man did find a strange small device as they searched the burning manner for the girls. It wasn't until they hear Puka's cries that they were able to find them. The three were out cold, hugging each other. Anna and Ares picked up the girls but not before retrieving the Crest stone (relic) before they left.

Jeralt immediately understood and all the men quickly got on their horses, the wyrens on high alert as they surround the wagon to protect it. Rensen and Jeralt quickly got the girls hidden in the wagon and Anna jumped in to start healing them.

"Let's go!" Jeralt ordered has he whipped the reins of the horses and everyone sped off quickly. They all quickly left the town as if an army was chasing them. Though Alexandra was out cold, there was a single thought running through her head.

"I swear I'll come back and liberate everyone from my mother's rule."

- 2 days later -

Her body was sore. Her back burned. Everything hurt. Slowly opening her eyes, she hissed lightly, even opening them hurt. She felt something warm on her forehead and could see a blurry image of dark pink. She recognized it.
"A...nna...." she muttered softly.

The young woman smiled softly as replaced the warm damp towel on her forehead.

"Hey there Alexandra....shhh....go back to sleep. You've had it rough." Anna smiled sadly as she lightly placed her index finger on Alexandra's forehead, and it glowed a bit blue.

"Hmmm...." the young girl hummed softly as the wagon was filled with her soft snores.

Anna smiled sadly as she finished changing the girl's bandages and frowned, remembering the horrible whip gashes on the girl's back. Those were going to be permanent scars unfortunately. There was also a huge big scar at the center of her chest where the Crest stone once was. It looks like giant spiky thorns was over her chest. Another thing has happened to the young girl is that her once pink orange pale color hair had turned a deep shade of Azure blue, along with her eyes. It has grown much longer, and her little wing antennas have become a bit bigger. Lastly, underneath her right eye, was pale blue snowflake shaped birthmark. Anna let go of a long sigh as she got out of the cart. Once she stepped outside, she was greeted with the worried eyes of the duscurian girl and the forest colored ones.

"How is she?" Arisa said, worried.

She was wearing a dark green Faerghus winter dress with her cloak and fluffy boots. But there was no hiding the bandages wrapped around her head and the small one on her cheeks. It was the same situation with Amir but her left arm was raised and wrapped up to help heal her left shoulder that was fractured. The girl wore a gray colored winter dress.

"She's alright. I used a sleeping sleep so she may rest longer." Anna smiled softly.

"And your father?" She said to Arisa and the girl looked away.

"Captain Jeralt.....is still furious..." Amir said.

Anna let go of a sigh.

"It's alright. I'm sure he's giving Ares and Rensen a beating. Especially since the rest of us learned at last minute if your plans." Anna said and the two young girls looked down to the ground.

Anna took a deep breath, trying not to let anger get to her.

"What you two did, was dangerous. Foolish. Impulse. And nearly cost you your lives." Anna said.

"There is always a consequence for your actions. Let this be a lesson Arisa." Sothis muttered as she hugged the girl from behind as Anna continued.

"You two could have informed us of your plan and we would have helped you. Yet, you didn't trust us. You kept silent about it and went through it on your own. Not only that, both Ares and Rensen kept silent about it." The three females turned as they heard Jeralt's voice.

Behind him, was Ares, who could not look at the girl and Rensen, who had his head down in shame. Jeralt glared down at the girls and Arisa took a step forward and let go of a sigh.

"No amount of sorry can make up for what I did......" Arisa said with a bitter smile, "I put everyone in danger.... what's more....I..nearly died..." she said.
She had to keep herself from saying "again" because she can guarantee she was going to get an ass whooping if she said it. She looked up to her father.

"I...I take full responsibility for my actions. So... I'll accept whatever punishment you have for me. I'll take in on, as mercenary." She said.

Jeralt bent down and the girl braced herself for yelling but what she did not expect was her father to hug her tightly.

"I swear kid.....you're just like your mother....." he muttered and she hugged him back tightly.

Amir all could do was watch till she yelped when she got pulled in by Arisa.

"You too kid. I may not know your parents, but I can tell you're a wild child like my daughter. I swear, you kids are giving me gray hairs." Jeralt chuckled and Amir could not help but giggle.

The rest let out a small laugh as they watched the scene before them.

"Now about your punishment." Jeralt said and Arisa and Amir braced themselves, "You're in charge of hunting and preparing it till we return to Remire Village." Jeralt said.

While Amir was perfectly fine with it, Arisa let go of a small sob.

"Suck it up kid. That's your punishment." Jeralt said.

"I know!!!"
touched her chest.

She hated these scars. She really did. All they did was bring bad memories but....

"We'll get you fixed up once we arrive back to the village. Florencio is a healing magician and could help get rid of the scars." Jeralt said as Arisa nodded.

"No. I want the scars to stay." Alexandra said firmly.

Everyone looked at her shocked.

"I want these scars to remain because they are proof that I survived. When I'm older, I'm going back and I'm taking back the lands my mo----Cornelia stole from my father. That's a promise, I plan to keep." She said and held her necklace tightly in her hand.

"Ara..ara....so you finally accepted me?" Alexandra looked up and saw the figure of a young girl who was the splitting image of herself.

The difference was that this version of her had pure white hair that was a long as Sothis's but straight, red colored eyes with her pupils being the Crest of Aubin, a tattered white dress and skin pale as snow and her lips a light pink. Her teeth also look like they had fangs. She looked like Alexandar’s walking corpse.

"Yeah. I still don't like you but if I keep denying you...that makes me no better than Cornelia." Alexandra mentally said and the girl smiled.

"My my...my little vessel has grown. Very well," the girl gave her a small bow, "Call me Cirina. I shall lend you my power till the day we become one." She smiled and Alexandra shuttered.

"Yeah...I'm not looking forward to it." Alexandra muttered.

Arisa and Amir nodded to Alexandra's decision.

"She has grown, much hasn't she?" Sothis said and Amir turned her way.

"So... you’re the one Lady Byleth keeps talking about?" Amir telepathically said and Sothis smiled.

"You are correct child. Be honored I saw you and Alexandra worthy to allow you both to see me. Just a small drop of our blood on your eyes was enough for you to be allowed to see me." Sothis said and Amir huffed with arms crossed.

"I'm disappointed!! I was expecting a grand spirit like the forest goddess and all I'm seeing is gremlin with a snooty attitude!!" Amir said.

"Pffft......." Arisa slapped her hand over her mouth, trying to hold her laughter as was Alexandra. Puka, Feh, and Cirina were already laughing. Sothis's face turned red as her fist shook and charged at Amir.

"Y-Y-you.......HOW DARE YOU BRAT?!?!?!!" She boomed as both Alexandra and Arisa lost it as the goddess and Amir got into verbal mental fight.

The adults just looked at the three girls weirdly.
"Pardon!! Forgive us for disturbing you but we need to get to Gaspard Town. If it be alright, could we ride alongside you?" An older woman approached Jeralt as the group was taking a small break.

A young girl stood next to the woman and was a bit scared.

"Sure. We're heading there anyway. I don't mind." He smiled to them kindly.

"Thank you so much!!" The woman bowed repeatedly, and the girl only did it once, politely.

"It's alright. No need to bow so much. I'm Jeralt and this is my mercenary team." He said and the others waved.

"Oh!! I'm Charlotte and this is my daughter Mercedes. We're on our way to Fhirdiad but unfortunately the weather is turning colder. A downpour is coming tomorrow." The woman now known as Charette said and the girl, Mercedes nodded.

The minute Mercedes's name was mentioned, Arisa jumped out of the wagon like if she was robbing something.

"Ow!!" Unfortunately, the girl landed on her face like an idiot in front of the three.

Jeralt let go of a long sigh while Charlette could not help but giggle.

"Are you alright?" She heard a gentle voice that could only be described as the voices of angels, their hand reached out to her to help her up.

Looking up, Arisa saw a young girl with light brown hair tied in a side braid with a gold ribbon, with soft gentle blue eyes, and wore a simple brown dress with a brown fur cloak.

"An angel....." Arisa said.

Mercedes just looked at Arisa shocked and the adults were trying not to laugh.

"Ghhaa!! I'm sorry about that!!" She screeched as she gently took Mercedes's hand.

"Ufu~ It's alright." Mercedes chuckled lightly as she helped her up.

"That idiot there is my daughter, Byleth. Sigh....I am sorry about that." Jeralt said and Arisa sent him a glare with a pout.

"It is alright." Charlotte chuckled and one thing Arisa noticed that no one did. There was a damn small blush on her father's cheeks that you couldn't notice unless you rrrreeeeeeaaaallllyyy looked, as Mercedes's mother giggled.

"Oh dad.....are you serious?" Arisa internally groans because looks like she's about to witness her father possibly like someone.
Well, she didn't mind. Though she never met her birth mother of this world, she thinks it's a good thing for her father to meet someone new and possibly fall in love. Then it struck her. If that happened, then that would mean there might be a good chance her and Mercedes could become stepsisters. Well...she personally wasn't against it. Just.....yeah. She rather figure that out later. As for Jeralt, he welcomed the two women to the group, and Arisa decided to get to know Mercedes better. Everyone got back on their horses or the wagon and began to head towards the town. It was going to be 4-hour ride. Right now, Mercedes was riding with the girls in the wyvern cart, because she was curious.

"It's a pleasure to meet you three!! My name is Mercedes....Martritz!!! 10 years old. Thank you again for letting my mother and I temporary join you. We....been through a lot." She smiled sadly.

"I see...so it's that time. This is the year Mercedes and her mother escaped her stepfather, and Emilie…….I'll see if I can find a way to help them." Arisa thought as she watched Amir smile to introduce herself.

"It's alright. I'm Amir Amaryllis, 8 years old!!! I'm from Duscur!! And this is my friend, Puka." Amir grinned as Puka purred as he made himself comfortable in Mercedes's lap.

The girl chuckled as she gently petted the fox.

"I'm Arisa Byleth Reus Eisner. 6 years old and turning 7 in a few days. Wait, I'm already 7." Arisa smiled and pointed to Feh, who was perched on her head.

"This is Feh, my Snowy owl. I also have pegasus named Red Hare back at home." She said and Mercedes smiled.

"I'm Alexandra Aubin. 6 years old. I don't have a pet yet." Alexandra pouted and the older girl could not help but chuckle.

"Oh, are these wyrens your pets also?" Mercedes asked as one of them snorted.

"Well, we actually got them from beating bandits. I managed to tame them and since...you know....we beat those bandits." Arisa said.

"Oh!! That sounds very dangerous. It must be difficult being a mercenary." Mercedes said and Arisa nodded.

"It is. But, honestly, I wouldn't replace this life. Guess you could say...this journey..." Arisa smile warmly as she touched her heart, "I finally found peace to be able to move on without clinging to the past anymore." She said.

Everyone stared at her in surprise till Mercedes nodded.

"I understand." She smiled warmly.

"Ooohhh!! I'm bored!!" Alexandra whined as one of the wyrens just snorted.

"Arisa, how about you tell us a story? It's been a while you know?" Amir said.

"Oh? A story?" Mercedes eyes lit up.

"Hmmm...how about a ghost story?" Arisa grinned.

"A ghost story?" The other three said in union.
Arisa grinned as she stood up, had Feh land on Mercedes's shoulder, dusted herself, and smiled. "Gather around, children and adults and let me tell you the tale.... The Tale of Okiku!!" She said excitedly.

"(The hell Byleth?! Are you at it again with your stories?!)"

That was Yofos speaking in Brigid language and Arisa yelled back at him.

"(Fuck off Yofos!!! Let me enjoy this for Serios sake dammit!!)" She yelled back.

"(WHO THE HELL TAUGHT YOU TO CUSS EH??!)" He yelled back.

"(OH, SHOVE IT!!)" She yelled.

"Okay, knock it off!!" Jeralt yelled and the others could not help but laugh.

Mercedes giggled while Arisa just huffed.

"As I was saying," Arisa raised her hands, making a basketball size water bubble form, different images reflected on it, "A long, long time ago, in a country called Japan, lived a beautiful young woman, named Okiku." She said and inside the water showed a young woman.

Mercedes watched in amazement as the story played before her.

"Okiku was servant in an Emperor’s palace. She oversaw keeping clean 10 plates that the Lord would use to entertain nobles." She said and the image turned to the young woman cleaning the plates, one by one.

"Every day, she could clean carefully these plates and not to chip them because she did, the lord world have her head. Being young and beautiful, Okiku caught the eyes of many warriors in the palace. One in particular, was a man named Aoyama, had dreadful thirst/obsession for her. Every day he tried to woo her." Arisa said and the images changed to a young man presenting gifts to Okiku.

"But Okiku would reject him every time." She said and the woman turned away.

"He grew frustrated. If charm nor gifts work....then trickery." She said coldly.

Arisa saw Mercedes narrowed her eyes while the other two girls raised their eyebrows. The man in the water bubble rubbed his hands together with a coy grin. The image changed to him being in front of the 10 plates and hiding one away.

"Aoyama stole one of the 10 plates of the emperor and confronted the poor woman, demanding to know where it was!!" She said and the image showed the man pointing to the plates, one missing and the poor woman in horror.

"Okiku was terrified and counted the plates. 'One, two, three, four, five, six, seven, eight, nine.' Every time she counts, it would be the same number......9.... 'The Lord will end my life.' the image of the woman weeping till Aoyama appeared before her with his hand reaching out to her.

"Aoyama was pleased seeing her like this and offered a deal.... he would not tell the Lord about the
missing plate if...she became his lover." She said.

Mercedes had a frown on her face but was honestly enjoying the story while the other two were feeling shivers for some reason.

The image if Okiku slapping his hand away was formed.

"Despite fearing her life, she refused his deal. Aoyama descended into madness and ordered his men to beat her and tie her suspended above a well!!" She said and the color of water bubble changed to a dark purple, showing Okiku suspended above the well.

"The poor woman suffered the dastards wrath as she was repeatedly dunked into the well!! She was only brought up to beat her and asked to become his woman. Even in this time, Okiku refused to become his!! The man had enough!! And let her drop down the well to her death!!" And the image showed Okiku falling to the well.

Mercedes and the girls gasped in horror till Arisa smirked. She purposely made the small light in the cart turn off, the only light was her water bubble, that glowed an eerie purple.

"Did Aoyama really think this was over.....ufufufufufu~ Oh, how he will truly regret his actions!!! Okiku became a vengeful spirit!! Her anger and wrath allowed her soul to remain in the world of the living!!! Okiku's mutilated body rose from the well to walk the castle halls in search of the missing plate!!" The image changed to a form of woman with a bloody dress, limping as she walked down the halls.

Amir and Alexandra were suddenly hugging each while Mercedes....had sparkles in her eyes (Sothis: what on earth is wrong with her?!).

"In a gasping voice.... she walked the halls,
"One....two...three...four...five...six...seven..eight.....nine..." she purposely made a creepy voice as she spoke then....

"AAAAHHHHHHHHHHHHH!!!" The image of the woman let out a terrifying piercing shriek.

"AAAAHHHHHHHHHHH!!!"

"Oh my!!! What happens next?!"

"Bwhahahahaha!!"

Jeralt was just groaning into his hands as he sat at the front steering the horses. The others were entertaining listening to the story while Jorah was terrified. Let's just say his country has a different version of the spirit of the well.

"Seems...my daughter is quite enjoying the story." Charlotte chuckled a bit embarrassed as she looked to the back to see the second cart.
"YOU'RE A BITCH ARISA!!!"

That were the angry yells of Amir, Sothis, and Alexandra while Arisa was laughing and Mercedes who was giggling happily. This was how Mercedes learned to love the thrill of ghost stories.

"Hey!!! Who taught you those words?!!" Temes yelled back there.

"Back to the story!!" Arisa was trying to recover, "Okiku let out a piercing shriek that penetrated the castle walls, and she did this every night." Arisa gasped, finally recovering from her laughing fit while Mercedes was telling the other two girls that everything was alright.

"Those who heard her count would become ill and those who heard her finish counting, died. Every night, her screams tormented Aoyama, he could not sleep. This was her revenge for making her suffer." Arisa said as the image changed to Aoyama in pain, unable to sleep.

"The emperor of the palace called forth the help of a priest to get rid of her soul. How does one bring rest to such a vengeful soul?" Arisa said the image changed to the priest at the end of the hallway and Okiku slowly heading his way, counting.

"He came a night, listen to her counting. "One...two...three...four...five...six...seven...eight...nine..." she said and Amir, Sothis and Alexandra where shaking while Mercedes was excited to see what would happen next.

"TEN!!" The priest yelled immediately once she did her count!! All anger, sorrow, and rage melted away from Okiku's face. Peace befell her soul...relief that someone had found the missing plate. She returned back to the well.... never to return again." Arisa said as the image showed Okiku in peace as her spirit returned to the well.

"Or did she now?" Arisa a grinned while Amir, Sothis and Alexandra flinched as Mercedes giggled.

"They say when people find bugs in the wells, that it is part of Okiku's curse." And the water bubble popped, and the lights went back on, "That is the legend of Okiku. ``The End." Arisa smiled.

Mercedes clapped her hands, truly enjoying the story while Sothis, Amir and Alexandra, looked like their souls left their bodies.

"Wonderful story!!!! I would love to hear more!!" Mercedes said happily.

"NO!!!" the other three said and the other two burst out laughing.

"Excuse me girls."

They turned as they saw Mercedes's mother come in while a small bundle in her right arm.

"Forgive me for interrupting, I'm sharing some of the pound cake I had packed away. I already gave a slice to the other. These last for slices are for you girls. Enjoy." Charlotte smiled kindly as
she gently handed the wrapped bubble to Mercedes.

"Thank you, mother." Mercedes smiled and the woman nodded before she left.

Mercedes gently placed the wrapped bubble on the floor, and undid the knot, revealing a nice pound cake.

_Cake, Cake!!_

_A round, round cake!!_

_This round, round cake..._

_Who could it be?_

Mercedes began singing and Arisa blinked.

"Out of all the songs in the world....it had to be that one...?" Arisa mentally said while the other two girls were confused.

_Is the cake Arisa?_

_No not me!!_

_I am the raspberry._

_The round cake is red!!_

_Is the cake Amir?_

Arisa sang back and Mercedes blinked but nodded with a smile as she handed a slice to her. Amir blinked but went along with it and gently tapped her fingers as she was handed one.

_No not me!!_

_I am the apple!_

_The round cake loves Mercedes!!_

_Is the round cake Alexandra?_

Amir grinned and Alexandra stuttered as the song was passed onto her.
No not me!!

I am the pumpkin!

It - The round cake is sweet!

Is - Is the r - round cake Mercedes?

Alexandra said nervously as the girl turned to her and was handed a slice. Mercedes giggled as she shook her head.

No not me!!

I am the melon.

When the melon breaks, it creates a sweet dream.

Mercedes sung, all girls smiled and began singing together.

But tonight's dream is a bitter one.

Atop of a plate is the dream of the cat.

Round and plump.

Everyone eat up!!

"Ahh!!" And the four girls took a bite out of their cake.

"It's so good!!" All of the squealed as they chewed.

The adults couldn't help but chuckle as the ride continued on.

- 4 hours later -

"Thank you so much Sir Jeralt!! Is there any way we could repay you?" Charlotte said as Jeralt shook his head and smiled.

"No, no. It is alright. I think the pound cake was more than enough. I hope you are safe on the rest of your journey." Jeralt smiled to her kindly and the older woman blushed a bit.
"T-Thank you." She said shyly and he had a small hue of red on his cheek.

What no one expected.....

"(Sexy Wolf whistle)!!!" Both adults’ heads snapped to the wagon and there they saw grinning mischievously were their daughters, while the other two girls were just shaking their heads.

"MERCEDES/BYLETH!!!" Both Jeralt and Charlotte said in union and everyone else could not help but burst out laughing.

"Umm...Captain...cough!!" Temes cough as Jeralt turned to him, "We're going to rent a few rooms for us to stay in for the night. For now...um.... why don't you accompany Miss Charlotte to where she will be staying at?" Temes said as he coughed again and his eyes instantly met the other three men, their eyes went sharp.

Anna just shook her head. Guess you could say they were in..... wingman mode.

"Oh!! That's right!! My daughter and I will be staying in the local church for some time. At least till the rain is over." Charlotte said.

Jeralt had to keep himself from frowning at the mention of a church and just gave her a small smile.

"Do you mind if I walk you there? I... like to speak with you more. If that is alright with you?" He said and the woman nodded.

"Of course, I do not mind." She smiled kindly to him.

"Well, I got to go. It was nice meeting you all!! I thank you so much. May the goddess protect you all." Mercedes bowed to them.

Jeralt, along with his team, instantly froze when the girl said that. Arisa smiled to Mercedes and nodded.

"Agree!! May the goddess's winds protect you! And if we ever meet again, I'll tell you more ghost stories!" Arisa said and the two girls hugged.

No one but Mercedes noticed that she slipped a small piece of paper into her dress pocket.

"If anything happens, contact me or my father using a messenger dove immediately. Mercedes, your brother, you'll meet him again one day. Make sure to keep your ears open on any news on the Bartels family. I'll do what I can to support you." Arisa whispered in her ear.

Mercedes's eyes went wide and looked at the girl in shock. Arisa nodded and Mercedes was trying not to cry at her words and gave her a sincere smile.

"T-Thank you." The older girl said and waved goodbye as she ran after her mother and Jeralt.

"Was that a wise choice?" Sothis appeared and floated near her.

"I don't know....but hopefully.....I can help her...even if just a bit." Arisa muttered as she saw her father walking with them.

It will be 8 years till Arisa and Mercedes meet again.
"I'm going to kick all your arses to the moon for doing that!!" Jeralt said to his men while Anna was giggling.

The group was currently in a local town restaurant, eating dinner before they head out tomorrow.

"Now Captain," Yofos said with a smile, "How many years has it been since you last had that look in your eye? A look of kindness and gentleness. The only people who have ever gotten that look are Rosa and your daughter. I mean...don't you think it may be time to.... perhaps meet new people?" He said.

"Got to agree!!" Temes snickered.

"I swear you are all idiots!! Anna, help me out here!" Jeralt said and the woman just smirked.

"Sorry Jeralt but I got to agree with them! She seems like a kind woman, but also...I can tell she's been through a lot. She had tried look and the same with her daughter." She said.

"She told me she has a son....I honestly refrained myself from asking her more because of how sad she became on the topic. I chose to respect her boundaries. " Jeralt said as he took a sip of his beer.

"I know how you feel Captain...I really do..." Ares said with a bitter smile.

Alexandra had told him what happened to Cele, Arc and the rest. He was devastated and his hatred towards Cornelia grew. Whatever that strange thumb size device is, it looked so weird. He had never seen anything like it before. He does remember that Lord Alexander said that strange thing can have information. But how does that little thing have such?

"I'm sorry about you friends Ares..." Jorah said softly and Ares shook his head.

"Thank you...I'll make it up to Cele by raising our son the right way. That's a promise." He said.

Jeralt nodded then spoke.

"Wait. Where are the girls?" He said and Anna pointed to a table where there were three other kids sitting around Byleth, Amir and Alexandra.

"The three other kids are the restaurant owners. The girls finished eating early and Byleth had one of her books with her. So, she's reading them a story.

"I see. Haha. She reminds me a lot of her mother." Jeralt smiled sadly as he watched his daughter read out loud.

"You know...." Jorah said as he pointed to the slip of paper in Jeralt's pocket, "Quite bold Charlotte gave you her address where she will be staying at. Also, you gave her your address." He smirked and Jeralt just groans.

"You 5 aren't going to let this up, are you?" He said.

"Of course not." They said in union.
Jeralt just let go of a long sigh. Maybe he should consider meeting someone new? Meanwhile, Rensen felt awkward listening and went back to eating.

- With The girls -

"And King Arthur fought alongside his knights!! Sir Gawain, Sir Lancelot, Sir Tristan, Sir Kay, Sir Mordred, Sir Bedivere, Sir Gareth, Sir Percival, The court Mage Merlin and many more!! These knights, along with their king, were called The Knights of the Round Table, who stood by their lords’ aide and protect Camelot!!" She said and the young boy with gray colored hair, light green eyes, and freckles on his face, his eyes sparkled as he looked at her excited.

"Calm down Ashe!! Don't rush!!" Arisa giggled as the boy shook his head.

"I can't!! This is the first time I have ever heard of this story!! An amazing knight king who was well respected by so many knights!!" Ashe said.

"We want to hear more!!" The two little children next to Ashe also agreed.

Arisa had met Ashe and his siblings as she was sitting down, writing in an empty journal the story of King Arthur and the knights of the round table. The boy had come up to her and asked her what she was doing.

"I'm writing a story about a king and his knights. Would you like to hear it?" She said and the boy nodded excitedly.

Through the past two years, she has been writing down as many as the stories and legends from her old world so one day, she may share them here in this world. This no longer felt like something she must do. Ever since she had finally found peace in her heart since the fire, she no longer held sadness. Knowing that her past family and friends were able to find happiness and move on, was what she needed. She no longer felt guilt. She no longer felt anger. She..felt free.

"Now ,now kids," Arisa smiled softly as she patted Ashe's and his sibling's heads, "Shall I tell you the story of King Gilgamesh or Sinbad the Sailor? Or, the story of Medusa? Oh!! 1001 Arabian nights?" She said.

"All of them!!" The three kids said along with Amir and Alexandra.

Arisa couldn't help but laugh at how much excitement they had.

"Then, allow me to sing you a song of time." She smiled and closed her eyes.

"In time flows. See the glow. Of flames ever burning bright."

Jeralt spit out his beer and began choking the minute he recognized the song.

"Whoa!! Whoa!! Captain!!" Temes said and quickly slapped his back to try helping him recover.
"On the swift...river's drift...broken memories alight."

"Cough!!! H-How... does she know that song?" Jeralt coughed as he was recovering.

The others looked at each other worried and turned to look over to her. The girl made her hands glow as three white lilies flower crowns grew in the hand and placed one on each of the children. Arisa smiled kindly as she and the girls waved goodbye and went to the adults.

"Papa....are you okay?" Arisa asked her father as he was just barely recovering, and he nodded.

"Yeah....drink went down the wrong pipe. Hey kid," he said a bit nervously, "Where.....did you learn that song?" He asked.

"I see....so that's why he was choking.....The song I was singing is usually only sung by Rhea." She thought and smiled to him.

"I overheard one of the kids here singing it. I liked it and picked it up from them." She smiled to him.

"I see. Alright then." Jeralt smiled softly.

"By the way.....did that Lady give you her address?" She grinned and suddenly her hair was a complete mess from him ruffling it too hard.

"My hair!!!! Papa why?!" She screeched loudly and the others could not help but laugh at this predicament.

"I swear....you and the others!!" Jeralt growled but couldn't help but laugh.

He really treasured moments like these.

[ ------ ]

"Emily, we found Alexandra." Far in the corner of the restaurant, sat a woman dressed in a black cloak.

She was keeping her eyes on Jeralt's group after she and Erik witness them save Alexandra, leaving the town.

"Good." Emily's voice rang in her head, "Listen, seems Ares found something that may contain information we need in order to bring a court case on Cornelia. If possible, sneak into his room and take it. Do be careful." She said and the woman nodded.

She watched as the group stood up, paid for their food and left to the inn they will be staying for the night. The woman used a spell to turn herself invisible and followed them.

"Why can't we have Ares join us Emily? He would be a great help since he does know some information on Those Who Slither in the Dark. Hell, even Alexandra could help us!" The woman said.
"Look, I know how you feel Hana, but we can't afford those two to get involved. They already suffered enough." Emily responded as the woman snuck to the back of the inn and found the window to Ares and Temes room.

She jumped in and found their bags on their beds.

"I'm in." The woman known as Hana said and went straight to Ares's bag but what she didn't expect...

"Umm...Emily......I think Ares has the wrong bag." The woman said, worried.

"What?! How?" Emily said.

"Ares doesn't carry a pile of books that's why!!" Hana snapped back.

"Then who has his bag?!" Emily said.

"What the......oh come on?! Who has my bag!!!"

Hana immediately jumped out the window and looked into the next room. There, she saw the girl named Byleth with an angry look as she was looking through the contents in the bag. Currently, she was alone because the other two went to take a shower.

"Dammit. This is Ares's bag. He's the only one to carry erotic books." Byleth sighed and then noticed a small pouch stuck between the book.

She picked it and opened it. The small content inside of it fell in her hand.

"Wait...this is a USB flash drive." She said suddenly and unknown to her, Hana raised an eyebrow, "I thought advanced technology doesn't exist here....." she muttered as she looked at the ancient yet modern looking USB drive.

It had a few strange markings on it as her hands touched it. Hana went in without a single sound and narrowed her eyes at the girl. Byleth stared at it and decided to try something.

"Sothis?" She said and the goddess appeared before her.

"Yyyawwwnnnn....what is it? You disturbed me from my nap." The goddess yawned.

"Does this look familiar to you?" Arisa showed her it and Sothis narrowed her eyes and began hissing like a cat.

"Hiiiiissss!! I don't know why but I really have a dislike towards that thing!!! What is it?" Sothis snarled.

"Whoa!! Calm down!! It can't hurt you." Arisa said as the goddess calmed down a bit.

"This device is called a USB flash drive. It can store an entire library of information in it." She explained.

"Really? An entire library? Are you sure you have not hit your head?" Sothis said.
"I'm serious!!! If Ares found this during the time of the fire, then that mean this has information that can help me find a way to remove crest and screw Cornelia over!!" Arisa said.

"Girl, hand it over."

Arisa quickly turned around and backed away before the hand grabbed her. Hana looked down at the girl as she saw her back away.

"Who are you?! How did you get in here?!" Arisa said and the woman just stood still.

"None of your business. Now hand it over. That is a dangerous game you are playing with." Hana said coldly as she extended her hand.

Arisa held the device to her chest and shook her head. She refused. She needed this information!!! If she could manage to find a way to look at the information in it, then maybe...just..maybe...she can create the change she wants!!

"Absolutely not!! No way am I giving this to you!" She argued.

"Emily....I need help here!" Hana mentally said.

"She's just a kid. Use a memory wipe spell on her." Emily said and Hana sighed.

"Sorry kid. I can't have you holding onto it." Hana said and suddenly appeared in front of the girl.

Her hand quickly covered her eyes, but Arisa refused to let go. The woman picked her up, having her a bit suspended in the air. Hana had a frown on her face even if not one could see it.

"Let..go!!" Arisa gasped.

"It's alright. You won't remember anything." Hana said and Arisa's blood ran cold.

"No...no...I can't afford to forget anything!!" She internally screamed.

"Slipfura." The woman mutters.

Arisa could feel her body becoming weak, her mind blank but...

"NO ARISA!!"

Sothis's voice made her eyes snapped open and wrap her hands around the woman's wrist.

"Wha?!" Hana gasped as the girl's grip became tighter, almost as if it was burning.

"No....you....don't!!" Arisa gritted her teeth as streaks of her hair became mint green, her eyes flared as she glared.
"D A Y L I G H T !! !! !"

"A A A R R G H H H H H H H ! ! !" Hana screamed as she blasted out of the room, destroying the door and creating a crater on the wall.

Part of her cloak was burnt off and she hissed as she felt her right was broken. She gasped as she looked into the room, her eyes going wide as she recognized the symbol that faded away.

"Hana what happened?!?" Emily's voice could be heard as the woman gasped for air.

"B Y L E T H ! ! ! ! !"

Her head quickly turned as she saw many people going out of their rooms and Jeralt's team along with him running towards her.

"Who are you?!" Jeralt roared and the woman quickly stood up and ran away.

"After them!! Rensen, keep the girls safe!" Jeralt ordered and Anna, Temes, and Ares went after the woman.

He quickly ran into the room and heard coughing.

"Cough!!! Cough!!! Cough!!!" Arisa coughed violently she held to her chest the USB drive and hid it in her bra quickly.

"Cough!! Cough!! Bruhhhhgg!!" Her chest hurt, her heart stung, her body burned, she was in pain.

Jeralt quickly hugged his daughter tightly as she kept coughing, blood was seeping from her lips.

"Byleth, hold on!!" Jeralt yelled frantically.

"Cough!!! I'll...cough!!! Be alright!!! Cough!! Catch...that woman!! Cough!!" And her body went limp.

Yofos and Jorah quickly ran up to them and began using spellings on her. The girls were worried as Rensen was protecting them. He recognized that cloak.

[---]

"Son of bitch!! We lost her!!" Anna roared furiously as she kicked a wall.

"Who was that? Do you think a spy from the church?" Temes said.

"No. The spies of the church have the symbol of Serios on their cloaks. Whoever this was...we need to be cautious." Ares said as he took out a tobacco cigarette and lit it.
"Let's head back for now. I'm worried about Byleth..." Anna said as the three quickly left.

[ --- ]

"Gasp...gasp...arrrghhhhh!!!! That.....kid!!!" Hana gasped for air as she had teleported herself to a nearby forest.

Her hand was holding her right arm with her left hand and ripped off her cloak. She kept gasping for air. She had a gash on her forehead and thankful not a serious wound to the right side of her stomach. She leaned on a boulder and slid down, taking deep breaths to try and focus on her healing process.

"Hana!! Hana!! What happened?!!" Erik's voice ran in her head along with a frantic Emily.

"The...girl......cough!! Has the.....cough!!! Crest of Flames....Gasp!!!! Rhea....actually did it!!! Gasp....arrrghhh!!!" Hana cried in pain.

"What?! What?! What?!! That's impossible!!! That child should be dead!!!" Erik said and Emily spoke.

"I swear that woman!!! She went mad!!! Hana, hang on!! Erik is sending Carmen and Cinder to pick you up!! Thankfully they are nearby!!" Emily said.

"It's alright!! We found her!!"

Hana opened her eyes as she saw two cloak figures approach her and quickly took out medical kits.

"What the hell happened?" One male spoke as he took a needle and thread to stitch the open gash on her forehead.

"What the hell do you think Cinder?! She basically got blasted!!" The other male said angrily as he was using a healing spell on the woman.

"I know Carmen!! I'm saying how the hell is a kid able to cast Daylight?! That spell is highly advanced!!" Cinder said angrily.

"Oh, just shut it you two!!" Emily roared.

"Isn't it obvious...huff...huff....she has the Crest of flames.....but....it put a huge strain on her body...." Hana said weakly as she felt Cinder casting a sleeping spell on her.

"We get it Hana...now just sleep for now...we'll take care of the rest..." Cinder said and she smiled weakly.

"I swear....you always say that..." she smiled and fell asleep.

At the palace, Emily paced back and forth in her office, biting her nails. She was very furious.
"To think Rhea was successful in creating a perfect vessel for Sothis.....her obsession with Sirius has gone too far......it'll be a bad move if we kidnapped the girl with Alexandra and brought them here. Not to mention there is a good chance Jeralt and his entire company will try and hunt us down or even go against the Church. Shit, shit, shit!! What do we do?!" Emily growled as she kept pacing.

"Emily, I think it would be better if we left the girls alone. Yes, still keep an eye on them but make no contact." Erik said to her and she turned to him with a dry state.

"I know....but....what can we do? With the awakening of the Crest of Flames, I'm sure Rhea must have noticed some change in the Sword of the Creator, no...in all the Heroes Relics!!! Those Relics recognized their leader!!! They know the Mother of Crest!!" She said.

"WHAT IN THE NAME OF SERIOS?!"

And the two bolted out of office and to the throne room. One of the servants screamed as they saw the king's relic, Areadbhar, it's crest stone pulsing as it was in the stand. Many stared in shock as did the king and his children. Its glowed blue like snow and no one dared go near it. Dimitri stared at in shock and hissed as small sharp pain went through his head. A blurry vision appears before his eyes. He was smiling to someone. Someone was in front of him with their pinky stretched out to him. Their face, it was blur. But....the voice was kind, warm....who?

"Okay..but...pink promise we'll meet again one day?"

"Pinky promise. That is my promise to you Dimitri. I will be seeing you again one day."

"Oh fuck.....oh no..oh no no no no....." Emily shook her head as she noticed the young prince eyes slowly turn wide, and small tears form.

They just made the biggest mistakes of their lives.

- Holy Mausoleum -

Three individuals ran to the Holy Tomb underneath the Church of Serios. The door burst open and saw a young man with dark teal colored hair, dressed in a black jacket with long sleeves and wore armor. He looked back to them shocked and then back to the main coffin in the center of the holy tomb.

"What happened Beleth?!" Seteth yelled as the three stopped to get air.
"I-I don't know!! I was here guarding like usual and the sword suddenly began rattling!!" He said.

"Open the holy tomb, quickly!!" Rhea order and Flayn and Beleth began undoing the seal on the coffin.

A few seconds later, the seal was undone and Seteth pushed the lid open. Rhea looked in and gasped as the sword seemed to be pulsing, almost alive. A crooked smile began to form on her face as she realized what was going on.

"Mother....she's...she's...." she began to whisper but.

CRACK!!

All four quickly turned to the stone throne high above, a giant crack forming on it.

"What.....what on earth...." Flayn gasped as they looked in shock.

Rhea body shook as she looked at the throne. Something was very wrong.....

- 1 month later: Red Wolf Moon: November: Remire Village-

"She still hasn't woken up....." sitting alone near the lake bed, Amir hugged her knees as she stared at the surface of the water.

It has been a month since the accident at the inn. They were never able to catch that woman and Amir was able to hide the small strange device that Arisa was holding before the others found it. Her friend looked so pale and no amount of healing magic was waking her up right now. Currently, Arisa is in her room asleep. She's just asleep but she was still so pale.

"Crying will do you no good." Alexandra looked up to see Cirina appear and looked at her with a dry stare.

"Why are you here? Are you here to mock me....?" Alexandra whispered and Cirina just stared.

"No. Just watching? Where is that little shadow friend of yours?" Cirina said.

"Amir has been taking care of Red Hare along with Puka....I've been watching over Feh. Sigh..." she muttered.

"Humans are fragile and weak creatures." Cirina began, " War and bloodshed is constant and natural thing. When war is over, peace comes. And with that peace, war is bound to find humans again. But....it is that peace you have now, you are fighting for. Hmm.....Look at you. You're making me remember things my younger self used to say." Cirina sighed.

"I can't help but think if you're the biggest bitch in the world or a child...." Alexandra muttered.

"Hmph. Think what you want. I used to be human also. A long time ago. Well, half human." Cirina said, catching Alexandra's attention.
"Half...human?" She muttered.

"That is correct. My mother was human and my father...was something else. Anyhow, you might as well see your friend. She'll be waking up soon." Cirina smiled and quickly disappeared.

"Wait, what?! Cirina!" Alexandra stood up, shocked.

Alexandra was silent for a moment before she ran back to the village.

[ ------- ]

"This....hurts..." she slowly sat up and hissed as the light entered her vision.

It felt like she was reborn all over again. Arisa carefully turned her head and saw sitting on a chair, next to her bed was her father. Currently he was asleep and snoring. She looked around and noticed she was in her room. She blinked, and hissed as she held her head, everything coming back to her.

"That's right...that woman..." she muttered.

She looked to the big mirror and noticed her hair had grown awfully long and a bit frizzy but also a single streak of white hair. She groans a bit as her head pounded and noticed her father beginning to wake up. He groans as he opened his eyes and they went wide once he saw her.

"Good Morning Papa." She smiled and he instantly hugged her tightly and she did the same.

"Byleth....." he whispered, his voice cracking a bit as he hugged her tighter.

The two remained like that for several minutes till he let go and she wiped a single tear of his that fell down his cheek.

"I'm so glad you are alright..." he said, and she nodded.

"How....long have I been out? Is everyone okay? What happened to that woman?" She asked a lot.

"Careful. One question at a time?" He said and she nodded.

"The explosion caused a huge ruckus and made many come to inn. Mercedes and her mother were the ones that were able to heal you completely. They stayed here in Remire village for two weeks before they had to leave, unfortunately. Mercedes, Amir and Alexandra refused to leave your side." He said.

"Sigh.....I'll apologize for the trouble I caused them. I wish Mercedes and Miss Charlotte could have stayed longer so I could thank them. I'm glad to know they are okay. What about the others?" She asked.

"Well....you sent Florencio to the infirmary. The minute the man saw you, he passed out instantly. As for Sandy, that woman went into a frenzy." He chuckled, remembering that Florencio screamed like a woman and passed out right there in front of everyone while Sandy repeatedly slammed her head against a wall.

"I wish I could have seen that." Arisa giggled.
"Rensen and Alexandra?" She asked.

"Those two are fitting right in. Rensen has been training the workers in the blacksmith shop along with Alexandra, who has become his official apprentice. That girl really is something, I must admit. She'll be a great paladin one day." He smiled.

"What about Amir?" She asked.

"Surprisingly, Sandy has chosen to take her in. Those two have been training together with their swords non-stop. As for Red Hare and Feh, they been in good hands. Those two girls have been taking care of them well. Anna will be staying here in Remire village for a few months." He said.

"I'm glad...I'm just happy everyone is doing okay. And... that woman....?" Arisa asked and Jeralt frowned.

"Unfortunately, we never were able to catch her. We decided the best course of action was to leave. After we paid for the damages of course." He said.

Arisa cringed instantly when he said that. She could only imagine how much it cost. Jeralt stood up and gently picked her up and sat her in his arms.

"Enough said. Guess it's time to celebrate your recovery!! Unfortunately, you're going to have to relearn to walk again since you been out for a whole month. Also, should we cut your hair a bit?" He said as she giggled and walked out the room, gently closing the door.

"It's alright. Also, I like my hair long. I look like Rapunzel." Arisa giggled and he could help but snort a bit.

"I swear kid. You're giving me gray hairs." He chuckled as he walked down the hallway and headed to the company.

10 minutes passed and they were in front of the building when he walked in, they were instantly surrounded by everyone.

"Lady Byleth you're okay!!" One female said.

"We got to celebrate!!" Another employ yelled.

"Someone go call Elder Bara!!" Another said.

"Alright, calm down!!! Back away!!" Jeralt said, a bit annoyed as everyone moved out of the way so he could walk towards a chair and gently sat her down.

Arisa giggled and heard two gasps as she turned towards the door and saw Amir and Alexandra. Alexandra had her hair tied in two Chinese buns with a small portion of her hair let loose to her shoulders. She wore a plain blue shirt with baggy blank pants, like an Arabian style male clothing. Amir had her hair tied in a high ponytail and wore a simple white shirt and black ankle length skirt.

"Good morning you---Ghhhhahaaaa!!" Unfortunately, at inhuman speeds those two girls ran to her and pounced, knocking her off the chair and getting hugged tightly by the two, who were sobbing loudly.

Many tears were shed as this scene was watched. Arisa could not help but cry about also laugh as
she hugged her friends. She really did miss them and will protect this family of hers.

- Far Deep in the Forest -

"So, the girl has finally woken up. Hana, think you could keep an eye on them a little longer?" Emily's voice rang in the woman's head, who let go of a long sigh as she watched from a tree branch high in a pine.

"Yeah I know. Still, to think Rhea went so far...how could she do that to a child?" Hana muttered as she twirled her knife.

"Believe me, we all have that question, but let us not forget our goal. We of Sirius, is to defeat Those Who Slither in The Dark. That girl, we need to keep her safe from the spies of the church. She could possibly be a future member since she knew about that device. So....I'm having you and the twins go undercover." She said and Hana smiled.

"Well, I don't mind. How did Cinder and Carman take the news though?" Hana asked.

"Cider, okay. Carmen......not so much." Emily said.

"Anything of what went down when those relics glowed?" Hana said and could feel Emily frown.

"We made a big mistake.....we awakened the Crest of Flames and now Rhea is ordering her spies to keep a better look out. Also...." Hana turned to look at Florencio and Sandy who were hugging Byleth, "Sandana and Florencio were once members of our enemies. Not anymore though. They left the group 63 years ago. Still, keep an eye on them." Emily said.

"Right right. Anyhow, I'll get my things set up. They're recruiting mercenaries next month, so we'll make our move there. Emily, watch your back. Cornelia is getting active." She said.

"I know.....and when the time comes, we'll be ready."

Chapter 13: Autumn Winds: Souls of Resting: End

[ -------- ]

And that concludes the First Arc of this Story!!! The next arc will be taking place in the Alliance!!! Time for our protagonist to meet our Golden Deer Children!!! The arc will focus on the relationships between Professor and student. Plus, perhaps a little bit of romance? Anyhow!!
I decided to have a surprise encounter with Mercedes and Ashe!! None of you were expecting that plus dropping a few bombs here and there. As for Cornelia, yeah, she got screwed over big time. Half her face was burned during the fire and she wears a mask similar to The Phantom of the Opera. Hope you all enjoyed this, until next time!!

Also, a little fun fact. In Japan, Male and Female Byleth have different names. The localization is Byleth for those around the world while in Japan, Female Byleth is called Beles and Male Byleth is called Beleth. So this nickname "Fell Star" is a reference to her name in Chinese as "Heaven Wolf Star", where Sirius is one of four stars said to bring bad luck and disasters. The star of Sirius representing invasion and conquest. Ufufu!!
"Ahhhhhh!!"

The screams of children were heard as they were being chased by a pack of 6 wild boars. Her orange brown colored eyes were wide with fear as she runs for her life. She was an idiot. Why did she listen to those older kids in her village to hunt down a boar to prove she was a hunter like her father. The girl tripped and screamed for her life as did the others as the boars were about to lunge at them but......

Her eyes went as a chain like whip came out of nowhere and scattered around, slashing at the boars and killing them in an instant. The children along with her, could only watch in shock as the boars fell to the grass, limp. A piece of the back of their neck, sliced off.

"Seriously kids!! Don't go trying to hunt without proper training for Pete's sake!!"

The group of kids looked up as they heard the flapping of wings and saw a brown red pegasus land a few feet from her. She looked up and saw a cloaked girl, who was taller than her by 3 feet, glare at each one of them from her seat. They could see her green brown colored eyes and a single stand of light brown hair that faded to teal. The children flinched at her glare and then noticed the bloodied sword on her waist.

"You're all lucky my father and his group were near the road or you all been killed!! If I didn't fly ahead thanks to Red Hare, you all be dead meat!!" The cloaked girl said furiously, and the children looked to the ground in shame.

She stood up and dusted herself, still staring at the dead boar. The cloaked one let go of a sigh.

"Kids these days.....then again...I'm no better..." she heard the cloaked girl mutter and she turned to her.

"What's your name?" The girl asked.

"Umm....L-Leonie..." she muttered.

There was a silence till the cloaked girl sighed and looked at everyone in the group.

"All of you, I'm taking you back home. Which direction to your village?" She said and one boy pointed to the north.

The cloaked girl nodded and took out her sword again. The tip of it glowed and the 6 boars began to float and shirked to the size of rabbits. They saw her open her other bag that she had strapped on
the pegasus named Red Hare and the boars went in. All the kids jaw dropped as Red Pegasus began to walk slowly towards the direction of the village.

"Let's go." Was all the girl said and the children quickly followed them.

There was a tense silence as they walked at the sides of Red Hare, Leonie kept looking at the cloaked girl, who smoothly road the huge red pegasus. The said pegasus mane was braided and combed out. On his side were around 5 bags strapped on. Plus, the girl carried her own purse with a dagger strapped onto her thigh and her rapier on her waist. They also finally noticed the snowy owl that was perched on her shoulder, that was asleep.

"Umm...are you a noble?" One child asks and the cloaked girl shook her head.

"No. I'm mercenary. I'm travelling with my dad and his group." She said.

"Umm....what about your pegasus and owl?" Another child asked.

"Red Hare and Feh?" The girl said and they nodded.

The cloaked girl smiled softly and lightly poked at Feh to wake up. Unfortunately, the bird was in the middle of her beauty sleep and was pissed to be woken up.

"Aaaaiiiiiiieeeee!!" The children all laughed that Feh began pecking at the girl angrily.

"Alright, alright!!! I'm sorry to wake you up from your beauty sleep!! I swear...you're like the bird version of Lindhart. Go fly to Amir and tell her I'll be meeting them at the village in a bit." The girl said and Feh hooted at her and flew off.

"Honestly....." she sighed and removed her hood, revealing a young girl with long light brown that fades to teal, tied in a high ponytail. She a few almost fluffy bangs that covered her forehead and one to the right and one to the left that were long that stopped right at the bottom of her chest. The tips of long bangs displayed how her hair faded to teal. But there was a single stand of her hair that was white. She also wore a flower crown with blue, pink and white small roses with a gold chain. On her right ear, she wore a single earring that was the shape of the moon with a tear drop green gem. Everyone stared at her with wide eyes as the girl let go of a sigh.

"We're close to the village. 10 more minutes." The girl said.

"What's your name?!!" Leonie blurted out.

The girl was silent for a moment and then spoke.

"Arisa. Arisa Byleth. You can call me either name if you want." Arisa said as they continued forward.

"You know, trying to keep a cool attitude is only scaring the children~"

Arisa stiffened as she immediately recognized the voice of a certain green haired gremlin (Sothis: Goddess for Serios sake dammit!!) As the said one appeared before her in a shower of green glittering dust. Sothis smirked as she looked at Arisa, who continued forward.
"I honestly am in a bit in a sour mood. I swear these kids." Arisa said and Sothis nodded.

"Cramps?" The goddess said.

"Yeah......." Arisa internally cried as she reached into her fourth pouch and took out a small bag.

"Heads up!" She said and threw each of the kids something.

Leonie quickly caught it and blinked at the small little wrapped ball in her hand.

"What is this?" One of the kids asked and Arisa smirked.

"Enbarr's legendary caramel candy." She smirked as she opened one and plopped the sweet treat in her mouth.

The kids began opening theirs and many squealed as they tasted the divine sweet and salty treat. Leonie felt she was in heaven as she ate hers. A few more minutes passed, and they arrived at the village entrance. Arisa could see an adult scolding around 4 older kids and also spotted her father, Amir, Alexandra, along with Sandy and the rest of the group.

"Dad!!" Leonie yelled out and everyone turned their direction.

The older kids looked away while the adults were shocked to see Red Hare and Arisa. The kids ran to them while Arisa steadily rode Red Hare.

"What happened?" Amir asked as Puka was walking next to her.

The Duscurian girl had her hair short, just above her shoulders, and wore a simple black shirt with a metal breastplate and armor shoulder protection on the right. She wore gray pants with metal knee armor protections. On both her right and left side of her waist, was each strapped one of her swords, and on her back, a double blade axe.

"I managed to save the kids on time before they got killed by a pack of wild boars." Arisa said and sent the older kids a glare as Leonie's father's voice rose as he yelled at them for the stupid bet, they made the younger kids do.

"Well, at least they are safe now. Let me guess, you brought the boars with you right?" Alexander grinned.

She wore her Azure hair in two Chinese buns with part of it lose like pigtails and the rest of her hair was let loose, it stopped halfway through her back. She wore a deep dark blue clothing of a sniper despite being a paladin in training. On her waist, was strapped a dagger and on her back, an iron bow. Her small feather antennas made many of the kids stare at her as they slightly fluttered.

"Kriii.." she giggled as a baby wyvern with black scales popped out their head from her cloak.

"Now Falco, be patience." Amir giggled.

She was finally happy to have a pet. The girls heard Feh hoot and saw her land on Arisa's head (like usual). While that went on, Arisa stared at Leonie, who was being hugged by her mother. Despite the girl being 8 years old, she looked like a mini version of her 16-year-old self. Leonie has dark orange short hair with dark orange brown colored eyes. She wore a plain white shirt with shorts and brown boots. Arisa let go of a long sigh she saw the two mercenary twins walk up to
"The captain has decided were going to be staying here for two days to help the people of the village out. There have been a couple of wild beasts lately and paid us to take them out." One twin had dark red blood colored spiky shoulder length hair and had an eye patch covering his green right eye. He wore the clothing of a Male assassin. This is Cinder.

"Welp, might as well keep a look out for the night. I heard demonic beasts have been appearing a lot lately." The other twin look exactly the same as Cinder except he had his hair tied in a ponytail and his eyepatch on his left eye, and the clothing he wore was that of a brawler. This is Camren.

"You two!" The twins flinched at the voice of a female.

They turned and saw a young woman with half her hair brown and the other half dark green, flowing beautifully in curls, but were tied in a side ponytail. Her clothing was a dark green dress that split at the sides of her legs. She wore knee high brown boots with two khopesh (Egyptian hooked sword) in their sheaths, strapped to her waist. Her brown eyes glared down at the twins with arms crossed. The three girls giggled.

"Come on Hana!!! I promise you we won't drink tonight. We swear!" Camren raise his arms in defense.

Cinder leans a bit towards Arisa, and he whispers.

"I managed to sneak you a bottle of apple cider. I'll give it to you if you don't say anything about wine." Cinder said and Arisa whispered back.

"Deal. Just sneak me some wine too." She said back.

The flame twins, everyone calls them, along with Hana, joined her father's company two years ago. Hana was a young woman that was born in the Kingdom. From what Amir heard, she used work for House Fraldarius. The flame twins came from the Empire. Apparently, they quit serving the army and chose the life of mercenaries. Truthfully, those were made up lies by those three. Their true role was to keep watch over the girls. Especially since they screwed badly two years ago by unintentionally awakening the Crest of Flames in Byleth. Hana honestly still held a small grudge against Arisa for blasting her out of the inn room. Then again, it was her fault that the young girl literally went into temporary God mode and blasted her out with a highly advanced spell that put the girl in a one-month coma. As for the day the relics glowed, it became known as the Day of Twilight. Rhea had found a way to say that every 200 years, the Heroes Relics glowed to show that a blessing from the goddess will come soon. A load of bullshit Emily calls it. Of course, the now 15-year-old girl did not voice her thoughts because she didn't want to get screwed over like Cornelia. Speaking of the hag, there was a huge blow on her pride. One, being the main thing that half her face was nearly burned off, many nobles spoke behind her back, and with rumors, damaged part of her reputation. These rumors did reach the King's ear and had grown some distrust towards her. That greatly pleased Emily because she rose in ranks while Cornelia stayed the same. The hag’s years of research was burned to ashes the day of the fire except the one USB flash drive that had everything backed up. Amir gave it back to Arisa and since then, Arisa has carried it with her since then. She created a small wooden owl necklace. Pop off the head and inside of it is the memory disk. She still hasn't found a way to access the information, but she hopes, when she turns 15 in 5 more years, she'll travel to Shambhala. Now, why the suicide mission? If she could manage to get her hands on at least another form of ancient yet modern technology, she will be able to expand the research on Crest. She has been secretly hoarding books about Crestology and with her
knowledge of modern medicine from her old times as a nurse and the huge amount she has learned these past years, she prays she will be able to save Lysithea but also Edelgard. To create a change.

"Arisa, hope you're not making a deal with that red head again." Hana said as she turned to her.

The said girl just smiled as Cinder secretly put the jug of cider in her bag.

"Now Hanaohhana, why would I do that?" Arisa said with a fake hurt tone that made the others snicker.

Hana's eye twitched at the damn nickname the girl came up with to tease her. At least it wasn't Helena, who gave her the strange nickname of Pine tree. The said older woman just let go of a big sigh and spoke.

"Whatever. Anyhow, get off Red Hare. Thankfully there is an inn in this village. Also, the stables are that way." She pointed to an area where they spotted horses.

Arisa nodded and steered Red Hare towards the stables. Unfortunately, she didn't notice that Leonie went after her.

[ ------ ]

"There you go. Hopefully you'll actually be able to get a proper nap this time because last night was horrible." Arisa sighed as she closed the door to Red Hare's stable section, who made himself comfortable by laying down on the hay set up.

The said Horse let out a neigh as he was placed a basket of vegetables in front of him. He lightly flapped his wings to get off a few of the fallen leaves stuck to them.

"Whooooaaa!!! He looks amazing now that I got a better look!!"

Arisa turned to see Leonie outside the door, looking in with a grin on her face. She chuckled seeing the young girl, and motioned her to come in.

"Want to pet him?" She said and Leonie nodded as she enters.

"Now, softly, reach out your hand. Let him come to you." Arisa said as Leonie stood next to her.

Leonie stuck out her hand and waited. Red Hare stared at her for a few seconds and closed his eyes, gently nuzzling her hand. The orange haired girl giggled as he allowed her to pet him. Feh chirped, landing on the girl's shoulder. Arisa smiled as she saw them getting along with the little girl, despite her only being a year younger than her. But she frowned as she heard the murmurs of a few of the villagers.
"Have you heard?! Everyone in House Barteles has been massacred!!"

"Have they caught the killer?"

"Unfortunately, no. No one was left alive. Not even the children."

She knew the news was going to reach Mercedes soon and wasn't happy. For now, she will focus on her current time. They are heading to Derdui, the Aquatic Capital of the Alliance and known as, where Claude lives. She let go of a long sigh as she saw Leonie still petting Red Hare. For now, she only hoped that guarding the village tonight will help her relax a bit.

- Later at Night -

With a dagger in her hand and standing guard at the village entrance, Hana stared out to the forest as she twirled her blade. She was stationed there along with the Flame Twins. Arisa and Sandy are at the south entrance, Jeralt and Amir at the east, lastly Fiona, Alexandra and Temes at the west.

"I really am not liking this." Hana said suddenly as she stared out to the forest.

"Not liking what? The life of a mercenary?" Camren said as he was taking a bit of the dried meat, he had brought with him to snack on.

"No not that." Hana glared, "I'm saying these past two years we haven't gotten any information at all!! It clear that the girl hid somewhere that device. Sigh.....I don't know what Emily was thinking of having us go undercover." She said.

"Look, Hana. I get how you feel but we must. If Rhea gets her hands on Byleth or those snakes, it's game over." Cinder remind her.

"I know...That's why I'm mad.....it would be so much easier if we knew how to extract the Crest stone in her heart and get rid of it. Then that girl could live a normal human life." She said.

"Are you crazy?!" The twins yelled at her and she just rolled her eyes.

"Never mind that. Has Emily reported anything?" Hana changed the subject.

"Other than famine and an epidemic going on in The Kingdom....." Carmen said and Han let go of a long sigh.

"I'm guessing she's having trouble." Hana said.

"What's this about famine and epidemic?"
All three turned to see Arisa walking towards them.

"Kid don't scare us like that." Cinder said was Arisa stood next to them.

"What are you doing here anyway?" Hana said, eyes slightly narrowed.

"Sandy let me take a break. I wanted to look around the village. Now, about this famine I heard." She said.

"Well, it's mostly taking place in Galatea territory. The land isn't very good for growing crops and thus food shortages. Add that with now an epidemic...sigh.....disaster." Camden said.

"What are the symptoms of the epidemic?" Arisa said.

The three looked at each other with raised eyebrows. What is this getting at?

"Chills, clammy skin, dehydration, fatigue, fever, loss of appetite, malaise, or sweating. Plus, fast breathing, shallow breathing, shortness of breath, or wheezing. Sharp pains in the chest, along with fast heart rate." Hana answered.

Arisa was silent for a moment and spoke.

"Pneumonia. That's not a good sign...." Arisa said.

"Wait, you know what it's called?" Hana quickly uncrossed her arms and stared at the girl.

"I never heard of it. That's.....completely new..." Cinder said.

"Have any of the people been coughing blood?" Arisa asked quickly.

"Thankfully no. Arisa....do you know something?" Camren said.

"....I do......and I know how to treat those people. The problem is, the ingredients needed to make the medicine....." before she finished, Hana quickly grabbed her shoulders.

"Say them. Say the ingredients right now and we can help you prepare for that medicine." Hana said too quickly.

Internally, she was laughing madly. This girl knew something that Emily didn't!!! Oh, how this brought her joy because the red head was a showoff most of the time.

Arisa felt like she just messed up big time. Suggesting making a modern-day antibiotic was absurd in this time. Ingredients like sulfuric acid and such aren't easy to come upon with. Plus, the tools needed to prepare for it....

"Hydrochloric acid, Chloros Fluoric acid, sodium hydroxide, ammonia, carbonated water, baking soda, alcohol." She said.

Why is she running her mouth?! Ohhhhh!! Her doctor side is taking over. Hana was doing everything in her power not to grin and quickly took out a piece of paper with her charcoal pencil.

"Write down the entire process and give it to us tomorrow. All credit will go to you." Hana said.

"Alright. Just...make sure not to say my real name. Call me...Kiana Kalsana ." Arisa said.

Why does she keep saying that her name is the idiot tuna? Hana giggled and nodded.
"Alright. I will. But for now, head back to Sandy. We still need to keep watch." The older woman said.

Arisa nodded and waved goodbye.

"I'm going to regret this."

- The Next Day -

While the others went to eat, Arisa remained in the room she was staying in. She sat on her bed, staring at the pile of books she had tied together in front of her. Each book was every single little detail of Modern medicine she learned from her time. Diseases, medicine, operations, sanitary treatments/procedures, way to cure normal small flus, dangerous flues, the woman body, the Male body, the human body on general, sex education, the ingredients and procedures to make Modern day medicine. This all together was a pile of 10 books, each one 500 pages. Basically, everything she could remember. Everything was written down by hand. So pretty much this was her course of four years of work plus all the research she did learning the ways of medicine in this world.

"You don't have to do this."

She looked up and saw Sothis looking at her worried.

"What good will come if you share this forbidden knowledge? Even if you made 3 backups of your life work, what good will come of it falls to the wrong hands?! I know you don't completely trust Hana." Sothis said.

"This could save lives." Arisa said.

"Yes, I know that but at what cost?!" Sothis said back.

Arisa turned to her desk and began writing a letter. Sothis watched as the girl was writing and somehow smirked.

"I see.... quite the deal maker and blackmailer, now are you?" Sothis said as the girl sealed the letter with a wax stamp.

"Yeah. Also...." she turned to the mirror and stared at her herself, "I'm not about to run from a possible ally." And left.

- Forest -

"Good!!! You made it!!" Hana smiled as Arisa walked towards her with a pile of books floating
behind her.

"I thought you chickened out on me but all's well that ends well. Come on." She turned to start walking till Arisa spoke.

"You're the woman that tried to steal that flash drive 2 years ago, aren't you?" Arisa said without a single lace of emotion in her voice.

Hana stopped and let go of a long sigh.

"Well....I never would have thought I would already be discovered. Two years. When did you figure out?" She turned to the girl, void of emotions also.

"The day I caught you and Cinder making out." And Hana exploded in red.

"DON'T TALK ABOUT THAT DAY!!!!" Hana looked like a tea pot at this point and Arisa couldn't help but laugh.

"Anyhow, back to the subject. Other than that day I caught you two have a quickie, I managed to overhear about him talking about the scar on your stomach. You told Sandy that you got it from a fight against a bandit when in reality...I'm the one that caused it." She said with arms crossed.

"Yeah. You're the one that caused it. And you want to know the main reason why I want that device. Unfortunately, I'm not the liberality to tell you that since I am bound a contract in case, I ever get captured by someone." Hana smiled and Arisa looks at her worried.

"But I can tell you we are on the same side. I want those maggots gone too but it's not easy. But you.....you seem to have.....a lot more information than any of us," Hana said.

"I do. But I am also not at liberty to say it. Tell me Hanaohana, was it your intention to awaken the Crest of Flames inside me?" Arisa glared.

"That's a no. We....screwed up.....far too much.....do you want to know what happened that day?" Hana said and Arisa nodded.

As Hana explained what happened.....Arisa wanted to throw herself off a bridge badly.

"I'M SO FUCKEN SCREWED!!! AAAAAHHHHHHH!!!" Arisa finally snapped and screamed out every bottled emotion of anger.

Meanwhile the said child was throwing a huge hissy anger episode, slashing a tree, Hana stared. The girl had a mentality of an adult. That much she figured out. Her guess that she must be someone like Emily who was reborn with the memories of their previous life. Hana herself isn't one but she a runaway from the underground slums of the Empire. Life was hard enough being a commoner. So barely escaping magicians dress in black and wanted to implant a Crest in her for experiments? That woman ran for her life. She was nearly captured if it wasn't for Erik to have saved her. Hana sighed as she saw looked over to Arisa who was gasping for air, on all fours on the ground. Her hair was a complete mess, let loose. Anger towards herself for being stupid for blasting Hana away. Sothis hummed as she floated a bit closer to her friend.

"Are you done?" Sothis said, with a giggle.
"Yeah, I am." Arisa said as she stood up, dusted herself, and looked over to Hana.

"Back to the topic." She made the books float next to the older woman, "The procedure to make the medicine is in the red book, it's also book marked. I also wrote down substitutes for certain ingredients since they are very difficult to obtain. Guess you could say it is the updated version using magic to make it. There is also a letter I have written to the one receiving these. Tell your boss I won't tolerate me not being credited. Also.....absolutely do not let ANYONE let alone Cornelia or The Church of Serios to learn of the existence of these books. I can guarantee they would try and hunt me down, let alone, Rhea especially. That woman is doing everything in her power to keep advancements from happening." Arisa said as she glared at Hana.

She meant it. She will not allow ANYONE but those she allows to touch these books. Hana stared at her and nodded.

"Deal. My boss owes you a favor now. What do you desire? Name your price." Hana said.

Arisa thought for a moment and took a deep breath. This will be the most messed up indirect move she will ever make against the Church of Serios.

"A fragment from the Sword of the Creator and a Crest stone of the Crest of Timotheos, the Crest that Amir has." She said.

Hana looked at her like she grew a second head but smiled.

"We'll see what we can do.....I'll back at the village in 2 hours. I'll tell my boss and see what she can do." Hana said and wrapped away.

[ ------ ]

"When mounting a horse, pegasus, kinshi, wyvern, griffon, or even oxen, you need to know the proper rules!!" As much as Arisa would have loved to join her father in helping the villagers hunt (Sothis: are you sick?!), she decided to give riding lessons to children here with the help of Alexandra, who is a wyvern rider in training.

Falco hatched about a few days ago so he is still a baby. Given how small he is, it's possible he may have been the runt of the litter, that's why his egg was completely alone. The older girl of the bunch looked at all of them one by one. No surprise Leonie was there. She could tell the younger children were very excited, but she also noticed a few of the older kids (the ones that made the kids do the bet) glare at her. Alexandra's tiny head wings fluttered a bit as she spoke.

"Since it is your first-time riding, make sure to be wearing long pants, closed toe shoes or your boots, a helmet, and finally gloves. The gloves are if you have sensitive skin." Alexandra said as she walked up to one of the horses that they could borrow.

"Since it is your first-time riding, make sure to be wearing long pants, closed toe shoes or your boots, a helmet, and finally gloves. The gloves are if you have sensitive skin." Alexandra said as she walked up to one of the horses that they could borrow.

During these past two years, Arisa, Amir and Alexandra have gotten the habits of teaching to children in villages they stop at some time during their travels. Alexandra mostly when it comes to riding lessons, Arisa in teaching how to read and write, and Amir in self-defense. Sandy and Florencio found it unusual while Jeralt found it interesting. But nonetheless, they were happy to see the girls enjoy themselves. Arisa did it because she wanted to have the experience of teaching, also because she believed everyone should have the right to education. So, in a way, this was her way of
telling the Crest system a big "**FUCK YOU!!**".

"Another important thing," Arisa spoke this time as she walked over to Red Hare and gently petted him, "You need to get acquaintance with your ride. Always approach your horse from the side, preferably the left side. Scratch your horse’s neck gently. Different horses like affection in different ways, but almost all horses love a good neck scratch. You can also ask whoever is helping you. Wyrens, make sure to approach them from the front so they can see who you are. They aren't fond if you sneak up on them. Griffins and Kinshi you need to be gentle and let them approach you. They are highly prideful creatures and if you disrespect them, I can guarantee they won't even let you approach them. So, do be mindful and have patience." Arisa said and Red Hare nuzzled her.

She heard a few of the older kids groan but they instantly froze from the glare they got from Red Hare. The younger children snickered.

"Now, who wants to go first?" Alexandra said and all the kids rose their hands.

"Oohhh...umm....How about you.... Leonie right?" Alexandra said.

"Yup!!! That's me!!" Leonie said excitedly as she quickly walked up to them.

"Alright Leo," Arisa said and noticed the girl frown at her calling that, "Mental note, don't call her Leo because I'm pretty sure it has something to do with the older kids." Arisa thought she saw a few of the older kids’ snicker.

"Correction, Leonie." Arisa corrected herself and seems Leonie wasn't expecting that, "Please approach the horse, Bucky, carefully." She said and Leonie nodded.

The girl carefully walked up to the gray colored horse, who unfortunately is also called the "scrooge" of the group, because of how he would just ignore people. Bucky was chewing hay and turned towards Leonie, who froze. He glared and looks like the two were having a stare down. Horses are known for being able to sense human emotions through seeing their facial expressions and voice tones. The girl was not backing down from her stare down. Leonie Pinelli had one goal in mind, to prove to the older kids that she could be mercenary. That she wasn't afraid. Seems Bucky could sense her ambition.

"Oh my....." you saw Sothis appear as everyone watched the stare down between Buck and Leonie.

Red Hare was getting ready to defend the girl if the scrooge tried anything. Bucky slowly approached the girl and stopped in front of her. The two still had eyes locked. Arisa was silent and kept go a sigh of relief when Bucky motion his head towards the saddle on his back.

"Did she just?!" One of the older boys said shocked.

"Congratulations Leonie. Bucky seems you worthy of riding him." Alexandra grinned and Leonie was shocked.

"W-What?! Really?" The orange haired girl said excitedly, and Bucky rolled his eyes.

"Yup. Now, carefully place y-----!!!" Unfortunately, Leonie despite being a child, was as impatient as her older counterpart.

"Ow!!" The girl fell off the saddle.
"What did I just say?!"

Bucky was neighing (laughing) loudly as Leonie was struggling to get on.

- Fhirdiad: Palace -

With the letter in her hands, Emily was grinning like a mad woman as she read the letter from Arisa.

"You're scaring me woman. Just what did she write in that letter?" Hana said as she took a sip of her tea.

"Oh...this girl is smart!! Way too smart!!! I definitely want her to join us and be our ally!!!" Emily began cackling.

"Give me that!!" Hana said and was handed the letter.

To the one receiving these books and my 10 years of life's work, I am granting permission to you ONLY to have access to these books. These books contain knowledge that far more advanced than anything in this country. Everything is about medical information. By accepting these books, you have agreed to the contract of this letter that you hereby swear you will not share, sell, copy, or even try giving this information to anyone. No one from the Church of Serios or who works under Cornelia or Those who Slither in the Dark is not to get their hands on this information. The books and letter will immediately detect if you have such plans to betray my trust, they will be burned to ashes immediately and not a single trace of them will be left. And like usual, I do have a price. Get me a fragment of the Sword of the Creator and the Crest stone of the Crest of Timotheos. That is my price for this information. Also, my identity is to remain a secret and credit for the "antibiotic" recipe belongs to me. I will go by the name Kiana Kalsana for my own safety.

- Kiana Kalsana

×××××× place a drop of your blood here if you choose to accept these terms and were both bound by the contract

"WHO THE HELL IS THIS SMART-ASS BITCH?!?" Hana yelled as she looked in complete shock at the letter while Emily burst out laughing.

"Quite the woman I must say." Emily recovered quickly as she smiled slyly, "The spell used is far too advance for even me because of the amount of unknown formulas and elements applied to
them. I accept her contract. Besides, I had no plan EVER to share these beautiful books of forbidden knowledge!!" Emily squealed as she hugged the pile.

"So, you're seriously accepting?" Hana said as she gave the letter back to her.

"I am." Emily said as she placed a drop of blood and the letters and books glowed. A rose marking appeared over her hand and she smiled.

"The contract is done, and we will keep our end of the deal. Thankfully, I already have the Crest stone she wants because I broke in to take a few last year. But....as for a piece of the Sword of the Creator...." Emily intertwined her fingers together and thought deeply, "That part....will be difficult......I can get us in easily to the holy tomb thanks to my methods but.....we will technically have to break a part of the Sword of The Creator. The seal to that main tomb is a hassle...." she muttered.

"What about Tharja?" Hana said suddenly and Emily instantly cringed.

"Why her of all people?" She said.

"Hey, it's either her or Gregory." Hana said and Emily let go of a long sigh.

"Got it. Tell Kiana I'll have the fragment in 4 months. That's when...Rhea will leave the Monastery to go to the Empire for the Holy Blessing of Enbarr. It will be its most vulnerable." Emily said as she looked at Hana.

"Got it." She said as Emily handed her a medium sized wooden box.

"The crest stone is in these along with the bones of my brother....." she took a deep breath, "I trust her to make use of these and make a heroes relic worthy of my brother's name, Timotheos." She said firmly.

- Back to The Girls -

"So, she accepted...." Arisa muttered as she rode Red Hare gently through the grassy fields.

"Hmmm...to be honest, you can tell it took a good hour a half for Hana's leader to think about it before they accepted." Sothis said as she floated nearby and saw the rose marking over Arisa's right breast.

The said girl closed her cloak and nodded.

"That's a good sign then. Means they are smart. Sothis, we just made an ally." Arisa smiled.

Sothis nodded and the two turned back to what they were doing. Leonie rode proudly Bucky next to her. The girl was full of confidence but not cocky, which was a good thing. Alexandra is back at the village giving instructions on how to ride the horses. Since Leonie was quick to learn, Arisa decided to take her on a nice and easy ride together.

"I never felt like this my whole life!! You really are Jeralt's daughter!!" Leonie said excitedly as they looked to the sun set.
"My dad is an amazing person. I'm more than grateful for him to be my father." Arisa said.

"Well of course!! He used to be a Knight of Serios!!" She said.

"Is that so...? I didn't know." Arisa said.

She was playing dumb. Time for information gathering. Leonie looked at her shocked.

"You never heard of the Knights of Serios!?! Have you been living under a rock?!” Leonie said.

"How Rude!!" Sothis said.

"No. My dad never talked about them." She said.

"Let me tell you then!!" The girl said excitedly.

"Jeralt was known as The Blade Breaker!!! He was once a Captain of the Knight of Serios. They serve the Church of Serios. They help keep order in all of Fodlan and are under the command of The Archbishop, Lady Rhea." Leonie said confidently.

"Is that so? Hmm....I never heard of any of this. Guess I learned something new." Arisa hummed.

"By the way, are you going to be a mercenary or knight like your dad?" Leonie asked.

"I want to me a Professor." Arisa said.

"Oh. Then that means you want to work in the at the Officer's Academy. Good luck!! I can tell you'll be an amazing teacher because of how you taught us all today. My dad is an amazing hunter but him trying to teach us is like him talking to a tree." Leonie said.

Arisa couldn't help but laugh hearing her say that.

The two looked out to the grassy field and Arisa's eyes went wide.

"Are those....wooly bugs?!" She said as she saw many of them floating nearby.

"Is this your first time seeing them?" Leonie ask and Arisa nodded her head rapidly.

Lennie's eyes sparkled.

"Come on!!! Let's join them!!" She said and turned to Bucky.

"Bucky!!! Can we please?!" She said and the said horse snorted and gently ran ahead with her.

The girl was laughing loudly as Arisa went after her.

"Let's go Red Hare! Hyaa!!" She said.

"Nyyuuuuuu...nyuuu...."

The wooly bugs lazily floated, letting loose cute sounds. They looked like little sheep with wings.
The girl gently approached them and seems they noticed. Leonie giggled as they began to nuzzle attack her and a few of them landed on Arisa's head. Feh chirped and one of them flapped its wings.

"They're so soft..." Arisa muttered and heard Sothis giggling happily as they surrounded the goddess.

"Sometimes they pass through the village. During the summer we help shave off their wool along with the sheep. We use it for clothing and pillows. They say their wool keeps nightmares away." Leonie giggled.

Arisa smiled and laughed as many landed on Bucky. The said horse just let his head down, as if embarrassed.

"We should head back. Don't want your parents to worry." Arisa said.

"Alright. Umm....Also..." Leonie nervously twiddle with her fingers, "Ummm...thank you for...saving me..and my friends...you're..an amazing teacher...can I call you....Professor?" She said.

Arisa just stared in shock.

"You know what, sure. Call me Professor." Arisa smiled and Leonie had a small blush but grinned.

"Yay!! Also, I hereby declare you also my rival!!" Leonie said suddenly.

Aaaaaannnnnnnnndddsd there goes that moment out the window.

- 2 Weeks Later -

"And that is my report King Lambert. The epidemic has been controlled and many are beginning to recover with the proper rest after taking the "antibiotic". We also made a triple check to make sure none of those who took it were allergic to the ingredients. As such, Kiana Kalsana was properly able to identify the name of the sickness. She knew the symptoms and it is called Pneumonia. She is the owner and founder of the medication called antibiotics. My role was to acquire the ingredients to make it. Thus, credit for creating this new medication and discovery goes to her. All I did was help produce the medicine." Emily said as she read her report to the king in roundtable conference room.

The heads of House Galatea, Flaudirius, Rowe, Gautier, Charon, Gaspard, Kleiman, Dominic, Cornelia and King Lambert himself, all were silent as they heard the report.

"S-Some unknown woman is the one who created this medicine?!" Count Rowe said.

"Is there a problem with that Count?" Lord Lonato said to the count.

"Of course, there is! The fact that the woman refuses to show her identity and only give her name?! For all we know, she could s-some enemy!!" Lord Gautier said.

"I wouldn't say that." King Lambert spoke, making the room go silent.
"This woman has chosen to remain unidentified and that is her choice. Seeing the reaction some of you are having makes it sense." King Lambert said and a few had their heads down. "What's more, she decided to trust Lady Emily, head of House Zoltras, to produce this medicine to help the citizens. She clearly had good intentions to help the people of The Kingdom." He finished.

Emily had to keep herself from smirking because how composed Cornelia is barely managing to keep herself.

"I'll admit," Emily spoke and they turned to her, "Even I myself am very impressed. She identified a sickness that is not in any of our royal archives. Her knowledge reminded me of an old friend of mine who travels across the world. The woman is very smart. She even turned down my offer to come work for me." Emily chuckled and heard half the room choke on their own spit.

"You admit....you have been out done?" Cornelia could not believe what she was hearing.

"Yes, I admit it. I been outdone." Emily grumbled and half the lords exploded to huge questions.

King Lambert along with his friends, Lord Rodrigues, Sir Gustav and Lord Lonato were trying not to burst out laughing, seeing the utterly devastating blow on the most prideful doctor, Emily.

"ANYHOW!!" Emily said and glared at the four friends who just coughed while the other quite down, "Lord Galatea," she turned to Ingrid's father, "Lady Kiana also spoke about the famine going on in your land." She said.

"What?" The lord was confused, and Emily smiled sadly, "I have sent her samples of the soil of the land and she was able to identify that it is the lack of nutrition in it. We also spoke about creating other medicines to help treat the lack of nutrition to your people. She has suggested for now, focus on making sure that the practice of washing your hands is spread out through the Kingdom and beyond. This helps reduce the spread of diseases but also helps cleanliness. She also said to make sure to boil the water if it retrieved from wells, lakes, or ponds. This also kills any bacteria in it. Lastly, since thankfully this can be done, food scraps such as vegetable peels, fish bones, fish meat, dead leaves, and eggshells are to be mixed into the soil. This will help bring nutrients back to the soil and allow farmers to plant crops. Finally, a new method of farming called crop rotation." Emily smiled.

The entire room was silent, and Lord Galatea was doing everything he could to hold back tears, only his body shook. For his land has suffered so much....to think, even this woman, despite no one knows her true intentions, has chosen to help him.

"Emily, where is this woman now?" King Lambert said and Emily knew that look in his eye. This was a possible ally. Someone who could help the Kingdom flourish.

"Unfortunately, I am not in the position to say her location. For she and I have sworn an oath of secrecy together. But....she is a professor. She travels around Fodlan teaching children how to read and write. She will be coming here to the Kingdom in 5 more years. That is all I can say my king." Emily said.

"What? She goes around teaching commoners how to read and write? What is this fool thinking?" Lord Kleiman huffed.

Emily's eye twitched.
"My Lord, Lady Kiana beliefs are different from those of us here in Fodlan. In her country, children of all status receive free education. The people entrust the future to future generations. They believe in their children. Unlike they system here, there is no such thing as nobility in her country." Emily said as she was trying not to laugh at the faces many were making.

Now..how does Emily know this? In the spandex of the two weeks, her and Arisa have been exchanging letters. Each one very much knew that they all had a goal in mind. A common goal. But they also shared their own knowledge. Within this span, both Arisa and Emily can safely say they are allies and have trust, bit out of safety reasons, for both, they have chosen to remain in the contract. The fact that Arisa has chosen to share things about her old world, hoping for better benefit, is enough.

"What.....?" Were all the others could say..

Emily smiled and turned to King Lambert who nodded.

"Very well. Thank you, Lady Emily. Lady Kiana has my gratitude. I must admit...hearing she rejected your offer remind me of when I offered Sir Jeralt to join the Kingdom Knights. I do wonder how that man is doing along with his daughter. My son misses her." The King chuckled while far away, Arisa shuttered for some reason.

"Right.....King Lambert, with your permission, I would like to suggest something." She said.

"Oh? This is quite rare for you to voice your ideas. What do you wish to speak?" The king said and Emily smiled.

"How do you feel about sponsoring this girl when she comes to the Kingdom in five years? She does plan to enroll in the Magic Academy for a semester at most. Not to mention.....if she takes the exams of the Church of Serios to become a High Ranking Mage such as the other 4 and I, many will be bringing offers to have her join them. Let us not forget the battle we lost to House Reigan over Doctor Edward Snowden, who, like Lady Kiana and Doctor Lilac, are commoners. Also, he was later adopted by House Edmund at age 15." She smiled and King Lambert was not happy with her bring up that battle of offers from 10 years ago.

"Must you remind us of us losing to our cousin?!"

King Lambert let out a dry laugh as he saw his Elder Brother, Duke Rufus, come in.

"You're late." King Lambert said.

"Believe me....you don't want to know why." Rufus said and sat next to him.

"Back to the topic," Cornelia spoke, she fixed her mask, "It was his choice to take House Reigan's offer. Despite what was offered by many of us here, he chose to join the Alliance. By the end of the day, it is our choice to who we chose." Cornelia said.

"Oh," Emily smirked coyly as she placed her index finger on the side of her lips, "My this is rare
for you to say that "it is our choice." Since when was the last time the self-proclaimed mage has actually thought to give a choice to others?" Emily said.

"Oh no...." all the men thought, and they knew what was about to happen.

Cornelia looked at Emily like she was about to murder her on the spot.

"Oh? Says the woman who was outdone by someone who is complete foreign. Let alone she knew knowledge you clearly Oh so easily say you could do anything now?" Cornelia smirked back.

"Listen here fake glass surgery of fake breast and shitty fashion sense. I actually care about people and chose to actually help others free of charge unlike some fake eyelashes I know." Emily said back.

And that's when Cornelia lunged at her and the cat fight ensued.

"WHOA WHOA!!" all the Lords quickly got up to try and stop the fight going on between the two females.

King Lambert groans into his hands and Lord Lonato could not help but burst out laughing.

"Why must this happen in every meeting?" The king said and Lord Rodrigue all he could do was patted his friend on the back along with his brother, while the others were finally able to separate the two women.

"Say that again you bloody brat!!" Cornelia roared, her lipstick smeared and mask half coming off.

"I said bring it on harlot!!" Emily roared back; her fluffy red hair completely frizzy.

So much for the meeting......

- Leicester Alliance: House Reigan -

With a bottle of purple colored liquid in his hand, he nodded in satisfaction at his creation.

"Now where is that book on creams....." he muttered.

In a room filled with books, papers, shelves and tools of science all over, one could argue this was a lab. In a way, it was. Papers scattered all over the table, the door to the balcony left wide open. Outside you could see plates filled with fresh fruits and wooly bugs eating them happily. The shelves were filled with jars that had many questionable things. Many had herbs while others had a few live insects or plants in them. Some even had a few corpses of different small animals that were perfectly preserved. His red eyes blinked as they heard shuffling near his door and sighed.

"Claude.....I know you're there." He said.

A young boy with tan colored skin, Verdant colored eyes, dark brown hair with a small braid on the side. He wore a yellow and green patterned scarf wrapped around his head as he wore a yellow shirt with shorts and brown boots. The boy grinned as he went in, and the older man, who wore a lab coat, blue hair tied in a ponytail, a brown shirt, black pants and sandals, gave him a tired smile.
He had circles under his eyes.

"Hello Claude......you're not getting your hands on my books of poison." He said.

"Aawww!!! Come on Doc, it's not like I'm scheming anything!!" The boy known as Claude said as smiled.

"The last time you said that you made a poison that gave a group of boys stomach aches for two days." The man said and Claude grinned.

"I regret nothing!! Come on Edward!!! I swear I will use it responsibly." Claude grin and yelped at the karate chop he got on the head.

"No." Was all the man now known as Edward said as he turned back to his work.

Claude pouted but blinked when he saw a book open. His eyes saw the picture of a woman drawn in the style of Fodlan. She wore strange armor and a lance. Angel like wings as she flew towards the sky with many others.

"Hey Edward, I don't remember you liking picture books." He said and Edward turned his way.

The older man had the boy sat down next to him and pointed to the women.

"Marianne loves it when I read her stories at night. This here is a legend of Brunhild and Sigurd from a country far away from Fodlan. But, guess you could say her personal favorite is this one," he turned the page to show a picture of two women dancing, "The Legend of Rose and Marigold." Edward saw Claude raised an eyebrow.

"Mother has told me a few legends of Fodlan but this is my first hearing of this one." He said and Edward's laughed.

"That's because this legend isn't from Fodlan. This book is filled with legends from different countries around the world." He said and Claude had a gleam in his eye that the older man knew well.

"Can I borrow it? I want to read it." He said.

"Alright. Just.....please don't lose it. This my personal book." He said.

"I swear to the goddess of Fodlan I will not lose this book." Claude said.

"Alright. Now, get of here before I get yelled at by your grandfather." Edward chuckled.

Claude grinned as he left the lab with the book in his arms. He headed straight to his room. He jumped on his bed and opened the book. The first story he randomly opened to was the story of.....The Snow Queen. Now, Claude was not the type to read fairy tales but at times he would. About 20 minutes in, he saw it was getting late and closed it.

"Yaaawwwn....snow queen huh? Kind of reminds me of the story of Cirina." He muttered as he looked out to the starry sky. Now, he usually isn't the type to single lullabies at times, but the stars always remained him of the one his mother would sing to him. About the stars.
Little star, where are you?
I wonder what you are.

In the sky and in the sea
A real diamond.

Little star, where are you?
I wonder what you are.

At that same moment, Alexandra was still awake while the others were asleep in their tents. She also was softly singing the song while looking at the night sky.

When the sun has already gone,
When nothing else shines,
You show us your shine.
You shine, you shine constantly.

Little star, where are you?
I wonder what you are.

The girl hummed softly as she stared up. It felt strange, at times to be sitting alone like this. Amir was out cold asleep, and Arisa slept like a log. But her, she was a light sleeper. At times she wondered why but then again, she still at times has nightmares of her mother. Her little feathers drooped as she looked back up to the sky.

"Is there someone out there....who...is a bit like me?"

Chapter 14: Travel Winds: Part 1: Forbidden Knowledge

[ -------- ]

Two-year gap once more. We begin to see politics and more serious things going to happen soon.
I decided to show the adult side of Arisa in this chapter and how strict and cold she could be when she is angered, and sees people doing idiot things. But also, when she needs to get serious. We also got to see how she manages to make a deal with Emily. The red-haired woman's true role is slowly being brought out and how Arisa is now taking steps to gain allies for when the next time gap happens. The next chapter won't come out till most likely around the end of December or January. I'm in finals weeks in my university. Someone save me.
If there was anything Alexandra hated in the world, it was people who looked down on others. True hatred is what existed in her heart. She wasn't like Amir, despite seeing her entire family massacred, had no desire for revenge because it went against her beliefs of forgiveness and the Gods that blessed her family. She wasn't like Arisa, who, despite at times was unpredictable, held no scorn nor anger towards anyone. No, she wasn't like any of them. Alexandra held a deep, deep hatred in her heart against those that abused their power. There was still unfilled craving to kill everything in her sight, but she knew that feeling was mostly coming from Cirina, the Ice queen, she calls her. She had developed strange habits because of her other half's influence. She had this knack of liking cold sweets, twirling a strand of her hair, what's more, the strange feature of her Crest that makes her become hostile to those with a specific Crest. When she first met Florencio and Sandy, even Jeralt, she had grown a mutual hostile towards them. That was because those three possessed the Crest of Serios. Rensen explained to them that this feature usually manifested in one specific female barer. Only the female that possess the major Crest of Aubin shows hostility while males can lose control of their emotions. What was more mysterious that the Crest hold the conscious of Cirina, the original bearer of the Crest and the major Crest only manifests it. There are 5 levels of hostility.

Crest of Cethleann: level 1: Go away

Crest of Serios: Level 2: Go away or I'll punch you.

Crest of Cichol: Level 3: I want to hurt you.

Crest of Gautier: Level 4: I'll RIP your throat out

Crest of Riegan: Level: Downright wants/will to murder them.

No one through the years has figured out why the Crest makes their barer show such hostility. Some say it is an ancient grudge that has been passed down through generations. Others say it is the will of Cirina, who was one of the 12 Elites who chose neither side of Serios or Nemesis. Only the consciousness of Cirina knows the truth.

This is the story of how the schemer met the snow princess.
- 2 months Later: Harpstring Moon: May: Derdriu -

Excitement was all Alexandra felt as she stared out to the entire city port from high above the clouds, thanks to her new spell to create wings of ice to fly. Buildings, factories, rich with port to trade. The port city is home to numerous factories and prospers thanks to its ability to produce goods and export them by sea. Alexandra couldn't help but call this heaven for herself. She could see many people walking through the bustling port. A few unknown here and there. She could see the ocean as clear as day. The beautiful sight of blue made her skin tingle with excitement and want to dive straight into the ocean water to swim. Explore coral reefs and play with the sea creatures.

"Alex!!"

She turned to her right and saw her two friends fly up to see if she was alright. They were riding Red Hare. Arisa and Amir gasped at the amazing view of the place.

"It's beautiful...." the three girls muttered together and then giggled.

"So, ready for some fun?" Arisa said and the other two gave a thumbs up.

"I'm excited to see if I can get a new deal on some gems!!! Ooohhh!!! Anna said that Derdui specializes in emeralds!! Slurp.....just imagining getting my hands on them...making more cute jewelry....." Amir wiped the drool from her lips with her sleeves.

Arisa along with Alexandra, shuttered at their friend's obsession with jewelry. So... past two years. Remember, that it was Sandy who took Amir in? Well, you know what that meant. Sandy's obsession with cute and fluffy things rubbed off onto Amir but thankfully it wasn't clothing. But rather, jewelry. You see, Amir has only ever had one set of jewelry, which is her earrings from Duscur. So, when Sandy showed her collection of jewelry, she hordes away, Amir became interested. This eventually led to the girl trying to make her own jewelry because none of the ones Sandy had caught her interest. So, what began it all?

Gems and Anna.

But that's a story for another time so back to the original subject!!

"Girls!!! Get back here!!!" Jeralt yelled out to the sky and let go of a long sigh as they traveled through the gates.

Sandy chuckled as she looked around.
"Derdui has changed a lot. Does bring back good memories. Wish Florencio was here but the man wanted to see how his precious pupil was doing." Sandy said as she was referring to Bernadetta.

"Can you blame him?" Temes said with a grin, "It's been a long time since we have seen him so happy. He treats the girl like she is his daughter." He said and Jeralt chuckled.

"Let the man be. I think he deserves this. You know, it may be possible he may introduce her to us when we return back to Remire Village." He said.

The Flame Twins along with Hana were walking next to the wagon and looked to each other quickly then back to them.

"Hey Captain, can I ask you something a bit more....on the personal level? If you don't want to answer, that's perfectly fine." Cinder said.

Sandy raised an eyebrow at them and Jeralt spoke.

"Depends what the question is but shoot away." Jeralt said.

"Alright.....Do you, Sandy and Florencio have the Crest of Serios?" He asked.

Silence befell everyone at the question, thankfully the girls weren't back yet. Jeralt turned to him and looked at him coldly.

"We do. Do you have a problem with it?" He said.

"Whoa whoa!!! Captain relax. Just....wanted to confirm a theory....you guys....aren't the only one to suffer under that woman..." Cinder said.

Jeralt and Sandy shared a look and the woman spoke.

"I'm assuming you ran away from The Church of Serios also." She said.

"More like we escaped that woman's lab." Camren said and Cinder looked at him shocked.

"Wait, what? Lab?" Jeralt said shocked.

"You two." Hana gave them a warning tone, that made the twins flinch.

"We'll talk later once we arrive at our place, we are staying it. After all...." Sandy smiled as she crossed her legs, "We need to discuss this.....thoroughly." she said and her silver eyes nearly looked like slits.

"Nice going idiot!!" Hana took out her paper fan and smacked both them senseless.

Temes burst out laughing but saw that Amir and Byleth come back down.

"Wait, where's Alexandra?" He said.

The girls just pointed ahead and Jeralt let go of a sigh. That meant she went ahead.
Many could not help but stare at the girl with deep blue Azure hair with strange little wings on her head. But many females cooed at the adorable sight as the girl happily ate the shaved ice treat, the little wings flapped rapidly, showing her love of the treat. Alexandra squealed happily as she took another spoonful to her mouth and walked happily with Falco on her shoulder.

"Blueberry and blackberries flavors are my favorites!! Yuummm!!" The girl said out loud as she walked past an alley way but...

"Give it to us you Almyran scum!!"

"I said no!!"

She stopped and turned. She frowned and walked towards the yelling. She gently placed her shaved ice down and stared void of emotions. A group of older boys were ganged up against one, who refused to let go of a book in his chest.

"Ewww!! He's getting his germs on it!!" Another boy laughed as he threw a punch.

"Hey. Are you done?" The girl said and all of them turned to her.

The boy that held tightly his book looked at her shocked, despite having a black eye.

"Get out of here. We're teaching this kid the Fodlan way of dealing with outsiders like him." One of the older boys said and she crossed her arms.

"Kkkrrrrriiii!!" Falco hissed and jumped from her shoulder to the boy with the book.

"Falco says are okay?" She said, ignoring the others.

"Yeah...I guess...." the boy muttered.

"Are you ignoring us?" The older boys glared.

"Is that a maggot I here?" Alexandra said as she purposely looked around.

The group glared and began to head towards her.

"You got a lot of nerves. What's with those stupid things on your head?" One said as they surrounded her.

"I think you boys better leave, or you will regret it." Alexandra said as she had her hand over her necklace.

"What's a little girl going to do? Punch us?" One mocked.

"Hey!! Leave her alone!!" The boy with the book yelled as Falco was now on his head.

"Shut it Almyran," Another said.
"I warned you" Alexandra smiled and jumped, kicking one to the face and sent him flying to a puddle of mud.

"Get he------" all of them immediately backed away as they saw she held a scythe in her hands and floated in the air, the walls around them frost began to grow on them.

The boy could only look at her shocked yet also amazed.

"Snow Queen....." he muttered.

Alexandra spoke coldly, her voice was a mixture of her's and Cirina's.

"Leave you human scum. Dare hurt this boy again and I can guarantee none of you will live to see the next day." She said and the group ran away, terrified.

Alexandra sighed she floated back down, gently landing on her feet.

"Are you okay?" She said as she turned to the boy and froze.

Her heart began racing, her blood boiled, inhuman anger began to fill her mind as she could hear Cirina's voice suddenly becoming louder by each second.

"I'm alright. Thank you for helping me!! I must admit, that was amazing!! You looked like a Snow Queen!! Well, princess is more of the word since you're smaller than me." The boy said.

Tan colored skin, verdant colored eyes, dark brown hair with a small braid on the side. He wore a yellow and green patterned scarf wrapped around his head as he wore a yellow shirt with shorts and brown boots.

Her body began shaking and she dropped to her knees. She could feel "her" influence as she bit her lip.

"Are you alright?!" The boy said as he knelt.

"R-Run...." she muttered as she hugged herself tightly, digging her nails into her arms.

"Krriii!!! Krriii!!" Falco said and pulled his hair.

"Reigan.....Reigan.............." Cirina growled furiously in her mind as Alexandra looked up to the boy.

"Please!!! Just run and get away from me!!!! I don't want to hurt you!!" She said.

Claude was confused. She saved him and now she's telling him to get away from her. But...

"She looks in pain...." he thought and knelt down close to her, even if he saw her blue eyes flickering between red and their original color.

"Please...go!!! Please!!! She wants to hurt you!!!! She keeps screaming Reigan and traitor!!! Please!!! I don't know you but please!!" Alexandra said and he looked at her seriously, quickly holding her hand and she looked at him horrified because frost was forming on them.
"You helped me, so let me help you." Claude smiled to her kindly as the girl was taking large deep breaths.

"Traitor! Traitor!!! Blood of Reigan!!! Traior!! Kill him!!" Cirina roared in her mind.

"No no!!! I don't know him!!! I don't want to hurt him!!! Why are you like this?!!" Alexandra yelled out.

Claude smiled sadly and rested his forehead on hers, letting her look into his eyes.

"It's okay. I'm Claude. Nice to meet you Snow Princess. It's okay." He said and Alexandra looked him shocked.

Heat was rushing to her face and she could feel Cirina's glare burning into her soul. Her body slowly stopped shaking and she took deep breaths. Claude smiled till she suddenly rested her head in his chest.

"Thank you......I'm sorry....my...crest makes me hostile....to people with certain crest....I'm sorry..." the girl whimpered softly.

"It's okay. Not the first time I've encountered someone hostile towards me." He chuckled.

"Wait....crest.....is sh----!!" His thought was interrupted.

"I FOUND HER!!"

Claude quickly looked up shock and spotted a girl that looked similar to him minus her pink silver hair and the other girl with brown colored hair that faded to teal. Both looked out of breath and ran towards them.

"What did you do to her?!!" The white haired one roared at him.

"What?! I didn't do anything to her!!! She saved me!!" He said, shocked.

"Amir, stop it!!! He didn't hurt her." The teal haired one said as she turned to him.

"Thank you. I'm...sorry you had to see her like this. Also, Falco says thank you for helping her also. We'll take it from here." The girl smiled kindly.

He nodded but there was something mysterious about her. He couldn't put his finger on it but it was something. He helped the blue haired girl stand up and she smiled to him a bit nervously.

"Thank you. Um....Also...sorry for scaring you a bit early. It had to be done to scare those boys away. Umm...I'm Alexandra. You said your name was Claude, right?" Alexandra smiled to him softly.

Arisa froze. Claude smiled to her and grinned.

"Yup!!" He said and before he could say more, Arisa had placed her hand on his head and his body began glowing.

The cuts and bruises he had been healed as well as his black eye. Falco jumped back to Alexandra
and purred.

"Healing magic...." Claude thought as she removed her hand and smiled.

"There, I fixed you up. Based on what my friend has said, looks like you were beaten up really badly." She said.

"Yeah....it's quite common really." He said and he saw her look at him worried.

He turned to Amir.

"Are you from Almyra too?" He asked.

"Nope!! I'm from Duscur!!! Names Amir. You met Alexandra and this here is Byleth." Amir said and pointed to her.

Arisa did a small bow to him and nodded.

"Nice to meet you. Well, take care!!" She said and quickly grabbed the other two girls and bolted with them.

"Waaait!! My shaved ice!!"

Claude couldn't help but chuckle as the girls left. He headed back home. He needs to ask Edward if Alexandra is a relative of his because of the blue hair.

- 2 Hours Later -

"I'm so sorry!!" Alexandra bowed repeatedly to Arisa and Amir.

The girls were able to catch up with the adults and went to the cabin that was rented. They will be staying in Dedrui for 3 months due to the high demand of job request in the Alliance and also, it was very active for poachers hunting fae and animals. Thus, another reason of high demand to take them out. The Leicester Alliance was not only known for its amazing lands of abundant forest, but also because it was home to many fae. Compared to the Empire and The Kingdom, The Leicester Alliance's people were well known to be connected to nature and protect it. Let us not forget that it also home to certain queen of faeries.

"It's alright. Thankfully thanks to Amir's ability to sense magic we were able to find you. We were getting worried you left ahead and what more, you didn't have your medicine with you in case you encountered someone with those 5 Crest!!" Arisa said as she sat down on her bed.

"But still.....I nearly lashed out at Claude!!! I... honestly don't know how he did it...but.....somehow I was able to surpass Cirina's influence. She....wanted to kill him..."Alexandra said, worried as she looked at her hands.

"I don't want to become a monster again...." she thought, because she remembered everything that went down the day of the fire, how she nearly killed her friends, how she killed the servants of the
household, Lawson especially, the taste of blood on her lips.

"Maybe stay away from him?" Amir suggested and Arisa shook her head.

"No, I don't agree with that. The boy has already suffered enough." She said and got off her chair.

"How about we get to know him? I do know a few things about him though, so you can get an idea." She said.

"Just kill him that's what should be done."

Alexandra froze as Cirina made her appearance and glared furiously at all of them. Sothis quickly appeared and floated in front of the three girls to defend them, she is the only one that can physically hurt the woman.

"You dare wish to harm a child?! How low have you chosen to fall?" Sothis said and Cirina glares.

"Ho? You dare say that to me Fell Star? I was betrayed by that man!!! Reigan is the reason I am on this very state!!! Be lucky I hold no grudge against you now or else I can guarantee I would have had Alexandra rip out your throat!!" Cirina said.

"Just what did Reigan do to you?! Please!!! Just tell us!!" Alexandra plead to her.

She wanted at least some peace from the internal rage she feels because of her other half. Cirina scowls and pointed to her heart.

"This heart used to be in love!! This heart used to love both humans and the Nabateans!! This heart was born from a child of the goddess and human mother!! Look where that led me!!! Betrayed. Do whatever the hell you all want!! I'll be asleep till I desire to wake up!!" Cirina said and disappeared in a shower of blue dust.

They all let go a sigh of relief and Sothis turned to Alexandra, who was crying.

"There, there dear. It's alright. Don't listen to that scrooge. Just because she lives inside does not mean she is you. You are your own person. You're not a monster." Sothis said softly as she wiped Alexandra's tears.

"For now, I recommend taking the medicine to surpassing your Crest for the day. I'm usually not the type to do this but hopefully when you're able to properly control it, you won't have to take this in the future." Arisa said as Alexandra took the small bottle of blue liquid in the hand, popped it open and gulped the contents down.

"Thank you..." Alexandra smiled sadly and Amir patted her shoulder.

"How about we go with Sandy to buy a few groceries? Wait, we're guarding a caravan for a few days. Well, Sandy, Fiona and Alexandra are unfortunately. I'm stuck with dad and Temes taking down some poachers while Amir, Hana and the Flame twins will be heading to the forest to take down a couple of bandits." Arisa grumbled.

"Nnooooo!! We want to stay with you!!" Amir and Alexandra whined and Sothis giggled.
"Now, now you two, you can't always stick to Arisa forever. One day, your path will split and each one will walk their own. Take this as practice. After all, what will happen the day you three find a husband and get married?" Sothis and saw all three of them instantly cringe.

"I refuse to be a housewife." Amir said.

"I rather be single and travel the world than held down." Arisa said. (Sothis: So, you don't have a crush on the Prince then? Arisa: SHUT IT!!)

"I want to travel." Alexandra said.

Sothis pouted at the responses.

So much for a girl talk.

- 1 hour later -

Alexandra had a strange habit of staring at people she found attractive. She wasn't the only one. Many stared at the two beautiful Almyran beauties that walked through the city streets, while Alexandra felt so out of place next to this woman. Sandy wore her usual clothing of a Fodlan Dancer while Fiona....wore the clothing of a mercenary. Fiona was a beautiful Almyran beauty with Fodlan blood running through her veins. She walked proudly with her hunter silver wolf next to her, which many backed away. The wolf was named Nuke and had a calm personality but deadly when it was needed. She was born in a village near Fodlan's Throat and eventually chose to live in Fodlan permanently. She lived mostly in the forest much of her life, this makes her an excellent hunter and good with communicating with animals. They came to the gates of a nice-looking manner and saw a woman with light tan skin, pale blue eyes, dark brown haired tied in a high ponytail, and wore a brown and yellow uniform of a general. The woman turned their way and smiled when she spotted Sandy.

"Sandana!!! Haa!! Who knew it was you that was taking this request!! You haven't changed in years." The woman grinned as she and Sandy shared a quick hug.

"Goodness Judith!! It's been years!! I see you're still as fresh as ever." Sandy grind as the woman now known as Judith laughed.

"Thank you!!" Judith said and then noticed the two others.

"Oh, who are these girls?" She asked and Sandy smiled.

"Judith, this is Fiona. She's part of my ace team and this little Valkyrie," she pointed to Alexandra who smiled, her tiny head wings fluttered, " Is Alexandra. She's in training but I felt this was a good opportunity to bring her along. Since, she sticks like glue onto my boss's daughter." Sandy chuckled and Alexandra pouted.

Fiona giggled lightly.

"Hello. I am Fiona. This is Nuke, my wolf. He will be joining us." Fiona said politely and did a small bow.
"I'm Alexandra!!!! Paladin in training!!! Nice to meet you Ms. Judith!!" Alexandra grinned and her head wings flapped happily.

Judith could not help but coo at the girl because of how cute she looked.

"Well, I look forward to working with you all. We'll be heading out in a few minutes. Just waiting for a certain boy to hurry up along with the doctor. We needed extra hands for guarding. There have been reports unfortunately of poachers illegally hunting down Fae and selling them in the black market." Judith said and Fiona became worried.

"What are the reports on them?! Which ones have they been hunting down?!! Have they killed any?!" Fiona said rapidly.

"Awwwoo." Nuke howled lightly, calming down the woman.

"Calm down girl. We're not sure. Hopefully we're able to stop them." Judith said.

"Sorry we took a while!! Claude wanted to get a few things." They heard a Male voice and small steps approaching and turned to the source.

Alexandra froze as she saw the same boy from before and the said boy froze and gave her a grin.

"Hey!! It's the Ice princess!!! Glad to see you're better!" He said to her and walked up.

"Glad to see you're perfectly fine brat." Alexandra said back and gasped, quickly covering her mouth.

Everyone was silent as they stared at her shocked. Even she couldn't believe it. The medicine at most locks away her killing intent but that doesn't mean the hostility will go away. It will manifest itself in a different form. In this case, Alexandra's personality.

"Brat?! I am 6 turning 7 soon!!" Claude said back.

"Ha!!! Too bad!! I'm older than you by two years!!! Plus," she stood proudly, "I'm taller than you by 1 foot!! So still a brat!!" She smirked and patted his head.

"Ummmm......Sandana?" Judith said and the woman quickly whispered.

"She has a Crest that makes her hostile to specific ones. I'm guessing the Crest the boy has is one of them. At least she isn't trying to kill him." Sandana said as Judith looked at her shocked and then back to the two arguing kids.

"Bet you those two will get married in the future." Judith smirked and Sandy smirked back.

"Already making bets. Now Judith, remember the last time you made a bet?" She said and the woman shook her head.

"Don't remind me. I lost that bet to Florencio. Ugh." Judith said and turned back to the children.

Edward back away by a lot of the sight of the wolf and Fiona blinked, then glared.

"You!!" She said and Edward bolted.

She began chasing after him, cursing in Almyran and both Claude and Sandy just stared while Alexandra was just laughing.
"I'm assuming they know each other?" Judith said as they all witnessed Fiona had Edward in a choke hold.

"Nice to see you again...Fifi..." Edward said nervously while the woman was still cursing at him in Almyran.

"THIS IS PAYBACK FOR 5 YEARS AGO!!!" just what did he do to her…..

[ ----- ]

It was strange traveling in a caravan. It was a mixture of men and women, but Alexandra could see the stares of hostility they had towards Sandy and Fiona. But she noticed it more towards Claude also. Judith happily chatted with Sandy as the two steered the horses. The boy just happily hummed as he was reading a book about poisons as he sat next to Doctor Edward, who was writing a few things in his journal. The path of the forest they were taking was filled with greenery, much vegetation. It was also a well-known road for those importing produce from farms. Alexandra began floating a bit and sat next to Claude.

"Hey brat," she said, scaring Claude.

"Ghaaa!!" The boy yelled and nearly dropped his book.

"I told you to stop calling me brat." He glared at her and she just smirked.

"I'm older than you by two years. Anyhow, what cha reading?" She asked as she gently sat herself next to him.

Many stared at her little feathers. Claude smiled to her and turned back to his book.

"I'm reading about poisons. Judith has been helping me in how to use a bow and Edward has been teaching me a bit about poisons." He said.

"Objection!!" Edward said, "You have been sneaking into my lab to sneak away with my book!!! You could have just asked me!" He said and Claude stuck his tongue out.

"Of course the damn Almyran would steal..tch." one of the men whispered.

While Claude ignored the comment Alexandra on the other hand….

"Didn't anyone ever tell you that if a fae senses discrimination against other people they will curse them?" Alexandra grinned.

Claude and Edward raised an eyebrow at her sudden comment and the man that whispered went silent.

"They say that if a Fae senses bad vibes and bad intentions like making mean comments and looking down on others, they will curse them and feed them to the sirens!!! Especially the fae of the winds!!! They say the Fae and the goddess were friends with many people around the world. Especially if they like someone!! If they see you being mean, then…” She made the motion of her neck being cut.

And speaking of that, a few of the aerials nearby heard her and giggled as they landed on her head,
and smirked. Firo made his appearance, scaring the adults minus Judith, Sandy, and Fiona, who were trying not to laugh. Claude stared in shock at the girl who smiled as the fire aerial in the palm of her hands smirked.

"(This one's a good soul. If anyone tries anything, I'll make sure they get hit with bad luck!)" He said.

"What did he say?" Claude asked.

"He says if anyone is mean to you, he and his friends will hit them with bad luck." Alexandra said. Claude couldn't help but burst out laughing but nodded.

"Alright then. But, hey, no need to make threats on people. That could make you look bad." He said and her little feathers dropped.

"Ahhh!! But I want to teach the mean people lesson brat!! No one should treat or look down on others. But okay, I'll listen. After all, karma has a way for getting people back." She smiled.

"Krrriii!!" And out of nowhere, Falco appeared.

He was hiding in her purse.

"Falco!!! I thought I told you to stay home!!" She pouted as the baby wyvern climbed out and made itself comfortable on her shoulder while Firo on her other one.

"Hey little guy!! Good to see you again!!" Claude said and Falco just gave him a cold shoulder.

"He doesn't like it when boys get near me." She giggled while Claude laughed a bit nervously as the baby wyvern hissed at him.

"So, where are you from? Not from here. I've never seen anyone with those.... feathers." he said as he pointed the little feathers on her head.

"I'm from Fodlan." She said.

"Yeah, I know that, but I mean where exactly? Like here in the Alliance or Empire, heck the Kingdom or Garreg Mach." He said.

"Oh.....I....umm....I used to live in the Kingdom. But....I left." She said.

"Why would you leave?" He asked.

Sandy and Fiona shared a quick look.

"Because mommy wanted me dead. So, I left!!" She smiled.

All the adults in the caravan minus Fiona and Sandy, looked at her horrified along with Claude.

"D-Dead...?" The boy could barely say the word and Alexandra nodded.

"Yup!!! Mommy hated daddy and killed him because he would protect me. Because I couldn’t become strong like she was, mommy wanted me gone. Arisa and her family saved me and here I am!! Away from the bad witch!!" She giggled happily.
"I guess we owe you an explanation." Fiona spoke.

"Alexandra was on the verge of getting sold to the slave trade if we didn't save her two years ago. She's still adjusting so we apologize if you see anything strange." Sandy said with a sad smile.

"No, it's alright. I think we understand well.....sigh....I hope one day she is able to heal." Judith said with a sad smile.

Alexandra smiled as Claude looked at her worried.

"Does it hurt?" He asked and she still smiled.

"It does. But I can't make the pain go away. I can't stop hurting and I chose not to. Because the scars of the past make me who I am today." She said.

Words of wisdom left her lips and Fiona and Sandy felt proud hearing the girl's words.

Alexandra was no longer the little girl that would coward in fear but fight on.

---

- With Arisa -

Six arrows shot at a rapid fire as she shot down 6 bandits, each arrow pierced the heart, an instant kill. Each one she muttered a prayer before she fired. Arisa had small smear of blood on her cheek as she came out from her hiding spot with her sword.

"What o------" the bandit that yelled out did not finish his words as the girl's chain like whip quickly passed by his throat and sliced it.

Byleth held no emotion. Byleth killed three bandits with no remorse. Byleth temporarily sealed away her own emotions as she muttered a prayer each time to the ones alive before she made them become cold as the corpse they will be. No matter how many times she did this, 5 years now, it still made her sick to her stomach. She stood surrounded by the corpses of the bandits she had killed, void of all emotions.

"Urghh...." she gagged and quickly covered her mouth has she let her humanity return to her.

Jeralt walked up to her and gently patted her head.

"Easy there kiddo....if you need to let it out, do it." He said and she nodded her head quickly and ran behind a bush where she vomited.

Jeralt sighed as he saw her return, wiping her mouth.

"It's never easy kid. You don't ever get used to it." He said and she nodded as the two began to walk back to the group.

"Boss, we found the cages." Temes said and looked at Byleth worried.

"I'll be alright once my stomach settles." She smiled a bit crooked and Jeralt handed her a small towel to wipe the blood off her face.
"Thank you." She muttered and quickly removed the red liquid on her face.

"Temes, you were saying about the cages?" Jeralt said.

"Right. We opened them and we let the animals and fae out but...." he said, a bit hesitant.

"But what?" Jeralt said with narrowed eyes.

"There's an official of the Church of Serios here." He whispered and Jeralt's eyes went wide.

"Byleth, hood now." He said.

"Dad, I can just do this." Arisa said and closed her eyes, her hair turning black, and becoming straight, like Amir's. Her eyes changed to a purple color and her skin light tan. She opened her eyes and smiled.

"Mei Ren!!! Nice to meet you!!" She grinned and Temes could not help but burst out laughing and Jeralt let out a chuckle.

"I'm guessing Florencio taught you how to change your appearance?" Jeralt said and she nodded.

"Temes, pretend I'm your daughter." Arisa said and Temes choked on air.

"Aarrghhh!! Fine!! You owe me for this." Temes grumbled as they walked back to the cages.

"I see....I do hope this doesn't repeat again." They heard a male voice as they returned to the rest of the mercenary group they were with and Arisa blood ran cold once her eyes landed on the individual.

"Listen, I understand but the protections of this land must become stricter. Lady Rhea does not wish for the Lady Titania to become furious. We don't need another thunderstorm over us again like last year." Dark green colored hair and deep blue eyes closed as their owner's let go of a sigh. He wore a very familiar long black green coat with long sleeves. He wore some armor that mainly protected his stomach and his clothing was the same color. He also wore one single green jewel earring with the symbol of the Church of Serios. The man turned when he saw Jeralt and the other two approaching.

"Ahh!! You must be Sir Jeralt. Pleasure to meet you. My name is Beleth Serios. Lady Rhea's son." Beleth also known as male Byleth, smiled to Jeralt as he offered his hand to shake.

Jeralt could only stare in shock. He looked like the male version of his daughter.

"Oh!! Pardon, for my rudeness. Yes, I was put in charge of this request. It is rare to see an official here. I was taken by surprise. I had no idea Lady Rhea had a son either." Jeralt said as he shook hands with Beleth.

"It is alright." Beleth said and turned to the cages that were empty, "Mother can be quite overprotective at times unfortunately," he muttered that word and Temes snorted a bit, "but thankfully I'm able prove to her that I can handle myself." He said and finally noticed Arisa.

"Pardon but....what is a child doing here?" He asked.

"This is my daughter...she's in training to become a mercenary." Temes lied through his teeth
barely as Arisa smiled.

"Names Mei!!!! I'm a mercenary in training!!" Arisa gave a toothy grin that would put fake smiles to shame.

Beleth chuckled and ruffled her hair.

"Nice to meet you Mei. I'm Beleth. Think you can help me with the Fae over there?" He pointed to a group of silkies that kept glaring at him, "I um.... accidentally insulted one of them." He chuckled a bit embarrassed.

"What did you do?" Temes said.

"Well, I didn't have any sweet cream on me to help them calm down after being freed so I decided to give them.... yogurt. The result? Me nearly getting kicked between the legs." Beleth said and the two older men cringed.

"Well, that's a reason to be angry at." Jeralt chuckled but he has not let his guard down at all.

"How rude!!! Silkies deserve caramel." Arisa glared and walked over to the group of 3 females.

They blinked when they looked at her and she spoke in the language that she so brutally suffered learning from Alexandra and Rensen. It felt like Japanese all over again.

"(Hello there. I am Mei. I am sorry that the man offended you. As an apology, I have caramel. I don't have any sweet cream unfortunately, but I hope this will do. He wanted to help you girls calm down because you were all still scared.)" She said as she took out a small pouch of caramels from the Kingdom.

The group of silkies stared at her and the middle one gently took it from her. She opened it and their eyes sparkled at the candies. They hummed in joy and nodded to each other as they turned back to her.

"(Thank you... )" they smiled warmly to her and made a bouquet of white lilies appear in her hands.

Arisa blinked and smiled to them kindly as they flew away but not before one of them stuck her tongue out at Beleth. She giggled and saw Beleth sigh as she walked back to them.

"I'm surprised you can speak the language of Fae. It's extremely rare to see someone speak it." He said and Arisa blinked.

"I....did not know that. But glad I managed to help you out a bit. They're still mad at you though." She said.

"Understandable. Also, thank you." Beleth said as he turned back to Jeralt and Temes.

"Also, thank you all once again for stopping those bandits. The Knights of Serios and I will clean up here. Umm....Sir Jeralt, why don't you come to the Church with us? I've heard stories of you from my mother and many others. It would be wonderful if you were to return." He said.

Arisa and Temes quickly shared a look of worry and then back to Jeralt.

"Thank you for the offer but I have to decline. I'm happy with my current life right now and want to continue. Tell Lady Rhea I send my regards." Jeralt said.
Fog suddenly began to fill the place, and many looked around worried. What Beleth did not know was that this was being caused by Arisa and will only affect him and the Knights of Serios.

"What on......?" Beleth fell to the ground asleep along with the rest of the knights.

The mercenary team along with Jeralt and Temes were shocked.

"Dad, let's go. They won't remember us." Was all Arisa said as she made her appearance return to normal.

The two older men were silent and turned back to the others.

"Let's go!!" Jeralt order and everyone quickly left but not before Arisa quickly pick pocketed Beleth and found a map of the Monastery.

"Forgive me." She muttered, ran to Red Hare, and they all left.

[ ---- ]

She never expected that her male counterpart existed in this world. She didn't think it was possible, but the world always has a way. Arisa was just so confused. So, so, confused. Did her mother of this world give birth to twins?

"No... he's way older than me...he also called Rhea…. mother..." she muttered as she flies through the sky at a slow pace. She wasn't too a head from her father and the others, she was still in their sights.

Then how? Could it be possible that Rhea made a thirteenth vessel in case she found her as a failure and wanted her dead? No... artificial humans in this era can’t awaken without a heart or consciousness. The technology that Rhea uses is still on the low side compared to what Those Who Slither in the Dark have. Rhea already failed 11 times. It could be possible that Rhea did marry and have a child, but that she completely doubts happened and it would have been a huge event. Beleth wasn’t a survivor of Zanado. Her first bet is that Rhea accidentally created a human that was able to have their own consciousness without the need of a Crest stone. She let go of a long sigh. Too many new unanswered questions.

"It'll be in 20 minutes they will wake up and have no memories of us at all. We should make it back to the Capital by then." Arisa muttered as Sothis appeared.

"What happened to the bouquet of flowers the silkies gifted you?" Sothis asked and Arisa moved her cloak bit to show the flowers.

"Don't worry. I still have them. We'll put them in a vase tonight." She said and flew down.

Red Hare landed next to the wagon and walked next to it.

"Hey dad, can we buy some berries for tonight? I want to make some tarts." She said.

Jeralt was silent as he stared at her for a moment and spoke.

"Why did you it kid?" He said and the smile on her face became a frown.
"Because you looked uncomfortable and your guard was up. Dad, I'm not an idiot. I knew you were once a knight because Leonie told me about it." She said and Jeralt let go of a sigh.

"I known...for a very long time..." she mentally thought as her father spoke.

"I swear kids these days....but...you're right. I used to be Knight of Serios. A long time ago..." he muttered.

Now this was very different from the original story of the game. Byleth didn't learn about the Church of Serios and the knights till they entered the Officer's Academy in 1180. The fact that she has managed to have her father admit it and possibly even speak of it, was something new.

"Can I ask why you left?" She said.

Jeralt was silent as her question was asked.

"When you're older, I'll tell you why. For now, when are those idiots going to wake up?" He said, hoping to change the subject.

"In 20 minutes. Don't worry, they never talked to us and we never talked to them. Hehehe!! Also, I pickpocket one of them." She giggled mischievously as she held out small purse that rattled with coins.

"Ha!! That's my girl! Just...don't pickpocket people." Jeralt chuckled as his daughter pouted at him.

"We should be passing by that small swap meet in an hour. We'll stop for a bit and see what we find." He said and Temes chuckled.

"By the way midget, you owe me. So, how you going to pay up?" Temes grinned to her as Arisa glared playfully.

"How about I make that toffee you love eating?" She said and he nodded.

"Alright. Deal." He said and turned to Jeralt, "Hey Captain, quick question. When was the last time we had that Gautier wine? I have been craving some lately. Since it is our first day at the capital, why don't we throw a small celebration for a successful hunt?" He said.

Jeralt thought for a moment and nodded.

"You know what? I'll take you up on that. I think they may be selling Gautier wine at the swap meet up head so we'll see." He said and Temes and Arisa fist bump.

"Pomegranate Cider here I come!!"

"And you need to be put on a limit!!"

- With Amir -
Amir came down on all her opponents like they were nothing, but mere rocks easily crushed by her axe. She wielded it so skillfully and when it needed to be thrown, she threw it like a boomerang and then would catch it swiftly. Arisa could not help but sometimes feel she is watching female Thor bring down her war hammer, Mjölnir, on her enemies. Amir panted as she heard a giggle not too far from her. She wasn't the only female that wielded an axe like a war God. She looked over to the small female that cut through the bandits like they were butter. Bright pink haired tied in two pigtails and pink colored eyes that cringed when she spotted a drop of blood on her cute warrior dress with frills.

"Dodge!!" Amir yelled to her and threw her axe towards her.

The pink eyes went wide as she saw the axe coming and bent backwards like a gymnast. The girl saw the axe cut clean off the head of a bandit that was coming from behind her. She went back up and nodded to her. The pink haired one was very impressed but also, the tan silver pink haired girl looked like an adorable princess despite she wielded a deadly weapon. She smiled as she skipped up to her.

"That's all of them!!" Hana yelled out and turned to the man who had the same colored hair and eyes as the pink haired girl.

"I am so sorry you and your sister had to get involved Lord Holst!!! I didn't think you would be here also for the bandit raid!!" Hana said as she repeatedly bowed to the general.

"It's alright!! We were close by anyway and I wanted this to be a training. Besides, I got to meet a beautiful lady like you." General Holst smiled to her.

He was a tall well-built man with groomed pink hair, the sides shaved, and had a small ponytail. He had a pink jeweled earring and wore the armor of an armored knight. He held his Axe in his right hand. Hana just gave him a blank look and Cinder came up, quickly wrapped his hand around her waist.

"Hello General Holst!! Thank you for helping my wife!!" Cinder smiles to the general while Hana's ears had turned red.

"Dammit...she's taken..." Holst internally cursed and smiled.

Camren was trying not to laugh at the forced smile the general did.

"No worries!! I'm glad she is doing well." He said and turned to his see his little sister but frowned when she saw her circling around Amir.

"Aah!! You're so cute!!! I never seen pink silver haired hair and suits your gray eyes!! Ooh!! I'm so happy to see a fellow lady!!" The pink haired girl said excitedly while Amir just backed away a bit uncomfortable.

"Say, are you from Almyra?" The girl asked.

"No. I'm from Duscur." Amir answered.
"Ohh!! Speaking of Duscur, that's one of the main reasons big brother and I are here. He wanted to check on these merchants from Duscur that suddenly stopped talking to him." The girl said.

Amir went silent.

"Hilda..." Holst said and the girl glared at him.

"What?! Stay out of my friendship life brother!" She said to him and he looked extremely hurt.

"Right.....ummm... honestly that is one of the main reasons this request was put in. We suddenly lost contact with one of the trading ports that belong to merchants from Duscur. Sigh.....this just like when the Amaryllis family cut ties with so many all of a sudden. Even now we don't know about them." Holst said as she let go of a sigh.

Amir stared silently as Hilda put a flower crown on her hair.

"We'll be accompanying you to the port then. We should be getting there in 40 minutes thanks to the horses and wyvern." Camren said.

"Let's go!!" Holst order and everyone got on their rides.

Hana got on her horse while the twins on their wyrens. Holst quickly mounted his own with his sister and Amir got on her own horse.

"Kiheheheh...." Puka said and she looked at him worried.

"I know...." she said, and everyone rode off.

- 40 minutes later -

The port was near Edmund territory. Despite the ocean port was filled with boats and ships, the place was filled with a tense air that made Amir almost want to choke. She could see citizens of Duscur avoiding eye contact with her as Holst was in an argument with the woman and man in charge of this port. She could see the fear in their eyes as she listens to the situation. Part of her is glad they haven't recognized her because of the change she has gone through. She looked so much older compared to the 9-year-old girl she was 2 years ago.

"What do you mean you are forced to halt trade?!" Holst said as the Duscur man, who she knows, said fearfully his words.

"Forgive us but we really can't do anything!!! We cannot disobey our Lord's orders." The man was named Findro and his wife Diana, who could only apologize.

"What are the items being forced to stop trade?" Amir asked suddenly and Diana looked at her confused.

"Mineral imports, spices, salt, wood, metals." Diana said and Amir took a deep breath as she walked up to them, everyone was confused.

"Who ordered the stop of trade?" She said.
"Lord Torode, he is now head of the Amaryllis family." Findro said.

"Only in name." She said bitterly and Holst raised an eyebrow.

"I need to stop running...." Amir hesitated, gritted her teeth and stomped her foot down.

As much as she didn't want her uncle to know she is alive, that didn't stop her from sabotaging him from far away. This was her way of revenge than killing him. That went against her grandmother's teachings if she shed blood.

"Aunt and Uncle!! And everyone in this port!!" She yelled out, surprising everyone, "You will resume trade and bring me that papers of the numbers and stocks. Bring me the full report of the last 6 months of trade halt!!!" She yelled out.

"Wait....it can't be..." Findoro and Diana gasped as she glared at them.

"Tell my uncle I'm the only one that has the full authority while he plays pretend King. I, Amir Volgani Amaryllis, hereby declare that trade with Duscur and The Leicester Alliance will resume!" She yelled out.

She pulled her necklace with the Gods Blessing of Timotheos and show it up high!!

"I am the true heir and head of the Amaryllis head and fortune, if you need further proof that I survived the Massacre of Red flowers, stand here before me and challenge my authority!!" She yelled out.

All this bottled up anger she had towards her Uncle exploded in a way she never thought it would. Everyone could only look in shock till she was hugged by Findro and Diana, the two adults weeping. The reason she called them Aunty and Uncle is because they were once servants that used to work in her home.

"You're alive!!! I'm so happy!! Thank the Goddess of water and God of Shadows!!" Diana cried as she hugged the young girl tightly.

"Ohhh!! Look at you!! You grown!!! We're just....I can't believe it....we...." Findro wept and she smiled sadly, letting herself cry as she saw her people cheering loudly.

That was how much they respected her, her parents and grandmother. They followed them, not her uncle.

"I'm alive Aunty and Uncle. I can't return to Duscur unfortunately because it isn't safe for me there, but I'll help with what I can as someone that represent us here in Fodlan. My uncle’s reign will end because I know the other noble families of Duscur despise him and will execute him. Also, no one here is to say I am alive. Please, for everyone's sake." She said as they nodded and wiped their tears.

"What just happened...?" Hilda said very confused.

- 20 minutes later -
"I see... have the salt shipment resume during the next moon. The waves should be less aggressive and a good time for the fishermen. Have the trade of gems keep count of how many pounds are being brought from Duscur. Next have-----" the amount of words and wisdom leaving the girl's lips awed many.

"She really is like her father..." one of the workers smiled as they were helping prepare the ships to head out to the ocean for fishing.

General Holst was highly impressed watching the young girl, who is the same age as his sister, handle trading so easily. The Amaryllis Family was well known in Duscur as the head family of nobles. Especially the former Lord who was a master merchant and well respected. Now, hearing the news that the entire family was wiped out by a relative.....brought no good news. The fact that there was at least a survivor, who has been forced to grow up, take control was both sad and amazing.

"Seems I judged too quickly..... Holst mentally scoffed at himself.

He thought the girl was another Almyran and was planning to keep his sister away from her. He really feels like shit now and that was rare. The only one that ever made him feel that way was his beloved baby sister because she hated when he would constantly be gushing over her. A sudden idea came to him. What if his family took this girl in? Hilda seems attached to her and she already proved she is an excellent merchant despite the young age. He needs to speak with his father about this first but bringing the offer up to the girl would be good. She is a child after all. Amir finished signing the last document needed to prove of her power and wrote a letter to the Head of Snowdrop family (one of the 5 main noble families) to bring the court case on her Uncle. She looked at the small emerald gem in her hand that held all memories of that night, except how she escaped to outside of Duscur. She finished her entire case report and gave it the messenger who nodded.

"Make sure Lord Kuza gets this." Was all she said, and he nodded as he boarded the ship to Duscur.

"I'm very impressed." Holst walked up to her and Amir just stared at him.

"You're the same age as my sister yet you already know things like this. You're still a child so I have been thinking of maybe perhaps we could----!!" He froze when Puka began hissing at him and saw a shadow like humanoid creature come out from her shadow.

"Stop it both of you." She turned to them and the shadow disappeared, and Puku just glared.

Amir knew what he was about to say. She always knew thing a little bit ahead. It was a small gift. After all, the cards of the stars never lie.

"No. I don't want to be adopted. I already have my family. I serve no one else but the one who saved my life." She said coldly to him.

"Trade here in the Alliance will continue. I will be leaving my aunt and uncle in charge of this port. I know I can trust them and the people here. I chose to help you out because I can't stand my uncle who killed my family and refused to see my people suffer because of his foolish decisions. He's a selfish and greedy man. Honestly, it's rare to find nobles with good hearts..." she muttered and unknown to her, Hilda was listening.

"Your little sister...she's a good person. Take care of her. That's all General Holst." Amir said and
walked away towards Hana and the Flames twins.

Hilda and her brother stared as the four got on their horses and wyvern and rode away. Hilda frowned and turned to her brother. She was pissed. How dare he scare a fellow possible friend away?!

"I liked her even if she and I didn't get to talk much. You messed up big time brother!! Trying to offer her to be taken in by us!! Can't you tell she was already happy with the people she was with. Ugh!!! Stay out of people's business you nosy bug!!" She said to him and Holst felt he was stabbed multiple times.

"Hilda...." he wept while many of the people in the port couldn't help but chuckle at the sight of the youngest sister bring down her brother.

Hilda pouted and smiled as she looked them ride off.

"I hope we meet again one day Amir."

- Later at Night-

Everyone's mission was a success when they returned to Derdui. As a celebration of their first day, a grand feast was held. Roast Turkey, wine, berries, bread, mashed potatoes, gravy, such a feast worthy of a king.

"Celebration for the first day of success!!" Sandy yelled out as they clinked their mugs together. The adults of course had their mugs filled with wine while the kids had their cups filled with cider. The feast was a fine turkey that Jeralt had bought at the swap meet. Arisa happily ate her turkey leg while Amir and Alexandra ate the wings because they always loved the soft meat. The girls already gave their pets their food.

"So, heard you pickpocketed someone?" Alexandra giggled as she took a sip of her cider.

"Hehehehe! It was a pouch of 20 gold coins and a map!! Worth it!!" Arisa grinned proudly as she lightly rattled the bag.

"That's enough gold to buy over 40 acres of land." Amir said as she ate a carrot.

"I'm actually hoping that I could use the money to open a field to grow sugar cane for Remire Village. It took two years, but we have successfully grown it!! Sugar cane cider here I come!!" Arisa cheered loudly.

"You're addicted to cider like Alex is to shaved ice and Amir to berries." The three heard Sothis voice and the goddess appeared before them with a grin.

"We don't deny it!" The three girls said in union and Sothis giggled.

"So, you two," she said to Amir and Alexandra, "how was your girls' job? I'm sure something good happened." Sothis said.
Amir actually smiled and was happy with what she did while Alexandra.....

"I don't want to talk about it....." the blue haired said bitterly.

"Did you get in a fight with Claude?" Arisa said and the girl's feather droops.

Sothis looked at her worried and Amir nodded.

"If you don't want to talk about it, that's alright. We'll wait when you're ready." She said and Alexandra smiled.

"Thank you." She said.

"Now," Sothis clapped her hands catching their attention, "While the adults over there get drunk," she jabbed her finger at the adults, Sandy locked in an arm-wrestling match with Hana, "Why don't we go exploring for a bit? Arisa, have that staff/sword of yours ready just in case." Sothis giggled.

The girls grinned to each other and quietly warped themselves out.

Claude was angry, but more towards himself. He called her monster. Their group ended up being ambushed and barely managed to survive. He had been knocked down badly that it caused him to dislocate his shoulder. The girl witnessed this and snapped, going crazy in killing the bandits. Seeing her hair become a sickly blue, her eyes red as her pupils became a strange symbol that looked like a Crest. Alexandra still didn't have full control of her Crest and unfortunately the medicine wore off at a horrible time. She grew to like Claude like a friend during the time they chatted together despite her hostile attitude towards him. He knew she meant no harm. When a sword was about to be brought down on him by a bandit, Alexandra appeared in front of him in a tornado of ice, slicing the head off clean of the bandit. He could never forget the sight of her screaming as she fell to her knees, nearly lunging at him to RIP his throat out. She did manage to grab his neck and almost successfully choked him. That fear and feeling...

"GET AWAY FROM ME MONSTER!!"

It was only for a few seconds, but her eyes went wide at him calling her that and quickly let go of him. Her eyes flickering between red and blue. Add that many of the adults there witness Sandy and Fiona struggling to try and calm her down as they held her back. He saw the manifestation of pain in her eyes despite the crazy state she was in. He saw her cry tears. Judith used a sleeping potion to knock her out. The girl fell to the ground cold, almost looking like a corpse.

"I'm sorry...."

Was all the girl managed to mutter before she closed her eyes. After an hour, the girl woke up and
was a sobbing mess apologizing to everyone, especially him. While half the adults felt pity for her and said they understood why she became like that because of her past, the other half, looked at her coldly. They spoke nothing and one of them dared to say..

"H-How is this....THING even allowed to roam free?! This girl should be locked up because of the unstable condition she is!!"

That resulted in a heavy beating from Judith. Claude could never forget the look of guilt Alexandra had and just completely isolated herself from the group. Edward smiled to him sadly as they were returning.

"Is she.....going to be alright?" He asked the older man.

"I'll be blunt with you Claude. Her mental state isn't completely stable, but it will take time for her to heal. But...the question falls to her. Will she allow herself to heal?" Edward answered.

He had approached the girl gently and had asked her a few questions regarding her powers, hoping to help. Sandy allowed it because he is a friend of Florencio. Claude sighed as he looked out to the ocean, he had snuck out of the manner again. One of his favorite places to view the stars were the ports. Not to mention the amazing view of the ocean at night with the stars. He began to recall how warm she felt despite being partly covered in ice when she saved him earlier today. Another sigh left his lips, he admits, he grew a small crush on the strange girl with little feather wings on her head. But one thing he definitely admitted that friend of hers with the teal brown eyes also caught his interest. When he saw her, he noticed how she froze at the mention of his name. It was barely noticeable, but she felt him staring at him. Not in a hostile way, but more like.....she knew him even if they never met before.

"Strange...strange indeed." He muttered.

"And then there was this pink haired girl who kept calling me cute!! I am not cute!!"

He quickly stood up and hid behind one of the crates. He carefully peeked out and raised an eyebrow as he saw the three girls together.

"Did she have her hair in pigtails, pink colored eyes and used an axe like a war maiden?" He saw the girl named Byleth say as the girls walked to the port and sat down together.

"Yeah. How did you know?" Amir said confused and Arisa groans into her hands.

"Claro.....claro....es ella...esto me faltaba....." she muttered in a completely foreign language that he had never heard before.

"Is her name Hilda...?" She muttered and instantly Claude began to strain his hearing because they were talking about his friend.

"Yes. We met her and her older brother in our mission. Apparently, they wanted check on the port near Edmund territory because trade with Duscur has been halted." Amir said bitterly.
"Umm....I don't mean to be rude or anything but.....you....didn't do anything crazy right?"
Alexandra asked and Amir smiled.

"I sent my uncle to court to be executed." She said.

"WHAT?!?!" Sothis, Alexandra and Arisa screeched loudly, and Claude felt his ears ringing.

"Yeah. I wrote to the head of the Second Noble family in Duscur. There are 5 main noble families. There's mine, Amaryllis, the second is Snowdrop, the third Hydrangea, fourth Delphinium and fifth Narcissus. And as you can tell, our family names carry the names of flowers. The 5 main family branches oversee different towns and trades around Duscur. But even if they are nobility, they are highly respected because they treat the citizens equally and help the people. My family was mainly in charge of trading silk, spices, and salt." Amir began to explain.

"Interesting....that explains why Anna was so impressed by your knowledge of a merchant." Arisa said as she propped her elbow on her thigh and rested her chin on the palm of her hand.

"Now that I think about it...this is the first time we've ever heard you talk about your family and the people there. Did...something else happen?" Alexandra asked.

Amir was silent and looked out to the ocean.

" I was held captive in a basement for two months. My uncle demanded I tell him where my grandmother hid the family fortune and secrets of the power said to have lived in the family. He always wanted to become the head of the family. Even if children of noble families did not inherit the blessings of the gods, they were still loved and cared. No one was special. We had a system of equality. As for who becomes the next head family, that is decided through a tournament every 10 years. Like the warrior blood that runs through our veins, with this tournament, it is equally determined by every getting a chance to show their skills. No magic, no weapons, only your brain and your own strength. As for which individual becomes the next head of their own families, that is decided by the Elder, who was my grandmother. My grandmother chose my father, because he displayed his amazing skills as a merchant but also a tactician. He is my uncle's little brother, the 3 oldest of 6 children. My other 3 aunts on my other uncle didn't want to become heads of family and wanted to live out their own lives. My grandmother respected that. My father wanted to open trade to more people around the world and my uncle.....he...wanted....power and control over trade. So, like the family tradition, my uncle and father fought. At first my uncle did win but my grandfather discovered that he had drugged my father's drinks before the fight so he would become sluggish. Thus, the title of the family head was taken from him and rightfully given to my father. As for my uncle, he was banished from the family for 10 years." She said.

Everyone looked at her shocked as she smiled sadly.

"I'll tell you guys the rest once I get the news from the head of the Snowdrop family. For now," she made a quick glance to a crate and Claude stiffened, " how about you tell us how it went with you Alex?" Amir said.

"She knows!! She knows!!" Claude internally screamed and tried calmed down a bit when he saw Alexandra's feathers twitch.

"Well," the girl sighed, "Since you told us about your family, I'll tell you guys what happened."
Alexandra said and hugged herself.

"I....went out of.... control...the medicine wore off.....at worst moment.....I nearly...Killed him....I nearly killed....him..." she dug her nails into her skin, trying not to cry.

She could hear Cirina giggling in her mind and speak of the devil, he appears.

Cirina appeared with a frown as she looked down on her.

"My influence huh? Oh, Alexandra dear, that may be true but it was also your fault on one end. You like the boy. You saw him as a friend and what did that cause?" She smiled, showing her fangs as she placed her hand over her chest. "Emotions!!! Emotions of admiration!! Emotions of joy!!! Oh, oh, silly little child!!! Seeing him in danger triggered your temporary loss of sanity. I was asleep, but part of my soul is you. Your will is my will and my will is your will. When will you get it straight to your head that you and I are the same person?" She giggled and Sothis glared furiously.

"That's enough!! You're only making things worse for her! This child is not you and will never be you!!" Sothis said to her.

"Oh, shut it Grandmother!!" Cirina yelled back.

"GRANDMOTHER??! HOW DARE YOU!!! I AM SOTHIS!! THE BEGINNING!!! WHY I OUGHT------" everyone stopped when they heard small "pfft."

They turned Alexandra, who was trying not to laugh at the comment Cirina made to the goddess.

"F-Forgive me...haha!! I know this is a serious talk but...pfft!! I hate to break it to you since Arisa never admits it, but you do act like a grandma." Alexandra giggled uncontrollably.

"Way to throw me under the wagon....." Arisa sent her a playful glare and Sothis looked at all of them horrified.

"Well, back to the subject....I'm going to see Doctor Edward tomorrow. He studies Crestology and I'm hoping he can help me find some information on my crest." Alexandra said.

"Do you want us to come with you?" Amir asked and she nodded.

"Can... Arisa come...? Since...you know? She's a doctor in training" and Amir frowned.

"Before you think something else!!" Alexandra quickly said, "I.....want you to help me pick a gift.... for Claude...." she said a bit shyly and her feathers fluttered a bit fast meaning she was flustered.

Sothis, Arisa and Amir looked at each other and nodded while Cirina had a look of disgust towards her vessel.

"Ooooooohhhh~" The three girls all cooed playfully at their friend while Cirina wanted to vomit.

"Its history all over again!!! Uuggghhh!! It's like I'm looking at my younger self!!! I'm out of here!!" The woman said and disappeared but not before she stopped for a few seconds as she spotted Claude with red cheeks, and covering his face with his hands, peeking through the cracks of his fingers as he heard the girls teasing Alexandra.

Her face only became enraged at the sight of him. She despised all those who bore the Crest of the
man that betrayed her. No... she hated......

"Why must I suffer the consequences of your actions?!!" She internally roared.

She will not let her vessel meet the same fate of tragedy as her. To hell with the 11 Elites and their descendants. May they all suffer at the hands of fate!!

Chapter 15: Travel Winds Part 2: Encounters: End

(A bit on the confusing side this chapter but before everyone comes after my neck, there are times I do make the chapters become confusing on purpose like this one. The Next chapter we will see the true debut role of Edward and dive deep into Crestology Fodlan Lore. Also, surprised now huh? Amir sudden decision and explaining a bit of her background. I never really did reveal much about her. As the chapters continue, we'll slowly be diving into more Lore and reveal more about Amir's past like we have done with several of our characters. Amir's power of the gods, or should I say Crest, will soon have a major role.

Claude. We'll be seeing his schemer side in the next chapter. Also, a surprise appearance of Hilda and her brother, Holst in this chapter. He is mentioned a lot in the game by her. Too bad we don't know how he looks like unfortunately, so I made a character of him based on the information we have.

Male Byleth: Beleth. I can see all the knives coming at me right now. Quite a surprise huh? I don't think anyone was expecting him to show up and much less have Jeralt speak a bit of the Knight of Serios to Arisa/Byleth. Beleth here is much older than our protagonist. We're one chapter away where I will be showing a..... break in, to a certain place.

*chuckles*

Flowers meaning in the language of flowers:
Amaryllis: symbolizes achieving success over a long and difficult struggle. It also means radiant beauty and pride.

Snowdrop: symbolizes hope and the beginning of something new. But if given as a gift, it means "I want you to die".

Hydrangea: heartfelt emotion, gratitude for understanding, and apology.

Delphinium: Reaching for your goals and striving to achieve it all, expanding your options and attracting new opportunities (there's like 15 more meanings but I decided to show two of them)

Narcissus / Daffodils symbolizes good wishes, faithfulness and respect.

Why did I choose flowers? Well, it mainly has to do with Dedue's support conversations. One mainly is his conversations with Byleth. He speaks about the flowers of his homeland.
Chapter 16: Twilight: Crest of The Hanged Man

Chapter Summary

Happy New Years!! New Wave of chapters and updates coming your way!!

Crest.

The goddess gifted certain individuals with sacred blood, allowing them to wield mystical weapons, that they may prevail against the darkness. These souls buoyed by their divine gifts, conquered the evil ones and drove them back to the north. They came to be known as Heroes. The Heroes experience unnaturally long lives, persisting for hundreds of years. Even after they breathe their last, the power coursing through their blood remained, leaving an indelible mark upon this world. This power, passed down through bloodlines, came to be known as the Crest. The mystical weapons they once wield are now called Heroes' Relics. And so, the legend of a new age was born. The descendants of the Heroes sought their ancestor's power thusly their blood. In time, the Crest---------

CRASH!!!!

"OOOWWWWWW"

Edward slammed his book shut and took a deeeeeeeeeeppppp breath before he stood up and walked over to the open library door in the Reigan manner. How much he hated being disturb during his break and much more especially since it has been awhile since he has read The Book of Serios, Volume 2. He pushed the door open, low and behold, Claude was at it again. This time the boy was in the forbidden section of books.

"CLAAAAAAUUUDEEEEE!!!" This time he was the one that broke the rules of silence in the library.

The boy flinched at the older man's furious voice and the librarian, Edward’s friend, Gregory, groans into his pillow because the next fight of tactics was about to begin again. Gregory was a young man with silver colored hair with a red scarf wrapped around his head and red colored eyes. He wore the clothing of a warlock but the color black. He sighed as he saw where the boy was, the section of science. He couldn't help but chuckle as his friend stormed over to the boy, who was trapped under a pile of books. Edward glared down at the boy who chuckled nervously.

"How many times have I told you to use the ladder to get the books in the top shelves?! What's more, this area is forbidden!!!!! You aren't old enough for these books yet!! You're 3 years away
"Come on Ed," the man smirked as he rested his head on his pillow, "Let the kid have some fun. It's not every day kids want to learn things like these. Especially since it's looked down upon by the Church." He said and Edward's glare turned to him.

"And why didn't you stop him?!? I'll be in serious trouble if his grandfather sees him here!!" He said back and Gregory rolled his eyes.

"Yesh, and I thought Emily had anger issues." Gregory said and Edward scoffs.

"Don't compare me to that cocky woman!!! But speaking of her...I heard of an epidemic going on in the Kingdom?" He said.

"Haahahaha!!!! My friend, if you were there, you should have seen the blow on her pride!!! A woman by the name Kiana Kalsana was the one to discover a new medication and saved the people of Galatea territory!! All Emily did was help produce the medicine!" Gregory said.

"Someone finally outdid her?! THANK THE GODDESS!!! MY PRAYERS ANSWERED!!" Edward fell to his knees dramatically, with arms in the air as if holy light was over him.

"Ummmm...." Claude was forgotten and decided to take this opportunity to quickly change the subject of him sneaking into the forbidden section.

"Gregory, who's Emily?" he asked.

"Oh, that's right!! Well, might as well tell you little star. There are 5 high ranking mages in all Fodlan that have ever passed the impossible medical exams of the Church of Serios. They gain the titles of Holy Magus and have the power to become court mages should they desire, access to all medical archives in all of Fodlan including royal ones, access to the forbidden section in the library of Officers Academy and monastery, and to prove their power, are bestowed a special card with the official seal of the Church of Serios. Because of this, nobles from all Fodlan begin to offer deals to these doctors to join their country. One of them is part of Empire. Emily and another one is part of the Kingdom, Edward here of the Alliance and another one by the name of Doctor Lilac is a freelance doctor that travels all around Fodlan. No one knows his real location." Gregory explains and Claude nodded.

"Sounds interesting. Be cool to meet the other 4 one day." Claude said and Gregory chuckled.

"Emily, I feel you might get along with her because she believes in facts. Florencio...hmmm...not sure. Cornelia, stay the hell away from her. Lastly that old man Robert.....hmm... he's 36 right now.....but...he's a good man. He has 14 grandkids and spoils them rotten." He said and Claude chuckled.

"Sigh....Anyhow," Edward stood back and looked over to Claude, "Please don't go into this section. I'm serious. I'm having a few guests today and I have already been granted permission for them to enter the manner today." He said and Gregory raised an eyebrow.

"Wait, who are they? I swear if it's that nun from the church again..." Gregory said and Claude gave him a disappointed look.

"No, it's not Xina!!! Arrgghhh...it's your uncle!!! Professor Hanneman and two young girls!! Bloody hell!!! And I don't deny Xina and I are planning to get married." He said.
"So, you finally had the guts to propose." Claude and Gregory had smirks.

"Oh, shut it you two." He said and that's when Gregory realized his uncle was mentioned.

"Wait...did you just say my uncle was coming?" Dread befell him and the other two males looked at each other confused then at him.

"Yes. Is something wrong?" Edward said.

"Edward and Claude.....swear to me....you won't even mention me...you even say I was here....please....I'm begging you right here and now!!! Do not even say I was here!!" He said and they looked at him worried.

"Claude...could you leave us alone please?" Edward said and the boy left, closing the door but not before looking at his friend worried.

Once Claude was gone, Edward turned to his friend and walked up to him, placing his hand on his shoulder.

"Gregory, you're worried about your two Crest....aren't you?" He said.

"Haha....you know me too well........what would you think my uncle would say if he saw me...? I'm not the same.....I lost all pigment in my hair....deemed a failure because I was prototype experiment.....by....that group.....the two Crest implanted in me are cracked....I volunteered because we needed money to save my mother...in the end...not even that could save her....that damn heart disease......I don't want him to learn what was done to me...because my father was so desperate for a child with a Crest..." he muttered painfully.

"It's alright...I won't say you were here not mention you. You can face your uncle when you feel ready. For now, why don't you head to your room? You're 5 minutes away from going into sleep mode." Edward smiled sadly to his friend.

"Thanks Ed.....I'll see you later then." He smiled sadly and warped out of the library.

Edward sighed as looked at the locket in his hand. It opened it and inside was a small black and white "picture" it was called, taken using one of the devices Hanneman invented. There was a young woman laughing as she hugged a little girl and he himself also laughing. He smiled and closed it, returning back to his office with a textbook about Crest.

- Outside the Manner -

It was a fancy bloody manner yet simple. Arisa felt like she was walking into a lion's den. She wore a nice dark green summer dress that went to her knees and black tights with black boots. Her hair was in her usually ponytail and she never went anywhere without her dark green cloak because all these years she had used one and it made her feel safer. And like usual, her sword was sheath on her waist and Feh on her head. Red Hare was taken to the stables by one of the servants. Alexandra stood next to her with a small box in her arms. She wore a nice blue blouse with a black knee length skirt and a waist long blue cloak. Her hair was in her usual style of Chinese buns but her lose hair was put in a ponytail. Falco perched on her shoulder and she had a dagger strapped on her
"I feel we're walking into the lion's den..." Arisa said as Sothis just smiled in her mind.

"Alexandra did change her mind and had chosen to also bring Amir but unfortunately your friend has decided to stay behind due to a letter that was received earlier this morning." Sothis said with a smirk.

"Yeah. The look of victory on her face, was more than enough to confirm that justice has been served to her family." Arisa mentally said back to her and smiled.

"YYYYEEEEAAAAHHHH!!!! VICTORY!!! TAKE THAT YOU SON OF B----------!!!"

"AMIR!!!!!"

" SHUT UP!! IT'S 5 IN THE MORNING!!!!"

Both Alexandra and Arisa could not help but laugh out loud by how the entire cabin and their neighbors were woken up by their friend's scream of pure joy. The Snowdrop family will become the new head family of Duscur. It was decided by the people and the public court that was done to show everyone what her uncle had done. Of course, at the end of the hologram evidence showed, Amir left a message to her uncle.

"You think you could get away from justice? Just like the Amaryllis name means, achieving success over a long and difficult struggle, this is my and my family’s justice for what you did to them!! Pay for your crimes!! The Goddess of Water and God of Shadows bring down their sword upon your head for your crimes!"

True victory. She waited until the court pronounced him guilty and said her message, declaring to her uncle she was alive and survived.

"Back to the main subject, are you two going in?" Sothis said and the girls nodded.

Arisa knocked and the two waited for a few seconds, the door opened, revealing a guard.

"Pardon sir!! We're here to see Doctor Edward Snowden. We have an appointment with him." Amir said she took out a letter with the Reigan wax stamp on it.

"Very well. Come in." The guard said and the girls entered the manner.

Arisa had some flashbacks from when she stayed in house Fraldarius for some time and couldn't help but see the same decor except it was more of a fall theme. They followed behind the guard as they walked through the hallway and they then heard a crash in the kitchen. The guard quickly looked in and sighed.
"Deaaaaarr!! How many times have I said if you need help tell me!! You're pregnant for Serios sake!!" He said to the maid and she just grinned.

"Now, sweety!! No need to fret!!! Now, don't you have to take these girls to see the Doctor?" The maid said.

Arisa and Alexandra were snickering.

- Doctor's Office -

A knocks on his door he heard as he was looking at some documents he had gotten.

"Come in." Edward said as he looked up and smiled when he saw it was Alexandra but, who was the girl with her?

"Doctor, I brought the girls." The guard said and he nodded.

"Thank you Octus, I'll take it from here." He said and the guard nodded, closing the door.

"Morning Edward!!" Alexandra grinned at him.

"Morning Alex. Feeling better after yesterday?" He asked and the girl nodded.

"That's good. And this friend of yours?" He asked as he looked over to Arisa.

"Byleth, pleasure to meet you. My uncle has talk about you a bit before. Florencio is his name." She said.

"Oh!! You're Florencio's niece?! Is he here in Derdiu?" He said and Arisa shook her head.

"Sorry....he's currently in the Empire with his apprentice. " she said.

"Sigh...thank you." He turned to Alexandra.

"Will you two please have a seat? We're waiting for one more person. He'll be helping me today with your checkup Alexandra." He said.

"Alright." The girl and a few seconds later, a knock on the door.

"Come in." Edward said and the door open, revealing an older man with dark gray hair, light skin, a mustache, dark gray blue eyes and wore a monocle on his left eye.

His coat was dark light brown as he wore it over his brown suite and wore a black scarf with black shoes. He had a suitcase in his right hand.

"Forgive me for being late Doctor Edward. The carriage ended up getting stuck in the middle of the road!! I swear, if there is one thing, I have to complain about Derdui here, it's the constant water puddles all over the place!!" Professor Hanneman said as he closed the door.

"Believe me my friend.....I complain about it too." Edward's chuckled a bit nervously.

Arisa felt her heart stop. As much as she likes Hanneman from her original time playing the game,
meeting him felt like a huge honor. But......

"Don't do it Arisa...." the tiny voice in the back of her mind spoke.

"Are these two the ones you told me about?" Hanneman said as he saw her and Alexandra sitting next to each other.

Feh and Falco both went on guard and hissed.

"Calm down you two." Arisa whispered and the two calmed down immediately.

"Actually, just the girl with the blue hair. She wanted her friend to accompany her today, that's all." Edward said.

Hanneman chuckled and nodded.

"Hello there young Lady’s. I am Hanneman, a Crest Scholar and Professor at the Officer's Academy. My friend here has informed me that you are hoping we can discover a few answers regarding your crest." Hanneman smiled to her kindly like a grandfather and Alexandra nodded.

"Please....I need some peace of mind. I'm worried I'm going to hurt someone by accident if I don't learn more. Can you help us?" Alexandra said and he nodded.

"And you young lady?" He turned to Arisa, "Do you yourself have a Crest?" He asked.

"I do. But I rather keep mine a secret. It's for my safety." She said.

"Very well then, if that is your choice, we shall respect it." He said.

"Let's start with some basic questions." Edward said as took out his notepad to write while Hanneman took out his miniature device that he had invented to see if a person has a Crest.

"Please stick out your hand." Hanneman said as Amir reached out her hand and he placed the small device over it.

It beeped and an image appeared on it. His eyes went wide as he stared at it.

"I have never seen this pattern before!!! Haha!! To think there were still undiscovered Crest out there I have yet to see! How thrilling! " Excitement filled his eyes and Edward coughed.

"Oh, sorry. I got a bit too excited. As I was saying, I have never seen this pattern before. Hmm....Alexandra correct?" He said and she nodded, "Do you know some information of your own Crest?" He asked.

"Yes. It is called the Crest of Aubin. They have served House Blaiddyd for generations what's more, are said to be the clan to have helped forge the Heroes’ Relics." Alexandra said and Arisa looked at her worried.

"It's alright." Edward saw her worried look, "Everything here is confidential. The perks of being a Holy Magus is that we have a higher power than the nobles (except royalty and Rhea) so they can't get information." He smirked.
"Damn....who knew Florencio had that much power.....? I thought he was just a high-ranking doctor!!" Arisa said in her mind.

"I don't mean to be rude but.....why are you all the way out here young girl? Where are your parents?" Hanneman asked and the men began panicking because they saw her little feathers drop and she looked ready to cry.

"Alex, do you mind if I answer the question for you?" Arisa and she nodded.

"Alexandra.....was being mistreated by her mother after her father passed away. So...to save her...we faked her death. I'm sure the news of the Fire of the Tailtean Plains you heard of?" She said and Edward nodded.

"Yes. The news reached everyone in Fodlan and that the daughter of the Duchess there passed away. So, I'm guessing you saved her then from her mother?" Edward said and Arisa nodded.

"Yeah.....I don't deny it. I got in serious trouble with my dad." Arisa chuckled a bit nervously.

"I understand. We won't say anything about this. Now, back to the subject. Edward, if you please?" Hannamen said and his friend nodded.

"Now, Alexandra, what does your Crest make you do? " He asked.

"I become hostile towards people with a certain crest. " She said.

"Oh? This is new. A Crest that makes its user hostile towards an individual with a specific Crest. Hmmm......Edward, you have access to the royal archives of The Kingdom correct?" Hanneman said as he had his hand under his chin, thinking.

"I do. Aaaaaaaaaaaaahh," he stood up and walked to his bookshelf and pulled out a light blue book with gold lettering, placing it on the table, "I did a little research and found this." He said.

"The Legend of the Ice Maiden?" Hanneman raised an eyebrow.

"Correct. She was one of the 10 Elites. Originally there were 12 Elites but 2 of them were lost to history. And it so happens, the Crest of Aubin, it's symbol, is mentioned here." He opened the book to page 14 and there it was, the Crest Symbol of Aubin.

"The legend is that Cirina, The Hero of Ice, bore this Crest. She wields great power to control ice to her will. She fought by Reigan's side against the fight of The King of Liberation and was said to have been the one to try and negotiate peace Nemesis and Saint Serios." He said.

"Hmph....at least they got that part down right...." Alexandra flinched when Cirina's voice suddenly echoed in her head.

"Are you okay?" Arisa asked her.

"Yeah." Alexandra smiled and turned back to the adults.

"Interesting. I have heard stories of the Ice Maiden, but I never got the full story down because it never caught my interest. Perhaps I should take a better look at the legends of the 12 Elites then." Hanneman said as he turned back to Alexandra.

"However, I'm going to be truthful. When I was reading her legend, it says she eventually betrayed
Reigan and fell to madness for the lust power and joined Nemesis, turning her back on Saint Serios, the 5 saints, the 11 Elites and the goddess.” Edward said.

"THAT IS A BLOODY LIE!!" Cirina roared and Alexandra quickly covered her ears.

"Shut up, shut up!! Not now please!!!" Alexandra whimpered.

"Child, are you alright?!" Hannamen said and quickly knelt down to check her.

"Wait...5 Saints…?" Arisa thought.

"Doctor Edward...is it possible for a Crest to create a split personality?" Arisa said.

"Wait what? Is that what her Crest is doing? It creates a split personality?" Edward said and the two men looked at the blue haired girl, worried.

"Child, breath. Deep Breaths." Hanneman said to Alexandra and the girl nodded, he noticed her eyes flickering between red and blue.

"Arisa, my medicine please!!" Alexandra said and Arisa quickly gave her the small bottle, she popped it open and drank it.

Alexandra let go of long sigh and nodded.

"Please keep going." She said.

"Are you sure? Do you want to take a break and then continue later?" Hanneman said.

"It's alright. I want answers.... that’s all." She said.

"Very well. As we know Crest are power incarnated. Those who carry Crest may excel in magic, display exceptional strength and any number of boons. More so if they carry a major Crest. However, " he shook his head and looked at the girl worried, "This is the first I have heard where a Crest makes its barer hostile towards those that bare a specific Crest and create a split personality." He said.

"From...what my uncle has told me...that this feature usually manifested in one specific female barer. Only the female that possess the major Crest of Aubin shows hostility while males can lose control of their emotions. I....possess a major Crest. Which....makes it more dangerous." Alexandra said.

"Do you know which Crest make you become hostile and their level of hostility?" Edward asked.

"From what we know," Arisa spoke, "The Crest of Cethleann makes her give the cold shoulder to that person. The Crest of Serios are small threats like, "Go away for I'll punch you." Crest of Cichol she wants to hurt them (Arisa: Makes sense because Seteth can be a ----*Slap! *). Crest of Gautier she will actually try to hurt them and....." she hesitated to say the last one.

"The Crest of Reigan, she will murder them on the spot if they weren't hold back." Edward said and Hanneman looked at him shocked.

"This......is incredible information I admit but...I'm more worried about how much this affects the young girl's physical and mental health." Hanneman said.
"How does this connect to the Legend of the Ice Maiden?" Arisa asked and Edward's sighed as he turned to another page in the book, showing the picture of Saint Cethleann and Cirina, who looked very different from the version the girls see, looking down on the Saint with her pointing her sword at her, " Cirina was once Saint Cethleann's friend. During the battle against Nemesis, the two fought one another but even in madness, Cirina chose to spare Saint Cethleann despite Nemesis orders. My theory is that perhaps there is will of regret and wants the one that bares the Crest of Cethleann to stay away from them because they wish them no harm." He said.

"Bloody hell......I did not think someone saw through that one...." Cirina muttered, and Alexandra can feel her face turning pink.

"Hmmmm....then what about the Crest of Serios?" Alexandra asked and Edward turned to page 12, where Cirina stood next to Saint Serios, looks like the two were in a heated argument.

"Saint Serios and Cirina were both tacticians and well......the book says the two would get into very heated arguments over plans for war. So, my theory, the Crest sees a bearer of the Crest of Serios as a rival of sorts." Hanneman said and Cirina was cursing a mountain of profanities.

"SHE IS THE WORST AUNT IN THE WORLD!! THE FALSE PROMISES AND ALSO RECKLESS PLANS!!! SHE KNEW NOTHING WHEN IT CAME TO OCEAN AND MOUNTAIN TERRAIN!!" Cirina fumed.

"What about the Crest of Cichol?" Arisa asked and Edward began laughing a bit.

"What's so funny?" Hanneman said and Edward turned to page 29 and it showed...

"Is she telling him off?" Arisa snorted as it showed the image of Cirina telling off Saint Cichol. 

"Apparently the man was overbearing and far too overprotective of his daughter. So....you can imagine.....that one friend that tells off people and does not care what people think.....Hahahahaha!!" Edward lost it and started laughing, holding his stomach.

Cirina smirked proudly.

"Uncle is a pain in the ass!!! If no one tells him off, who will? I regret nothing!!!" Cirina said and Sothis just shook her head.

"Now....Crest of Gautier...." Edward stopped laughing and turned to page 60, showing Cirina locked in a deadly one on one battle with a man dressed in armor.

"Those two...absolutely despised each other. It is said that he did her wrong and betrayed her trust. At first, they were friends but eventually the rivalry the two had become strain and led to hatred. That was the first step that caused her to fall for madness because she wanted to surpass him." He said and Cirina growled.

"Surpass him....hahahaha... how very wrong.....I refused to become his lover and he tried to assassinate me....and my mother..." the woman growled and Alexandra bit her lip.

"Then.....Crest of Reigan....." Alexandra said worried and Edward turned to page 78.

"Chapter 22: Fall of the Ice Maiden. I'll give the small summary because the book is a bit on the
graphic part for you girls." He said.

"I already read it." Arisa mentally sighed.

"Cirina's negotiations of peace between Serios and Nemesis failed. Lord Reigan saw that she had become corrupted for her constant lust for power. She turned her back on Saint Serios and the goddess, claiming Nemesis was the true God of the land and she will follow his order. Her and Reigan locked in a 4-day battle, neither side refusing to give in. Heavens roared; the land froze. The oceans flooded and forest burned down. On the fifth day, Lord Reigan used an illusion spell on her, forcing her to remember how she was in the past. Memories of love, joy, and pain made her realize her mistakes. Her tears fell but she was far too corrupted and her sins far too deep. She begged Reigan to end her life. With his Relic, Failnaught, fire an arrow that pierced Cirina's heart." He said.

Cirina was shaking. She was furious. Serios dare stain her name with such blasphemy?!?! How could she make such a lie that she begged to be killed?! How dare she say she committed sin?!

"At that moment, Cirina's regrets exploded. Her anger and wrath turned her into a dragon of ice. She flew through the land, freezing everything in her wake. Eventually, even in the form of a dragon, she disappeared. Legend say when snow falls in all four lands, they are her tears of regret. The land she froze today, is known as The Holy Kingdom of Faerghus. " He finished, closing the book.

"That isn't true...."

Everyone turned to Alexandra, tears falling from her eyes, flickering between red and blue. Her pupils turning between her normal ones and her Crest. A single strand of her hair had turned the sickly pale blue.

"She's angry......" she muttered, her hands grabbing her own hair in fistfuls as she gritted her teeth, brought her knees in, "She screaming it isn't true....everything is liar...she keeps screaming....she keeps screaming traitor....she wants come out...she wants to destroy the lies... " she trembled and Arisa hugged her.

"Hanneman, could you prepare the lavender tea please? I think her Crest is reacting to the story......also, just one drop of the sleeping medication to help her calm down." Edward said and Hanneman nodded.

"I'll have it ready in a few minutes." Hanneman nodded and went to prepare it.

Arisa got up and stood in front of her friend, holding her hands.

"Alex, focus on me. Focus." She said to the trembling girl in front of her who slowly looked up.

"Did you know Arisa.....?" Alexandra muttered with a mechanical smile, "They say that those that have the blood of Crest in their veins say that at times they experience and see the memories of their ancestors of the one that bore that Crest. Cirina never had children." She said with a hollow voice and Arisa and Edward looked at her shocked.

Hanneman came back quickly and gently handed her the cup of tea. Alexandra gulped it down, not caring if some of it spilled on her dress. The girl smiled sadly as her eyes feel droopy and she fell
asleep.

"I thought I said only one drop!" Edward glared at his friend.

"I did!! Sigh....I'm guessing the lavender enhanced it." Hannamen said.

Arisa let go of a sigh as she gently made her friend lay down on the couch, removed her cloak, and placed it on her like a blanket. Flaco chirped sadly and snuggled himself into Alexandra's arms and Feh also. Arisa smiled sadly as she patted her friend's head.

"She'll be okay. She should wake up in an hour. But....sigh.... this is a huge problem..." Edward sighed and Arisa turned to them.

"What do you mean?" She said.

"First of all, " Hanneman began, "We just witnessed how much of a toll her Crest takes on her. She seems to be constantly in an internal struggle to keep that second personality locked away. We can't get enough information unless I have a sample of her blood. It would produce results faster." He said.

"Absolutely not!" Arisa said and the men looked at her shocked.

"Calm down Arisa??" He said and she nodded.

"I'm sorry if I offended you. It's just.... your friend..." he said, and she sighed.

"No... I'm sorry...I should be the one apologizing. I shouldn't have lashed out...it's just...I'm worried for her safety. That's all." She said and the two nodded in understanding.

She sighed and turned to Hannamen. It's too early but she will do what she can to gain a new ally.

"Professor Hanneman, " She began, and she felt Sothis raised an eyebrow, "I have been studying Crestology for some time and would like to ask you a few questions regarding it." She said.

"Oh!!! Such a young scholar and studying Crest. I must say, I am quite impressed to find a fellow Crest Scholar. What questions do you wish to ask?" He said and Arisa internally smirked.

"Have you ever heard of tarot cards?" She said and Sothis burst out laughing at faces the adults were making.

"Taro---what?" Edward said.

"Tarot cards. In Duscur they are called the Cards of the Stars and say they can tell the future. But, did you know that each card has a different symbol and meaning?" She smiled.

"I've heard of them before but what does this have to do with my research?" Hanneman said.

Arisa reached into her bag and pulled out her deck of tarot cards she made. All 72 cards. She pulled out one major arcana card, the Crest of Indech, also known as Temperance.

"In a country called Europe, these cards have symbols that are like Crest and each one has a different meaning. The Crest of Indech, also known as the Temperance, has two meanings. If the
card is upright, it means balance, moderation, patience and purpose. If it is reversed," she flipped the card upside down, "It means imbalanced, excess, self-healing and re-alignment." She explained.

"Okay.....I get it!!!" Edward said and smiled at her, "This has to do with the nature of each Crest!! Am I correct?" He said.

"Ding, ding, ding!!! Yes!!" She said cheerfully and Hanneman nodded.

"Now, Alexandra's Crest. It is known as The Hanged Man." She said and the two sudden felt dread.

"The Hanged Man upright means pause, surrender, letting go, new perspectives. In reverse it means.... delays, stalling, resistance, and indecision. Are you two understanding how this card connects with Cirina and her crest?" She said and they nodded.

"Very interesting. This is the first I have heard of such ways of depicting Crest and their nature. It also has to do with the individual that has it, am I correct?" Hanneman said and she nodded.

"Is that why you chose the Crest of Indech on purpose because I have it?" He said with a small smile and she chuckled a bit nervously.

"Yeah....umm....other than that...I...heard you want to find a way to make Crest available to anyone if they desire." She said and he nodded.

"That is correct." He said and she noticed the shift in his aura.

"Professor......I......." she took a deep and looked him straight in the eye, catching him off guard.

This was not the look of a child, but an adult who has seen many things. Just what had she gone through?

"I want to find a way to remove Crest to save the lives of individuals who have suffered greatly because of them!" She said boldly.

Unbestowed to them, Gregory had woken up and was planning to visit Edward for his usual medication, but his hand froze over the door knob once he heard the girl's words. Edward and Hanneman looked at her shock and she spoke, after she sighed, feeling a small lift off her shoulders.

"I'm a doctor in training and I discovered a few things regarding Crest." She said as she made a water bubble appeared and it showed a faceless person.

"Like you said, Crest are power incarnated. Those who carry Crest may excel in magic, display exceptional strength and any number of boons. But.....how much does it actually physically affect them? How much strain does it put on their body?" She said and the figure was seen coughing.

"I.......the idea never crossed my mind...." Hanneman said, shocked.

Arisa smiled sadly, remembering the support conversions between him and Lysithea. The look of devastation Hanneman had when he learned the truth of what the two Crest did to the young girl.

"You speaking of that...." Edward spoke, catching their attention, "You remind me of two feared


diseases here in Fodlan but also in the countries surrounding it.” He said and Arisa suddenly gulped.

"The first one is called **The Devouring.**" He said.

"AWWW SHIT!!! IT JUST HAD TO BE THAT ONE!!!???” Arisa internally screamed and Sothis's ears were ringing.

She never thought that the disease from *Ascendance of a Book Worm* would exist in this world!! Then again.... magic does exist....so...it’s possible.

"Well...it's not exactly a disease but it is like a fever that is eating you from the inside. Thankfully, Doctor Robert found a way to create magic tools that can be affordable for commoners. He did it in honor of his niece who unfortunately passed away 14 years ago.” Edward said and Hannaman nodded.

"As for the second one.....I think maybe you should consider this one my friend," as he talking more towards Hanneman, "**Magic Comatose.**" He said.

"Magic comatose?” Arisa said confused.

"Consider it this way," Hanneman said as he touched the water bubble and it showed a young boy, "As a person grows, their strength increases over time because of age, training and such. The human body generates magic by taking in the energy of nature around them. Even more so when they are in synced with nature like those here in the Alliance but also the Empire. We have different elements of magic. Fire, water, Thunder, Wind, Ice, Dark Magic, Black magic, Anima, Light, and White magic. What's more they are divided. Also known as Reason and Faith Magic. " He explained.

"Back to the original subject" Edward said and sent a small ball of fire at the bubble and it changed to the boy coughing, " Our bodies grow and adjust to change as we grow. But what happens if you overuse your magic too much? It puts a high strain on your body. What's more...if there is a sudden shift in the magic flow of your body, it can be deadly. First off, if a sudden unknown factor is sudden added, the shift of the magic flow is too fast and the human body cannot adjust fast enough. This could put a huge strain on the body and greatly weaken it. In the worst-case scenario, shorten a person's life span." He said and Hanneman went pale.

"What's more, if the body constantly has a shift in magic, it can lead to the person entering a comatose state. The body is trying to readjust and adapt to the change; thus, it forced the mind to shut down and enter a sleeping state. The number one problem is that no one knows when they will wake up. The other name of it is called, *Sleeping Beauty.*" Edward said and Arisa froze.

"I....I.....I........" the water bubble popped in she looked at her hands, Sothis quickly appeared and looked at her worried.

"Breath, Arisa, Breath!!" Sothis said.

"Young lady.....you've experienced it.... haven’t you?" Hanneman said and Arisa nodded, gulping.

"The first experience......was on a trip to Dadga four years ago......I casted....a too highly advanced spell that saved my friends life....I passed out for 2 hours. The second one was two years ago. I...I....was attacked....I acted on impulse and used Daylight...." she said and Edward looked her horrified, "I......vomited blood...and....I entered a comatose state for a month....a strand of my hair
"turned white." She said and touched her hair, where she showed them the white streak.

"That's enough!!"

The door burst open and in came Gregory, looking furious.

"Wait....it can't...Gregory?!!" Hanneman quickly stood up and held his niece's shoulders, looking at him with wide eyes.

"Hey uncle.... glad to see your research is advancing...." the boy said bitterly.

"Who cares about my research right now?! What happened to you?! I thought you were...dead!!! Your father said you were killed by bandits to visit your mother's grave?! What happened to your hair and eyes?!!" Hanneman said worried.

"Oh Professor....please forgive me for crushing your dream.....but I had to bring this reality to you..." Arisa internally cried but had to....it had to be done.

Gregory laughed bitterly.

"Isn't obvious uncle?" He removes his hands from shoulders and smiled painfully as he extended his arms out, "I have a crest....I have two them!! And you know what that cost me?!?!!?! MY LIFE HAS BEEN SHORTENED TO THE POINT I ONLY HAVE A FEW YEARS LEFT TO LIVE!!! I WANTED TO SAVE MOTHER!! LOOK WHERE MY CHOICE LEFT ME AND EVEN THAT WASN'T ENOUGH TO SAVE HER!!" Gregory roared.

Arisa looked at him worried and flinched when his glare turned to her and quickly stood to defend Alexandra.

"Your bloody dream....to remove Crest....ha!! As if that was even possible!!?" He said and turned back to his uncle, "You desire to give Crest to any who desire it, did you ever think about how that could endanger the life of someone?! Look where that led me!! Look where that led me...." Gregory laughed but the tears that fell from his eyes were real.

Hanneman didn't know what to do...he didn't know what to say.

"Removing crest... is possible." Arisa said softly as she walked up to Gregory with a sad smile.

"Look kid, I don't------!!" The girl suddenly placed her hand on his stomach and her hair turned mint green.

"If I can't remove it.....then surpass it!!" She internally roared and Sothis nodded.

The goddess held her hand and spoke.

"Your will is my will. My will is your will. I allow you to use this power. Even if only temporary, we are one." Sothis said and a magic circle with the Crest of Flames appeared beneath the boy.

"Surpass his second crest.......the cost....4 years of my life is equivalent to 24 years of human lives." She said as the green in her eyes turned mint green.

His eyes turned a shade of dark gray blue and some of his hair become the same color as
Hanneman's. The magic circle disappeared, and Arisa coughed violently, another streak of her hair had become white. Edward ran to her quickly and seems this woke up Alexandra. The minute the young girl saw her friend cough, she bolted awake (Alex: forgive me Feh and Falco for sending you flying off me!!) And quickly stood by her friends’ side. Gregory stared at his hands and then to the mirror.

"What...did...you...do?" He slowly turned to Arisa, who was still coughing, thankfully not blood.

"I...gasp...used...gasp...cough!! My crest... to...surpass your second one!! Cough! Cough!! You should have...cough!! Recovered some of your life!!" She coughed and Edward quickly used a healing spell.

"You're Ki-------" He didn't get to finish.

"Just shut up and get me some cider!!" Arisa said.

- 40 disasters minutes later -

"Arisa!!! Alex!! Claude let me come in to come and get you tw------!!``she froze as she walked in on Edward scolding Arisa, who was stiff as a stone because it felt like she was getting scolded by her father.

"Hey, wha----Amir....slowly.... back away slowly..." Claude said from behind her and the two tan kids slowly back away and closed the door.

"That was high dangerous spell and at the cost of your own life span?!?! Are you a complete idiot and the shift in your magic flown shouldn't be wavering this much-----" the scolding just continued and Sothis was groaning.

"Shut him up already!!" Sothis said and Arisa sighed.

"Look," she said a bit coldly, making Edward freeze, "I can recover the life I gave away by absorbing the life of things around me. In this case, " she touched the small tree he had in his office and it withered away, "I just recovered 2 years of my life because that tree was going live that long. Unfortunately, the evidence of the white on my hair doesn't go away." She said with a bitter smile.

"That doesn't matter!!! You still put yourself in danger...sigh..." Edward rubbed his eyes and groans.

"I made Hanneman swear he won't say a word about what we witnessed what's more we saw your Crest. He won't look into since you said you want it to remain unknown. First off all....." he sighed and sat down across from.

Oh, he was tried, pissed, so many emotions after that entire two hours discussing the Crest of Aubin and then Crest themselves. Then the girl throwing 2 new theories. The nature of the Crest and if it's possible to remove them. But he admits.... he gave her a quick glance. This girl...knows more than she lets on.

"Just what exactly did you do to Gregory? Some pigment returned to his hair and his eyes also. I also noticed that his second Crest, has been surpassed temporarily. Allowing his body not only readjust to the magic flow but also....the strain on his body has been temporarily relieved." He said
with narrowed eyes.

Arisa crossed her arms and put one leg over the other. If she was an adult, she would look like she of in defense but also about to make a deal. But in truth, this was the position she would always sit in when giving lessons to her students in the past. True, it was intimidating at times, but you get used to it.

"I have been working on the spell I cast for your two years. The first focus was on plants. About a year ago, we had a bad harvest in my village, and I began to search for the cause. Thankfully it was something simple as Canker, easy to identify because the part dead is of the stem is discolored. So…during that time, I was just barely getting into Crestology and decided to test a few of my own theories regarding my own crest." She said.

"Hmmm...is that so? Is that why you brought the topic of Tarot cards?" He said and she nodded.

"Guess you can say…. I’m still seeking personal closure." She muttered.

"Back to the topic, I decided to see if I could find a way to reverse the effect of the plant disease or abolish it completely. So, testing phase began. I used the dead harvest as my test subjects. You heard of science correct?" She said and Edward narrowed his eyes.

"Arisa, that is a dangerous subject to bring up. I'm listening." He smirked.

She smiles back. Finally, a realist like she was.

"As we know, canker is an injury often associated with an open wound that has become infected by a fungal or bacterial pathogen. Canker diseases frequently kill branches or structurally weaken a plant until the infected area breaks free, often in a wind or ice storm. And it just so happens....that year we had pretty bad winds storms, harming many of the fruit trees. My first test subject was an orange tree. And like each spell that exist, it has a certain number of commands. The first command is to heal the broken tree branch. The second command was to mend it back together. The third one to kill the fungus, the fourth, get rid of it, and so on and so forth. So, what if I combine science and magic? I used a healing spell and a medical plant treatment and combined the two. The result? The healing properties of the medicine greatly increased but also healed the tree." She said and Edward nodded.

"Interesting. But based on your reaction and frown on your face, it was only a temporary heal." He said and she nodded.

"Yeah...2 months at most the tree was healed till the damn thing came back. I began experimenting, using different levels of magic and plant medicine and materials. My conclusion? I can't make it go away, but I can temporarily surpass it. I then began to think it was possible to do the same with Crest. This time I rewrote the spell so it was towards humans. And...my first test subject of the spell...was Gregory. I took....A big gamble." She said and he glared.

"I can guarantee if that spell failed and my friend ended up dead, I would have sent you to prison." He said and she chuckled nervously.

"Yeah....but....I'm glad it worked out. Your friend.... suffered at the hands of....." she looked down to the ground and felt a hand on her head.

"I know....that's why I became a doctor. To help the people I care about. Thank you, Arisa. I also think you might want to consider this." He said and stood up, walked up to a bookshelf, got a small
package of papers, 20 pages and handed it to her.

"What's this?" She asked she opened it and saw it was a test of 100 questions.

Half of them multiple choice and the other half you need to write.

"This is sudden, but do you mind taking this test for me? You're Florencio's niece so I have high expectations. Also, don't put your real name." He smiled.

"Sure, I guess." She muttered as she took out her quill.

This was going to take a while. What Arisa did not know at that time was that the test she was taking was the practice Medical Exams of the Church of Serios. The very same test that her uncle took.

- With Hanneman-

"And that's what happened...." Gregory sighed while his uncle shook with anger.

"And your siblings?" Hanneman could barely say.

"It's alright. After faking my death, I went back to the manner and snuck out all my siblings and a good portion of money. We're living here in the Alliance and changed our last names for our safety. I'll take you to see them. They'll be happy to see you again uncle." Gregory smiled sadly to him.

The boy was completely caught off guard when Hanneman suddenly hugged him. The older man felt like he had failed his sister again. Now, seeing his nephew after 10 years after her death...the boy is only 15.....to endure so much...

"I'm sorry.....I wish I could have saved your mother...but also you.." Hanneman whispered as he let go of him and Gregory chuckled.

"Uncle, it's alright. I didn't understand back then since I was only a brat but now, I do. My mother's death affected us all. But now...." he smiled to him, "I'm not holding back, and I plan to continue moving on. I'll be honest, I'm not very fond of your Crest research, but...I think it may have the answers to save many victims of this damn Crest system." He said.

"Hahahah. You're just like your mother. Despite the horrible treatment she received from your father.... she did everything in her power to keep smiling and protect you kids. I'll continue my research if it means I can help people like you." Hanneman said as he ruffled the boy's hair.

"Seriously uncle? Anyhow, I'm quite happy living here in the Alliance. The pay is pretty good for me being the librarian of the Reigan Manor but also the public library here. Come on, I'll take you to see my siblings. Hope you aren't afraid of heights!!" The boy said cheerfully and Hanneman paled, because the boy had a love for dangerous things.

"Gregory, for Serios sake, please tell me we aren't flying a wyvern there." Hanneman said.

"Oh no. We're not." The boy said and the older man let go a sigh of relief.
"We're flying a kinshi, uncle!!"

"GREGORY!!!!"

- with Alexandra, Amir, and Claude-

"So, you found out more about your Crest then?" Claude said as he and two girls were sitting near the small koi pond near the training grounds of his home.

Their feet dangled a bit and some of the fish nip at their toes. Falco was perched on Claude's head while Feh was on Alexandra's. Puka happy laid down on the boy's lap, purring. Alexandra seemed much better and took her medication. The girl nodded as she spots Gregory climbing on a bird.

"That's right. I'm not exactly happy with the answers I got but it'll do for now." She said and all of them looked up to the sky because they heard screaming.

"BBOOOYYYY!!! SLOW DOWWWWNN!!!"

"NAH UNCLE!!!! THIS SPEED IS NOTHING!!!! HAHAHAHAH!!"

"Ah. Gregory is at it again." Claude snickered as they saw a huge multicolored Phoenix looking bird fly high in the sky flying at rapid speed.

Gregory was laughing like a mad man while Hanneman was holding onto dear life.

"Looks like the old man lost a few years of his life." Amir snickered as they saw them fly away.

"Almost forgot," Alexandra said and handed him a small box.

"What's this?" Claude asked and she smiled.

"It's a gift. I'm sorry again for what happened the other day. I hope you like it." She twiddled with her fingers and the boy opened it.

In it, hand bow with arrows and also....the boy smirked as he pulled out the book in it and Amir looked at her friend shocked.

"You got him a book about pranks and poisons?!?!?" Amir screeched.

"Yeah...I just felt...it was right!!" Alexandra argued back.

"You doomed us all!! That's what!!" Cirina said in her mind.
Claude burst out laughing and grinned to her as he strapped on the small hand bow to his wrist.

"Thank you really. You didn't have to but...I really appreciate it. Speaking of presents, I got you something too!!" He grinned.

Amir excused herself, saying she needs to check on Red Hare in the stables, which wasn't a complete lie but also because she felt like the third wheel. Claude stood up and walked behind her.

"Can I um....touch your hair?" He asked and the girl nodded, her little feathers fluttering.

Her face was slowly turning red as she felt him undo her Chinese buns, her hair gently falling, showing how long it really was, to her waist it went. It was soft to the touch and Claude gently braided her hair and put in a high bun, but also leaving a small braid lose like his. To keep her hair in place, he took out a hair pin that had a blue deer on it. He gently put it in her hair and smiled as he placed his hands on her shoulders and looked at the reflection on the water, the look of amazement on her.

"What do you think?? Hope you like it!!" He grinned.

"I...I...you did an amazing job brat!!" She grinned then gasped.

Claude couldn't help but burst out laughing while her face was turning red from embarrassment, her feathers shaking and fluttering, giving away how she felt.

"Cute." Was what Claude thought as he looked over to her.

"Sorry I'm late!!"

The two turned when they heard Arisa's voice and the girl smiled as she was holding a book in her arms.

"Arisa!!" Alexandra smiled and ran up to her.

Claude couldn't help but stare. The girl only had one streak of white hair before but now she has two. It's been bugging him for a while he'll ask right now. He had predatory gleam in his eyes, the smile of schemer.

"Hey there!! So, you're Arisa huh?" He smiled as he walked up to them.

"Yes I am. Sorry we never got to talk properly.‘ She smiled softly to him.

"It your name Arisa or Byleth? Because Amir called you Byleth and Alexandra called you Arisa. Which is it? I'm confused." He said.

"Arisa is my nickname and Byleth is my birth name. I go by both. Feel free to call me either." Arisa said with her smile still.

She was hard to read. He wasn't liking that. He could usually tell what was going on in a person’s mind but her? He couldn't tell at all. It felt so strange, like a puzzle and it greatly interest him.

"Oh?" He heard her say as she noticed the small hand bow in his wrist, "Hmm...Archery huh? Say...do you mind doing a quick demonstration on a target practice over there?" She pointed to the
target wooden circle.

"Umm? Sure?" He was confused.

Alexandra was silent as she watched the scene. She knew that look in Arisa's eyes. The look of a teacher. She knew her friend was about to go into teaching mode. Claude picked up one of the practice bows and ready his aim as he pulled back the arrow. Arisa watched silently as Feh landed on her head, and Amir returned. Everyone was silent as Claude let go of his arrow.

"Tch." It hit the blue area, number 6, bottom.

"Too many mistakes." Arisa said as she put her book away in her purse and pulled her own bow, walking towards the target.

Claude's jaw dropped as he saw her skillfully fire each arrow, each one hitting the center each time. Her stance was straight, her shoulders relaxed, her eyes sharp, her body position reminded the same after each arrow fired. Arisa let go of a breath she was holding turned back towards Claude.

"That's how you fire an arrow properly. Even more so," she pulled up her sleeves and threw one of her daggers, never breaking eye contact with him, it hit the dead center of the target, "Use your dominant eye. You're too tense and your grip is lacking." She said with a monotone tone.

He had never seen such amazing skill in Archery. He...he...

"Train me please!!" He blurted out, shocking everyone.

Arisa smiled and crossed her arms.

"Well, this is first. I don't mind teaching you but what am I going to get in return?" She smiled to him.

Both Alexandra and Amir backed away because the aura between to two shifted from kids to battle of tactics. Claude thought for a moment and spoke.

"I'll pay you 3 gold coins. It's enough to cover 3 months." He said and Arisa shook her head.

"I'm not looking for money. That isn't what I want." She said.

"Well now. I thought you're a mercenary." He said.

"I am. But I don't exactly seek money. How about this?" Arisa smiled and pointed to herself, Alexandra and Amir, "I teach you Archery, Alex teaches you riding lessons and Amir teaches you how to use an axe?" She smiled.

"Whoa whoa!! Why bring us into this?!" Amir said on the defensive side.

"Come on Amir," Alex said, "We got nothing better to do anyway. Yes, we're still doing jobs here in the Alliance, but I think this is a good opportunity to help him out. You saw how...." she muttered the last part.

"Yeah I know that...fiiiinnnneeee! We'll do it!! But make it 6 gold coins. Two per person." Amir grumbled.

"Whoa Whoa!! That's way too much!!" Arisa and Alexandra said.
"Hmm...3 then. One per person." Amir said and Claude grinned.

"Deal. That's on your end though. What about Arisa and Alexandra?" He said and Alexandra smiled shyly.

"You...already gave me this hair pin...so...I'm perfectly fine." She said.

Arisa, Sothis and Amir were so going to tease her later.

"What?! That was a gift!! Come on, name your price. And you can't say no." Claude smirked, and Alexandra pouted.

"Fine....umm.... then.....how about.....magic books related to water and ice magic?" She said.

"Access to the library. Got it." He nodded and turned to Arisa.

"So, how about you? What do you want?" He smiled.

"Access to the forbidden section." She smiled and Claude felt he just triggered a walking bomb.

Son of a gun......somehow he knew her request was going to come back and bite him. What's more, she's at the age required in order to read those books. He still has 3 years left.

"Alright then." He walked up to her and reached out his hand, "I'm Claude von Reigan. Nice to meet you Teach." He smiled at her.

Arisa stared at him and patted his head with a soft smile, shocking him.

"I know that smile doesn't reach your eyes." She said and Claude stiffened as she shook his hand.

"Arisa Byleth Reus Eisner, mercenary and future Professor. Nice to meet you little prince." She grinned.

"Wait, why little prince?" He asked but internally he was panicking.

"Because you remind me of the Prince of Persia. He's a character from a book I love reading." She grinned.

The next 2 two months, Claude and the girls trained together and taught him lessons. Judith at times would silently watch the training sessions and couldn't help but smile as she saw how much happier Claude was. Even if Arisa showed no mercy when she would teach. Of course, the girls still had their jobs as mercenaries and found a balance between their lessons with Claude and the group.

But...what no one in all Fodlan knew...that the most history changing event was going to happen on The Verdant Moon: August: Arisa's and Sothis's birthday month.
With violet eyes, humming as she drew in her journal, the young girl smiled a bit satisfied as she looked at the drawing of rose in her hands. With her brown hair tied with purple ribbons, and a new red dress, the young girl smiled. She wore low heels and white tights to go nicely with her dress.

Knock knock.

"Come in!!" She quickly closed her journal and let go of a sigh of relief when she saw it was her older brother.

"Chris!!!! You scared me!!" The girl glared at the young boy who was older than her by 5 years.

"Sorry Edelgard!! Just came to get you. Remember? Today is the Holy Blessing." A young boy with brown hair, wore a white suite, which unfortunately was uncomfortable and would gladly rip it off if he could.

Edelgard smiled at her 12-year-old older brother as she walked up to him to fix his tie.

"Thank you." He sighed and she grinned.

"Are the others also ready?" She said.

"Yup. Dad and Mom decided we're going to watch an opera before coming back. Thankfully it's early in the morning and the Holy Blessings isn't till night!" Chris grinned to his little sister.

"Are we watching the legendary Songstress Manuela?" She asked excitedly.

"Hell, Yeah we are!!!" Chirs said and heard a cough.

"I advise you...." dark slick black hair that covered his right eye, and revealed his left light green colored eye, glared at the boy, "Not to use that language in front of Lady Edelgard, Lord Chris." He wore a white button up shirt with black pants and shows.

Of course, on his waist, was a sword.

Chirs sighed and turned to him, with a smile.

"Now, Hubert." He smiled to the 10-year-old boy that took his damn job too seriously, "Let loose a bit. Besides, my baby sister doesn't mind." He said.

"Hell, yeah I don't!!!" Edelgard said back and Hubert looked ready to beat down Chris while the said Lord was internally crying.

He was going to get a yelling from his uncle if he learns the language Edelgard is learning from him.

"El... umm...could you not say that when Hubert or Mom, Dad, uncle, or nobles are present? Just between us and our siblings please?" Chris said.

"Alright..." she pouted as the three began to leave the room.
"I'm hoping something interesting happens today."

Chapter 16: Twilight: Crest of The Hanged Man: End

[ ------------
[  

BLOODY HELL!!!! This chapter is the deepest I ever went into researching Crest Lore, Tarot cards, medicine and then throw in some of my own stuff. The Next Chapter will be shifting from the girls to a new environment. Yes, we'll finally seeing Edelgard but also, a brand-new OC of mine that will be appearing in the next time skip. Now, Edelgard before everything went down in 1176, had 10 siblings, which made it perfect for me to add more to the story!!

You guys won't be seeing the next chapter unfortunately till I am done with my finals in a week. I also wish everyone who are taking finals also good luck.

Fun fact: All the Crest have a representation of the Major Arcana cards.

Crest of Aubin: The Hanged Man

Crest of Flames: The World

See where I'm going? ;3
Chapter 17: Eclipse: Noa

-Dream: 1,000 years ago-

Where the north wind meets the sea

There's a river full of memory

Sleep, my darling, safe and sound

For in this river all is found

In her waters, deep and true

Lie the answers and a path for you

Dive down deep into her sound

But not too far or you'll be drowned

Her voice sang so sweetly yet haunting as she sat at the edge of a cliff. Her curly dark green hair flowed gently in the wind as she looked up into the night sky. Her green eyes held a smile as she drew in her journal, she made using a tree bark. She smiled fondly as a shooting star passed by, fixing her glasses and...picking up a jug of wine and gulping it down.

"Hhyyaaaaa!!! I swear this wine is the best!!!" She smiled as she wiped her lips with the sleeves of her dress.

Nothing made it better when she was alone and studying silently. Except when she and her husband were alone and had..."their sessions". She continued to write until she heard small footsteps approaching silently. But she had the ears of a wolf when it came to hearing.

"Nice try Serios." She said and there was a small yelp as she bent her head back a bit and smiled at the young girl with mint colored hair and eyes, who pouted.

"I thought you would be asleep Noa!!!" Serios said and the woman now known as Noa just smirked.

"Oh my, oh my ~ liwwile Sewios thinks she can tell me when to sleep!!! Hahahah!!! Shouldn't it be the other way around? You're supposed to be asleep young lady!!! I'm not about to have mother scold me when she wakes up!!" Noa said as she stood up a bit to quickly and fell off the cliff, like usual.

"Noa!!!" Serios screamed and quickly backed away when she saw her sister had turned to her half human-half dragon form.

Noa sighed as she gently landed back to the ground, flowers blooming where her steps touched.
She smiled as she made her dragon features disappear and was surprised when Serios hugged her tightly around her waist.

"I'm alright Serios. You should know I can just fly. You're a dragon too, you know." Noa said and sighed when she saw Serios was sobbing.

"You know I hate it when I see you fall off a cliff each time!!!!" The little girl sobbed loudly.

Noa groans but smiled softly as she gently cupped her sister’s cheeks, wiping her tears.

"Serios, even if I fall off a cliff each time, I'll never leave you alone. I promise." Noa smiled softly.

"Promise?"

"Promise."

A promise that was broken by fate.

- End of Dream -

- Imperial Years 1169: July 25th: Blue Sea Moon: 19 days Before the Holy Blessing -

Emily groans as she sat up from her bed, her naked body was shown as the blankets slid down. Despite being in a human body of age 15 with a mentally of a 1000-year-old woman, she was glad at least some of her old features of her original body were there.

"Why now am I dreaming of my past?" She muttered as she gently got off her bed, slid her feet into her slippers shaded like sheep, and walked towards the restroom to bathe.

Her daily routine was simple. Wake up, bathe for an hour a half (the hell?), get dressed, eat some breakfast and head to her medical workshop in the city. But today she had to work in the palace, so she left in charge her assistant for today. She was dressed in a white lab coat with the Crest of Lamine on the back of it, the royal flag of the Kingdom was patched on her left shoulder of her lab coat. Under her lab coat, she wore a simple purple blouse, black pants that are easy to move around in, and low black heels that allow her to run and walk without being in pain. She took a bite of her apple as she walked down the palace halls. If one were to describe it, it looked like the legendary castle of Camelot. Beautiful blue, clear glass, the flag of the Kingdom hung proudly. She made a turn to the left and stood in front of the doorway to the roundtable conference room. She sighed. She hated politics with a passion but being a Holy Magus, it was unavoidable.

"Politics...politics...politics..." she grumbled and pushed the door open.

Just like in the story of King Arthur, the king sat with his knights around the huge roundtable. But in this case, it was the king, a few knights and the heads of the Noble Houses in The Kingdom.
Along with her and Cornelia of course. It felt like she was in bloody lion’s den. It felt like the war meetings when she, her siblings and mother in the past were planning to fight off the Agarthans. She took her seat next to Lord Lanato, and he nodded. He was one of the few nobles she approved of.

"How much have I missed?" She whispered since that was her usual question in case she accidentally arrived late.

She never did but hey, you never know.

"Nothing so far. We are still waiting for a few others to arrive. Goodness you look tired!! Just how much work did you have?" Lord Lonato said and she chuckled dryly.

"Actually, quite the opposite. I stayed up reading a book that was recently published by an author named Cecilia Shariac (Arisa: Achoo!! Who's talking smack?!). King Arthur and the Knights of The Roundtable. I must say, quite the read. I honestly loved it. I can't help it was inspired by the Knights of Serios and The Kingdom. Though I must admit, not a fan of Lancelot." She chuckled as did Lord Lonato.

"I see you love that book too. My son won't stop talking about it." He said and she giggled.

The doors opened in came the last of the few nobles. They took their seats and King Lambert nodded.

"Let us begin the conference (war)." King Lambert said.

Lord Keilman stood up and Emily notice he looked happy. Hmm...that's a good sign. Despite Lord Keilman could be a pain in the ass, he was a good man, compared to half the nobles here.

"I bring good news my king!!! Trade with Duscur has reopened again!! The first trade port reopened in the Alliance about a month ago and the trade ports are slowly beginning to reopen again. Even if at a slow pace, it is good to say that new goods will be coming in soon." Lord Keilman said joyfully.

"I see. That is good news. We are still working out negotiations with Duscur since their system is different from ours but hopefully, we'll be able to open more trade soon. We have also learned that the new head of trade in spices, salt, and silk are the Snowdrop family." King Lambert said and everyone nodded.

"Concerning trading regulations," Count Gautier spoke, "Have they been spoken of yet?" He said.

"I'll be honest, I'm not happy they have opened trade to Sreng and Almyra. But that is their choice and not ours. We can't interfere with their traditions." Lord Keilman said as he sat down.

"Personally," Emily spoke, making everyone turn, "I agree with Lord Keilman. Despite the differences in our cultures, one must also think of the two sides of the scale in order to create a balance in trade. First off, " her hand glowed, conjuring a projection of products from Sreng, "As we all know, sugar cane does not grow here in Fodlan and must be brought in from Sreng. And as we know, relations with them are strain. Especially between House Gautier." She said.

"Hmph. If they stop invading my territory, we wouldn't have to go through the whole trouble of
Count Gautier said, "Have you actually tried to speak and do negotiations?" Emily smiled and the Lord stiffens.

"I thought so." She said.

Honestly!! The only voice of reason is her, Lord Lonato, The King, Lord Rodrigue, and Sir Gustav.

"Back to the subject," King Lambert said and turned to Lord Galatea. "How are things in your land? Has the new farming method helped bring a new harvest?" He said.

"My King, it has. Yes, we are still struggling but we had a much better summer harvest this year. That is more than enough." Lord Galatea smiled.

Emily let go a sigh of relief. Honestly, that girl, Kiana....she knows damn well the woman is only saying a certain amount of information. That is good. She is careful, cations and knows what will happen if she says far too much.

"Ah, that is wonderful!!" Cornelia spoke, "Not only is the land recovering but I assume the people as well?" She smiled and Emily frowns.

"Yes! The medicine you, Lady Kiana and Lady Emily have prescribed have done amazing wonders. The health of many of my people has improved and what's more, the land seems to be blessing us with herbs growing." Lord Galatea said.

"Speaking of Lady Kiana....." Count Rowe said and everyone turned to Emily, who wanted to murder Cornelia who purposely brought the subject of her friend, "Has she.....spoken to you these past few months?" He smiled.

"They all really want her want her to become part of the Kingdom....Cornelia especially because even she has figured out the girl knows a lot more. Fuck you hag....I'm not letting any of you get near this girl nor her knowledge....." Emily internally thought then spoke.

"Lady Kiana and I have not. She has returned to her homeland and will not be returning to Fodlan till 1175. She is a busy woman and I respect her space." She said.

"Tch." She heard very faintly from half the Lords and Cornelia.

"Changing the subject," Emily said, "The Holy Day of Blessing is soon. Have preparations begun?" She said.

"Of course!" Lord Rodrigue said, "As much as I despise being put in charge of it this year," he sent a glare to King Lambert, who smirked, "Everything is going smoothly. Surprisingly my sons are having fun choosing the food that will be served." He chuckled.

Thankfully the meeting ended smoothly and by a miracle, no cat fight between Emily and Cornelia ensued (All men: PRAISE THE GODDESS!!!). The 15-year-old redhead walked back to her office and screeched when she saw Prince Dimitri and Princess Lestia in there.

"What are you two doing in here?!” The girl said and Lestia smiled.

"He hurt his hand again. Snapped a sword in half and Felix is crying." The girl said and Dimitri glared at her.
"I did n----hhiiss...." he hissed at the pain and Emily grabbed his right hand and sighed.

"Once more," she saw his palms were red with scratches, "Use gloves." She gently hovered her hand over his, it glowed a light blue, and they healed.

Dimitri sighed as she ruffled his hair then spoke.

"I really wish I didn't snap things like this each time....my Crest keeps activating at random times." Dimitri said and Emily smiled to him softly.

"Remember the training exercises I told you about?" She said.

"Meditation?" He said confused and Lestia grinned.

"Can I teach him?" The blonde girl grinned.

"Dimitri, I think it be best you train with your sister for a week. It'll help you have better control of your Crest and it's power." She said and he nodded.

"I'll right. I'll give a try. And thank you Emily, we'll see you later tonight!! Take care care!!" He said as he and sister waved and left.

Emily sighed as she locked the door and activated her sound barrier. Once she made every single security spell in her office was in place, she spun like a ballerina, green light surrounded her, and she warped away to an unknown location.

- ?????? -

No one knows where this place is, only she and the members of this group know. Emily von Miller Zoltras gently landed in an ancient room. Stone walls, blue fire torches, ancient stone table, yet the place was like an auditorium, enough to host 100 people. Truly, this organization she is the leader of, only has that many people. She saw many have arrived and wore their white cloaks, different from the people of those Who Slither in the Dark, and the symbol of a Star was on it. She walked to the center and many removed their hoods. Of course, she raised an eyebrow when she saw Glenn, the newest member of her group, but she trusted the boy, since he is only two years younger than her and far too smart. Truthfully, he also wanted Zander and Sylvain to join also but this was a task he didn't want them to find out about, also for their safety. Many members of the group were people that chose to leave the Church of Serios of many reasons and the other half were survivors that escaped Those Who Slither in the Dark or were victims of the Crest system. Others were people Lord Alexander took in. She knew no one here would betray each other. One of the abilities of her Crest is that she could immediately detect if one had ill will and plans to betray.

"Good evening everyone. Glad to see you all are doing well." She spoke as she set down a folded piece of paper on the stone table, "As you all know, we'll be breaking into the Holy Mausoleum in 19 days. Have you all been keeping tabs in your country?" She said.

There are 3 groups, each one of the 33 people. One to keep track of what goes on in the Empire, one to keep track in the Alliance and of course, the one she is in, to keep track in the Kingdom. The extra remaining one person, is a spy to keep track of the Church of Serios.

"We've noticed suspicious activities going one lately in the underground black market in the
"Empire," the Leader of the Empire group said, "We haven't had a closer look, but we fear a coup de gras is happening soon." They said and Emily nodded.

"That's not good.....Keep tabs on it. We may have to help certain people into hiding." She said and the leader of the Alliance group, Gregory, smirked.

"Good news, The Faerie Queen will be lending us her support!" He said proudly and many cheered, "Bad news.....we found out some members of TWSD have created a base in Duscur. The nobles are doing what they can to fight them off, but the battle is wavering..." he said.

Emily did not like that news one bit. She noticed Erik stand up to speak.

"Cornelia was been getting off our radar and....we confirmed...she's hunting down Kiana Kalsana." He said the floor underneath Emily, thorns began to grow.

Many looked at each other worried and this was Glenn's first-time seeing Emily shaking with anger.

"Haaaaaaa.....so the hag is looking for her then......? Even with no description nor what she looks like.... she’s doing what she can to hunt her down.....haaaaa....." Emily said lowly.

She took a deep breath, the thorns disappearing.

"Lucius." she turned to the young man with long blond locks of hair, dressed in a blue robe, a yellow colored cloth wrapped around his waist with a gem hanging on it, a white cloak and blue colored eyes.

Lucius smiled and nodded as he presents a scroll.

"Lady Rhea along with Seteth, and Flayn will be leaving to Enbarr. Beleth will be left in charge of the monastery while they are away. There will be guards like usual guarding the entrance of the Holy Mausoleum. Thankfully, during my time there, I have stumbled upon many hidden passageways. It's still confusing but I have mapped out everything that I can." He said and summon his staff and projected the underground layout.

Emily nodded and smirked.

"Just as I thought," she pointed to certain area underneath the library, "We have our blind spot. Tharja, is that spell almost ready?" She said as she turned to a dark corner in the room.

"Hahahahahaha...." a low and creepy laugh echoes and Glenn flinched.

"First time here?" Gregory said to him.

"Yeah....to be honest...this still a lot of information to take in." Glenn sighed.

Honestly.....learning the truth behind Crest and history felt like he drank an entire bottle of wine. Not that he's ever drunk wine but you get what I mean!

"You're only 13, kid. Trust me, you get used to it." Gregory gave him a small smile.

A young woman emerged from the shadows. Light pale skin, black straight hair with parts tied, and gold crown. She wears a black Cape and her clothing...is very questionable. Gregory covered Glenn's eyes, while the said boy was confused.
"You're still pure." Gregory chuckled a bit nervously while the woman stared at the two. It felt like she was looking into their souls.

She turned to Emily and smiled.

"All is ready. Now, who will you bring to the mission? Obviously, Gregory and I will be going to undo the seal on Serios's tomb." Tharja said as she held a black grimoire in her hands.

"Erik, I, you two," She looked over to Glenn, "Glenn." She said and many stood up to protest.

"I object!!! He is still new to the group and isn't ready for this!!" A woman yelled out.

"Agree!!! He has yet to gain ex------ooohh...so that's why...so he can learn..." one man said, and many sat back down as Emily nodded.

"As you all know, during these past 5 years, Cornelia killed many people that served Lord Alexander. We held a proper funeral for all of them. But now.....the only one right now that is skillful enough with de-activating traps is Glenn. That is the main reason we are taking him." She said and the boy took a deep breath.

"This is my first mission and I won't let you down. Even...if learning the truth of the Church of Serios and who the true enemy of our people are, I'll do everything in my power. I die for my beliefs only." He said and Emily nodded.

"I'm counting on you Glenn." She gave him a small smile and nodded.

"Next up," she looked to her list, "Wind Twins: Hiro and Liko!! You're up along with Sophia!" She yelled out.

From the Alliance group, two young men that wore armor like jackals, nodded. One's armor was the color dark green; this was Hiro. And the other wore a black one, this was Liko. They both wore mask of jackals to hide their identities.

"You two are in charge of looking out in case guards show up." She said and they nodded.

She turned to a young woman how was dressed as a holy nun and had a pink grimoire in her hands. Her hair was pink with streaks of blue, and one green eye and one yellow eye.

"I'm having you prepare the escape routes just in case. Have the warping spells ready along with the memory erase fog." She said and the woman nodded.

"19 days from now, we will raid the Holy Mausoleum!!! This is the first step to creating the change that is needed!!! Everyone else, make sure to keep your eyes open. Those who Slither in the Dark will have become more active!! Be careful!! You know what to do!! Dismiss!" She yelled and many nodded.

A few minutes passed and the only ones left were her, Erik, and the team that will be going.

"Glenn, let me introduce you to the team." Emily smiled as the group walked up.

"This is Sophia von Hyrm. A former noble of the Empire. She left 40 years ago because her father
was executed by the Church of Serios for his choosing to defect from it. He...had many secrets and found out many things. He was part of this organization to take down TWSD." Emily said and Glenn looked at pink haired woman who smiled.

He just barely noticed her ears were a bit pointy.

"Yes, true. But I'm sure you're questioning why I look like I'm 21. I lived in the world of Fae for many years to hide from the Church of Serios. Lady Titania is very kind. It is a pleasure to meet you Glenn. Hope we get along." Sophia smiled to him and he nodded.

"Likewise." He said and then turned to the Twins.

"Names Liko!" Liko grinned to him.

"Names Hiro!!" Hiro saluted him.

"We're from a village in The Valley of Torment!!" They said together.

"The hell.....? How one earth does people live there?!?!" Glenn said and the twins chuckled.

"You be surprised what magic is cable of. Our bodies are adapted to the heat there and we live most of the times in the mountains nearby." Hiro smiled.

"Besides, we got a bone to pick with TWSD. Let's just say......our families suffered." Liko said.

Glenn nodded and turned to Gregory and Tharja. The said woman smiled to him.

"Hello there boy. My name is Tharja. I am a Dark Mage that has been on the run for 5 years. The Church of Serios did not approve of my choice in studying the dark arts so as you can guess, they wanted me executed. Accused me of tricking people into sinning and such. If you need me to hex someone, just say the word." Tharja giggled eerily.

Would it hurt for her to hex Cornelia?

"Forget the woman," Gregory grinned and pointed to himself, "Names Gregory. Former noble of the Empire. I'm a survivor of those piece of shits and have two Crest (Glenn: WHAT?!). I'll be helping you out if things get out of hand. You already know Emily and Erik. Anyhow," he turned to Emily, "You said there was something else you needed to take from the tomb other than a fragment of that sword. What else are you taking?" He said and everyone turned to Emily.

The woman had no emotion in her eyes as she looked at the Crest stone in her hand and then to them.

"I'm taking my body back." She said and Erik frowned while the others were confused.

"Wait, body?? But you're here with us." Liko said.

"Other than Serios's tomb," Emily said, "There is one more tomb that we will be raiding. It has the body of the original bearer of the Crest of Noa." She said.

"What I have now in my hand" she showed them the Crest stone that had the symbol of Noa, "Is the heart and blood of the body. What is needed now to complete it is, the body and the soul." She said and Sophia frowns.
"The body is in the tomb and the soul....is you...." she said and the other 5 minus Erik looked her horrified.

"Are you out of your mind?!" Tharja said, "If you so recklessly try to return to the original body after....how many years?!!? It can kill you!!" She said.

"I know. That's why Edward along with Lucius will be with me to make sure the procedure is a success. Rhea......" Emily gritted her teeth, "Has already fallen too low." Was all she said.

She will get her body back!!! One way or another!!

- President Day: Augusts: Verdant Moon: Day 13; Enbarr: Opera House -

Écoutez ! écoutez !
C’est le son des instruments joyeux
Qui nous appelle et nous convie !
Ah ! –
Tout un monde enchanté semble naître
à mes yeux !
Tout me fête et m’enivre!
Et mon âme ravie
S’élance dans la vie
Comme l’oiseau s’envole aux cieux !

It was as if angels were singing down from the heavens. Today was the Holy Blessing Day of Enbarr, said to have been the day the Goddess first created the land. The first land to have been created was the Empire before the founding of its Empire. The opera house was full, grand, beautiful like a huge fancy theater. There were seats down and many balconies up. One, was specifically reserved for the Church of Serios. Lady Rhea sat silently as she watched the legendary Songstress, Manuela Casagranda, sing the role of a young girl named Juliet. Flayn hummed happily to the song while Seteth watched silently. Of course, there were guards like usual to protect the three. Manuela puffed out her chest as she sung out much higher notes, her hair was neatly put in a high bun, a few strands of her hair loose. She wore a beautiful red dress, fit for a queen. She stopped and turned to sing together with her partner, who played the role of Romeo.

Thus, today's opera was the tragic tale of two lovers, Romeo and Juliet.
Rhea let go of a sigh and Seteth turned to her.

"Is everything alright?" He asked.

"Yes. I wished Beleth would have come but we cannot leave the monastery unguarded. Hopefully he and Alois aren't having too much trouble." She said and turned back to the opera.

"I must be truthful," Seteth said, "I was very surprised when I learned you had a son. I don't recall you ever getting married." He said and felt a pinch on his side.

"Father!! How rude!!! I'm sure even Aunty has fallen in love at some point!!" Flayn said.

Thankfully the guards were placed outside, so the three were free to go by their real names if they desired. Rhea chuckled and sighed.

"It's alright Cethleann. I took in Beleth 18 years ago. Since then, I have been more than happy to raise him as my own son. He's a good child." Rhea said.

It wasn't a complete lie. Truthfully, she created Beleth. Originally, he was supposed to be the 11th vessel for the Crest of Flames but that changed. The baby child she created breath, had life, a soul, and a beating heart. Rhea could not believe it and was downright shocked. The child was not meant to have a soul. She could not bring herself to implant the heart of the progenitor goddess into him and chose to raise him. 19 years of raising a child was roller coaster. There were times she would ask for help from the nuns and especially the 12th vessel she created, Rosa. Beleth loved playing with her and would call her Aunty. He was devastated when he learned that she had passed away. But also, his mood was a bit happier when he learned he had a cousin (*cough* Arisa Byleth *cough*). Rhea never told Beleth her true motives and who she really was. Was this what parents go through when they wish for their child to become someone better than they are? For them not to learn of their past.

"I finally understood what my sister and my mother went through raising me." Rhea internally sighed as she looked towards the other balconies.

The love of a mother, the love of family. Is that why many humans fought wars at times? She turned to look around the balconies and her eyes zero in on one specifically. Two rows down, 6 to the left, she never thought she would see a familiar face again.

"Sniff." The two turned towards Flayn, who was sniffing the air, "I...Sandy?" She said and instantly Seteth stiffened.

Rhea turned back to the balcony she was looking.

"Hmm..he hasn't changed one bit." She thought as she looked at the balcony where the Varley family was.

Florencio sat happily chatting with Lord Reines and sitting next to him was little Bernadetta, who's eyes were sparkling as she watched the opera, while hugging tightly to her chest a teddy bear. There seem to be hope rise in her chest that Jeralt was here in the Empire. And if he was here...then that child was here as well. Her usual smile came to her lips as she looked around the balconies until....
Her blood ran cold and her heart felt like it stopped.

6 balconies away, was a young woman with long curly dark green colored hair that touched the floor. She wore a simple white gown and had her hands intertwined together. She had a closed eye smile and round glasses. She just kept looking down at the opera as Manuela sung in a sad tone as her and Romeo were separated and had to return to their families.

"N-Noa?" She said barely and Seteth and Flayn heard her, their eyes quickly went to look at the balcony where she was looking at.

Their eyes went wide as they spotted the young woman who just kept her closed eye smile but then slowly their way. Rhea shook as the woman just kept her smile. Oh, she thanked her mother that it was dark, and no one saw her suddenly standing up, looking at the woman, terrified. The woman slowly opened her eyes, they were the same mint green that she missed but Void of any emotion. Seteth could only stare in shock while Flayn had a hand over her mouth to keep from hearing her gasp. The woman smiled and her lips moved. Only they understood what she was saying.

Good to see you again, Serios.

At that moment, the duet ended, and an eruption of applause filled the opera house. The red curtains closed, and the lights went on, showing that the audience has a 20-minute break to do what is needed. The woman was gone, like she was never there.

[ ------ ]

"That was amazing!!" Edelgard said excitedly as she jumped excitedly next to her mother, Lady Patricia.

"Calm down El!" The twin brothers said while the twin sisters just giggled.

"You two give up..." Chris said and their father chuckled.

"Did you see her amazing dance skills??!! Oohhh!! I want to be able to dance like that one day!!" Edelgard said excitedly and Hubert sighs.

Chris just patted his back.

"Welcome to my world." He snickered and Hubert glared at him.

Not too far, Rhea was being greeted by many and was barely keeping her composure in check. She noticed Florencio separated from his group, and the man was using his hat as fan. The opera house felt too hot and it was only 10 in the morning. Bloody hell...summer in Enbarr was the worst. Thankfully ice magic is used to keep the place cool. She smiled as she walked up to him, and he didn't notice till she spoke.

"Florencio, it has been quite some time." She smiled.
The man froze and slowly turned towards her.

"A-ah!!! L-Lady R-Rhea!!! Forgive me for not noticing you. This summer heat is just.... unbarring," he said as he finally got his composure back.

"It is alright. I'm sure it is the will of the goddess that our paths cross again. Are you here with the others?" She asked.

Florencio knew damn well she was talking about his sister and Jeralt.

“I’m here with my apprentice, Lady Bernadetta. I have been living in The Empire for some time and have decided to pass down my knowledge to someone of my choosing.” He smiled.

"I see." She smiled at him, "I hope you do well. I was wondering, is Jeralt and the others here as well?" She said and Florencio gave her a closed eye smile.

"Ahh....you see, we all went our separate paths. Sandana has returned to Almyra and the last I heard of Jeralt was 8 years ago unfortunately." He said.

"You're not getting anywhere near them." Florencio thought as he saw the barely noticeable twitch in her smile.

"I see. Very well then, I am glad to see you are doing well. May the goddess protect you." She smiled and left.

Once she was out of his sights, Florencio felt he could breathe again till mint green eyes were suddenly in his face.

"Ghaaa!!" He screeched and had his hands up.

"Ohh!! Pardon me!! I didn't mean to scare you. It's just, you smell like someone I know." Flayn said to him and Florencio looked like a terrified cat.

"Ahahahaha....it's alright." He chuckled as he fixed himself, "May I ask what this scent is?" He said.

"Jasmine and lotus tea." She said.

"Aaaaahhh!! You must mean this!!" He reached into his purse and took out a small charm bag.

"My sister made this for me many years ago." He smiled.

"Ohh...I'm Flayn. Sorry once again to have scared you. Umm...are you...Sandana's brother, Florencio?" She asked and Florencio looked her shocked.

"Y-Yes. H-How do you know my sister?" He said.

Sandy has a lot of explaining to do when he returns to Remire Village.

"Oh!! She's my mother!!" Flayn said happily.

Florencio felt like he was running over by an army and collapsed in shock to the ground.

"Aaaahhhh!!! Man down!!! Medic!! Someone bring water!!" Brenedatta screamed as she ran to him, his soul flying out of his body.
Many ran over to him and Lord Reines was trying to revive him by fanning him with his hat. Flayn quickly ran back to her brother, who let go of a sigh. Typical of Florencio.

"Flayn....please don't speak to him again....." he said and Flayn pouted.

Rhea felt her heart stop once more as she saw the same woman again sitting comfortably on a chair, her closed eye smile, remained there as always, never changing. It felt strange that no one even walked up to the woman. Like they couldn't see her. Right when she was going to walk up to her.

"Miss, what are you doing here alone?"

She quickly hid herself behind a pillar. She looked out and saw it was the young prince of the Empire, Chris Von Hresvelg. The young boy sat next to the woman, who still had her smile.

"Ara...." the woman spoke, "You can see me?" She said.

The boy is confused.

"Of course, I can. Why wouldn't I be able to?" Chirs said.

"Only those that have seen death can see me." The woman said and he just stared.

"I never seen anyone die." He said and she turned to him with her smile.

"That may be so, but your soul," she pointed to him, "Your past life, you have. Tell me, do you feel like someone is missing in your life?" She said.

"Uhhh....okay?? I'm perfectly happy with my family. Why would I feel someone is missing?" He said.

"Does the name [----] sound familiar?" She said and he froze.

"Umm....yeah....but...please don't tell anyone!!" He said and the woman chuckled.

"Don't worry. I won't." She smiled.

There was a strange silence between the two until she spoke again.

"In her waters, deep and true
Lie the answers and a path for you~" she sung, and the boy looked at her shocked.

"Dive down deep into her sound
But not too far or you'll be drowned~" he sung back and quickly covered his mouth.
The woman chuckled as his face turned red.

"I'm quite happy to know my song is still sung. I used to sing that song to my little sister." The woman said with a giggle.

"You have siblings?" He asked.

"Yes. A long time ago. Many have passed on, but a few are alive. Ah." She looked over to the door to the outside garden opened, "I shall be going now little one. Have a good day." She said and stood up to leave.

"Okay, have a good day miss...?" Chirs was unsure what do call her, and the woman patted his head.

"My name is Noa." She said with her smile and left.

Rhea quickly went after the woman named Noa. Noa was silent as she walked through the garden, it almost seemed like she was walking in random directions on purpose. The one-sided chase turned to 5 minutes and soon, they arrived at an isolated part of the garden, in front of a statue of Saint Serios. The garden was filled with many different flowers that have yet to bloom, colors of blue, white, purple and the rarity of green. The woman stood looking up at the statue with her closed eye smile, her back facing Rhea. They were 10 feet apart yet...Rhea felt like the little girl from many years ago that used to love chasing after older sister.

Rhea took a deep breath and spoke, her voice a bit shaky.

"Is...it really...you?" She was barely able to say, and the woman never moved, the closed eyes smile still there.

"Please....is it really you Noa?" Rhea said once more to the woman.

No response only silence, and it was uncomfortable.

"Please answer me Noa!! I know it's you!!" It was extremely rare for Rhea to lose her composure but only very few saw this broken side of her.

Her son, Flayn, Sothis, Seteth and the rest of her siblings. Especially the woman named Noa, who did not move nor respond.

"Sing with me a song~" Noa sung suddenly catching her off guard as she never turned to face her, "of silence and blood. The rain can't wash away the mud~" she sung then slowly began turning towards the woman.

"Within my ancient heart dwells~" her closed eye smile was still there as she turned to face Rhea, "Madness and Pride, can no one hear my cry ~" she finished, and her smile remained.

Rhea shook as she looked at Noa before her. She was so close yet so far. She couldn't bring herself to approach her. How was this even possible? Now shouldn't be here. Especially since her body was sealed away, and it no longer had a soul, her heart. So why?

"My, my, my~" Noa spoke and Rhea looked up, "You've grown Serios. You really have become a beautiful woman. But..." she slightly turned to face the statue, "Can't say I approve of the ways you handled things. Hmmm......you must have a deep fear of humans." She said.
"How.....are you here?" Rhea said and Noa turned back to her.

"Good question Serios. How exactly am I here when you have my body locked away?" Noa said as she turned back to her.

Running footsteps were heard and Noa's smile seemed to grow when she saw it was her older brother and her cute little niece come. The two gasped when they saw her. Flayn felt tears well in her eyes as she spoke.

"A-Aunty Noa.....h-how?" Flayn tried to hold back a sob as Noa kept her smile.

"Impossible....I... thought...you---" Seteth did not get to finish.

"You all thought I was dead. There. I said it." Noa smiled as she un-intertwined her hands and walked up to rose bush and touched one of the flower buds.

"However," she kept looking at the flower buds, "I'm not happy with the way you sullied the name of Cirina, my second cute little niece. Serios and Cichol, I'm disappointed in you two. You all made her look like a woman gone mad. Did you both despise her that much because she was half Nabatean and half Agarthan?" Noa said with a bitter tone despite her smile never wavering.

"What? Aunty, Father, is that true??" Flayn said as she quickly turned to the two adults.

"Noa.....that is enough..." Seteth said a bit low yet the woman never wavered.

"Hmmm...Cethleann. I think you should hit the history books and look up what was written about your cousin and friend. They did her dirty." Noa smiled as she turned back to them.

"Noa.........that's enough.... more importantly....just....how much..." Rhea said and Noa only barely opened her eyes.

"Oh, I know everything that went down these past 1,000 years." She said and Rhea stiffens.

"Exactly how you were able to successfully able to bring back Mother from the dead." She said both Flayn and Seteth looked at Rhea shocked.

"Noa....you know where that child is.... don’t you?" Rhea's fist shook, her composure slowly breaking by the second.

"Yes I do and unfortunately for you, that child is dying because of your choices." Noa said and Rhea looked at her shocked.

The archbishop stormed over to her sister and was about to grab her shoulders, but her hands went right through. Rhea was shocked looked up to Noa, her heart froze as she saw the woman opened her eyes completely, showing how lifeless they looked yet they held.... humanity. Noa began to float away and stood on top of the statue, looking down at all three of them.

"Cethleann is innocent because I know her heart is pure and has learned to accept others." She began, "Yet you are still a bit naive my little niece. You have yet to learn more of the world but the one you seek, is not too far. The paths will cross once again." Noa said and Flayn could only stare in amazement.

"My stupid uptight older brother," she said and Flayn quickly covered her mouth to keep herself
from bursting out laughing while Seteth looked ready to yell at his sister, "You messed up big time that's what!!! Honestly, no wonder women these days prefer to be single!!" Noa smiled and even Rhea barely managed to keep her laughter in check while Seteth was red from both anger and embarrassment.

Finally, she looked down to Rhea, who her smile completely disappeared with a frown.

"Rhea, hmm.....till we meet again my cute little sister." Noa grinned and disappeared in a shower of gold dust.

"NOA WAIT!!!" Rhea yelled out but she was gone.

\[Dive\ down\ deep\ into\ her\ sound\]
\[But\ not\ too\ far\ or\ you'll\ be\ drowned\]

Noa's song echoed through the garden. Rhea panted she her body shook and turned back to Seteth and Flayn.

"Contact Beleth and have him check the Holy Mausoleum. We'll be returning to the Monastery first thing tomorrow morning." She said and all three quickly returned to the opera house.

This reunion with her sister, shook her to her core.

- Meanwhile at the Monastery-

A huge barrier had surrounded the place. Time was frozen. Not a single soul moved in that place. The spell took 4 months to create and would only last 30 minutes.

"Hurry up...ppplllleeeaaasee!!!" Sophia grunted as she oversaw maintaining the spell.

They had already entered the Holy Mausoleum thanks to the Crest stone Emily had. The group descended the stairs as Lucius and Liko stayed with Sophia to protect her and extend the time of the spell if needed.

"Hey," Hiro said as he saw Glenn staring at the strange necklace he was given, "make sure not to lose that necklace. It was created so we didn't have to wear a mask. Only us who have the necklace can hear our real names and see our faces. To others that don't have it, it is nothing but a blur." He explained and Glenn nodded.

"It took 4 years to perfect that damn thing. I swear I'm never messing with illusion spells ever again." Gregory said as they arrived and saw the entire place filled with different tombs.

"4 traps to the left, 6 to the right, a few to the west and watch out for the 3 golems and projectile mage." Glenn said as he pointed to different spots.

"You have a good eye for traps." Erik commented as they made their way carefully to the main tomb.
"You be surprised the secret training I do with Jakob. That man is a monster when he trains people." Glenn shivered at the memory.

He felt bad for his son and friend, Dwyer.

"Halt." Emily said as she suddenly took out her whip sword and glared up a head.

Everyone looked shocked at the woman with mint green colored hair who smiled.

"Hello "me"." Emily said to the woman who opened her eyes.

"Hello my future self. I see we reincarnated as a human." Noa smiled and the others were instantly on guard.

"Gregory and Tharja, go undo the seal. Glenn, protect them. Erik, go undo the seal to the tomb behind Sirius throne." She ordered and the others nodded.

"Ah!! My beloved!! Glad to see you are well!!" Noa smiled as Erik quickly ran up ahead of her.

Emily frowned as she glared at her past self.

"I know exactly what you are. You're the embodiments of my remaining regrets." She whipped her sword with a loud "Crack!!", electricity flowing through it as the two women slowly walked to each other than lunged.

"Hyyaaahh!!" The two clashes in a hand to hand combat.

Their fist met, creating waves of air with so much force. Each kick met equally, each punch stopped the other, each one canceled each other out. Despite the height differences, everyone felt they were watching mirrors fight each other. Noa laughed happily as their attacks met equally while Emily gritted her teeth.

"Say Emily!!" Noa laughed as she managed to kick in the stomach, "Why are you trying to get our body back? " she said and Emily grunted.

"Isn't it obvious? For my sake." She said and Noa frowns.

"Is that so.....?" She jumped away and her fingers cracked, her nails became sharp, and her eyes became slits, " I thought it was for our little sister's sake." She said and dodged Emily's whip.

Emily went void of emotions.

"For Serios sake.......Do you really have that much regret over our last argument??!! Yes, we messed up!! Yes, we were ignorant!!!" Emily yelled and Noa looked at her shocked.

The red head pointed at her past self and boomed.

"LISTEN HERE YOU MILF!!! I ACCEPT MY ACTION AND REGRETS!!! I ADMIT WE DID WRONG!! I ADMIT WE WERE SELFISH AND COCKY!! AND WE STILL ARE!! BUT I FIGHT FOR MY SAKE!! MY BELIEFS!!! DON'T TWIST OUR MOTHER'S WORDS!!! DID YOU FORGET THE ROLL OF THE OLDER SISTER??!! IF OUR FAMILY HEADS THE WRONG PATH, WE BRING THEM BACK!!" Emily roared furiously and Noa looked at her shocked.
Her body began to crack and Noa began screaming.

"NO NO!! STOP!!! DON'T YOU REGRET OUR DEATH?? DON'T YOU REGRET OUR LAST WORDS TO OUR SISTER?!!" Noa screamed and everyone looked at her shocked while Emily walked up to her.

SLAP!!

Emily slapped her and Noa slowly looked over her. She was crying. The older woman fell to her knees and sobbed as she her younger counterpart knelt and sighed.

"Of course, I regret my last words to our little sister. If we can't accept the past, then we can never move on. Serios is far too blinded by grief and obsession to bring our mother back. Noa, my past self, look at us now. Do you see "us" as the lonely girl who only cared about her research?" Emily said and Noa looked around.

She giggled softly and spoke dryly.

"We really aren't alone anymore........we've met so many new people.... people we grown to love....people we have grown to cherish.....even if we still have distrust towards humans...we understand them...." Noa muttered.

"Emily, the seal is undone!!" Gregory yelled and the redhead quickly pulled out the sword.

Noa stood up and walked towards them, touched, it glowed a light blue.

"You know what to do." She muttered and Emily nodded, taking The Sword of the Creator to her knee and...

CRACK!!!

Snapped it in half.

"Forgive me mother...." Emily whispered as she took the part of the top of the sword and placed back the handle.

"Emily, I have your body!!" Erik said as everyone turned to see him carrying the same woman, Noa.

"The seal has been put back exactly as it is. Same with the Serios tomb." Glenn said as the two mages finished.

The red-haired girl turned to her past counterpart, who smiled sadly.

"Thank you....now go..." Noa smiled and disappeared, a peaceful smile on her face.

"I will." Emily muttered and turned to the group.
Everything was put back the same and they quickly ran to where the others were. Sophia's eyes went wide at the sight of the broken sword and Emily nodded.

"LET'S GET OUT OF HERE!!!"

The spell was undone, just 30 seconds before the spell went away. Time resumed as usual, as if nothing happened. Beleth entered the Holy Mausoleum to make sure everything was alright. Not a single thing was moved, everything looked the same.

"I swear....mom is too paranoid each time...." he sighed as he returned back to his office.

He really hated paperwork.

- Back at Enbarr-

"Aaaaammiiiieerrrr!!!" Edelgard sang joyfully as the opera was now over, and danced happily, and dragged Hubert to dance with her.

While the boy was happy his lady was dancing with him, he glared at the twin brothers and sisters who were snickering while the little ones along with Chris, was laughing out loud.

"Hey Hubert, need a hand?" Chris teased and instantly shrunk away at the glare the 10-year-old gave him.

"I'm perfectly f------" he gritted his teeth when Edelgard accidentally stepped on his toes.

"Aaah....sorry..." she said a bit embarrassed.

Many chuckled at this and enjoyed the sight of the children. Even Bernadetta had the courage to walk up to Edelgard and introduce herself. Florencio smiled and nodded in approval as he watched his cute apprentice make new friends. Florencio smiled and nodded in approval as he watched his cute apprentice make new friends. But he shivered and didn't even dare to look in a certain direction. He knew that smile and look bore into his soul. It was Rhea's and he could tell; the woman was in a very foul mood. He took a deep breath and excused himself to use the restroom. Seteth followed him and of course, those two didn't go that direction but to the garden.

"You can stop following me." Florencio said as he turned to face Seteth, who was 5 feet away.

"Is that why you purposefully came to this part of the garden?" He said and Florencio nodded.

"I'm not telling you where my sister is. Got it?" Florencio growled and Seteth glared.

"So, you admit you lied that she is in Almyra?" The advisor said and he glared.

"How about you explain to me why you want to see her?! Will you judge her again like you have so many times?! Don't you dare look down on humans!!" Florencio said back.

"Hmph." Seteth said and crossed his arms, "I have my reasons." He said.
"Oh, well sorry mister Holy man!!" Florencio mocked him and Seteth glared.

"Look, I don't even want you to come near her!! She's finally moving on!! I don't need you to bring back hurtful memories. Goodbye Seteth!! May the goddess bring the eternal flames onto you!"
Florencio said and stormed passed him.

[ ----- ]

He was pissed. This day was originally tended to be enjoy with Lord Reines and Bernadetta, now it's ruined!!! Goddess, he despises Rhea and Seteth with a passion and wish he could straight up murder them! But the young girl Flayn came to his mind and he took a deep breath. He could tell the girl is innocent and naive. He took a deep breath once more and turned to head back to the opera house to see Bernadetta but screeched like a cat when Rhea was in front of him suddenly.

"Hello Florencio, I am glad to see now we can finally talk alone." Rhea said and Florencio coughed.

"Lady Rhea....I'm having too many heart attacks today....." the man gasped for air as he had his hand over his heart, it felt like it was going to burst.

"My lady....if this is about Jeralt and the others, I already gave you my answer." He said.

"On the contrary Florencio," she smiled, and he raised an eyebrow, "have you heard of a young woman named Kiana Kalsana?" She asked.

"Pardon, but who?" He said confused.

"Kiana Kalsana. She is the one to have cured the epidemic that was going through Kingdom." Rhea said.

"Oh. The one that outdid Emily." Florencio snickered and then regretted saying that.

"S-Sorry about that. Just um.... please pretend you never heard." He coughed and Rhea chuckled.

"It is alright. I actually have a job for you, Florencio." She smiled and the man instantly shivered.

"Lady Rhea.....I'm sorry but.....I'm not taking any request. Medicine, yes. Medical checkup, yes. But anything else, it's a no." He said firmly.

"At listen to my request before you reject it." She said and he sighed.

"Very well." Florencio said.

He knew he was going to regret this.

"I need you to do a medical checkup on my older sister. She has been in a comatose state for 5 years. I need someone professional to see if it’s possible she may wake up." Rhea said.

"Oh.....if it's that then, very well. When would you like me to come by?" He said, he let go a sigh of relief.

"Tomorrow morning, I will be heading back with the others to the monastery. You will accompany
us. Once the checkup is done, you will be paid as usual." She said.

"Very well then." He gave her a small bow.

"Also, please get along with Seteth."

Bloody hell.

- The Next Day -

It felt like a prison. Being in the Church wagon with Rhea, trying to ignore the glare of Seteth but at most calmed him down from unleashing his silver tongue on the man was his younger sister, who sat next to him. Honestly, he would have rather stayed with Bernadetta and her Uncle but alas, he can't reject Rhea's request to check on a patient. He'll never live it down in his life. He let go of a sigh as he looked out the window and sat up straight.

"Wait, stop the cart." He suddenly said and the driver raised an eyebrow and everyone else was confused.

"Seteth, barrier around the cart now." He said sharply and quickly left out.

"Wait, Florencio!!" Seteth yelled out everyone's eyes went wide as huge wall of plants grew around the cart.

It was barely for a moment, but they all saw a flash of fire. The barrier of plants disappeared, and they heard cackling. Florencio was on all fours, snarling like a beast at the one responsible. Seteth recognized the fighting style.

"Go now!!" Florencio roared to the diver and instantly the horses began running.

"Flayn, watch Rhea!!" Seteth yelled as he jumped out of the cart, summon forth his lance.

"Brother/Seteth!!" Both Flayn and Rhea yelled out, but they were already far away for safety.

Seteth stood next to Florencio as well as around 7 Knights, the rest were tasked to defend Rhea and Flayn.

"(Ahahahaha!!! Well if it isn't the traitor!!! You look so comfortable protecting those disgusting children of the goddess!!)" A man with sickly pale skin, crimson hair, dressed in black armor of a dark knight, smiled at them.

"(Otto!!! What are you doing here?!?) Florencio roared furiously.

No one could understand what the two were saying but Seteth's eyes were going back and forth between them. He knew exactly what they were saying.

"(Ah, oh that. Just a little hello. You and your sister have done a pretty good job running from us. Solon wants your head.)" The one known as Otto smiled as he readied the lance in his hand.
"(These people have nothing to do with this!!! Leave before I RIP your throat out!!)" Florencio snarled as he held his daggers.

"(Oohhh!! Scary. Oh, just shove it. Hmph.)" His eyes shifted to Seteth, who glared.

"(I'll leave you and your pretend life for now. But know this......we will have your heads.)" Otto smiles and disappeared.

Florencio stood back up and began coughing.

"Cough!! Cough!! Shit...." he looked at the small blood splatters in his hand and quickly took out his handkerchief to clean it.

"Is everyone alright?" He asked around and the knights nodded, "Good.....I'm sorry you all had to witness me become like that. Seems I'll have to take care of some personal matters soon." He grumbled as he finally recovered.

"Florencio...." Seteth said lowly, and the purple haired man glared.

"Not now Seteth......." Florencio snarled.

The rest of the way to the monastery, was a suffocating silence.

- 2 hours later -

After calming down a frantic Flayn, who kept insisting both see the healing mages of the Church, Florencio sat in the waiting room. The man had faced buried in his hands. If there was one thing he hated, it was that at times his Crest turned his form of fighting to beast. Even worse when he grows to care for someone, which so happen to be Flayn. She reminded him of Bernadetta. He didn't hear footsteps approaching till he heard a bloody familiar cheerful voice.

"General Florencio!!! It's been ages!!"

"Oh for Serios sake.....why him....?" Florencio began groaning out loud, not giving a damn who heard him now.

"Oh? Are you sick? Should I bring one of the healing mages?" Alios Rangeld said worried as he looked to purple haired man.

He was knight dress in bulk armor of the knights of Serios. He had light brown hair, dark green eyes and had yet to grow a horseshoes mustache. Florencio slowly looked up to the 34-year-old man and just smiled tiredly to him.

"Hello Alois......It's good (not!) To see you again." Florencio said as he saw the man sitting across from him.
"It's good to see you too!! The last time I saw you was ten years ago with Captain Jeralt and Sandy. You haven't changed one bit!! Haha!!" Alois laughed and Florencio chuckled.

"Well....you be surprised where fate takes you. Hope you are doing well here." He said.

"I must admit, it's not the same without you three here. You all did raise me after all. How is Captain Jeralt?" Alois asked.

"I haven't seen him in 8 years. We all went our separate ways. I do hope he is doing well."

"Agree. Oh, I should introduce you to the newest member of the Knights of Serios. Beleth, come here!! This is one of the legendary former generals of the Knights of Serios, The Shield Breaker!!" Alois said as a Beleth came in.

Florencio started with wide eyes at the young man. He looked like the Male version of his niece!! Beleth smiled to him and stretched out his hand.

"It's an honor to meet you General Florencio. I am Beleth Serios, Rhea's son." He said and the two shook hands.

"Ah!!! I had no idea Lady Rhea had a son. Well, it's a pleasure to meet you too lad. Good luck out there with the knights, especially with him." He motioned to Alois.

"Wait, why me?" Alois said.

"Your terrible puns that's what!!" Florencio said and Beleth agreed.

"My puns are not terrible!!" Alois glared.

"Florencio."

Everyone turned to the door and saw it was Seteth.

"Good. Beleth and Alois are here too. We'll be entering the Holy Mausoleum. Two too will stand guard while we enter." He said and the three males looked at each other confused as they followed him.

[ ------ ]

"So let me get this straight....." Florencio was rubbing his temples as he was walking next to Seteth and the others were behind him, "Lady Rhea's sister is being kept in a special made casket in the Holy Mausoleum because the church is directly connected to one of the magic veins that provides not only energy to the woman but also keeps her alive and healthy?!?! What madness is this?!?! You don't keep patients in a bloody tomb!!" Florencio threw his hand in the air, just barely keeping himself from running a head to give a mouth fool to the Archbishop.

"Believe me General.....I thought the same....." Beleth sighed as they made it to entrance.
"It is Lady Rhea's wish and her decision. Respect it." Seteth said and there at the stone door, was Rhea, Flayn and.....

"Who?" Florencio said he looked at the feminine young man.

"Good evening. I am Lucius. I am one of the healing mages here. Lady Rhea has assigned me to help just in case." The blonde smile and Florencio nodded.

"Pleasure to meet you. I'm Florencio, Holy Magus." He said and the two shook hands.

"Likewise." The two nodded and turned towards Rhea.

"Everyone do be careful. There are traps here for my sister's protection. I will take you through the safe path." She said and they all nodded.

The woman turned as he hands glowed green, the Crest of Serios appeared before the stone door. It slowly opened and both Alios and Florencio were amazed. Once the door was fully opened and they descended the stairs, it closed with a loud thud. 5 minutes of walking and they reached an ancient cemetery.

"Fancy.....yet ancient" Florencio thought as he noticed how green the place was and also the torches.

The walked to a stairwell that led to a cracked stone throne. The man narrowed his eyes at and saw Rhea made a turn to go behind it. Which he admitted, was weird. The group went behind. There, before them, was beautiful tomb made of jade stone. Rhea began draw symbols in the air, the top of the casket, glowing and let out a small hiss. The smell of jasmine, spider lilies and roses filled the air. The casket lid slowly floated up and gently placed next to it.

"Okay, now understand. The magic flow here far much superior and potent. It not only keeps the body from aging, but also keeps it healthy. Interesting....it also has a greater effect of the one in the sleeping state has a Crest. The most that will only grow is their on their head. They will only look like they are asleep." Florencio said and made quick glance to Lucius then back to the casket.

Florencio walked up, and in his field of vision he could see white flowers inside but...

"Ummm....Lady Rhea, there's no one in there." He said and everyone's eyes went wide.

"That's....impossible..." Rhea was barely able to say and ran quickly to look inside.

Her body began shaking as there was literally no one inside. She prayed that the version of her sister was only her soul but now seeing that her body was gone, just fully confirmed her sister had now fully reawakened, and that wasn't good.

"Whooa!! Whoaa!!" The woman's knees gave out and she passed out from shock, Florencio just barely caught her on time.

"Mother!!" Beleth ran up to her, along with Seteth and Flayn.

"She's....gone...Noa....gone.... where...." Rhea muttered, her eyes, hazy.

"Lucius!! Get her bed ready!!! Alois!! Get me lavender flowers along with warm water!!!" Florencio yelled out and the two men bolted to do their jobs.
"Lady Rhea, breath!! Don't pass out on me now...." Florencio said as he was fanning the woman.

"Beleth, can you carry her to her room?!" He said and the boy nodded.

"Sorry mother, but please hold on!!" Beleth said as they ran back to the monastery.

- 30 minutes later -

Beleth paced outside of his mother's room, worried sick. He didn't think the disappearance of his aunt would affect her so much. He heard the door open and saw Florencio come out.

"Is she alright?!" He asked worried.

"She's alright. The shock was too much and made her blood pressure rise. Other than that," he handed him a small bottle of pills, "One pill per day for one month. Make sure she takes it after she eats. These are vitamins but also to help her with her blood pressure before you ask. Make sure she gets a proper meal, plenty of rest because it was painful obvious, she has been overworking, and have her drink some lavender tea every two nights for 2 months to help her recover from lack of sleep." He said and Beleth nodded.

"Thank you so much Doctor Florencio!!! I don't know how we can ever repay you." Beleth said.

"It's perfectly fine. No need to worry. I need to rest. Is the dining hall open?" He asked and Byleth nodded.

"It is. Doctor Florencio, how much will it cost for the medicine?" Beleth said and Florencio shook his head.

"No, it’s alright. Free of charge." He said but Beleth disagrees.

"I'm sorry but I can't do that!! How much, please?" He said until he got a karate chop on the head.

"I said free of charge lad!!! For the goddess sake, you're persistent just like your mother!!" Florencio said.

"I insist!! 5 gold coins!" He said and Florencio this time was the one about to pass out.

"Oh for....arghhhh!!! Fine!!! 2 gold coins and that's it!! No more!!" Florencio groaned as he gave in at the persistent swordsman.

"I'll have your payment ready later. For now, why don't you go eat?" Beleth smiled brightly, victory felt sweet.

Florencio sighed and headed to the dining hall, he thanked the goddess they were serving Beast Meat Teppanyaki because it was his favorite plus it was a big dish. As he walked in, he couldn't help but reminisce of the old days as he looked around. Students of the academy sat all chattering and talking. There were also a few familiar faces. Then....

Running footsteps headed his way and he stopped it simply by raising his arms to protect his face because they went into a flying kick. He looked towards the owner, a young woman but was also nun, with a smirk on her face.
"She's grown." He chuckled as everyone stared with wide eyes the woman landed gently.

"Master!!" This was Xina, also known as Edward's fiancée and was Florencio's first student.

"Hello dear, been a few years." He said as the girl squealed hugging him.

"it's been so long!!! We have so much to talk about!!" The woman said excitedly as they headed to the counter to get their food.

Maybe the day wasn't ruined after all.

- With Rhea -

She was angry.

She was hurt.

She was confused.

She felt....

The woman had her face buried in her hands as she sat up in her bed. Seteth and Flayn sat next to her in chairs. This was a private conversation between the three and unfortunately Beleth was not allowed to hear it. It hurts seeing the hurt look her son held as he was taken away by Alois, since the older man understood.

"What we saw was only a projection. Then that means she's out there. We must send out search parties. I'll have a team ready to look for her. She can't be too far. Especially with the state she was in." Seteth said worried and Flayn was silent.

"I think we should let her be." She said and Seteth turned his head so fast towards her it looked like his neck was about to break.

"Flayn!!! Why would you think that?! Your aunt is in no condition to be moving around at all. Even more with...those..those..monsters still out there!!" He said.

"I don't know why...but I just have this feeling that she is okay. Brother, you worry too much." She said and stood up.

"Where are you going?" Seteth asked and she smiled.

"I'm going to get something to eat quickly. The nurse will be bringing Rhea's meal in a few
minutes." She said and left out the door.

Truthfully, she went to the library and asked Tomas if he could help her find the book about The Ice Maiden. And let's just say, when she read the book, Flayn for the first time in her life, felt anger. She didn't talk to Seteth nor Rhea for a full month. The two adults couldn't figure out why she refused to talk to them. As for Florencio, he returned to Remire Village and like usual, none of the spies of the Church of Serios were able to find his whereabouts.

- 2 days later: ??????? -

It felt.... very strange to be back in her original body. The process of fusing her current body and old body, having them become one, was painful, agonizing and one she wishes to never go through again. She could barely move and turned her head ever so slightly to the right, to see Edward, Thajra and Gregory completely drained, just lying on the floor, tired from the process. The good news, she and her old body are now one once more. The bad news? Her old body was reverted to her 15-year-old self so it can perfectly function. Her body now had a bit more curves, her chest had slightly become bigger(victory!!), her eyes were the same ivory color, but they faded to mint green. Her red hair now faded to dark green, had become curly like originally, but it has grown to the point is spilled beautifully on the floor. At least she didn't have to wear her glasses anymore.

"I'm....never doing that ever again!!" Edward groans as he was struggling to stand up.

As much as the woman wanted to say something, she was in no condition to talk. She had enough power to create a mental link with everyone in the room and she did.

"How long will it take me to fully recover?" The voice echoed in their minds, making then jump.

It sounds a bit more mature yet still that damn prideful tone in it. Edward sighed as he looked over to her.

"A full month." He said and her eyes went wide.

"Excuse me??!! I cannot be out for a full month!!!! My reputation and streak of being on time is on the line!!" She said and Edward glared at her.

"And who's damn idea was it to break into the Holy Mausoleum?!" He said back, she glares.

"Look, Erik already gave King Lambert a letter that you will be staying with me in the Alliance for a full month. It says that you will be researching a new herb with me and that I need your help. The barrier on your office is completely intact because Tharja and Gregory are keeping Cornelia out. Lastly, your body has not moved for an entire 1,000 years so it will take all that time for your body to readjust. Anyhow...Hana will be delivering the items Kiana requested from you. Though I'm pretty sure the Church is an uproar because you're "missing"." He exaggerated with his fingers and she rolled her eyes.

"Sigh...Alright then. I'll be owing you all a favor later. But...thank you all.....I really appreciate it." She smiled softly.

"Yeah, yeah...save it for when you pay me my 3 gold coins." Gregory grumbled and screeched
when he was suddenly pulled up high in the air and hung upside down.

Despite being unable to move, Emily was smirking smugly as she only barely lifted her finger and made a vine grow and pull a trick on her friend.

"Hahahahaha!!! After 1,000 years, I've returned!!" She cackled while everyone else was groaning.

"Get me the hell down!!"

- 8 days Later: August 23rd: Verdant Moon: Arisa's Birthday -

"Happy Birthday to you!! Happy Birthday to you!! Happy Birthday to you!! Happy Birthday dear Arisa/Byleth/Teacher of no mercy whatsoever (Alexandra/Judith: CLAUDE!!)!! Happy Birthday to you!!"

With a deep breath, she blew out the candles of her triple milk cake, ready to cut the first slice of the sweet milky treat. In a restaurant that was rented out by her father, family and friends gather to celebrate Arisa's/Byleth's 10th Birthday. About 5 days ago, Florencio had warped to the Alliance and will be travelling with them for the rest of the time till it was time to return to Remire Village. He, her father, Sandy, the flame twins, Hana, Temes, Fiona, Edward, Amir, Alexandra, Judith, Gregory and Claude were all gathered around. Hanneman unfortunately had to return to the Empire but not before he gave her a gift, a new travelers bag, which Arisa was more than happy to have been gifted and thanked him.

"So, what did you wish for?!" Claude said with a grin.

"She isn't supposed to say, or it won't come true, brat!!" Alexandra said and sent him a glare.

"Hey!! I say it's an equivalent exchange because I said my wish for my birthday last month!" Claude said back to her.

"I thought you were happy when I said mine?!" She said and the two had sparks flying between them.

"Cut it out you two!!" Amir said and tried to separate them.

Arisa and the adults laughed and the birthday girl smile with Sothis next to her.

"Happy Birthday Sothis!!" Arisa said and the two girls hugged.

"So, what did you wish?" Sothis grinned happily to her and Arisa spoke out loud.

"I hope the stars will continue to watch over us and happy moments like this last forever!!" She said with a big closed eye grin.

Jeralt chuckled while Claude just at her shocked.

"Seriously?!!" He said and got two karate chops.
One from Judith and Alexandra. Arisa chuckled and smirked.

"I also wish I hope to find a boyfriend!" She said proudly and both Jeralt and Florencio choked on their drinks.

"Oh my~" Hana, Fiona, Judith and Sandy said, looked at each other and burst out laughing.

"What's a boyfriend?" Amir and Alexandra said, and Claude laughed a bit nervously.

"Byleth, you're too young for that....." Temes and Gregory were barely able to say through their laughter while Edward went to give water to the two choking men.

"Dad, Uncle!! I'm joking! I don't plan to get a boyfriend till I'm 16!!" She said and that just made it worse till Edward slapped both on their backs hard.

Seems that helped.

Sothis was cackling as she hugged her friend like usual.

"Goodness!! Already looking for a husband. My aren't you bold!!" Sothis giggled then they heard the door to the restaurant open.

A young girl who looked around 15 years of age, crimson red hair that faded to dark green, its length was to its shoulders and fluffy. She had red eyes that faded to mint green and wore a nice red summer dress. Her skin was light peach and had curves. The girl smiled and waved.

"Sorry!! I have brought a cake and a few extra presents. For Miss Byleth?? Right?" The girl smiled kindly.

Sothis blinked multiple times as she circled around the girl as Edward walked up to her. The man was barely able to hide his frown when he saw her and walked up as she handed him the bag she had.

"Thank you. Take care!!" He smiled to her and she did too.

"Have good day Miss Byleth!!" The girl smiled and left out the door.

"Who was that?" Florencio whispered to him and Edward whispered back.

"I'll tell you after the party. I need to talk to you about something important. It's regarding your niece." He said and Florencio raised an eyebrow as he did a quick glance to Byleth.

"Say.....Cheese!!" Sandy grinned as she was using a device called a "camera", that was invented by Hanneman, which can be activated using magic.

She quickly placed it on the table and ran to be with the rest of the group as they position themselves. Arisa had a proud grin as she held the cutting knife, over the cake and grinned at the camera.

Click/flash!!
"MY EYES!!!" Pretty much everyone yelled as the flash blinded everyone when the picture was taken.

Arisa recognized the old fashioned wooden and metallic device shaped like a box. In her old world, it was called a "Mot & Bastie" camera that was used during the first world war to film the epic film, The Battle of the Somme. She was surprised to see it, but she guesses that over time, some devices from her old her will eventually come to life. This version of the camera had a small upgrade thanks to magic. It printed the picture like the old Polaroids. Sandy lightly waved the printed piece, and in a few seconds, it revealed the picture.

"Not bad." Jeralt chuckled at the image as he saw the proud glint his daughter had she held the knife over the cake, her teeth looking like fangs because the girl was just ready to devour the cake.

In better terms, she looked like a cat about to pounce on fish.

"Okay kids, get in!!" Judith said as Claude, Alexandra went to stand on Arisa's right side and Amir, Gregory on her left.

"I'm taking 3 pictures because Judith and Edward want a copy!" Sandy said as the 5 posed with peace signs.

3 clicks/flashes followed by all 5 kids screaming "MY EYES!! BLOODY HELL!!" and the adults laughing as the pictures printed out. Sandy lightly waved them in the air, handed one to Judith and Edward.

"Now to open presents!!" Claude said excitedly as Arisa giggled, and was gently handed a parcel. She looked at the tag on it and saw it was from Professor Hanneman and Edward. She was confused because Hanneman had already gifted her the travel bag, so what else could he have given her? She gently opened it and saw it was wooden box. She gently opened it and saw it was a smaller version of the camera that Edward had, along with 2 bulk packages of Polaroid film. Edward smirked proudly as she pulled out the mini version of his camera.

"Hanneman and I worked together to make a miniature version of this bulky one we have. Plus, it includes 5 years' worth of film!! Just, do be careful with it." He said and Arisa grinned.

"Thank you, thank you!! I swear to you and the Professor I will protect this with my life!!" Arisa said as she hugged the camera to her chest.

She loved taking pictures in the past so to have this with her was a blessing that she will be forever grateful for. She will be creating a photo album. Gregory grinned as he handed her his present and it seemed to grow as she saw her confused face, she opened it and.....

"KKKKYYYYYYYYYYYYAAAAAAA!!"

Her loud piercing squeal rivaled the roar of a wyvern as she hugged the adorable dragon plush in her arms.

"It’s so cute!!!" She squealed as she hugged it to her chest. Poor Claude's, Edward's, and Gregory's ears were ringing while everyone else was already used to it.
Arisa, despite being a child with the soul of an adult, the majority of time when she was with her family and friends, she completely forgot she was the mature one of the group of children and acted like a child, a side of hers she kept hidden for so long and now she could freely express it. It took a few years, but she can finally let loose, but she does know when to hold back.

"I love it!! Thank you, Gregory!!" She yelled out to him and the boy nodded.

"You're welcome." He smiled.

"Now, my turn." Claude grinned as he was struggling to carry a long box till Judith helped him out. The two placed it in front of her.

"Hmmm?" Arisa said as she looked up to them and they motioned her to open it.

The girl did and gasped at the beautiful dark forest green bow that sat in the box. She also noticed the very familiar figure of it. It was like her original bow. Before the girl could say anything, Claude spoke.

"Last month, I saw you were crying that your bow broke. I overheard Amir say you've had it since you were six so... pulled it out of the broken weapon's bin and asked Judith if it's possible to repair it." He explained and the older woman nodded.

"I have a few connections. It couldn't be fixed but the blacksmith said he was impressed by how well taken it was and decided to use it to forge the brand new one. So, in a way, this is still your original bow, but with an upgrade. It's called Verdant Winds." Judith smiled as the girl gently picked it up.

The others began to become worried as they saw a few tears run down her cheeks. Arisa laughed lightly as she hugged it to her chest and nodded.

"Thank you, Judith and Claude. Truly, this is amazing. I'm...also sorry to put you through so much trouble." She said and Judith shook her head.

"No need!! This is also my thank you for training the boy!!! I must say, I'm very impressed with your teaching methods. No mercy whatsoever. I approve." The older woman grinned while Claude pouted.

"Unfortunately, Claude has gotten better at making poisons." Alexandra said and Claude smirked.

"I blame you three." He said referring to her, Amir and Arisa.

"We don't deny it, and we regret it." The three said in union while Claude's smirk grew, and Judith shook her head.

"Now our turn!!" The flame twins and Temes said as they put another box in front of her.

Everyone was confused as she opened it and suddenly the rest of the adults were very wary as the girl pulled out silver gauntlets that were made for her size.

"WHAT THE HELL YOU THREE?!!" Hana roared as she got both in choke holds while Florencio and Sandy were ready to murder Temes, who was trying to make a run for it.

Why the others were on the verge of murdering the three males, Arisa had put on the gauntlets, and
had a terrifying grin on her face. She felt like wolverine. Besides, this perfectly fit her style of fighting between battles because she goes from sword dancer to full Bruce Lee (*Sothis: She tells herself that.*) when she needs to. Plus, with a combination of magic, deadlier she is.

"You three, I love them!" She squealed happily while everyone else gawked.

Jeralt made a note to himself to warn everyone in the company to hide the brawler weapons once they return. The three males sent her a thumbs up till they got smacked down by Hana. Florencio and Sandy walked up to her and placed nice looking box in front of her. The girl gently opened it and blinked at the beautiful traveler’s simple blue dress and cloak that went with it. Along with a wand Florencio made and jade anklet Sandy made.

"I think it's time for a new set of clothing for traveling." The two siblings said together, and Arisa pounced into their arms and hugged them.

"I love it!! Thank you!!" She said to them.

"Glad you love it. I had to stop Sandy multiple times from turning it into a ball gown." Florencio said and Sandy glared.

"I still think she would have looked adorable with the ruffles!!" Sandy said the two began arguing.

Arisa giggled as her father walked up to her and hugged her.

"Happy birthday kiddo. This one's for you." Jeralt smiled softly as he handed hand her a medium size box with the marking of Serios on it.

"Wait, Jeralt!! That's---" Sandy recognized it but Arisa had already opened it.

Inside was two simple white lily hair pins. Arisa stared at it and smiled softly. It was simple and beautiful.

"They're beautiful. I love them. But...where..." she said Jeralt smiled softly.

"These used to belong to your mother." He said and silence befell the room.

"Before you were born, she wanted you to have these on your 11th birthday. They were a gift from her mother, and she chose to pass them down onto you. Ha...even if she isn't here with us, she is still watching over you." He said she smiled sadly.

She hugged him tightly and nodded.

"I'll take care of them and..." she held them to her chest, "thank you mom...I hope you're doing well up there..." she whispered.

Everyone heard sniffing and turned to see Florencio was a sobbing mess and Sandy was barely keeping her own tears in check as Arisa put the hair pins on. She looked amazing in them. Lastly, Fiona and Hana gifted her cute wolf plush that unfortunately caused her to squeal loudly again.

The rest of the night was full of celebration. Of course, Arisa took full advantage taking pictures and had to run for her life when she managed to catch Hana and Cinder kissing. It was the perfect shot and she not about to lose it. The girl saw the kids were asleep while Sandy and Judith were being cheered on because the two were in an arm-wrestling match. Florencio was passed out drunk
with Edward sobbing as he talked while drunk. The girl smiled as she quietly snuck out for some fresh air. She walked through the town till she reached the port. Sothis, appeared next to her and grinned.

"An exciting day today was. I say this day beats all others." The goddess said and Arisa giggled.

"Maybe." She said and the two noticed the young woman from earlier walk to stand next to them.

"Oh? It's you from earlier." The woman smiled to her and Arisa nodded.

"Taking a break from all the party?" She said and Arisa nodded.

Arisa noticed Sothis kept staring at her, her eyes narrowed but not in a way of weariness, but more towards, she looked familiar.

"Kiana Kalsana." The woman said and Arisa froze, as she quickly jumped back, her hand over her sword, Sothis was ready to help.

The woman giggled and put her hand up.

"Calm down. I'm not here to pick a fight. Though I must admit, you're young. I expected an adult. Then again, I was the same age as you when I became a court mage. She said.

"Who are you?" Arisa said a bit slowly as she looked at the woman a bit coldly.

"We have been exchanging letters for these past few months. Does that sound familiar?" The woman smiled as Arisa stood up straight and lowered her hand.

"You're Hana's boss, aren't you?" Arisa said as she walked back to her but was still 5 feet apart.

"Correct!!" The woman smiled, "I am Emily von Miller Zoltars. Holy Magus of The Kingdom. Pleasure to finally meet you Kiana Kalsana." She did a small bow, but Arisa could see the ocean right through her.

"You're not really, here are you?" She said and Emily nodded.

"Correct. I'm just currently a projection. I am here in the Alliance but I'm currently in the recovery." Emily said.

"Why.....are you here?" Arisa asked and Emily smiled.

"I'm here to keep my end of the deal. I got the Crest stone and a fragment of the sword of the Creator." Emily said.

"Hana has them delivered to your room. You'll find it there. But of course, we'll still be remaining in the contract to keep your knowledge a secret. But I actually have another reason for being here." She said as she pulled out a small book and showed it.

"That's...the test Edward had me take." Arisa said, confused.

"Little girl, you do realize that this is a practice test for the most difficult medical exams in all of Fodlan? To become a Holy Magus?" She said.

"What?" Arisa choked.

"Hmmm!!! You got every single question right!!! Even the most talented doctor in Fodlan
practically fails the practice exams yet you got each answer correctly!! You're pretty much qualified to become a Holy Magus if this was the real test." Emily smiled.

"I.....I....." Arisa suddenly felt scared for some reason while Emily walked up to her and patted her head.

"Relax kid.... I'm not Rhea." She said and Arisa gasped.

"I know who you are. You have 5 more years till you turn 15 and leave for your coming of age journey. You don't need to tell me your real name, and I won't say who you are. For now, think carefully from now on. Things will only get harder from here on out." She said and turned to leave.

"And mother.....Sothis...." Emily muttered.

Though she could not see Sothis, she could still feel her. Sothis was shaking, she didn't know why, but she was crying. Arisa looked at her surprised and Sothis smiled sadly.

"It's....good to see you again...Noa." Sothis said and Emily smiled sadly as she turned to Arisa.

"Kiana Kalsana!" She said and Arisa was silent, "Master the power of the progenitor goddess!!! Prove you are worthy of her power and knowledge! I look forward till the day our paths cross again!!" And with that, she disappeared.

"I look forward to seeing you too." Arisa smiled and began walking back to the party.

"Well, Sothis. I think I know where we will be heading when I turn 15." She grinned as her cloak flowed with the wind.

Sothis grinned as she wipes her tears.

"So, ready to face The Prince of Blaiddyd? Also known as, your c----owww!!" She got smacked on the head.

"Unless my spell wore off on everyone, I think the memories of me are now really are nothing but blurs. They technically were babies years ago." She said as they kept walking.

Sothis grumbled as she rubbed her head as they arrived back to the restaurant. The kids were still sleeping, and the adults were helping clean up the mess while Sandy carried a wasted Florencio like a sack of potatoes. Hana did the same thing with the twins. Thankfully her father and Temes were sober this time as she saw them pick up Amir and Alexandra gently, while Gregory was using magic to carry Edward. Fiona giggled a bit drunk and was laying on Nuke's back, who just gave her a blank look and shook his head as he carried his drunk Master out the door. Judith carried Claude and Arisa quickly took the opportunity to snap a shot. The woman blinked and chuckled as she was handed one photograph. She smiled warmly as she looked at the boy in her arms, sleeping peacefully, but was also handed another picture. The woman cooed as she saw the picture was Claude blushing and frozen stiff as Alexandra was sleeping on his chest and he was debating if he should wrap his arms around her. Of course, Falco was hissing at him and Feh looked unimpressed.

"I'm curious to ask when you managed to take a photo of this but knowing you, you have your ways. Thank you." Judith smiled and Arisa grinned back.

She totally wasn't thinking to use the pictures as black mail in the future. Nope. Not one bit.
"I'll have at least some advantage against him." Arisa thought as she was picked up by her father.

He carried Amir in his other arm. The Duscurian girl looked like an adorable little ball of fluff because of her fluffy coat she wore.

"Good night everyone. And thank you all for everything!" Arisa said and waved goodbye as they left.

A few minutes later, they arrived at the cabin. The girls were all placed on their beds, Arisa hugging her father and wishing him good night.

"Sleep tight kiddo." Jeralt said as he closed the door.

Amir was knocked out asleep on her bed, Alexandra was the same with Falco asleep on a pillow next to her and Puka on Amir's chest. Feh made herself comfortable on one of Arisa's pillows. The girl yawned but blinked when she noticed a box under her bed. She quickly got off and looked down, pulling it out, but not before using a silence spell to not make a single sound. She popped it opened and smiled as she saw the fragment of the sword. Of course, still being small, it was pretty big in her hands as she gently picked it up. It glowed softly as she felt a warmth unlike before coming from it. Her heartbeat as she held the broken top part of the sword in her arms. Sothis appeared and stared at it.

"It's strange that you only asked for part of it. Why not the entire thing?" Sothis asked and Arisa muttered.

"If I took the whole thing, it would be too much for my body to handle. With at least half of it," she turned to her, "Sothis, you and I....we'll both have better control of our power and maybe...you may regain some of your memories." She said and Sothis nodded.

"I understand. But what I don't get what half a sword is going to help you with? You can't use a broken weapon in battle!!" The goddess argued.

"Ahh, but if we modified it and fuse it with my current sword...." she said but stopped.

No. That would be downright disrespectful to Sothis. This was technically her body.

"No...no....don't eve----!

She felt a hand on her shoulder and looked up to see the goddess stare at her.

"I allow it." Sothis said.

Arisa was confused. Just so confused. Sothis floated to be in front of her and spoke.

"Even if I haven't recovered all of my memories. I know this sword is somehow "me". The goddess said as she gently touched it and her own green eyes met the girl's.

She wasn't a fool. She knew that Arisa was having second thoughts. She could feel that the girl felt she was disrespecting her. Sothis, despite seeing this broken sword for the first time, felt like she was looking at herself. There were still many mysteries in the world but this one she would allow a change.

"I allow you to use "me". Must I repeat my words so many times Arisa?" She smiled warmly as she gently cupped the girl's cheeks.
"Your will is my will." She said and then the two spoke in union, "And My will is your will. Though our minds are separate, our souls, body and heart are one." The two said and Arisa giggled a bit worried.

"But are you sure?" Arisa asked once more.

"I am. When we return to Remire Village speak with Rensen. He'll know what to do. As for the other Crest stone also, bones??" Sothis said as the two saw the Crest stone of Timotheos along with bones, "Why not have Amir decide what weapon they should be turned into?" She said.

"Alright. And...thank you Sothis. Really." She said and the goddess smiled.

"Anytime my friend." Sothis said and disappeared in a shower of green dust.

Arisa nodded as she said good night, falling into a blissful sleep.

- With Emily -

The woman, despite being bedridden, opened her eyes and smiled softly as she saw her beloved sleeping next to her. At least she could talk again now, and her magic powers are returning. It will take some time to fully be able to turn to a dragon again like Rhea. After all, Rhea was a Sky Dragon and she was Bloom Dragon. She let go a sigh of relief that she could raise her hand a bit.

"So, I finally met you...." she muttered softly as the image of the young girl came back to her mind.

Kiana Kalsana, or should she say Arisa Byleth Reus Eisner. Goodness that was a mouthful, but she was no better. The girl was smart, and she had enough trust to know the girl will have a hero's relic forged from Timotheos's bones worthy of his name. She already knew the panic Rhea and Seteth were and how angry Flayn was learning the truth of what has been written of her older cousin.

"I'm sorry Cethleann but you need to learn reality is not pretty...." Emily thought as she looked over to the clock next to her bed.

She'll have to cut her hair and use magic make it turn red, same with her eyes. She felt it. The shift in the flow of fate and time. She only prayed that this shift brought the change that will be needed in the future to come.

Chapter 17: Eclipse: Noa: End

Here, we got full view who Emily really is and the role she will be playing soon. Also, the
revaluation of my OC, Chris. His role will not be coming yet. Once we reach the Tragedy of Duscur, then we will see it along with Zander's. Now, Rhea. She is a bit hard to write but decided to rewatch her support conversions and finally got her personality down. This chapter really shows a bit of Rhea's true colors. Now, Edelgard, cute sweet child. Her part will be coming up soon. This chapter was to show how she was before it all went down.

The group Emily is in, Sirius(Named After Sothis), I wanted to create a group that is doing what they can to fight off Those Who Slither in the Dark but also because our main characters are going to need a lot of back up when we get to the arc of the 5 year time gap. Also, yay!! We finally had our first official interaction between Emily and Arisa. Also, when Arisa referred to the spell she casted when she was 5 years old, she looks back to it and regrets it. So, expect a bit of drama when she goes back to the Kingdom. Especially between her and Cornelia.

AND I AM OFFICIALLY DONE WITH FINALS!!
Chapter 18: Back Home: Part 1: Lesson Learned

It's been three days since Arisa's birthday and the three months in the Alliance was over. One of the few things Arisa was very proud of was being able to publish a book. Her first book just so happened to be King Arthur and The Knights of the Roundtable. The girl was been wanting years to share the literature of her world and now she finally had a chance. The release of the story was huge success and was very popular in the Kingdom. Of course, like usual, she didn't go by her real name. Since she was going by Kiana Kalsana she thought "Might as well go by her mother's name." And since then, her pen name as an author is Cecilia Schariac. Of course, there were other works of literature she wanted to publish but she needs to take it slowly. Rushing it would bring suspicions so one book every three months should work. She originally was going to publish Romeo and Juliet just to see how it would turn out, but that idea went out the door when she found out that story existed in this world. And she is considering of sharing the stories of the Fire Emblem Series but that was a still huge debate. The money she is receiving from her book sales is going into her bank account that she made around a year ago. She was a bit surprised a banking system existed since the first one in her world didn't exist till 1791. So, this felt a bit of a relief for her. Of course, her family each had their own accounts too. The way she had access to the money was a magic card made of orona metal. Though it isn't used for currency anymore, it is used as a form of a credit/debit card. Technology advances were happening in this world but at an extremely slow pace, enough that Rhea doesn't have to worry about. Of course, the Archbishop still had eyes everywhere and keeping watch to make sure there isn't a sudden advancement. She still strikes it down immediately like it was a disgusting parasite. Back to the original subject, she's going to miss Claude but not his pranks. Ooohhh!!! Her, Amir and Alexandra only fueled his love for schemes and poisons, none of them were looking forward to the new plans the boy was brewing.

"I feel like I just made him advance his schemes to a whole new level of doom..." she thought to herself.

Then there was that paranoia that he was going to be attacked again. She showed him survival skills, how to lay traps, her old side of once being a professor came out on him as she taught him Archery, martial arts and even more when she was teaching him science and astronomy. She was strict, kind, but also helped him when he needed it. Just like she was in her old days. The boy loved his lessons. Especially astronomy. His love for the stars was enough for her to give in and teach him as much she could about them. The boy had an amazing time with her. He still called her "Teach", even though she keeps telling him to call her Professor. By the 2nd day, she gave up, and let him continue calling her "Teach". He also enjoyed listening to the stories she would talk about. His favorites were The Adventures of Sinbad and The Prince of Persia. But he was no idiot. Even being a 7-year-old, the boy was smart, he knew she knew more than she was letting on. It racked his brain even more that he could never figure out what she was thinking. He could usually read others like a book (except her and Amir) but his professor? It felt like he was almost looking at a blank slate, yet she held so much hidden knowledge just waiting to be discovered. Now, his lessons with Amir were good. For a bow user, he was surprised he was good at using an axe and had a bit too much fun at times. That resulted in a yelling from Amir. If he thought his teacher was strict, Amir was a whole new level. He felt as he was being trained by Judith. No, it felt like he was being trained by a military general, but she also taught him a few lessons about being a merchant, much to the horror of Judith because the boy had a way to make deals that sometimes scared the adults. Now training with Alexandra. She was kind, cheerful, gentle. The opposite of Amir but unfortunately the influence of her Crest was still there. She still calls Claude a brat and her personality sometimes has that shift. Ridings lessons became flying lessons because Arisa had
allowed her to use Red Hare. Poor Claude had his soul leave his body too many times because the speed the red horse went (*on purpose sometimes*). Alexandra laughed proudly, enjoying the rocket speed they were going at, same with Falco because the baby wyvern loved flying but would cling onto his master. Claude, at first was scared but grew to enjoy that dangerous speed they would go to. Then flying lessons of riding a pegasus came to whole new level of difficulty.

Wyverns.

The boy had the audacity of buying a wyvern egg from some merchant (*cough* Anna!! *cough*) and the yelling he got from Judith and his grandfather made the girls feel bad for him. Almost. The egg has yet to hatch since it takes 5 months for a wyvern egg to hatch. Claude was looking forward to it. But he was going to miss his new friends. For the first time in his life, he felt he belonged. They all accepted him for who he is. They treated him as an equal despite knowing he was half-almyran.

"Why shouldn't I be your friend? Why are you thinking that in the first place!!! First of all, we're both humans, we all bleed red, the world the goddess, nature, whatever higher being there is, made everyone equal!!! No one is below anyone!!! Claude, it is possible for people of all backgrounds to get along and become friends!! I speak from firsthand experience. One, Remire Village. One day I hope you'll come see for yourself. Especially my dad's company. Also...my old home. It's far, far, far away. I can never turn to it, but I will always cherish the people there. Yes, we still our problems and prejudice but you be surprised. People united to fight it. It will take years, a slow process but the process will be worth it."

When she spoke her words, she truly meant it. He could see in her eyes that she was being truthful. Did such a place really did exist? What did she mean her old home? What did she mean it was so far away that the path to it no longer exists? Arisa was mystery. One he wished to solve.

[ ------ ]

He smiled sadly to himself as today was the last day, he was going to see his friends. He watched as the three girls were locked in a three-way sparring match. Even if they were using wooden training weapons, he never tired of watching them. Especially Alexandra, who moved so gracefully. Despite her personality shift because of her Crest when she is near him, she moved with grace and poised as she spun her lance to counter measure Amir's wooden axe. That’s when Arisa pulled a gymnast jump and split kick the girls at their chest, knocking them both down. Claude's eyes were bulging out because you had to be beyond flexible to be able to do that!! The splits... the splits.....

"Dammit we hate it when you pull that move!!" Both Amir and Alexandra yelled at her while Arisa was just smiled to them.

"That was a dirty move." Claude muttered and seems his teacher heard it because she turned to
him.

"There is no chivalry in real battle. In a really fight, you must use what you little you must survive. Kill," she pointed her wooden sword at him, her eyes were cool, and no emotion as she lightly lifted her chin, looking down at him, "or be killed." She finished and he gulped.

Claude chuckled dryly as he looked up to her.

"So, it wasn't my imagination when I heard you muttering "I'm sorry, may your soul find peace." Each time you took down a bandit in the missions we fought together." He said and Arisa smiled sadly.

"Yeah. There is no such thing as purity in this world. We are all sinners." She said and everyone looked at her shocked.

"You got...a lot of guts saying that." He said and she chuckled as she began to put the weapons away.

"You be surprised what you learn being mercenary." She said as Feh landed on her chest and the girls stood up.

"Girls! It's time!! Say goodbye and make sure you didn't forget anything!!"

They heard Florencio yelled out. Arisa sighed and smiled sadly as she turned to Claude, who was frowning but also looking down to the ground. She walked up to him and patted his head, surprising him.

"Hey. This isn't goodbye. We'll be seeing each other one day. I promise. Hope you become a better Archer by then. " she giggled and he nodded.

"I'll beat you next time!! Just watch!" He declared proudly and Arisa smirked.

"We'll see little prince. We'll see." She said as they two laughed.

Amir walked up to him gave him a salute.

"I had fun working you to the bone!! You finally have some muscles in those flimsy arms. Make sure not to stop your training. Next time we meet, you better expect a sparring match!!" Amir grinned and Claude chuckled a bit nervously as he shook hands with her.

"Alright then. Take care General and good luck out there." Claude said and Amir nodded.

"Ummm...." Claude turned to Alexandra and his face instantly began to turn red as she saw the girl was fidgeting nervously, her feathers were slightly fluttering as she shyly kept looking to him.

She walked up and spoke.

"I...I had a lot of fun!!! I enjoyed spending the day with you and training. I enjoy our days together during riding lessons. Also, take care of the wyvern egg. Make sure to keep it warm. Ummm...take care Claude." She smiled warmly to him.

Claude was silent and suddenly intertwined his hands with her, got closer and...
"KYYAAAAAHHHH!!" Sothis squealed loudly while Amir and Arisa were stunned to silence.

Claude kissed her. He parted from them and had a heavy blush on his face, as he turned away while Alexandra looked like a walking teapot and her feathers were stiff as stone.

"A-A-A-Ah-Aaahwawawawawaawawawaawaa-!!" Alexandra was a stuttering mess and was trying to process everything that just happened.

"Hey," he turned back to her while the girl was still a muttering mess, "Thank you, for everything. I hope we meet again one day." He smiled kindly to her.

"Awawawawawawawawaa!!" Alexandra was a shaking stuttering mess while Cirina was gagging.

Alexandra gritted her teeth and shook with both embarrassment and anger as she glared at the boy, who smirked proudly. This was the first he had ever seen her this embarrassed and was very much enjoying it. What he did not expect was that she grabbed him by the collar of his shirt also kissed him. Now he was the shaking mess while she barely stuttered out.

"T-That's my-my p-promise t-that w-we'll s-see e-each o-other again!!" And she summoned her wings of ice and bolted away.

"My aren't you both bold." Arisa and Amir both teased at the blushing mess of Claude.

"Well, then," the two girls patted his head, "We'll see you soon." They said.

Claude finally snapped out of it and grinned and waved as the girls began to leave. He saw Alexandra was already in the wagon, but the girl sent him a playful glare but grinned, waving at him.

The three were confused for a bit why Edward was with them, but Florencio explained that they will be stopping by Edmund Territory to drop the doctor off. Of course, they'll be staying the night at the inns there before they must go through Gloucester Territory to head back. Claude smiled sadly as the wagon rode off and felt a hand on his shoulder. He looked up and saw it was Judith.

"You're going to miss them, aren't you?" The older woman said, and he smiled sadly.

"I am. I felt.... like I finally belonged." He said and Judith chuckled.

"It's not the last we'll see of them. Who knows, they might even become part of the Alliance in the future." She said and Claude nodded.

"May we meet again one day."

- A few Days later -

Passing through Edmund Territory felt like she was walking in magical forest. Filled with greenery, beautiful flowers, and meeting an adorable little girl that she never in her life she thought
she would meet. It seems in this time; Marianne was adopted much earlier than anticipated. The six-year-old girl shifted nervously as she was discovered in the forest. The girl had her light blue colored hair in a braided headband, tied up, and a few sides of her hair loose. She had a little bit of dark circles under her eyes and wore a blue dress. Arisa was strolling through the forest with Red Hare and Feh on her head when the said horse suddenly turned and started walking a random direction. Even Feh seemed to become excited. Red Hare ended up taking them to a hidden flower field that was beautiful. There were so many fae and animals. Deers, squirrels, chipmunks, doves, a few owls, ducks and wild horses. And there, surrounded by the animals, and was happily talking to them, was a mini Marianne. Feh chirped, getting everyone's attention, the blue haired girl turning her way, and eyes widened when they saw Arisa. The mysterious girl gave her a soft smile and nodded.

"Feh, go say hello. You too Red Hare." Arisa said as she mounted off her pegasus.

Feh chirped happily as she lightly flapped her wings and flew to Marianne, who giggled as the snowy owl gently landed on her head and Red Hare who nuzzled her cheek. Arisa smiled softly as she just sat down. She was 10 feet away and rather let Marianne become comfortable then just straight up approach her.

The girl smiled softly as she saw the little girl talk excitedly to Feh and Red Hare excitedly.

She knew to some extent that the Crest of Maurice can allow Marianne to understand the language of animals. Arisa quietly took out her sketch journal and began to draw the girl. She looked so happy surrounded by nature and placed a silence spell on her camera. She snapped a quick photo and could help but smile softly at the cheerful girl in the picture. Sothis appeared and smiled as she went to play with the animals also. While Arisa continued to sketch, now that she had her photo, she didn't notice that Marianne kept looking her way.

"(Curious of our friend?)" Feh said.

Marianne could understand what the animals were saying and nodded a bit.

"She is your friend? Isn't it master?" She asked a bit nervously.

"(No no!! On the contrary, at first, we used to think of her as our master but...her kindness and seniority has showed us she thinks of us as family. As friends.)" Red Hare said to her.

“(The girl is a bit crazy but that how she is. She saved our lives and we have chosen to follow her.)" Feh said.

"Having fun everyone?” The two turned to see Sothis and the animals began chattering, happy and saying hi to her.

The fae began circling around Sothis, the goddess giggling.

"Who are you talking to?” Marianne asked.

"(You humans can't see her but there is a spirit here that is with our friend. Her name is Sothis. She watches over our friend, Arisa.)" Feh said.

"(Annoying that is what she is.)" Red Hare said and Sothis growled.

"I thought you got rid of that prideful attitude of yours but you're still arrogant!!! You used to be so
cute back then!!" Sothis said back and the two began arguing with each other.

The other animals just had dead planned faces watching the goddess and the pegasus argue while Arisa was just groaning into her hand.

"Why does this happen every time?" She muttered and Marianne giggled.

The girl stood up and shyly walked over to Arisa, who smiled softly. It took a few minutes, but the girl was now near her, even if five feet away.

"Hello there. Nice to meet you." Arisa said softly.

She didn't want to scare her and decided to take it slowly. The blue hair girls’ eyes widened but spoke shyly.

"Are you, Arisa? It's what your friends say is your name." Marianne spoke barely above a whisper.

"(It's okay. She's a good person.)" A chipmunk squeaked as the animals gently walked towards them and Arisa could not help but stare.

Of course, the main reason was to defend Marianne. Feh landed on her head and hooted.

"(This is the girl is wiser than her looks. She is a friend of your brother.)" Feh said.

"Do you...know my brother?" Marianne asked as a few of the animals settled on their laps.

"Edward?" Arisa said she nodded, "Yes. He helped a friend of mine find some information.....regarding her powers. But...she's feeling better." She said.

"Oh. That's good to here. Ummm...thank you for being patient with me...." Marianne said shyly and Arisa smiled softly.

"You're welcome." She said and there was a comfortable silence until....

"Well..well...well....if it isn't the host who bares the Crest of Maurice?"

All the animals began hissing to the one that stood behind Arisa but only she could see her and the animals. Arisa recognized the voice. It was Cirina. Marianne became worried as the animals and even Sothis stood around to protect her. Arisa turned, thinking she was also going to see Alexandra but no, it was just Cirina, which was very confusing. The white-haired girl stood with arms crossed as she floated and noticed the confused look of Arisa.

"Unlike the Fell Star, I have the ability to travel wherever I wish. I came to this area because it used to be filled with blue lilies. Hmph. I....didn't think I run into a descendent of his...." Cirina said softly and everyone was confused by her sudden tone.

Cirina stared down at Marianne with concern, pity, yet.... kindness?!?!

"A long time ago.... there was once a man who feared his own power....but he was more concerned for the one that did not fear him, and respected him." She began softly as she gently floated towards
the girl, "He was one of the only people...to have never betrayed her trust while her lover, her own family, betrayed her." She said and gently touched the girls head.

Marianne felt a cold yet warm touch, even if she could not see the person in front of her.

A small flower crown of blue forget-me-nots grew on the girl’s head. The little girl gasped as she touched them. Cirina smiled sadly as she turned to leave.

"I feel her, and Alexandra would get along. Have them meet at some point. So long." Cirina left with a small wave and disappeared.

What was that about?

- 20 minutes later -

Marianne giggled happily as she was seated to sit in front of Arisa as they rode Red Hare together back to the town. The girl warmed up to Arisa. During the time they were together, the older girl decided to tell her the story of Snow White. Marianne could help but blush when her animals friend turned to her with joy in their eyes. The fae were saying she was like Snow White!! Arisa smiled softly as they continued through the town. Many people stared and a few smiled warmly as they saw the young girls. But...

"Arisa, someone is following us." Sothis appeared and glared to a hidden alleyway.

Arisa turned to look that way and noticed a man in a cloak. She instantly frowned but was glad she wore her hood to hide her face. She recognized him. He is that damn Crest Scholar from her paralogue.

"Whoa." Arisa said and Red Hare stopped.

The blue haired girl was confused tills Arisa mounted off and spoke.

"Take her home. I need to take care of something." She said and Red Hare nodded.

"Feh, stay with me." She said and Feh landed on her shoulder.

"Is something wrong?" Marianne asked confused and Arisa smiled.

"Nothing to worry about dear. I just need to go buy some supplies. Hold on tight to Red. He's going to fly." She said and at that moment, Red Hare spread out his wings, many people gasped at how amazing he looked and the said pegasus had a smug look as he gently took off and flew towards the direction of the manner.

Arisa could hear the young girl squealing in excitement.

"Now to take care of my business." She muttered and turned towards the alley way.

The Crest Scholar flinched as she walked towards his way, but what was more frightening was her smile.
At this moment, Arisa (*she didn’t know*) had the smile that Rhea would wear. Unknown to her, this smile was also something her birth mother of this world, Rosa, also inherited from Rhea. A smile used to disguise their true emotions/intentions when it truly was needed. In this case, Rosa used it to hide when she was angry with Rhea or when she was about to pull a prank on her friends. With Arisa, she was using to hide her anger of the man before her. The girl removed her hood and smiled.

"Why are you following me and my friend mister? You look very suspicious." She smiled and Feh puffed herself out, hissing.

"None of your business child. You do best to stay away from that girl and her brother. They will bring you nothing but misfortune." He said coldly but her smile seemed to grow.

"Is that so? Are you really following us for our concern or are you so bored to the point your bloody Crest research has rotten?" She said back sharply but her smile remained.

"What?! How dare you insult my research?! No, first, how did you know I am a Crest Scholar?!" He said angrily.

"Because I am also a Crest Scholar." She said.

"Tch. What a poor excuse of lie. If you really are a Crest Scholar, then what is that girl and her brother's Crest?" He said.

"The Crest of Maurice. Also known as the The Crest of the Beast. And I don't give a damn. You better leave them the fuck alone or I can guarantee I will cut that tongue of yours off." Arisa said.

"You damn brat!!" The man raised his hand to slap her but yelled when he was suddenly thrown against the wall, "What?!" A hand was around his neck and Arisa smiled.

"Leave before I use my power to end this pitiful life of yours." She smiled.

She let go of him and warped him away, to the forest in the Empire. Her warping range has improved a lot.

"Did I overdo it?" She returned back to her normal self as she looked over to Sothis, who had a proud smile.

"Nope!! Not one bit!! I am very pleased!" Sothis said as the two began walking towards the manner.

- 30 minutes later -

Arisa could not help but stare. Even Amir was staring at the blue haired trio. Alexandra and Marianne were chatting happily together while Edward noticed the stares and laughed a bit nervously. Arisa had unconsciously whipped out her camera and began taking pictures.

"Umm, I'm curious but, are those feathers a part of you?" Marianne asked Alexandra as the girl gently touched them.
"Yup!! My Crest made them grow on me. Sandy says I look like a mini Valkyrie." Alexandra said.

At the mention of Crest, Marianne stiffens. The blue haired girl looked a bit nervously till Alexandra finally noticed the flower crown the girl in front of her had.

"Hmm....so she made you that?" Alexandra said and Marianne blinked.

"Who?" She asked.

"Cirina. She is someone that lives inside me. She's a pain but she looks out for me even if she doesn't admit it. Looks like she likes you. That's why she made you that flower crown." Alexandra said and Marianne smiled softly.

"Umm...is she here now?" She asked and Alexandra shook her head.

"She's as sleep but she says take care," Alexandra said.

It was sweet moment honestly. Arisa decided to not disturb them and saw Edward excuse himself. She followed him till they reached the stables.

"Hey Edward!" She yelled and he turned her direction, "I need to talk to you about something important." She said and he nodded as the two walked into the stables and she closed the door.

"What did you want to talk about? If this is about the test, only your uncle knows about its and....." he was hesitant about talking about Emily.

"I met Emily." She said and turned back to him, "And I know that you both of you know I am Kiana Kalsana. My uncle already talked to me about the test and I made him swear he would not say a word. But that isn't what I'm here to talk about." She said and he raised an eyebrow as he sat on a haystack.

"Then what is it?" He asked and she took a deep breath.

"You bare the Crest of Maurice like Marianne, correct?" She said, instantly the smile on Edward became frightening.

"Wait!!! Before you think something terrifying, there was Crest Scholar following me and your sister!!! I used my magic and warped him away to the forest in the Empire. Part of me is hoping he gets eaten honestly...." she explained, and he let go of bitter sigh.

"Yeah......that man has been following us since Marianne's parents disappeared........Arisa......are you scared of us?" He asked.

"No. Why should I be scared? Listen, I know the history behind your Crest. But...will you let the burden tie you down or cast it away? It's your choice not mine. Anyhow, back to the subject. You and Marianne should alright from now since I made that Crest Scholar go away. But...I'm curious? Are you two related by blood?" She asked.

"We are actually......we're cousins. My father and her father were brothers. When my parents disappeared....I had just barely become a Holy Magus. Imagine coming home with exciting news only to see your parents gone...? So much for a day of celebration...." Edward said sadly as he looked at the locket in his hands.
"Then...Marianne's parents took me in. 5 years later.... they disappeared also.....I chose to raise Marianne.. the battle of offers in 1159, 5 years prior, I chose to take the offer of House Reigan, and later I was adopted with Marianne by Count Edmund. He's a kind man who truly cares about us." He said and looked up to her.

"So, what about you? Why do you hide your Crest like we do? Are you afraid of it? Or is it more towards your father does not know of it?" He said and she sighed as she sat down next to him.

"More towards.......if people find out about my Crest....and the news reaches a Church spy......The Archbishop will do everything in her power to hunt me and my family down......my father has only told me a little bit that he used to be a Knight of Serios...I....already made a mistake in the past...." she muttered softly and he nodded.

"Fear is the biggest factor we as humans have. It's alright to be afraid but will you let control you is the biggest question." Edward said and Arisa nodded as she looked down to her hands.

"My biggest regret.....was letting my fear control me back then.....I was still so new to this world....just barely getting used to things here.....and my fear that I would only end up hurting Dimitri and the others.....is what led me to altering their memories of me...I regret doing it now....and looking back at it....it was the stupidest move I ever made." Arisa thought and Sothis was silent as she heard the girl's words.

"Haha...it's alright. Changing the subject, I think it's time you met Emily. Come, I'll take you to her." He said and she nodded.

"Hey Edward," Arisa and he turned to her, "Thank you. I'm glad we had this talk." She said he smiled.

"I am too." He said and the two began to walk.

- 10 minutes Later: Hidden Tree House -

There was damn hidden tree house near the Edmund Manor that was protected by a barrier. Edward gently picked her up and levitated using wind magic to fly up. It was around 20 feet high up in the trees and hidden away also with all pine branches. They landed on the balcony, and gently knocked on the door as he put her down. The door opens only so little, an eye peaked out.

"Edward, who is this girl?" A low eerie female voice spoke and instantly Arisa was on edge because she recognized it.

"Thajra, you're scaring her. This is....Kiana Kalsana. I want her to meet Emily." Edward said and the door fully opened.

"I really need to prepare my heart because I'm pretty sure I'm going to be seeing familiar faces from now on." Arisa thought and Sothis was telling her to breathe.

Tharja looked down at her, her eyes bore into her soul. The older woman nodded and turned.

"You may come in." She lightly motions her hand and the two come in.
Inside it looked like a simple cabin but Arisa could tell it was much, much bigger than it looks because if magic. For some reason the thought if territory creation came into her mind and this world seems to have that form of magic. She is going to have Florencio teach her the spell because a small room in the monastery is not going to be enough for her. Inside the cabin she could see doors that led to multiple rooms, a few cats sleeping peacefully on chairs. She spotted a creepy looking magic lab not too far and made a mental note to stay away from that area. They continued down a hallway till they reached a door with a door. Tharja opened it and inside, sitting on a silk bed was a young woman with red fluffy hair to her shoulder, ivory colored eyes, and wore a simple white gown. The blanket of course covered her legs, but Arisa could see the woman was struggling with trying to move her arms. She stiffened when she turned their way and eyes widened.

"You're.....Edward.....why did you bring her? It's far too early for her and I to meet." Emily said as the blue haired Doctor smiled.

"I think it's better you too actually met. Also, you both have a lot to discuss. Tharja, let's go." He said and the black hair woman left with him, the door closing shut.

"Quite bold, aren't they?" Sothis said as she appeared, and Emily motioned Arisa to sit have seat.

Arisa sat on a chair next to the older girl’s bed, who nodded.

"Well, I did not think we meet in person so early on. I have heard of you from Lestia, Arisa." Emily said and Arisa's eyes widened.

"She.....remembers me?" She said and Emily nodded.

"She does. You be surprised, your spell had no effect on her, but I can tell, you are looking back to that day, you regret your actions." Emily said and Arisa smiled sadly.

"I do....I shouldn't have erased their memories of me....." she said and Emily smiled sadly.

"Hey. You were a kid back then. We all make mistakes. But enough of that," Emily said and smiled.

"I am Emily von Miller Zoltras. A Holy Magus and Court Mage of The Holy Kingdom of Faerghus. I'm also, a Nabatean." She said and Arisa looked at her with wide eyes.

"I...I'm Arisa Byleth Reus Eisner. But....how? I thought...the only Nabateans left are....Rhea...Seteth...Flayn...Indech and Macuil." Arisa said as Emily smiled softly.

"Based on your reaction, you forgot one of the five Saints. Saint Hymara: True Name: Melody, also known as the wife of Saint Macuil. She bares the Crest of Chevalier. My brother, Chavalier, chose her to bare his Crest before he was killed by the Nemesis and 11 Elites trying to protect our people. She is the only human who my older brothers ever did trust. Funny, Macuil still bears a grudge against humans but her alone, he will protect her." Emily chuckled.

"And you.....who....are you really?" Arisa asked.

Emily liked this. Right down to business they went.

"My true name is Noa, the original bearer of that Crest. I am also a descendant of Lamine...unfortunately....the woman that killed me. You see Arisa, I was reincarnated as a human
15 years ago. Then learning that only a few of my siblings and my sister-in-law are alive while the rest of my family is dead? It's punch to the gut. Also, that Rhea is too blinded by grief, and managed to preserve my body for such a long time? Of course, I must do something. Then learning the entire history of what went down these past 1,000 years, and the lies that have been written as history? Of course, I nearly went mad." Emily said as she made a book float over to her.

"Also, I just recently fused my body of this time and my old body, I'm not sure if I can turn to a dragon, so I'm a full month of recovery till I return back to the Kingdom. Ugh....it's annoying but if I can make at least some difference, then so be it." She said and Arisa along with Sothis were trying to process everything she just said.

"This is....too much information for me to take in...." both Sothis and Arisa said because their heads hurt right now.

Emily chuckled as she patted her head.

"It's alright. Take all the time you need. But, I'm sure that's not why Edward brought you." She said and Arisa blinked.

"We need to discuss what you plan to do when your coming of age ceremony comes in 5 years. When that happens, what plans do you have? Have you already thought of it?" Emily said.

"I have." Arisa answered, "My plan is to travel to Shambhala to steal technology that can help me." She said and Emily frowns.

"That's a suicide mission." Emily said.

"I know...but...if I can at least.....make some changes in the flow of time..." she gritted her teeth and Emily chuckled.

"Alright then. But first, you need to be ready if that is your plan. Did you also have plans to return to the Kingdom?" Emily said and Arisa nodded.

"I do. I think it’s time I face those kids. Umm.....also....I'm hoping I can see a friend of mine there." She said and Emily raised an eyebrow.

"I'm hoping I can see my friend Mercedes and her mother again. I want to thank them properly this time for helping me." Arisa smiled and Emily froze.

"S-She knows Mercedes...?! Then....does she know Emile also?!" Emily internally screamed and took a deep breath to calm her nerves.

"I see then. But first, before you even think of stepping foot in the Kingdom, I want you to at least have some status protection." Emily said as she opened her book to read, "I assume you will be taking the medical exams of the church?" She said.

"Of course, I am. I need to be prepared because I want to have access to the royal archives." The girl said and Emily nodded.

"Very well then. But what about taking it a step further? Any plans to attend the magic school in Fhirdiad?" Emily said as she turned a page.

"When does the semester start?" Arisa asked and Emily smiled.
"On the Horsebow Moon. You'll have to make a mad dash and it takes at most two months to reach Fhirdiad, even if you travel with your pegasus. Thankfully, I have a friend that can warp you from Garreg Mach to there. You'll make it on time." Emily smiled and Arisa let go a sigh of relief.

"But if you do become a Holy Magus, I think it's better I inform you what will coming your way so you can be a bit prepared." Emily asks as she gave her a concerned look.

"What....do I have to worry about?" Arisa said.

"Offers." Emily said.

"Offers?" Arisa said confused.

"It is extremely rare for someone to become a Holy Magus. Very few people have ever achieved such status these past years and they are greatly valued. There are currently 5 Holy Magus in all Fodlan. Florencio, Doctor Robert, Edward, Cornelia (Arisa: How the hell did that hag managed to get that?) And me. Florencio is a freelancer. I and Cornelia are part of the Kingdom, Edward of the Alliance and Doctor Robert serves the royal family of the Empire. The biggest battle over a Holy Magus was over Edward when he became one in 1159. He was just 15. So, imagine a bunch of nobles and royal families trying to win your offer for you to join them? It's...terrifying. I managed to escape it because the family I was taken in serves the royal family so that makes it automatic that I serve the Kingdom. But Edward? He was a commoner like your uncle. Plus, him being young and...having a Crest, made it even more of a competition. Hundreds of offers from nobles all over Fodlan trying to gain his favor. A Holy Magus being part of a country is a huge status symbol. In a way...we're prizes." She said bitterly at that last part.

Arisa nodded and frowned.

"I know what you mean....I'm guessing my Uncle managed to escape it too because he declared he was a freelancer." She said.

"He did. And here's the thing, the good thing about the Holy Magus status is that we are placed at a higher pedestal than the nobles of Fodlan, except the Archbishop and royalty of course. That status was given to us by the Church of Serios to also protect us. If the nobles even tried anything on us, I can guarantee the Church will be on their asses!" Emily said and Arisa could not help but chuckle hearing her say that last sentence.

"Edward in the end chose to serve House Reigan and five years later, was adopted by Count Edmund along with Marianne. Why did he choose the Alliance? Well, only he knows." She said.

"I....I want to be a freelancer like my uncle. Being a mercenary, I've travelled all over Fodlan. I enjoy teaching children how to read and write. I enjoyed being Claude's teacher, even if it was only for a short while. I....I want to continue to see Fodlan. I don't want to be tied down, forced to serve only one place. Is that wrong?" She said and Emily grinned.

"No. It's never wrong. It's your choice, your will. No one can stop you. So, Miss Arisa, what do you plan to do?" Emily grinned.

"I'm making my own path. My own fate." Arisa grinned and Emily nodded.

"I approve. Here," the red-haired girl handed her a book, "this is the list of all the classes the magic
academy will be offering and may have new ones by then. Also, don't let anyone break your will. You have proven to me you are more than capable of earning my trust and my allies. We of Sirius, will aid you when the time comes." Emily said.

"Wait, Sirius?" Arisa asked as she opened the book.

Arisa felt she was looking at classes from Harry Potter. There was Charms, Defense Against the Dark Arts, Potions, of course the typical History of Magic, hell there was even an Arithmancy class and Herbology. Sadly, no Astronomy class or medical classes. Tch. She was looking forward to that. But Advance Magical Theory sounded fun.

"I wonder if the magical formulas from mangas/light novels/games I've read and also animes can be applied here.....hmmmm....I want to see if I can pull off Olga Marie's spell..." she thought and Sothis slapped her head to pay attention to what Emily was saying.

"As you know, the true enemy of Fodlan are Those Who Slither in The Dark. Sirius was created 100 years ago when the founder, Timotis von Aubin, discovered the truth of the Church of Serios and Crest. The true history of Fodlan. The group was created to fight those bastards. We have spies all over Fodlan to keep tabs on what is going on. We're especially keeping an eye on Duscur and the Empire. TWSD have been active...I'm not liking it." Emily said.

"I understand. I'll do what I can to help. I really.... really.... want them gone....." Arisa said and Emily noticed the girl shaking, not out of fear, but anger.

The older girl lightly flicked her forehead and smirked.

"Seems my mother's influence is affecting you. But do be careful. You two may be able to temporarily become one but you must also be aware of how much that can affect your body. If you are constantly shifting between God mode and mortal body, you'll end up in a comatose state. The anger you feel now is not only my mother's but your own." She explained.

"My own?!" Arisa said shocked and Sothis was worried.

Emily nodded as she could only barely see an outline of Sothis, who was in her younger form.

"That's right. TWSD have done nothing to you but you still feel anger towards what they have done towards others. You know more than what you let on, but I remind you, be careful. But....also...I want to trust you with something very important." Emily said as she pointed to a drawer next to a bookshelf.

Arisa looked to it and walked towards it. Once there she opened it and pulled out a music box size box. Emily motioned her to open it and inside were two potion sized bottles with crimson liquid.

"I no longer bare the Crest of Lamine because when I fused with my original body, it was over written. But before that happened, I had Tharja and our spy from the Church, Lucius, extra my blood. The blue bottle has the blood with the Crest of Lamine and the green one, has my blood, the Crest of Noa. I'm trusting you with these. To choose two worthy people to inherit those Crest." Emily said and Arisa looked at her shocked.

"What?! I-I can't do that!! This is your blood!!! I'm not supposed to make those choices!! W-Why would you trust something with so much value to me?!" Arisa said frantically and Sothis was pissed.
"One moment young lady!!! Why would you put such a burden on this girl?! What are you thinking?!?! This better not be part of your research again!!" Sothis said.

"Somehow I can tell my mother is pissed." Emily said as she saw the faint outline making movements that Sothis was scolding her.

Emily sighed and spoke.

"Because you have a much better judgment than I do. This truth is a grand burden, but I trust you enough to make the right choice. You have experience in the modern field while I have experience in the ancient one. Another thing," Emily looked her up and down, "train your body physical to break the limiter our body creates. Basically, get more muscle. But you also need to get used to casting highly advanced spell. Your main goal, is to be able to cast Sirius." She said and Arisa froze.

"I...I....." Arisa said and Emily spoke.

"You may be an expert in the medical field but you're nothing but an amateur in the magic field. If you were in a real magic battle you be dead before you know it." Emily spoke coldly and Arisa took a deep breath and nodded.

"Yeah.....I would. But....I'm not about to let myself get killed. Especially because I was given this life of mine. I'll master Sirius. I know the first level is Daylight. Second Level is Moonlight and lastly, Sirius. Like I said, I'm not about to let anyone kill me just yet." Arisa said and Emily smiled.

"Hmmm...you really are like her..." she muttered softly and then spoke loudly.

"Alright then, I'll make sure you receive the proper training. Florencio and Sandy already trained you, so time to take up a notch. Hana and the Flame twins will train you. Hanna in magic and the Flame twins in physical training. Got it?" She said and Arisa nodded.

- 20 minutes later -

After that talk, Arisa was taken back to the manor because it was time for her and the rest to leave. Oh, poor Marianne was crying along with Alexandra because they didn't want to leave each other. Seems while she was gone, the two became best friends. Oh, Arisa was trying not to cry as the girls were separated. Arisa sighed as she walked up to a crying Marianne and Alexandra, suddenly hugged them both, which surprised Marianne.

"I... may have not been able to talk to you much but...." she gently patted the blue haired girl's head and smiled softly, "But this isn't goodbye. I'm sure you and Alexandra will see each other again in the future. That's a promise Marianne. Keep on living, let no burden tie you down." She said and the girl looked at her with wide eyes.

"It's a promise!!" Alexandra said and held Marianne's hands, her little feathers flapping, "We'll meet each other again one day!! And when that day comes, I will make you a flower crown!!" Alexandra grinned.

"T-Then, when we meet again, I promise I'll introduce you to my friends of the forest!" Marianne said and the two girls nodded.
"It's a deal!!" They said in union and giggled.

So this was a sobbing mess as they waved goodbye to her and Edward as their wagon road off to the road.

Edward chuckled as he gently picked up his little sister. It had been years since he had seen her so happy.

"So, you made a friend?" He asked and Marianne nodded.

"I'm happy....She's...a bit like me...we share a burden...she's also afraid but...." Marianne smiled warmly as she looked out to the sky. "She won't let it take her down. So....I'll be like that too!!! I want to meet her again one day and hope we fly together!!! I don't...want to be tied down either!!" She said and Edward stared at her shocked.

He could not help but laugh happily as he spun her around.

"Alright then!!! Not just you Maria, we'll both work through it, together." He smiled to her and she nodded.

"Right Big brother!!"

Chapter 18: Back Home: Part 1: Lesson Learned

[ -------- ]

Aaaahhhhhhh!!!! Our sweet children!!! In this story, I decided to have Marianne be adopted much earlier than the original. Also, we don't know what her original last name was so I decided that before she was adopted, her last name would be Snowden, like Edward's. I made them be cousins but they he takes care of her like she was his real sister.

Now the latest notice I gave regarding this story, I will update the chapters. Spelling errors, dates and times will be fixed because my dumb ass just barely realized I got Byleth's age wrong. So, I'm sorry if you see fanfiction spasms in your emails.

Blaze2121:

Arisa doesn't express it much, but she is Bi. Yes, she swings both ways. But she doesn't express it much because you know, physically she is a child. But she has hit on girls but in her own way back in our world. Especially when she would go out and drink with Theresa. Small flirts and cute comments, nothing too direct. As a girl she would choose, Mercedes or Dorothea. Edelgard also and surprisingly, Bernadetta. Jeralt's reaction to Mercedes would be that he saw it coming
eventually. Same with Dorothea. He would straight up faint if he saw it was Edelgard and a double faint on Florencio's part because Bernadetta.

Well, one chapter away till the next time skip. It's almost time for the next Arc. That will be a roller coaster.
Chapter 19: Back Home: Part 2: Breakthroughs

- 1 month later: Wyvern Moon: October -

Getting through the forest? **Easy**!

**Taking on bandits? No problem!!!**

**Hunting?** Well, still working out but no problem.

**But dealing with a tantrum of a noble child?**

"Ooohhhhh....Sothis help me before I unleash my viper tongue on this kid!!" Arisa was biting down on her index finger as her father was helping the Alliance knights guarding the carriage of the Nobles of House Gloucester, fix the wooden wheel that broke off.

Well, two of them. Her father decided to take on a job of guarding a noble carriage since they were heading the same way as them, a village near Leonie's home. So, right now, the 8-year-old boy with the Oh so familiar terrible haircut that is colored purple, was throwing a tantrum, demanding to know what on earth happened. That boy was Lorenz Hellman Gloucester. Sothis was gently hugging the girl, telling her take deep breaths while Amir and Alexandra were being held back by the twins and Hana, plus their mouths covered, from snapping in half Lorenz. While the mercenary adults and the Knights ignored the boy, Lorenz's father along with his mother, who was a sweetheart and gave them all an apologetic smile, waited quietly outside. Worst of all, it was raining, and Florencio was using a barrier to protect them from the rain since umbrellas don't exist in this time. Arisa made a note to herself to make at least a Japanese style bamboo umbrella when they return to Remire Village.

"Breath, breath!!" Sothis said but even Arisa could tell that she wanted to snap at the boy.

"My patience with children like this...is very thin!!" Arisa internally raged as Lornez stomped his feet.

Heck, even Feh, Falco, Puka, Nuke and Red Hare looked ready to mow down the kid. "Why on earth is this taking so long?! Father, can we not have them go any faster?" Lorenz said to his father while Count Gloucester also let go of a frustrated sigh.

He was going to be late to the meeting. Arisa growled as she turned to walk towards a tree that wasn't too far and began unleashing punches on it along with kicks.

"Hyaaa!! Ha!! Chaa!!" She yelled out as she decided to practice her martial arts to at least unleash her anger in some form than her punches on the poor tree.
Seems that caught the attention of a few people. The knights were impressed by her skills and
gracefulness while a couple others understood why the girl was doing it.

"Arisa!!" She turned and quickly jumped back at Amir's incoming wooden axe and caught it.

Amir smirked along with Alexandra, who held her wooden lance for sparring.

"It’s raining so might as well spar. After all, we're mercenaries. Got to get used to all kinds of
weather." Alexandra grinned and the three girls got into a three-way sparring match. Hana, the
twins and Florencio let go a sigh of relief. Lorenz stared at the three girls that were sparring.
Somehow, he felt.....unnerved yet amazed. The girls all moved with grace yet there was also a
fierceness in their movement.

"Father, what do you think of their sparring match?" He suddenly asked.

His mother raised an eyebrow while his father scoffed.

"I must admit, even if they are just sparring, their skills are impressive for children the same age as
you. Hmm......" Count Gloucester said and Lorenz nodded.

"May I.....talk to them...?" Lorenz asked a bit nervously since his father wasn't exactly fond of
commoners.

Count Gloucester raised an eyebrow at the question his son had asked while he looked over to girls.
He let go of a sigh and pinched the bridge of his nose. It has been awhile since his son had to talk
to someone his age.

"Just this once, I'll let you talk to them." The Count said and Lorenz nodded happily.

Arisa had stopped for a bit to breath and noticed that Lorenz had gotten out of the barrier Florencio
had set up for his family. The girl sighed as she motioned the other two to stop, which they did.
Arisa walked towards the boy heading their way, seeing he ran like a toddler trying not to get his
clothing wet, she raised her hand and had a barrier formed around the boy to protect him from the
rain. Lorenzo's eyes went wide as he noticed the rain around him had stopped. The main reason the
girls weren't wet from the rain was because of the barrier they created around themselves.

"Whoa!!" He yelped a bit when he began to float towards her and was gently settled about two feet
from her.

"I'm surprised you actually got out of the barrier my uncle had set up for you and your family." Arisa
spoke as she crossed her arms, "Did you want to talk to us?" She said with a small smile.

Amir and Alexandra had their eyes narrowed, ready to snap the boy in half if even said something
disrespectful to their Lady and Lorenz flinched at their glares.

"Amir, Alex, cut it out." Arisa said and the two girls pouted.

"Yes, actually. I was very impressed by your skills and have a few questions regarding your
training skills. Did your fellow mercenaries teach you how to use a sword or those martial art
skills? What about magic? It is my duty as a noble to learn these things so when I become the new
head in the future, I can make a better judgment for the people." Lorenz said a bit halty and the
other two growled.
"Seems I missed judge.... even if he is just a child, Lorenz already has some of the traits of his older self......" Arisa thought and smiled softly.

"Martial arts I am self-taught. Magic was taught to me by my uncle and a friend of mine. Lastly, the sword was taught to me by my father. How about I teach you something?" She said and he blinked.

"You, teach me?" He said and she nodded.

Count Gloucester raised an eyebrow as he heard the girl's words and Lorenz's mother looked a bit worried.

"The barrier I casted over you to protect you from the rain. It looks hard, but it's actually simple." She said and undid it on Lorenz.

The boy screeched when the rain started to hit him again and the other two were snickering. Arisa sent them one side glance and the two immediately stopped.

"Concentrate the area around you." She said, "Imagine you are inside a bubble. You want that bubble to grow and become strong. You don't want it to break. Close your eyes. Focus on the magical energy inside of you and gently but slowly release it around your area only." She said.

This was how Sothis taught her magic. Lorenz shivered but did as he was told. He closed his eyes, concentrating.

"Relax Lorenz." Arisa said and that's when the others realized the boy had yet to introduce himself, yet she already knew his name, "You're too tense. Think of something that makes you happy. Like tea for example." She chuckled.

The boy took a deep breath as, focusing now solely on that comment. The sound of the rain began to sound peaceful instead of annoying. The image of him being his room, nice warm, with a cup of his favorite blend of tea, Bergamot or rose bud tea. Arisa's smile grew as she noticed his shoulders relax and a thin barrier began to form around him. But the girl blinked when it took the shape of a rose, protecting him from the rain, like an umbrella. Count Gloucester and his wife, along with many blinked multiple times at what they had just witnessed. Lorenz opened his eyes and gasped when he saw the rose shaped barrier around him and was protected from the rain.

"I-I-I...how?!" Lorenz gasped as he stared at the barrier and Arisa burst out laughing.

"Not bad for your first try kid!!! Well done!! Just to let you know, a barrier spell is intermediate level. Especially since you also managed to make it take the shape of your desire. Just don-----" too late, Lorenz broke his concentration because he was being a bit smug and the barrier disappeared.

"Ooohh!!!!! Really?!" The boy grumbled and Arisa chuckled.

"Try not to break your contraction next time." Arisa said and everyone turned when they heard the knights, her father and Temes cheering that they finally got the wooden wheel fixed.

"Well, looks like it is time for you to go." She said as Lorenz's parents called out to his as they made a run to inside the carriage, "Continue practicing that spell. You'll be surprised by the results." She said.

Lorenz smiled and shook hands with her.
"Thank you. What is your name?" He asked and Arisa whispered to him.

"Kiana Kalsana. But don't tell one just yet." She said because she noticed how his eyes went wide.

After a few more seconds, the boy waved goodbye to them as he ran back to the carriage.

Lorenz sat down next to his mother as he looked out the window of the carriage towards the girls.

"I must say," Count Gloucester spoke, making the boy turned to face him, "I was impressed. That
girl taught you intermediate protection spell. Even more with the fact that you managed to shape it
to what you desire. It is rare but I approve of what that commoner taught you. Hmm....." he said as
the carriage began to move.

Lorenz was silent for a moment them spoke.

"Father, is Kiana Kalsana a Holy Magus?" He suddenly asked.

"The one that cured the epidemic in The Kingdom. As far as I know, she is someone who travels
across Fodlan but will not return till 1175 unfortunately. If she is.... then of course as the Head of
House Gloucester, it will be our duty to secure a second Holy Magus to the Alliance." He said and
Lorenz nodded.

"Why the sudden question?" His mother asked.

"Just curious." The boy said and saw one of the knights giving Sir Jeralt the payment he was
promised for temporary guarding the carriage before they went their separate directions.

Lorenz hoped he would meet the mysterious Kiana Kalsana in the future.

- 3 Days Later -

It felt like when she was saving Leonie all over again. This time it wasn't just the same girl again,
but....

"I am sorry!! I just wanted to get some red clay from the river for paint!! A-And Raphael was
trying to help me but lost his footing!!" A mini Ignatz and Raphael where soaking wet from nearly
getting washed away by the river if Arisa wasn't flying nearby in the forest because she was
looking for a ginkgo tree, the girl spotted Leonie screaming, trying to reach out to the boys who
were barely holding onto a boulder.

Arisa swooped in and managed to grab all three of them on time because the land underneath the
orange haired girl was on the verge of giving away. The older girl was doing everything in her
power not to release her viper tongue also known as her Mexican side because when she would
catch her siblings doing stupid things, she would go off on them. She took a deep breath and slowly
turned towards them. Feh was pecking at Leonie, who was screeching.

"You three....." she spoke slowly, making all three freezes, "Don't ever come to the forest again
after it rains." She said and then pointed her finger to them.

A warm gust of wind circled around them drying their clothing and their hair looked like afros.
Arisa sighed as she took out her hair comb, and handed it to Ignatz, who blinked.

"Comb your hair then pass it along. I'll wait till you are all done. Wait here." She sighed and headed to the river to get the clay.

After 10 minutes, she came back with a bucket filled with red clay, a few leaves, but also other natural ingredients to make a different variety of paints. The three had finished fixing their hair and they ran up to her.

"Hey, Arisa!! Sorry...you...had to save us again...." Leonie chuckled a bit nervously because of the glare she got from her.

"Umm...thank you for saving us. I'm sorry for the trouble we caused you." Ignatz said as she put down the bucket and fixed his glasses, making the boy blush a bit.

"That was awesome!! You may not have a lot of muscles but you're really strong!!" Raphael said with a grin.

"First of all," her tone a bit harsh, "I never want to see a single one of you ever put your lives in danger like that again!!! Second, I'm taking you all back to the village!!! Get on!" She said coldly and all three looked down to the ground but yelped when Red Hare picked them up one by one, threw them in the air, and had them land on his back, perfectly seated. They all blinked as Arisa floated near them, as the pegasus began walk. Feh made herself comfortable on Ignatz head. There was an uncomfortable silence as Leonie looked at the girl next to her, who was downright pissed. Arisa took a deep breath and spoke.

"Please....just be careful next time...." she muttered, and the three kids looked at each other worried.

"We're sorry......" they muttered till Leonie spoke, hoping to change the subject.

"So, how have you been? Are you guys heading back to Garreg Mach?" The oranges hair girl asked and Arisa nodded.

"Yeah. So, want to hear about my time in Derdui?" She said and Leonie nodded her head rapidly.

"Umm..." the boys looked at each other confused till Arisa spoke.

"Sorry about that. Seeing me angry didn't exactly give a good impression. Nice to meet you two. I'm Arisa Byleth. You can call me either name if you want. I'm a mercenary and merchant." She said.

"Nice to meet you Arisa, I'm Ignatz and this one here is my friend, Raphael." Ignatz smiled and Raphael grinned.

"Nice to meet you Byleth!! Are you staying in our village for a few days?" Raphael said and the girl nodded.

"Yup. There's a rainstorm on the way and we don't want to get caught in it. The pegasus is Red Hare and the snowy owl is Feh, my two friends." She said and noticed Leonie took out one of her books from the pouches and opened it.

"Hey!!" Arisa said and Leonie smirked.
"My, aren't you an artist." The girl grinned as she showed the drawing of Alexandra and Claude, both asleep together.

Ignatz's glasses instantly glinted as he looked at how professionally drawn the picture was.

"The sketching format, very realistic, fine details!!!! It's incredible!! You drew this?!!" The boy's eyes were sparkling like Christmas lights and Leonie handed the book to Raphael, who turned the page.

"Hey, is this.... The Archbishop Rhea?" He muttered and instantly the two other kids looked at it. It was drawing of Rhea praying to the sky. Her eyes were closed, yet tears fell, behind her, was drawing of Sothis, looking much older, hugging her. Raphael turned a page once again and the kids blinked as they saw a drawing of a woman dressed as a dancer with a strange pendant on her neck. Water was drawn floating around her, her mouth was open, showing she was singing, it was Azura but the children did not know that, only Arisa did. The book was then handed to Ignatz, who's eyes were wide as he looked through the pictures.

"These.....are amazing......." he said softly as Arisa gently took the book from his hands.

"Thank you, but," she glared at Leonie, "who told you, you could look through my stuff without my permission?!!" She glared and the girl smirked.

"Hey, payback for when you ate my pudding." Leonie touch her tongue out.

"I didn't know it was yours till you screamed!!" Arisa said.

"Umm...calm down you two!! Look, we're here!!" Raphael said as he pointed to the village. As usual, her father was talking to the village leader along with Leonie's father. Amir ran up to them and glared.

"What happened?! You suddenly went deep diving into the forest out of nowhere!!" The Duscur girl complained and Arisa sighed till Amir noticed Leonie and the two boys.

"Oh. Did you have to save her neck again?" Amir said and Leonie glared.

"Yeah I did. All three of them." Arisa sighed as she helped them all get off Red Hare and Feh lightly chirped.

Ignatz and Raphael stared at Puka, who was cackling and rolling on the grass like a puppy.

"Hey Amir, been awhile. Still able to hold an axe?" Leonie said.

"I'm surprised you're still even alive with that reckless behavior of yours." Amir said back and those two had sparks flying between each other.

Though Leonie had declared Arisa as her rival in sword wielding, Amir.......was her fully declared rival when it came to becoming a mercenary. She was jealous of how Amir was trained by Arisa and had her attention. Thus, sparking a rivalry between the girls to surpass one another and to prove to Arisa that they were better than the other.
"Can it you two." Arisa said and the two girls pouted.

The older of the bunch sighed as she saw Sothis looking around, a bit concerned.

"Arisa, have you noticed? The land around this village, it feels....off..." Sothis said and Arisa narrowed her eyes instantly.

"Ignatz, Raphael!!" She said, startling them, "Have there bandit attacks reported near the village?" She said.

"Yes...a few...." Raphael said as Amir and Leonie looked at them confused.

"Dad!" Arisa ran up to him and Jeralt raised an eyebrow.

"What's wrong kiddo?" He said and she looked at him worried.

"The land around the village is uneven and I spoke a few of the kids and there have been reports of bandit attacks nearby. I also noticed some of the trees are missing branches." She said and Jeralt nodded.

"Glad to know I wasn't the only one to notice." He said and turned to Sandy and Florencio, "You two, prepare the barrier around the village. Temes, Hana!! Guard the north gate!! Fiona and Camren!! South gate!! Cinder, Amir and Alexandra, east gate!! Byleth and I will guard the entrance. They'll be attacking tonight." Jeralt said as he turned to her.

"You know what to do."

- Later at night-

Ignatz, Raphael and Leonie were tensed as the lights of all the houses were turned off and the only ones on were the touches near the entrance. The three were watching from the storage near the entrance. They wanted to witness for themselves Jeralt's and Arisa's skills. Then everything went downhill when they saw the first group of bandits appear. Arisa instantly charged at one of the bandits, her palms met his chest, sending him flying away. The man coughed out blood and was wheezing. Jeralt smirked as his lance counteracts an axe coming his way. Leonie, Ignatz and Raphael had their hands over each other’s mouth to keep themselves from screaming when Arisa whipped out her sword and spun, like a dancer, slicing the throats of the thief and brigand.

"Look out!!" Jeralt yelled out and just barely the girl dodge down before a sword went right through her skull but it cut her hair tie.

Arisa stumbled back a bit and gasped when she realized her hair became undone. It spilled beautiful, showing how it was brown then faded to teal, it was so long that it stopped just barely above her ankles.

"Hey boss!! This kid fetches a good price!!" One bandit yelled out at their leader, who smirked as he was fighting off Jeralt.

"I won't let you even lay a finger on her!! Ha!!" Jeralt yelled out but did not have to worry about
his daughter because when she spoke, her tone was nothing but voidless.

"You cut my hair tie....." she began slowly as small cracks of electricity came from her rapier.

The bandit responsible shivered as she looked up to them, the green part of her eyes glowed mint green in the light of the torch.

"You cut my hair tie.....you cut my fucken hair tie....." she said a bit more louder and Jeralt smirked.

"You're finished." He said to the leader and that's when shit the fan.

"I'LL MAKE YOU PAY FOR CUTTING MY HAIR TIE!!! RRAAAHHHH!!" Now, Arisa never showed emotion when she would have to kill someone, because she would lock that humanity away.

But......this was a bit different. You see that hair tie was a gift from Jeralt when she had turned five years old. Technically, it was her first birthday gift when she came to this world and held a very deep meaning to her. It was a dark green ribbon that she took care of carefully. So, when the sword cut it, that forced her humanity to return to her, and she felt, anger, rage. She screamed angrily as her rapier went right through the bandit’s skull, pulling it out, the sick sound of cracking as the bandit dropped dead. She panted as she charged at the next one and cut off his arm.

She felt sick. She felt gross. She wanted to vomit more than anything right now. This was the first-time feeling emotions in the middle of a deadly fight, and it made her sick to her core. 5 minutes felt like 5 hours when she finished off the last bandit and her father finished off the leader. The girl panted rapidly as she dropped her sword with a loud thud, looking around at the people she killed. Her heartbeat rapidly, the world felt like it was spinning, it felt like her trip to Dadga all over again. When she killed for the first time. Blood was smeared on her face, and fear began to creep into her body.

"Get it...off....get it off....get it off....." she began muttering and Jeralt was about to tell her that she good a job taking on those bandits till he noticed she was shaking uncontrollably.

Her hands were covered in blood, and she hated it. She hated every fiber of her being right now. How she became truly the Ashen Demon.

"Get it off....get it off....GET IT OFF GET IT OFF!!" She began screaming and clawing at her face.

"Byleth!!" He dropped his lance and quickly ran over to her and hugged her tightly.

"Get it off!! Get it off!! Get the blood off me!! Get it off!!" She screamed as tears fell from her eyes.

Leonie, Ignatz and Raphael kicked the storage shed open and ran over to the two, not caring about the bodies lying on the ground. Leonie had a bucket filled with water and threw it over them. Ignatz along with Raphael looked at the girl stunned while Jeralt was frozen at what just happened. Arisa was stun and slowly looked over to Leonie.

"Y-You said you wanted it come off...so.... washing it off....ehe...?" Leonie said a bit nervously.

"Pfft....Hahah..hahahah!!!" Arisa began laughing as her father carefully let go of her.
Even if she was crying, she was still laughing and smiled sadly as she looked over to her.

"Thank you....." Arisa muttered softly, then suddenly covered her mouth as she now felt she was really going to throw up.

Ignatz quickly gave her the bucket, and the girl gladly took it as she let it out. Jeralt gently patted her back as the girl vomited and Leonie smiled sadly as she crossed her arms.

"Feeling better?" Jeralt said worried and she nodded a bit.

"Let's get you cleaned up. When we get back home, we're taking a two-month break from jobs. I think we all need it." He said and she nodded.

- The Next Day -

After that battle, Florencio went full doctor mode on his niece when Jeralt told him what happened, and her reaction to blood. There was another reason why Arisa was afraid of the sight of blood. The other reason was because of her day in a hospital in her old world. That fear never went away. She would be constantly coughing or vomiting blood back then and it got to the point she broke down, screaming why it didn't stay in her body where it belonged. Right now, now fully bathe and clean, in a set of clothing, a nice green winter dress because despite it being fall, the winds felt like it was a damn blizzard. Thankfully the rainstorm didn't happen. But it felt so weird with her hair loose. She noticed how a lot of people wouldn't stop staring at her and it made her feel uncomfortable. Mainly because it had been years since she had her hair let loose freely like this. She sighed as she held the cut hair tie in her hands and put it into her pocket. In better terms. At least her hair pins kept her bangs in place from covering her face.

"It feels....so strange seeing you like this, with long locks of hair let loose." Sothis said as she circled around her and Amir and Alexandra spoke as the three were walking to the village gate to leave.

"Your hair is as long as Sothis’s!!" Alexandra said.

"I think you look nice. Maybe you should let it be lose for some time." Amir said.

"Maybe I should cut it?" Arisa muttered and that earned her a loud "NO!!" From all three girls.

She chuckled as they made it to the gates, and sighed.

"Aren't you going to say goodbye to the children?" Jeralt said and Arisa shook her head.

"After how they saw me last night, I don't deserve to say goodbye to them." Arisa said and Jeralt sighed.

"You're being too hard on yourself. Besides, you don't have a choice now." He smirked and pointed towards the village.

The older girl turned and saw Leonie, Ignatz, and Raphael making a mad dash towards them, and just barely managed to keep stop, nearly colliding with each other.

"What are you three doing here?" Arisa said shocked as the three panted, but she yelped when they
suddenly turned her around.

"Careful Raphael!! Be gentle with her hair!" She heard Ignatz say as she felt Raphael's hands gently pull up her in a high ponytail, while Leonie fixed her bangs how she had them before, and Ignatz was holding a mirror with a grin on his face.

Arisa was confused as she saw her father, and the girls grinning and Ignatz and the other two turned her around towards them. They had a proud grin, as she looked in the mirror. Her hair was tied up like before with her long side bangs lose, but what held her hair together was simple dark green ribbon tied to a bow, and the loose long locks of her ponytail was braided and held together with a blue ribbon.

"W-W-Wha....." she was having a very difficult time processing what just happened.

"This is our thank you for saving us and protecting the village yesterday!!" Leonie said proudly as she crossed her arms.

"I got the idea of braiding your hair from my little sister!! She said it'll make you look cuter!!" Raphael grinned.

"Uummm....also...the ribbons...I chose....I think they suited you....also...thank you for getting me materials for making paint." Ignatz said.

The three began panicking when they saw Arisa start crying till, she spoke.

"These are tears of joy. Thank you.....really." Arisa said as she hugged all three of them.

They hugged back and let go.

"Leonie, I hope you become a mercenary like you always wanted to. You can do it!" Arisa said to the girl, who smirked and shot a smug look to Amir, who looked ready to unleash her on viper tongue on the orange haired girl.

"Raphael, I know you'll become an amazing strong knight!!! Keep up that muscle building but don't overwork yourself." She said and Raphael laughed proudly.

"And Ignatz," she turned to the green haired boy who shifted a bit nervously, she smiled and patted his head, "Keep doing what you love. Become the artist you always wanted to be. Never give up on your dream." She grinned warmly at him.

The boy looked at her shocked for a moment but smiled and nodded. That was the first time anyone has ever told him to follow his dream.

"I will!! I promise!!" The boy said proudly.

Arisa smiled softly as she gave them one last hug and thank you.

"We'll see each other again one day!!! That's a promise!!" Arisa yelled out as she waved goodbye to the kids.

She will see them again one day, that was a promise she will keep.
So, a month passed and they had all returned to Remire Village, just on time for the Holidays. Arisa was surprised to learn that Christmas did exist in this world when she first arrived but it when by another name, known as Day of the Blessings, when the goddess descended on the lands of Fodlan to give her blessings to the people. Just like in her old world, people gave gifts to loved ones and friends on December 25th. Her first Christmas in this world was in 1164, and that was a roller coaster of both happy and sad moments. But now, she can fully celebrate it.

Arriving to the village and seeing it was already decorated plus, to make it better, it was snowing!! At the village gates, she spotted Elder Bara, Rin, Ra, Kama, Ares, Yofos, and the rest of the group.

"Grandma!!" The three girls squealed happily as they all bolted towards Elder Bara's wide arms.

"Ohoho!! Look at you girls!! You all grown beautifully!!" Elder Bara chuckled as she hugged them and Jeralt smiled.

"We're home." He said and saw the females giggling to each other, and he was confused till...

"H-Hello....It's been quite some time Sir Jeralt!!" A familiar female voice spoke, and Arisa spun like there was no tomorrow.

"MISS CHARLOTTE AND MERCEDES!!!!!" The girl yelled out too happily as she spotted the older girl, who ran up to her and the two hugged.

"Oh Arisa!! It's been two years!!" The 12-year-old said joyfully as she hugged the girl tightly in her arms.

Originally!!! Mercedes and Arisa weren't supposed to see each other till 1175 but maybe a certain gremlin (Sothis: GODDESS!!!) made an altar in the flow of time. Tehe!

"Merci!!" Amir and Alexandra squealed as they also ran to hug the girl.

"You grown so beautiful!! Just look at you!!" Arisa said as they let go of each other and saw their parents talking to each other, and the clear blush the two adults had.

"Ara ara!! Thank you so much!! You grown too!! All of you have!" Mercedes said as the girls grinned.

"Will you be staying for the Holidays?" Alexandra asked and the older girl nodded.

"We are!! We got an invitation from you all to come spend the holidays with you. I'm looking forward to these next days!!" Mercedes said.

"Wait...invitation....we-----mphhhfff!!" Ares's son, Dominic, came out of nowhere and quickly covered Arisa's mouth and grinned to the older girl.

"Glad you and your mom could make it!! I'm Dominic!! The knight that is getting glared at with the rest of the company by Sir Jeralt and his two generals is my dad!!" The 6-year-old boy said with a grin.
"Oh...so they sent the invitation out in secret... yeah...dad isn't going to let this one up." Arisa thought as she got the kid's hand off her.

"Domic!!" The nickname she gave him, "I told you a hundred times not to do that!!" She glared at him and the boy ran behind Alexandra, stuck his tongue out at her.

Mercedes giggled as she patted her friend's back.

"Welp," Arisa said and turned to her, "How about I introduce you to everyone here? Oohhh!!! I think you'll love helping in the bakery here!! Rin and Acia love baking sweets!! Oohh!!! I can totally show you how to make candy canes!" Arisa said excitedly and the girls giggled.

---

**The Holidays just became sweeter.**

---

**- December 20th -**

A blacksmith shop was built during the past two years and Alexandra was busy helping getting weapons fixed. Amir and Sandy were working together in the clothing shop, while Mercedes and Arisa were helping in the bakery. Christmas was one of the few holidays that Arisa loved with all her heart. Valentine's day she calls Loners Day. One small regret she had from her past that she couldn't find a husband or wife to fall in love with and marry. Yeah...one regret, she didn't find love. Her former lover passed away those years ago, and truthfully, it made her scared to fall in love with someone because either she would die early, or they leave her. She does hope she finds someone in the future. For now, priorities come first!!! Be financially stable and buy land!

"Rensen!!" She yelled out to the man as he was wiping his forehead with a cloth.

Rensen turned to see Lady Arisa walked up to him with two wooden boxes floating behind her. A few of the workers raised an eyebrow as they saw her and just shrugged as they continued to work.

"Good morning Arisa, what can I help you with?" He asked.

"Can we talk in your office? This....is a bit of a serious topic." She said and he nodded.

The two walked to his office. Inside were books, a simple table to draw out plans, a fee boxes with broken weapons and such. She placed the boxes down, and brought out Amir's axe, who everyone thought got stolen 3 days ago, along with her rapier and put them on the table. Amir was a crying mess because that axe was the first one, she bought with her own money at the Empire, a Zoltan Axe.

"I need you to do me a favor." She began as she opened the boxes and Rensen's eyebrows looked like they flew off.

"T-This is the material that Hero's Relics are made of!!! I know this one is part of a sword, but the other one...even the Crest Stone is there!!" He said as his hands shook as he gently picked up a bone.
"Rensen...the one that was part of a sword, is it possible for it to be forged into my rapier? And...to create a brand-new Heroes Relic, using those materials in that box, with Amir's axe, and Crest Stone?" She asked.

Rensen was silent for a moment then spoke.

"It is.....I want to ask how you got a hold of these but knowing you....sigh....you won't say." He said and her smile confirmed it.

"Now, the broken part of the sword along with your rapier can be melted together to forge a brand new one, of course, it will still have the elements of it being like a whip. As for the axe.....the same process but a bit more difficult because I have to properly implant the Crest Stone. This should take....at least 6 months to fully forge it." He said and she nodded.

"Perfect then. In the meantime, I'll use my spare sword and....." she put her fist up, "My iron gauntlets!!!! Nyyahahahahahaha!!" She said proudly and Rensen could not help but laugh at the girl's laugh.

"Just don't get too carried away!!"

- December 25th: Christmas Day: The Day of Blessings -

As much as she loved Christmas, she hated waking up in the morning or getting woken up. So, for her to wake up normally was a blessing but what was shocking was seeing Sothis giggling proudly as she looked at herself in the mirror.

"Merry Christmas Arisa!! What do you think?! Seems I am able to change my clothing after all!!" She wore a cute red dress that was similar to her original but was more festive for Christmas.

Her pink and blue ribbons were replaced with green and red, star ornaments hung around her hair. Her crown had stars and was the color gold. In short, she was wearing the clothing she wore from her Christmas self in Fire Emblem Heroes. Arisa blinked multiple times, feeling an incoming headache and plopped back to her bed but sighed.

"You look adorable." Arisa said and Sothis smiled proudly.

"As I should be!!! It is my duty as a spirit that is guiding you to properly celebrate the Holidays you humans have!! Which by the way, I truthfully enjoy!!" Sothis said as she floated over to her friend, "Now come on!! Wake up and get dressed!! It's a holiday after all!!" She said as she pushed Arisa off her bed.

The girl chuckled as she looked at herself in the mirror. Before going to bed, she always tied her long hair into two braids to keep it from getting tangled. Like usual, she got up, took a nice long bath, but this time she will be wearing a nice long green sleeveless holiday dress with golden threading patterns of flowers, with a fluffy green winter cloak. She decided to wear her hair loose and she decided to wear the same red and green ribbons Sothis was wearing so they matched, so she naturally had two braids also. The only difference between her and Byleth's hair was that her hair was straight. Like usual, it was brown that faded to teal, and she wore her lily hair pins, along with a flower crown of poinsettias. She also wore black boots. She walked out of her room with her
basket and was met with oooooooh too familiar and terrifying squeal of Sandy.

"YOU LOOK SO ADORABLE!!!" Sandy said as she walked up to the girl.

The woman heard the doors to the other girl's room open and the guest one and squealed even more when she saw Amir, Mercedes and Alexandra come out. Alexandra dressed in an adorable snow bunny hat with cute leaf ears, a white dress with blue ruffles and white boots, white gloves, plus the matching blue wings, in short, she was dressed up as a snow fairy. Her little feathers on her head made it cuter along with the hair pin Claude gave her. Falco crawled nearby, jumped into her arms, and purred as she petted him.

"Why...just why....." Amir grumbled as she forced into a sugar plum princess ballerina dress with purple sparkles, purple ribbons and her short hair was tied up cutely with a matching crown.

"I think you look adorable!!" Mercedes was dress as Saint Cethleann, with veil and all. Even her hair was curled nicely, plus the staff.

"But these frills is itchy!!!!" Amir complained as she scratched her neck, "Sandy I thought you said this wouldn't have any!!" She said and Sandy giggled.

Puka cackled and flinched at the glare Amir gave him while Feh rolled her eyes as she landed on Arisa's head.

"Did I now?" The older woman smiled sweetly and instantly Amir, Arisa and Alexandra stiffened.

"You know what? Never mind, this is perfect!!" Amir quickly said because she knew Sandy was going to make her try on different dresses and she was having none of that.

"Well, changing the subject," Florencio appeared and clapped his hands to catch their attention, "Is everyone ready to the festivities today?!" He said a bit too excitedly.

"YES, WE ARE!!" All four girls said loudly.

They'll be opening presents later in the day.

[ -------- ]

"So, why are you making fruit cake......?" Arisa asked Diedra as the older woman was busy mixing nuts and berries into a metal pot, Mercedes and Amir watched.

Diedra was a young woman who originally came from Duscur. She is a former florist and moved with her family to Fodlan and eventually moved to Remire village with them. She worked as mercenary in her father's company and was one of the women in Sandy's ace time. In her free time, she would help her mother with the flower shop they opened in the village in 1162. So, imagine the huge surprise and horror when her and her family learn that Amir, daughter of the Amaryllis family was now going to be living in Remire but also everything that went down with the girl's family? They welcomed her and Amir honestly felt more at home seeing her own people. Diedra is 27 and had twin sons and twin daughters. Her sons, age 10 and her daughters, age 13. The older woman smiled softly as she pointed to the window to look outside the bakery. Her husband was
helping cut wood along with her two sons while her daughters were helping Elder Bara at her home preparing the Turkey, boar and also a beast that was caught, which was rare.

"My husband loves the parties here. Back in Duscur, this Holiday was known as Snow Goddess's Blessing. She would bring the soft snow to show her blessing to the land, that new life will be born in the new year. Which also, is a good day to use white roses to make rose wine!" Diedra said as she saw Mercedes pick up a bag of flour.

"May I use the kitchen also? I want to make a secret sweet that has been passed." Mercedes said and Arisa smiled sadly.

"Of course, dear!! No one is stopping you!! Have fun and bake to your heart's content. I do own this bakery after all!" Deirdra laughed.

"Wait, I thought it was just the flower shop?" Amir said.

"Both actually Lady Amir. Sandy loves coming by every month to buy flowers." The older woman explains as she out down her hand whisk to help Mercedes turn on the oven.

"How many times have I said not to call me Lady.....? We're equals Diedra. Plus, I'm not a noble anymore." Amir said and none of them saw that Mercedes froze for a few seconds before she continued measuring the ingredients before mixing them together.

"Sorry dear, but it's a habit. Besides," she pointed to Arisa, "You already have someone important to you." She grinned and Amir pouted.

"Okay....but I hope eventually you stop calling me Lady!!" Amir grinned everyone chuckled.

[ -------- ]

"Oohhhh!!! Decorating the trees are the best!!" Sothis squealed as her and Arisa were riding Red Hare to put up the silver tree ornaments on the pine tree.

"They had to choose the big ones they have in malls this year....." Arisa grumbled as she gently shook off some snow on tree.

"Watch it!!" Dominic yelled up and she just stuck her tongue out at him.

"Red Hare, expect a big hefty meal of your favorite vegetables tonight and Feh, I got you your favorite fish." She said and the two animals hooted and neighed loudly, their way of cheering.

She pulled out the "Christmas lights" but they were different colored marble sized crystals tied together with ribbons and Red Hare gently circled around the tree till they reach the booth, the lights put on. Yofos nodded as he used a weak spell and fire it at the tree, the crystals lighting up like real Christmas lights.

It's so pretty!!" All the children that were helping decorate the tree were amazed.

Arisa smiled proudly as she flew up higher in the air and nodded. She looked towards the medical shop of her Uncle and blinked when she saw he looked...distressed? Not just him....he was talking to Sandy about something. She could see the fear in their eyes. She didn't understand, did
something happen?

"I'll ask them later. For now," She turned to look at the gates and smiled, "Dad is back and nice!! Eggnog barrel!!! Man, I'm glad the legal drinking age here in Fodlan is the same as Germany's!!" Arisa grinned as she swooped down to the gates.

"Dad!!" She yelled out and Jeralt grinned along with the men.

"Happy Blessings Day, kiddo!!" He laughed as she jumped off Red Hare and landed in his arms.

"Tell me I get to have some eggnog later!!" She grinned.

"Whoa. You're five years too young to drink that. But, thankfully Elder Bara and Acia made a version that is nonalcoholic." He said and Arisa nodded but internally she was cursing.

She'll sneak a sip, whatever it takes!!

- Later at Night -

"AWWWHOOOOOO!!" And low and behold, the first one to be wasted like every single year, Florencio.

The man raised his mug high, filled with eggnog that was spiked by Ares and danced like ballerina as holiday music was being played. This time, Arisa was prepared and had been taking multiple pictures throughout the day. The girl grinned as she managed to get a picture of Mercedes and her mother happily eating together.

"Say cheese!!" She held the camera like she was taking a selfie and Amir gave a blank face peace sign, Alexandra stuck her tongue out while Mercedes giggled.

The two older girls saw their parents talking to each other and Arisa quickly snapped a photo, well two. She had taken multiple ones because she made them into a photo album for Mercedes and her mother as a gift. It was a last-minute thing, but she was more than happy.

"Ppssst!!" The three turned to see Dominic waving at them from behind the tree.

They went over to him and saw the boy grinning proudly as he held a mug of eggnog that was for the adults.

"I managed to sneak it away from my dad!! So, who wants the first taste of this?!" He said.

The others were a bit nervous till he saw Arisa smirk.

"I shall do it!!" She said as she was given the mug and right when it was about to touch her lips to taste the familiar tangy taste, she has been craving for so long...

"No, you don't!!" Elder Bara's cane came out of nowhere and smacked that mug out of her hands.

Everyone started in shock at the spilled drink till they heard Arisa whimpered and she got a whacking on the head. The others burst out laughing till the Elder raised her cane again and smacked Dominic.
"Seriously??!! You kids are still too young for alcohol!! Be lucky I'm not Temes are else he would have had you kids go back inside!!" Elder Bara grumbled as she walked away.

So much for the drink.....Arisa was internally crying.

- Midnight-

Midnight hit, it was safe to say most of the adults were wasted and the children had opened their presents. Arisa had taken a few photos as a few adults were slow dancing and of course, Miss Charlotte and Sir Jeralt were dancing together. Arisa can almost safely say her father and Mercedes's mother were in love. Oh, part of her prayed her wish of her father finding happiness comes true!! Mercedes was lying next to her, sleeping peacefully on the blankets that were set up near the fire. And like before, Amir and Alexandra were also asleep. Mercedes smiled faintly as she hugged tighter the photo album that was gifted to her by Arisa.

"Emile...." she muttered softly, and Arisa smiled sadly as she pulled the blanket closer to her.

It was even cuter sight because a few woolly bugs had come by and were sleeping on the girls or next to them. Arisa looked up to the sky, the snow falling began to sing softly.

This feeling, it's strange, isn't it?

It's almost as though it came fluttering down from the sky

The color of this special season fills me with excitement

From the moment we met

The melody of my heart has been ringing with premonitions

It can’t be stopped, it won’t be stopped -- why?

Ring out

Shall I name this heart-rending pain "Snow halation"?

I can’t wait for our feelings to resonate; it’s frustrating, but it’s a pure-hearted devotion called love

Even in this mild fever, I can’t hesitate

I'll accept the courage to dive in; it's about to start!
Without a sound, nor a sign
Our fate changes silently
At the thought of the coming future, my heartbeat quickens

When you feel troubled
I’ll come running right away, wanting to hug you tightly
Wherever you are, no matter where, I'll Fly high!

Hurry up
Before I knew it, my true emotions grew too large to contain
It's painful to never do more than dream of it
I want you to be mine!
I don't want to be bewildered by your gentle eyes
Accept all my love for you as it is, Please!

Ring out
Shall I name this heart-rending pain "Snow halation"?
I can’t wait for our feelings to resonate; It’s frustrating, but it’s a pure-hearted devotion called love
Even in this mild fever, I can’t hesitate
I’ll accept the courage to dive in; it's about to start!

Sothis smiled softly she made herself comfortable between Arisa's legs and the girl hugged her from behind.

"Like always, excellent singing. A beautiful song that hold the meaning of love, strength and devotion but also the spirit of the holidays." Sothis giggled and Arisa nodded.

"Looking back at this year," Arisa spoke, "we met so many new people. We went through hard times. We got to learn more about ourselves and who you are." Arisa said, referring to Emily.

Sothis smiled sadly and nodded.

"It’s faint but I know that girl is my daughter. Even if she can't see me, I'm happy to know she is doing well. I wonder if the familiar faces in this foggy memory of mine, I shall see them again?" She said and Arisa smiled.
"We will. I'm sure of it. We still have much to learn. So many new people. New places to explore. An adventure that continues on." Arisa grinned and Sothis nodded in approval.

They were looking forward to it. For what the new year and the net ones to come will bring them.

*Just like a new journey, new dangers are ahead. But for tonight, Arisa and Sothis celebrate the day with joy.*

*The journey continues.*

Chapter 19: Back Home: Part 2: Breakthroughs: End

[ -------- ]

*MERRY CHRISTMAS AND A HAPPY NEW YEAR!! I decided to wait till Christmas to release both chapter 18 and 19 as a gift to you all!! Thank you all so much for reading this story. Hard to believe I wrote this in October this year. From a two prototype chapters to now a full story, thank you all.*

*Chapter 20 will be released on New Year's, January 1st. It will be the start of a new arc and, we will be hitting a bit more on the cannon story. Get ready for the next arc because it's going to be an emotional rollercoaster and a gut Puncher.*
In the middle of a lake she stood. The water was pitch black as she stood on the surface of it, the feeling was nothing but ice cold. Bubbles rippled from underneath it's surface, each one that pop, a scream of horror or agony screamed out. Why was she here? It wasn't just her. She felt like she was the goddess. She took a step back, fear creeping into her body. The water then began to turn crimson, no longer did it feel cold, but terrifying. She kept taking steps back as the screams became louder and louder. The crimson water held the smell of iron, it was so overpowering, she felt like vomiting. Human like figures began to rise out of the water, covered in boiled blood. Soulless pure black eyes looked at her in numbers of hundreds. Each one was either a grown man, a woman, even children. Their hands clawed at her dress, leaving their bloody finger stains on it. They cried and wept. Tears of blood fell from their empty eye sockets. Screams and cries held the sounds of gurgling, as if they were choking on their own blood. The girl screamed, horrified but her own scream was a combination of hers and the Goddess.

"Mother....mother...."

"Please help us...."

"Help...help...."

"HELP US MOTHER!!" All the figures boomed at once and she ran for her life, but she didn't make it far.

She screamed as multiple hands came out of the water and grabbed her, pulling her down to the boiled blood lake. She kept reaching out her hand, screaming for someone to help her. But all she saw were cold eyes as they brought down a blade. That's right....

She was experiencing The Death of Goddess.
She had screamed so loud that she bolted awake from her bed. She panted, her body sweating, the red gem on her gold chain had shattered to dust. Her door slammed open and she turned to see her friends and family, all holding weapons, ready to attack an intruder. That scream sounded as if someone killed her.

"ARE YOU ALRIGHT?!" Jeralt said worried as he had his lance ready to defend his daughter and looked over to her after Florencio stepped out of the way.

Why did Sandy have an iron skillet instead of her daggers? His daughter usually tied her hair into two braids before she went to bed but right now it was a complete mess. The girls were just so tired from yesterday's brutal training with Hana that she just went to sleep like that. Her brown colored hair that faded for teal had grown so much longer that it spilled a bit on the floor. Looks like she needs to cut it.... again. Bloody hell, it grew longer again.

"I'm...alright...everyone....." she muttered quietly through her hair since it was also lose over her face, she had her hair down, basically looking like the grudge at the moment.

"What was that?! This is the 3rd time this month you have woken up screaming like someone killing you!!!" Her friend, a Duscur girl with shoulder length pink silver hair, gray colored eyes, and was currently wearing a sleeveless shirt and pajama shorts, said as she placed her left hand on her waist and lowered the kitchen knife she got a hold of running to her room.

"You're going to see Elder Bara!!! I'm sure she can help you out!!" Her second friend with dark blue hair tied in side ponytail, antenna like feathers on her head, and wore a black t-shirt and pajama pants said as she placed down the bat she had on the table.

She sighs and groans into her hands as her father walked up to her and gently moved her hair out of her face, revealing tried brown colored eyes that faded to green.

"Byleth, I don't think you should go on your journey in this condition. Having these nightmares may be an omen after all." Jeralt said and he saw her eyes narrowed, which wasn't a good sign.

"It's 8 in the morning and I'm not having this argument with you again dad. I'm going and that is final." She said kicked the blanket off her bed and jumped off.

She walked up to Amir, extended her hand to give her the kitchen knife, which the girl was hesitant about because seeing all her hair.

"Arisa....what a------" that question was answered by Florencio's horrific scream as Arisa took the knife from her hands, grabbed a good portion of her hair, sent magic into it, and cut a good chunk off.

Arisa's long hair that once spilled to the floor, was now at the length of her mid waist. The forest colored haired girl stabbed the kitchen knife into her wooden table and glared at the mirror, her own reflection. She looked so tired and worn out. Arisa sighed as she turned to her family. This was not her. She should not be acting this way. Why is she acting this way?
"I'm sorry......these.... I'm just...." she buried her face in her hands again.

Her emotions have just been out of control lately and everyone could see it was now starting to take a real toll on her. Jeralt gently patted her head and nodded.

"If you need to talk, don't hesitate to. Come on, get yourself ready. We're going to see Elder Bara." He said and the girl nodded, refusing to look at any of them right now.

Arisa felt ashamed. She felt like she was a child all over again who had no control of their emotions. Was the effect of reliving puberty all over again doubled? She felt...like a total bitch. Sandy sighed as she picked up the cut locks of hair carefully and spoke.

"I'll prepare some green tea with sugar cane. It should help you relax." Her aunt said softly, and the girl nodded as she went to her bathroom and shut the door.

Everyone sighed as they left her room, Alexandra looked around. Not much has changed but Arisa's room has grown much fuller. She had bookshelves on all the walls, each one filled with books, her desk was littered with papers, paint brushes in wooden cups, a drawer next to it filled with papers, sketch books, paint, ink, and trinkets. One shelf was protected with a magic barrier because it displayed her collection of teacups, she had collected over the years along with other things. Her other desk that was used for making potions had a pile of 7 books, all about medicine. And on her door hung was a dream catcher she made with a calendar.

"Hoot."

Alexandra extended her arm to let Feh land on her. The snowy owl had grown beautiful with beautiful white feathers that had small bits of silver.

"Feh.....only you seen what Arisa is going through. Sigh...Sothis and her are becoming one at extremely slow process. Even more now that she wields a Heroes Relic. Just like...Cirina and I....." Alexandra sighed as Feh looked into her once Azure eyes, that now faded to a blood red.

Feh chirp and the girl gently petted her. Today felt like it was going to be long.

---

She just sat still in the warm steaming water, letting the scent of lavender make her tense body relaxed and her sore muscles heal. Arisa hugged her knees as she stared at nothing.

"I'm so sorry I'm making you go through this.....It is faint but this is exactly what I went through growing up before I came to this world." Arisa heard Sothis's voice and looked up, seeing the goddess in her usual regalia, looking at her worried.

"I'm seeing your memories.... I'm living through them.....war......" Arisa mumbled as her eyes held a glare, but not towards the goddess, but the ones responsible killing "her".

"Do not let my anger control you." Sothis said as she let herself sink into the water even if she felt
nothing, "My anger, the anger and sorrow of my people, do not let it control you. Do not let it blind you." She said as the two girls held hands.

"Sothis......it hurts........." Arisa said as she finally let her tears fall, "It hurts....seeing them killed....it hurts......it feels like they are family.....it hurts.......part of me is in denial even if I had known the truth before I came to this world...yet......now experiencing something that was nothing but fiction where I originally came from....it hurts...." she whimpered.

Sothis smiled softly as she hugged the girl to her chest.

"I know Arisa....I know....."

- 2 hours later -

After two hours in her bathroom to the point someone thought she had drowned herself, Arisa emerged from her room, fully dressed in a white button up long sleeve shirt with a long black skirt. On her waist, was her rapier version of the Sword of the Creator, sheath in a special one made of umbral and wootz steel to hide its power and appearance, her purse, and her hair was put in a high ponytail with the green ribbon that was gifted to her, the loose part of the ponytail was braided, stopping just below her waist line, her usual long bangs but her right one was braid with a blue ribbon. She wore black boots with black tights, and one earring that was the shape of a star and the other was the moon and sun. On her neck were the two charms from Dadga. In her hands, was her gold chain that she hopes can repaired. She walked to the kitchen, there she saw everyone eating, and they turned to look at her.

"Morning. Feeling better?" Florencio asked as he took a bite from his bread and the girl nodded.

"I am actually. But I still think would be best to see Grandma. Yawwwnnn..." the girl yawned as she grabbed the first thing in her sight, a Zanado fruit.

It was a four-star shaped fruit with yellow skin but when you cut it open, the flesh was green. In this case, the girl always ate it like it was an apple. The taste reminded her of a combination of apples, cherries, pomegranates and kiwis, which happen to be her favorite fruits. It was extremely rare go even be able to get your hands on this fruit but since she got lucky in getting her hands on a fruit 2 years ago and kept the seeds to grow, in Florencio's green house that was built, they grew 5 rare Zanado fruit trees along with hundreds of rare herbs. The girl took a bite out of it, squealing at the fruity, tart and citrus taste, chewed and spit out the seeds into a napkin before swallowing.

"You still save the seeds?" Amir said as she took a sip of her orange juice.

"Of course, I do. We need to them to grow a few more trees. Also, please tell me we didn’t ran out of sugar cane cider?" She said and Jeralt chuckled.

"No, we haven't. It's too early to be drinking that so go serve yourself breakfast. We'll be going to Elder Bara in a bit." He said, she nodded as she sat next to Alexandra and reached for a piece of toast.

"Whoa...." the girl said as she looked at Arisa's hand, her nails were...pointy.
Arisa looked and just slammed her head on the table. These changes are becoming too much for her.

"FOR FUCKS SAKE!!"

"LANGUAGE YOUNG LADY!!"

[-----]

It felt like she was getting slammed multiple times by a wrecking ball. The first phase was that Sothis's sleeping habits are now a part of her, the second one was that some of her speech pattern has changed but thankfully not to the point people think she's cocky. At most, "Yes, I suppose", or "Atone at once!", or "Hmmm....Is that so." Usually that side of her came out during battle. These past 5 years have just been a whole new phase of changes in her body that it was just so annoying. Her hair keeps growing longer, her chest is a bit bigger than usual (maybe that's normal but damn the melons she has), more curves, her nails are growing unnaturally long that she must cut them multiple times a week. Her singing has greatly improved but she must be careful because she accidentally put the entire village sleep by accident one time. She had unconsciously fused magic with her voice and now she fears she is literally a siren. She has an unnatural craving for sour things. Other than growing and becoming a damn horny teenager all over again, her hormones are just......out of control. She's bi, and thankfully her father already knew because apparently her mother was the same. Arisa has hit on girls, but thankfully nothing like Sylvian. Nah, just cute comments and small flirts, something she is beyond grateful for. Let us not forget that at this age, most teenagers are looking at porn in her old world. She still has her guilty pleasure of reading erotica novels. The worst of all, around March in 1171 her Crest activated in the middle of a battle and fully displayed itself. Arisa was just horrified that it showed itself and worst of all, her father, Sandy, Florencio and the team they had that day, Acia, Helena, Ares and Yofos, witnessed it. Ares already knew she had a Crest but the rest...did not. Like usual, her father made the team swear silence, that they would not say a word about it. Since then, Arisa had developed a spell that could hide her crest from all kinds of magic tools and make it look like she has a Major Crest of Serios at most. Her strength and magic have been increasing at a rapid pace, thankfully she learned to control it quickly, thanks to Hana's instructions. She mastered Daylight, took two years and another two years to master Moonlight.

"What's next.....turning into a dragon....." Arisa whispered she was walking behind her father, but she froze.

She remembered that Byleth did have that ability, to turn into a dragon like Rhea but...that would completely abolish her humanity and make her descend to godhood.

"No, no, no, no!!!! I don't want to lose my humanity!!" She mentally screamed as she looked at the worried Sothis, who spoke.

"Now, one moment." Sothis said as she floated in front of her, "The blood of the sky dragon, runs
through your veins, but even if you are able to turn to such, your body would not be able to properly handle it. You'll go on a rampage and be out of control. The urges to destroy. The most you could do is turn to one temporary like those characters you written in your books. *Manakete*, right?" Sothis said and Arisa mentally answered her back.

"Yes, and those stories are real. Just like we came from different worlds, those stories, the people in them, do exist but in different worlds, far away from this one. And the few we have met, are different versions of them. Sigh...I wonder if Beast stones or dragon stones exist in this world because I would gladly like one out of emergency." Arisa said as they reached Elder Bara's house.

"Quick question," Sothis said as she floated next to her friend, "how old is Elder Bara?" She asked.

"95 years old and still kicking." Arisa said back and Jeralt knocked on the door.

"I'm coming, I'm coming!!" They heard a muffled yell and the door open, about six woolly bugs flew out and Elder Elder Bara was there covered in wool.

Arisa and Jeralt just looked at the woman with wide eyes, while Zach came out panting.

"Sorry Captain!! Was helping my grandmother with a couple positions." He said and he was covered in leaves of different colors.

"Cough...it's alright. Elder Bara," he turned to her, "I need your help. Its Byleth. This is the 3rd time this month she has woken up screaming as if someone is murdering her. The nightmares seem to be getting worse." He said and the old woman turned to her and looked her up and down.

Arisa still had those two streaks of white hair that never went away. She pulled out her gold chain and showed the old woman that gem had shattered completely. Zach whistled.

"Damn.....That is...not a good sign...." he said and screeched when Elder Bara poked him in the ribs with her wooden cane.

"Only Byleth may come in. The rest of you, stay out!! And you!" She pointed her wooden cane to Zach, who quickly put his arms up in defense, "Go find a wife!!! I want great grandchildren!" She said and Arisa gave him a pat on the back, with a "good luck" smile.

Inside the house was nice and cozy, the scent of herbs filled the place along with coffee. There were different things from Brigid and Dadga, artifacts that represented the culture of shamanism, she blinked multiple times at the strange green stone displayed in a glass case. Its surface was blurry but she could tell something was in it. Some sort of image.

"Ifi, could you please bring us some rose bud tea?" Elder Bara said to a female fae, a silky, who smiled kindly and nodded as she went to the kitchen to get the tea tray and snacks.

Ifi, is her name and apparently, she has been serving Zach's family for generations, but they always treat her as family. The two walked to a wooden table and Arisa sat across from her.

"You been going through a wave of things, haven't you?" Elder Bara said and Arisa nodded.

"It's......troubling....." Arisa said as she let go of a sigh.

"I know dear...It's quite common really. Especially for those of us who are connected into the flow of magic. What you are experiencing is not only the usual puberty change but also, a sync." She
"A sync?" Arisa said confused and the Elder chuckled.

"It means that the spirit protecting you and your soul are resonating, becoming one. You are experiencing memories of their past life, as if you are them." She said and saw the girl frown a bit, "But it is not a bad thing. It means you are growing. Your power is growing, as well as your soul. The world around us changes, but it is up to you. As you grow, you change. And as you change, you also grow. My dear, embrace who you are, no matter what changes are coming your way." She said with a warm smile and Arisa smiled sadly.

Ifi arrived with a tray with two wooden mugs filled with rose hip tea and plate filled with madeleines covered with honey. She placed them down on the table and Arisa took out from her bag a few caramels and handed it to her. Ifi smiled and nodded, it was Arisa's way of thanking her.

The silkie excuses herself and the two women begin talking again.

"I'm worried Grandma......what if my power goes out of control again? I don't want to accidentally put the entire village to sleep again." She said and Elder Bara laughed.

"Oh, that was quite the show!! You were in full panic, running around. Thankfully, I was with Florencio in his medical shop and the barrier protected us. After we finally calmed you down and the spirit also, we had you sing again but this time with the intention to wake everyone up." She laughed wholeheartedly and Arisa pouted, that day was embarrassing.

"I still regret it......" she pouted with her arms crossed.

"Now dear," Elder Bara smiled softly, "three more days till your birthday and leaving off on your coming of age ceremony. What do you plan to do?" Elder Bara said.

"I plan to go to The Church of Serios and take the Holy Magus exam." Arisa said, not breaking eye contact.

The Elder was silent as she studied the girl quietly. She can see hundreds of small wisps of souls surrounding the girl, many held good intentions to protect this child. She knew that the spirit that has been watching the girl since her day of birth has passed down its power to her. It was a heavy burden, almost as if the weight of the world was on this girl's shoulders. She closed her eyes, stood up from her chair, walked towards the blue colored stone in a glass case, and gently took it out.

"Many years ago," her back was facing the girl, " during my younger days, I used to travel around the lands near Fodlan." She smiled softly, "There was a young woman I met in Srêng, in a place in the middle of a desert, in ancient ruins. She wore ancient attire, yet she looked so young, no older than 25. I had heard stories of a young maiden living in the deserts of Srêng. There, she lived with a Beast called, The Wind Caller. I was quite a fool back then, challenging the beast for the treasure he protected. But...I lost that challenge." She laughed as she turned to the girl, the stone in her hands.

"However, unlike the previous bandits who tried to steal the treasure, I also learned they were after that young maiden. Hmphm." She said as she began to walk back to her chair, " I see no point. I can tell that girl was happy there with the Beast that called himself Macuil. 'I lost the battle, so I shall leave. Thank you. Seems I have yet to earn the right to even lay my eyes on such treasures.' I said. Haha. I can never forget the shocked faces the two had at my words. I may have lost the battle, but I learned a valuable lesson that day. After I have healed, I got up and about to leave till that young
woman called out to me." She sat down on her chair and took a sip of her tea.

Arisa and Sothis were silent as they heard the old woman's story. It was rare for Elder Bara to talk about her past, especially her travels.

"Thank you...you're the first human to have respected us. Many have come only for the promise of gold or to try and take me away from my home. I.....please accept this." The young woman named Melody said as she handed me this stone. I was shocked, and honestly about to protest because I could not simply accept something of such value. It did not feel right. But...hahaha.....Macuil scoffed and turned his back towards me before he spoke." She said, remembering his words.

"Just accept it. No use protesting. Hmph, perhaps you humans haven't fallen as low as I thought. Now get out of our sight and never come again." He said and after that, I full on witness a lover's quarrel. Hahaha!! The way she scolded him for using his tone on me and the look of defeat he had!! He didn't want to hear any more, so he picked her up with his tail and flew off with her. The poor woman yelling to him, "THIS ISN'T OVER!! WE'RE NOT FINISHED TALKING!!" hahaha!!" She said and the two chuckled.

"That stone...it holds a lot of memories." Arisa smiled softly and the Elder chuckled.

"It does, but..." she smiled as she stood once more and gently picked up the girl's hands, placing the green stone in them, "I believe it will have a better purpose with you my dear." She said and Arisa looked at her shocked.

"Elder Bara, I can't accept this!! This was given to you!! Not me!! I can't accept something that has so much importance to you!!" Arisa protected till she was flicked on her forehead.

"No use protesting with me either. The gold chain is now too weak to protect you, but this," you touched the stone, "it can. Send a bit of your magic into it," Elder Bara said.

Arisa was hesitant but Sothis nodded. The girl gulped as she touched the stone, a small wave of magic flowing through her fingers to it.

It pulsed. The stone glowed a mixture of blue and green, it felt as if it was pulsing, like heartbeat.

"It's warm...." Arisa muttered as she felt a warm sensation filled her, as she held it to her chest, it almost felt like a weight was lifted off her shoulders.

Elder Bara smiled as she held the girl's hand.

"I know you can do it dear. Never be afraid of who you are." She said and the girl smiled softly.

"Thank you...for believing in me."

With the stone hanging on her chest, Elder Bara had it made into a necklace. Despite the stone being the size of her heart, the girl swore to protect it with her life. Arisa smiled as she walked back
to her home, and opened the door, her basket she carried filled with treats that Elder Bara gifted her for her journey. She raised an eyebrow seeing the place was empty and walked into the kitchen, a note on the table next to a bowl of freshly picked Zanado fruits. She picked it and read it.

"We'll be back around late at night. There was an emergency at a nearby village. Don't worry, Amir already gave Red Hare his food, and is currently using him. Puka isn't exactly happy about it. Feh is with Alexandra helping the hunting group along. I just hope Falco doesn't burn down a tree again. Take this day off. I hope everything went well with Elder Bara kiddo. Take care.

- Jeralt (Dad)

Arisa smiled softly as she put the letter down on the table. She let go of a sigh as she looked around the house.

"It has been awhile since it's been cleaned. Hmm..." she placed the basket down and the palm her hands glowed, brooms, mops, feather dusters and broom pan floated, as if they were alive. She smiled to them.

"Help me clean the place up please." She said and off the went to clean the place.

Arisa was going to clean Florencio's room; the place was a disaster. She walked down the hallway and to his room, opened the door and nearly screamed because all the books and papers all over the place, not to mention also clothing.

"I feel like I just walked into Manuela's room." Arisa said and far away, the said songstress, sneezed.

The girl sighed as she walked to the window, opened the curtains, opened the windows, she screeched when a couple of woolly bugs flew out along with a few fae.

"Really Florencio.....?" She groans as the sunlight illuminates the room.

The floor scattered with papers and books; the wall next to the maple wooden desk had papers taped all over with notes written on them. The desk was littered with open books, which was a crime already. Clothing piled on the desk chair; the shelves unorganized. She questioned how the hell it was possible that he kept his medical shop completely clean and organized yet his room was a total mess. She sighed one more as she began to pick up books and start cleaning the place.

- 1 hour later -

It's been an hour of cleaning and it felt like it would never end. Meanwhile, the rest of the house was done thanks to her magic. It felt like she was in her brother's room all over again.

"Aarrghhh!! Really Florencio!!" She smacked down Florencio's slipper on a cockroach and you could hear the "pop!".
Sothis grimaced and was grateful the girl wasn't afraid of bugs (except spiders) unlike her. The
goddess looked around, bored, till she spotted something strange. A black colored book that was
partly opened but.... there was something inside it.

"How odd..." she said, and Arisa finished killing 4 cockroaches, and turned to her, confused.

"What's wrong?" Arisa said as she looked towards the direction Sothis floated to.

The goddess pointed at the black book and Arisa walked over to it and picked it up.

"It's a Black Magic grimoire. Even I have one." She said and opened it but was thrown off to see
something inside it.

It was a glass tablet. The girl took it out, confused as she just stared at it. It literally was just a
tablet size piece of glass with a strange 2-millimeter rectangular hole on it's right side.

"The hell is this?" Arisa muttered as she looked back into the book and saw a folded piece of
paper.

She took it out and unfolded it, nearly dropping the damn tablet in shock as she stared at the high
advance futuristic map. This map was very similar to the ones she would look up online when she
would write fan fiction back when she was 14 in her old world.

"This map...like it was made using programs like Photoshop, InDesign and others. Why does
Florencio have this...? Then...." she stared back at the glass tablet, "could this be.... advanced
technology?" Arisa muttered as her body was shaking, a crooked smile forming her face as she
began laughing nervously, Sothis thinking she was going mad.

Arisa put the map and tablet back, closed the book, shoved it into her magic purse, and decided to
finish cleaning the room. Which unfortunately took another 2 hours. She was cursing a mountain of
profanities in Spanish while she cleaned.

[-------]

"So, out of safety measures, you decide to warp yourself to the cave, 8 hours away from the village,
in case this thing has something that could track people down?" Sothis said as Arisa had small ball
of fire floating near them to illuminate the place.

This caved she discovered around 10 years ago. It also happened to be the cave she had
accidentally warped herself when she failed miserably trying her first warping spell. Yeah, her
father was worried sick when they couldn't locate her till the hours later thanks to Elder Bara's cat
familiar.

"I'm not risking the village getting tracked down, even if it can't be tracked because of the barrier
Florencio has over it." Arisa said as she took out the book and opened it.

Carefully taking out the tablet, she studied it for a moment, searching for a power button but there
was none. She grumbled but, maybe sending a bit of her magic into it will work. She did that and
nothing.

"Are you kidding me--oww!!" She had accidentally cut her finger on the side of the tablet, a drop
of blood fell in the center and...the tablet instantly activated, nearly making her drop it from screaming.

She quickly healed the cut, both her and Sothis stared at the device in shock. A hologram screen appeared, showing multiple files, and ancient lettering but of course, she knew these letterings because they were like the language of Fodlan.

"So, blood.........Claude wasn't kidding when he said Agarthans love using blood." She muttered.

"This is going to refresh my brain...it's been 11 years since I used technology from my old world." She thought and began tapping and scrolling through the things.

How she wished Christian was with her because he was a hacker back in her old days. There were system settings up and quickly checked it, everything on how to use a tablet, a computer and such was coming back to her. Thankfully there was no tracking device in this thing, nor did it send a signal because it was disconnected. She's going to hack this thing, one way or another and forcefully make it work on her terms. A hologram keyboard appeared and like in her old days, from the basic hacking skills her brother taught her, her fingers were a blur. Thank the Virgen de Guadalupe she took coding classes with Theresa!

"But.....why does Florencio have this....?" Arisa muttered.

Meanwhile, Sothis had scowl on her face as she sat down on a bolder, watching the girl working on this strange thing. She hated it. She had this deep resentment looking at that "tablet". Perhaps it in the past, the one who created it, hurt her. She didn't even know if she wanted answers.

"GOT IT!" Arisa's joyful yell the Goddess snap out of it.

Arisa basically made the tablet her personal (bitch) device. She hacked it completely, thankfully the security system on this thing wasn't as advanced as the ones from Earth. Meaning, she can safely have this thing online without ever being tracked down. But right now, she was looking at hundreds of digital documents. She remembered Florencio told her many years about that he used to work in the underground black market. Countless documents of nobles, regular people, and higher ups alike, request to have them killed. Documents on poisons, weapons, even worse, gruesome descriptions of deaths and how they died. Arisa felt sick but this information......at the same time could help her. She looked at a classified document and clicked it. Inside were digital documents of higher officials from the church, age, birthdate, if they had a Crest or not.

"Shit.....there is also record of family trees....information regarding Crest also..." she muttered and saw one particular name in the list.

Serios

Arisa made quick look to Sothis, who nodded. The girl took a deep sigh as she clicked it, hundreds if not thousands of documents regarding Rhea popped out. Arisa frowned as she closed it. It would take her months to go through that information. She took out her small owl necklace, popped off the head, taking out the USB flash drive. She plugged it in, the same process she just did to make sure no one could track her down, seeing information on Crest and bloodlines. Part of the information was coded while the other part she could read. The details were...gruesome that she
had to run behind a boulder to vomit. Sothis was silent as she watched the girl gasping for air and grinned crookedly.

"I bloody hate you.....Those Who Slither in the Dark........" she muttered as she looked back to the holographic screen, the image of Alexandra and Lord Alexander was there...along with information of the children nobles and adults with Crest.

Dimitri, Edelgard, Claude, Brenadetta, Ingrid, Linhardt......basically all her students and adults she will meet in the future that had Crest. Even information regarding her father, aunt and uncle. Sandy and Florencio marked as traitors.

"You uncle and aunt.......seems before they met your father.... they were part of that horrific group..........Arisa......." Sothis muttered as she saw the girl gritting her teeth, her body shaking.

"Don't jump to conclusions...." Arisa muttered to herself as she stared at the images of Sandy and Florencio.

Marked as traitors...meaning they left when they met her father. They chose to leave, despite the targets on their backs. Meaning...

"They chose to change for their sake and the people they met." Sothis said as she hugged the girl like usual.

"Arisa....I'm glad you suddenly didn't jump to conclusions.......many would have and rush out on impulse.... yet you managed to control your emotions....even if just barely. You did well child. You did well." Sothis said and Arisa was shaking out both anger and sorrow.

"I can't face them now.... not after...seeing this...." Arisa muttered.

"You don't have too..."

Instantly, she took out The Sword of the Creator (Rapier version) and swung it, just barely stopping a few inches from Florencio's glasses. The purple haired man was silent as he saw the cold glare his niece was giving him. He knew, she was furious, angry, a wave of emotions he saw the girl radiating.

"Florencio......what are you doing here?" She hissed coldly, and he saw the tips underneath her fingers freeze the ground underneath.

His heart ached. The way she said his name was filled with venom, not kindness and love. She always called him Uncle......yet the way she said his name, was as if she was looking at trash.

"We returned early, and your father was impressed by how clean you left the house. I was more shocked to see my room clean...and noticed a book missing." He said calmly as he was trying not to provoke her.

"Hmphm....." she said and lowered her sword she stood up, picking up the tablet, shutting it down, and shoved the thing into her bag.

"I'm not giving this back." She said coldly and he sighed.
"Byleth, do you have any idea what that thing is? The danger you are putting yourself in if someone other than us in the village discovers it?" He said and Byleth spoke.

"I do know what it is, and I know the dangers. I know how to work it." She said.

A tense one-minute silence followed till she spoke again.

"Back when I was four years old... you were telling the truth......" she muttered, and he stiffened a bit as she looked up to him, "tell me everything. Explain who you and Sandy really are." Arisa hissed.

"Very well then. But this is going to take a while."

I minute turned to 1 hour and 1 hour turned to 2. 2 hours turned to 4 and 4 hours turned 6. Arisa had mixture of emotions when Florencio revealed his past to her. The goddess was silent as she listened to the man tell his story. How he originally was from the Empire, to finding out he was Varley. To how he ended up becoming an Assassin just have some form of money to survive. To how he became part of Those Who Slither in the Dark, how he met Sandy to years later, meeting Jeralt. Becoming part of the Church of Serios, meeting his wife, everything. The girl was hugging her knees, sobbing as he finished talking, the man smiled sadly as he placed his hand on her shoulder.

"I hope you understand. If you don't want to see me or Sandy ever again I und----!!!" The girl suddenly hugged him tightly, he was not expecting that.

He expected her to snap at him, wish him and Sandy to leave. Call them cowards and monsters for the things they have done, yet here she is, accepting him and his sister.

"Yes, I'm still pissed you and Aunty hid all this!!" Arisa admitted, "But I understand...I really do.....after all..."the past and present make you who you are today."" She said and his eyes went wide.

"Curse you." He chuckled as he hugged her back, "Using my own words against me." He said and she let him go and he wiped her tears.

"Look at you, you'll be 15 in 3 days yet.....ever since I first saw you show emotions 11 years ago....I feel like I'm talking to a grown adult. Funny...guess that saying is true. Children are wiser than they look." He said and she smiled.

"Uncle, I'm still not giving the tablet back. I think....It will help me, more than you realize." Arisa said and he smiled sadly.

"I know. Byleth.....I trust you with it. Just....be safe. And, good luck on the exam, Miss Kiana Kalsana." Florencio said.

- 3 Days Later -
"You got your medicine supplies?" Florencio said as he spoke up to the girl who sat on Red Hare's saddle.

"Of course." Arisa said with a smile as she looked over to her father.

"Feh, watch over her." Jeralt said as the snowy owl on her shoulder chipped and flapped her wings proudly.

"Please take me with you!!" Alexandra said and Amir rolled her eyes.

"Alexandra, you still got one year to wait." The Duscurian girl said and the blue haired one glared her way.

"You just returned from your journey 2 months ago!! You still had till next January!" Alexandra said back.

"That's because I took care of business in Duscur!" Amir argued back.

Arisa laughed from on top of her horse as she watched Alexandra arguing with Amir. Today was her 15th birthday and her coming of age ceremony. She had chosen to go on a one-year journey. Today she leaves till her 16th birthday, when she returns.

"Hard to believe it has been 7 years since you saved Alexandra." Sothis said as she appeared and hugged her from behind.

"Hehe. It sure has been a lot." Arisa smiled.

Arisa wore a black cloak that was a bit like Robin's from Awakening. She wore a nice loose pants that she could easily move around in. On her waist strapped, was her rapier. On her back, was strapped her bow. Red Hare had grown a lot bigger that he technically was now the leader of the horses and pegasus in the village. Even Falco had grown a lot. He was the size of a regular Male wyvern but had beautiful black scales that almost looked like jewels. The wyvern was still growing. She looked around and saw everyone from the village and her father's company, and her family, all have come to see her off.

"Make sure to send letters to us, to make sure you're still alive." Sandy said as she gave the girl a parcel that had extra clothing and daggers.

"Of course, I will. Also, this is a celebration for the successful sales of my books!!" Arisa grinned.

"I swear that, "Fire Emblem Series" and King Arthur and the Knights of Camelot so many people liked it that it was sold out all around Fodlan!!! But don't go crazy overboard on spending that money on food!!" Sandy scolded her.

Arisa was finally able to decide to publish at least the first three games of the series in the form of books. She never thought it would become so popular in this time. The girl internally sighed. She felt a bit free. The share the stories from her world to this one. And she will continue to do it.

"Make sure to brush your teeth!!" Florencio said and she rolled her eyes but chuckled.

"Alright alright!!" Arisa said and turned to her father, who looked like he was trying not to cry.

"Dad, please take care." She said with a sad smile

"I will. You take care too, kiddo." Jeralt said as he quickly wiped the lone tear that fell.
He sent a glare to his men, who were smirking and instantly they went away. She got down and gave everyone one last hug before she left. Elder Bara wishing her good and to find a suitable worthy husband or wife, which sent Jeralt saying "absolutely not!!". Dominic, who was now ten years old, gave her a dagger, which was a gift from and Ares. The women from Sandy's team packed her enough food to last her an entire 2 months, and many other gifts from the villagers. It was a bittersweet moment. Sothis could not help but cry as she hugged Alexandra and Amir, the girls hugging her back but also Arisa, who was going to miss them.

"Bye!!"

"Take care!!"

"Make sure to bring back some awesome ale!!"

"You idiot she's not 18 yet!!"

The entire village said their goodbyes and blessings as Arisa waved to them. As she turned to look at the horizon of the first sun rise, she slightly frowned.

"What's wrong?" Sothis said.

"I made up my mind. There are a few things I want to do before I head off to Shambhala. Sothis, can you train me even harder? Don't hold nothing back." She said as she lightly whipped the reins, Red Hare neighed loudly as he spread his wings, and took off into the sky. Arisa smiled sadly as she saw everyone becoming smaller as they waved goodbye to her. Sothis smirked and the wind began to blow as she gave Arisa a smile that held many years of knowledge.

"Are you sure about that?" She said with a small smirk.

The goddess has learned a lot these past years.

"I am." Arisa said.

"Alright then. Hope you don't regret those words." Sothis smiled.

"I probably will but I'll take my chances." Arisa said.

"Fair enough. So, what are you planning to do? Where are we heading to first?" Sothis said.

Arisa smiled but used her magic to change her eye color to brown and her hair to complete black color. Her hair had become short to just under her ear. She made her bangs go to the right and cover her right eye, and a blue spider lily hair brooch on the right side of her head. She put away the ribbons and her Lily hair pins into her purse, along with her earrings and necklaces. She changed her earrings to a pair of blue gems that were the shape of quail eggs. She nodded and looked once more to the horizon. This journey, she had 5 main goals, and was going to do everything in her power to make sure they were done, to create the change that is needed. She took
a deep breath and turned to Sothis who nodded.

"We're going to Garreg Mach."

Chapter 20: The New Road: Part 1: Soul

Welcome to the arc of 2020!! Also, I have an actual drawing of how Arisa is dressed. I’m not professional artist but I tried. I’ll be uploading it on my tumblr soon. I’ll putting the link soon!! Happy New Year!
Chapter 21: The New Road: Part 2: Exam

- 2 Days later -

Just on top of a hill with Feh on shoulder and Red Hare, Arisa looked at the Garreg Mach Monastery. The hills held a greenery unlike any other. The monastery reminds her of Notre Dame in Paris. The town near the monastery was lively. She could see knights coming and an out. People of the church also. Children running and playing. Wyverns flying along with more pegasus. Looking at this scenery in person, the artwork from the game did not compare to the real thing.

"It's beautiful....." both her and Sothis whispered as they continued to take in the view. She took out the map she pickpocketed from Beleth 5 years ago and stared at it.

"I have...sigh...I have been wanting to see this place in person with my own eyes. Now seeing it, it's so much more beautiful than seeing it in a game." Arisa said as she closed the map.

Slowly, she rode Red Hare to the Monastery, and smiled as she saw the citizens going around. Before they entered, she used a spell to hide his wings because she I'd not want to be confused as a knight. She got off her horse and walked through the town first before she headed to the Monastery. The place reminded her of how lovely it is during the time in August, since it is almost the end of summer.

"Get you Book of Prayers here!!" A priest yelled from his stand as she walked by.

"Chocolate cakes!!" A baker yelled out from his stall.

"Come get your flowers!! Freshly picked every day!!" A kind plump woman yelled out.

"Feh, Sothis, Red Hare, let's get some flowers to show our respects." Arisa said and walked to the flower shop.

"Hello there!! Young traveler huh? I'm guessing you're in your coming of age journey huh?" The shop lady smirked, and Arisa smiled.

"Yes. I heard a lot about this town from my dad and wanted to come visit. Oh!! Can I get a bouquet of lilies, white rose? Also, I'll buy a few carrots and a bag of dried tuna." She said.

"Of c---- Kasdan get your head out of the book and go get me a new basket of carrots!!" The shop lady suddenly yelled to her son, who was sitting on a crate and reading a book.

"Oh, come on ma!!! Just let me finish this chapter on Morgan le Fey!!" Her son whined as he went back to reading his book.

The woman immediately brought her foot up and removed her sandal to throw at him.

"OKAY!! I WILL!! JUST DON'T THROW IT!!" And her son bolted to get the basket.

"No matter the culture or world I am, the chancla is the one universal thing everyone fears." Arisa sweat drops as Feh chirped.

Sothis was laughing at this as the boy came back panting and handed her a bag of carrots. The shop
lady gave her the flowers along with the fish. Total was 13 bronze coins.

- 20 minutes later -

After getting a proper meal, she had gone to the stables to leave Red Hare there. Of course, the knight guarding the place asked her why she was here, and she responded honestly that she was here to take the medical exam. The man wished her good luck as she handed the reins to him. She also left Feh there with him. Before she went to register for the exam, she decided to visit the cemetery, to see her mother's grave. The girl let go of a shaky sigh as she made her way around the monastery. Everything was amazing, seeing it all in person. Just...the game was nothing compared to the real thing. For now, she avoided going to the cathedral and made her way straight to the cemetery. She saw a couple students there, praying to their loved ones. Arisa and Sothis were silent as they respectfully made their way to one particular grave. She used some magic to clean it up, revealing gold letters engraved into the white marble stone.

In loving memory of Rosa

[???? - 1159]

Arisa sucked in her breath as she stared at the letters and stood still with the bouquet of flowers in her arms. She smiled softly as she placed the flowers down, then back up she stood.

"Hey mom.... I hope you're doing well up there..." she muttered softly and turned to leave to where the registration for the exam is taking place, inside the Black Eagles classroom.

- 10 minutes later -

It was a ten-minute walk to the Black Eagle's classroom. She noticed that there were hardly any students so that meant the semester had yet to start. The girl sees a line of men and women, mostly much older than her. Now that she noticed, there was literally no one her age in line!! She felt eyes on her as she walked to the line, but walked confidently, to not show fear. She stood behind a woman who seemed to be in her mid-30's. She seemed kind.

"Oh! My aren't you young. It is quite rare to see someone your age take the exam." The woman spoke to her and Arisa smiled.

"I have been a doctor for quite some time. I want to test myself and see if I prepared for the next step." She said and the old woman nodded with a warm smile.

"Ha!!" The two turned to see a man with a horrible moustache and smirk, "A child taking this exam is absorbed. Even more since you are commoner girl. Go back to your village and be a good little
girl and play with dolls." The man said.

"And no wonder you are still single." Arisa bluntly said and many snorted or burst out laughing at the response she gave, while the nobleman had turned red with embarrassment and anger.

The old woman chuckled and smirked to her.

"I like you!! What's your name kid?" The woman said as she shook hands with her.

"Kiana Kalsana, nice to meet you." Arisa said and instantly everyone looked at her shocked.

"K-Kiana Kalsana?!!" One man stuttered and Arisa was confused.

"Yes. Is something wrong with my name?" Arisa said and the woman spoke.

"You're the one that made the cure and worked with Doctor Emily to save the people of Galatea Territory five years ago, correct?" The woman said.

"Yes? Emily and I worked together to make medicine. The people were suffering. I couldn't just sit back, and watch lives be lost." Arisa said and the woman hugged her suddenly.

"Thank you, thank you!!" The woman said joyfully, "It's because of you, my husband was able to be cured!! Thank you so much!!" She hugged her tightly and Arisa was just confused.

"Wait, wait!!" Arisa backed away a bit, "I'm happy that your husband was cured but how do you all know my name?" Arisa said and one older man in his late 60's spoke.

"Your quite famous. Based on your reaction, you don't know." He sighed, "After the new antibiotic was used, along with the introductions of new methods a farming, also the practice of washing our hands, your name has spread out all over Fodlan." He explained and the woman spoke again.

"You're a hero in The Kingdom!! How could you not know?!" The woman said.

"I....left to study in medicine Almyra for 3 years and two years in Sreng. I have been traveling around the world. I just recently come back to Fodlan a month ago." She said and a few people began to mutter.

"So," the noble man from before spoke, "you're an outsider?" He said and eyes instantly laid one her.

"What? I was born here in Fodlan!! I'm also a mercenary, thank you very much sir! Of course, I'm going to be travelling!" Arisa said and one of the women in back cheered.

"Yes!! Fellow mercenary!!" She said and Arisa let go of a sigh.

She didn't think making the antibiotic and introducing new practices would make her...famous. Now she's worried she's going to have unwanted attention.

"Alright, everyone in line!!"
Everyone turned to see the one who yelled that, but Arisa froze. She instantly recognized Beleth, because he hasn't aged one bit but this the first time, she is seeing Seteth. The man has sharp dark green eyes, dark green shoulder length hair with a bit of a small beard. He also wore his gold like crown on his head. He wore the blue and gold uniform of the advisor of the Church of Serios. His presence was intimidating. His sharp eyes as he looked at everyone one by one, but only stopped for a split second on her. Everyone instantly got in line as he walked to the entrance of the Black Eagle's classroom, where a table was set. Accompanying the two were also a one of the students that was in training to become a Knight of Serios. Arisa was barely able to recognize her, it was a young Catherine, true name, Cassandra. The 22-year-old woman still had tan skin, blond locks of hair but were let loose to her waist. She wore a similar armor to the one she wears in the future. Arisa thanked the whatever Gods in the sky, that she drank the potion to temporary transform her Crest of one of Serios. Catherine looked at all the people and her eyes stopped on her.

"Seteth," Catherine whispered to him, "the girl with black hair and blue flowers on her head, she has a Crest." She whispered and Seteth nodded.

He turned back to the line and spoke.

"Each of you are to leave your bags on that table," he pointed to a wooden table next to the entrance, "before you enter the classroom. Make sure to have your payment of 2 silver coins ready." He ordered and everyone took out their money.

"You will write register here with Seteth, make sure to alright down where your current stay is so we may inform you if you passed or not. Once done, find an empty seat in the classroom and wait for further instructions." Beleth said and everyone nodded.

Arisa watched as she saw one by one each person pays and register for the exam. Her heartbeat as it was her turn and now stood in front of Seteth.

"Hmm...quite young. You look no older than my sister." He said and Arisa smiled.

"Very well. Register here and place your two silver coins here." He said as he handed her the quill and she place the coins in the golden box.

She wrote down her name as "Kiana Kalsana" along that she is staying in an inn in town. Seteth raised an eyebrow as he looked at the name and then looked back to her. He was silent for a moment and nodded.

"Good luck." Was all he said, and Arisa have a polite bow, which he was confused by, before she went into the classroom.

The class was way bigger, and the tables were set to fit a total of 100 students. She spotted a desk near the warm chimney.

She looked around, seeing two knights set at the entrance. Another two are set outside. 5 minutes passed and the last person was seated. Seteth entered along with Catherine and Beleth but also...she hid her frown, just barely. The smile she had again, when she saw "Tomas". Unfortunately, she couldn't tell if it was actually Tomas or Solon. From what she remembered; Tomas did not return to monastery till 1179 but it could be possible he returned earlier than anticipated just like how Marianne was adopted way before she was 14. The three walked to the front desk and turned their way, to face the class.
"As you all know," Seteth spoke, "you will be taking the Holy Medical Exam to see if you qualify to become a Holy Magus. On your desk, there is a booklet of 100 questions." He said.

Arisa looked down to her desk and saw the book and broke the wax seal keeping it closed.

"50 questions are multiple choice and 50 are to be written by hand." Tomas explained, "You all have 3 hours to complete the exam. We have eyes watching to make sure no one even tries to cheat. No talking during the exam. If you are suspected of dishonesty during the test, you will be eliminated and escorted out." Beleth said.

"Open your books to the first page." Tomas said and everyone did that.

She could already tell by the number of pale faces that many were already thinking they were screwed. She looked at it and raised an eyebrow.

"Ummm....this feels.... just like my medical exam in college." Arisa thought as she picked up her quill.

"You may now begin. May the goddess give all good luck." Seteth said as he and Tomas sat down while Beleth and Catherine walked around, checking everyone.

Arisa was silent as she answered the questions with ease, but she never let herself get cocky because that always brought some sort of doom. 30 minutes turned to 1 hour, and she closed her book and stood up, walked to the front desk. Everyone stared at in shock while Tomas chuckled and Seteth raised an eyebrow as she placed the test in front of them, with her name written on it.

"The last time I saw someone finished first was Emily many years ago." Tomas chuckled and Arisa gave a polite bow.

"Very well then. We will inform you in a day if you passed or not. Good luck and dismissed." Seteth said and she nodded.

She turned to walk to the door, still feeling eyes on her. Once out the door, she closed it, and let her herself fall on her knees.

"Whoa, are you okay!?!?" One of the priestesses quickly ran to her and a knight helped her with Arisa.

No wonder Seteth also had medical staff outside. The knight and priestess helped Arisa up and had her sit down on a bench.

"Here you go." The knight said as he handed her a mug of water, which Arisa gulped down fast.

"Careful girl. Jeez...I know this happens every year but damn....it hurts more seeing a kid go through that." The knight said.

"Even worse since Seteth's presence intimidates everyone. Sigh...good luck kid." The priestess said and gave the girl an apple to eat.

Arisa let go of a sigh and thanked them. The exam was easy, but it was the stares of Catherine and Seteth that were much scarier than the exam. She felt like she was a mouse about to be eaten by a Lion and Dragon. The girl sighed once more she waited for the next two hours, because she wanted to see how that nice lady was doing along with 60-year-old man, plus the mercenary. When
the hours were over, the door opened and out came pouring people shaking, crying, one fainted, and she quickly just barely caught the lady and old man she spoke to earlier. Her fellow mercenary was getting carried by Beleth, the woman was passed out cold.

"Someone help out, please!!" Arisa yelled out and two knights quickly came to help her.

They set down the two on the benches and Arisa was helping hand out water and food to people. Seteth, Catherine, and Tomas blinked multiple times as they saw the young girl running around, helping her fellow doctors but also the medical staff.

"I thought she went home." Catherine said as she crossed her arms and snickered a bit as the girl nearly tripped carrying water to people.

"Whhhhaaa!!!!! Wake up!!" Arisa screeched and quickly put some alcohol in on a napkin, and just gently wafting it over one of the men's nose.

Seteth raised an eyebrow as he saw the man react, and slowly waking up.

"I never seen that method before." Tomas commented as she he studied the girl doing the same to several other people, even using healing magic a couple of times.

"Hmmmm..........." Seteth said as he saw his medical staff thanking the girl for helping them and she just shook her hands frantically, she couldn't just leave behind her fellow doctors, "We'll see the exam results later today." He said and the three walked off, and Beleth quickly followed them.

"You are the ocean's gray waves!!! Ahhhhhhhaaaaahhh~"

Instantly, all four of them turned to see the all the medical examiners glowing green, the tension on their shoulders slowly going away. Many were beginning to relax and turned to see the young girl singing, droplets of water had stopped in midair.

"Aaahhhh ~ Ahhhh ~ " Arisa sung beautiful and Sothis had a smug smirk as many had finally calmed down.

"Such a soothing voice..." Her fellow mercenary muttered softly and pouted when the girl had stopped singing.

Here she was, trying to avoid attention but she can't just leave people in such chaotic states. She never live it down!! The girl dropped her hands and let go of a sigh.

"Everyone okay?" She muttered and everyone nodded, "Thank the goddess..." she said and let go of another sigh.

After that whole ordeal, the girl went to the stables to visit Red Hare. She needed a break.

[ -------- ]

"¿Quién es mi pegaso y búho más hermoso y encantador del mundo?" Arisa cooed in Spanish as
she hugged Red Hare's head gently and Feh was nuzzling her cheek.

The girl could finally relax as she is with her friends. The tension had finally come off her as she hugged her friends. Sothis smiled as she looked around, many of the male horses were looking at Red Hare jealous because the female ones were wooing over him. Plus, he was twice the male horses’ size. A few kinshi, wyverns and griffons in the next-door stables just shook their heads but were also impressed to see the Red Pegasus have a worthy master. Arisa had closed her eyes, taking shallow breaths to relax a bit, only listening to the sound of the animals in the stables. Her eyes opened a bit as she heard footsteps approaching the stables and looked to the door.

"Oh. I thought you went home already kid." It was Catherine.

The older woman blinked multiple times as she saw the huge red brown stallion and the snowy owl on the girl's shoulder.

"Is she from The Kingdom...?" Catherine thought and heard Arisa speak.

"I wanted to spend some time with my friends before I head to the inn I'm staying at." Arisa said as she gently let go of Red Hare.

"Wait, inn? Kid, are you here alone?" Catherine said.

"Yes. I just started my coming of age journey." Arisa smiled and stretched out her hand, "Names Kina Kalsana. I saw you with the advisor and green haired knight at the exams." Arisa said and Catherine chuckled as she shook hands with her.

"Names Cassandra but I usually go by Catherine. Good to see someone so young traveling. Also heard you're a mercenary. Say, quick question." She said and Arisa cocked her head a bit confused, "Have you heard of the legendary trio? The Ice Spirit, The Thunder Hammer and The Ashen Demon? The other name given to the Ashen Demon is Angel of Death because she says a prayer before she takes down her opponents." Catherine said and Arisa blink.

"Were called those names....?! What the hell?" Sothis said and Arisa shook her head.

"I have heard of them but never met them. I have worked with Captain Jeralt before but that's about it." Arisa said.

"Damn. I was hoping I could hear something about them. I love to spar with them one day." Catherine said.

"And she doesn't know she's talking to one right now." Sothis giggled and Red Hare whacked her with his tail.

Arisa had to keep herself from giggling seeing that.

"Say, since you took the exam, care to join me for a drink? My treat. But umm...you are 15 years old right? Just asking to make sure because legal age to drink is 15." Catherine said and Arisa nodded.

"Great!! Maybe we could chat more and get to know each other!" She said and Arisa smiled.

The rest of the day was spent with Catherine talking, getting to know one another and maybe a couple of drinks. Thankfully Arisa had her high alcohol tolerance. Later joining them at the bar,
were a couple of the other doctors. They went a bit crazy but still, it had been a while since Arisa enjoyed hanging out with adults like this. She may have hit on a few men and women, its fun seeing them flustered.

- Late At night: Monastery -

Seteth groans as he carried the fourth pile of test into the magic test scanner and let's go of a sigh as it beeped and turned red, meaning no one passed. This whole week has been nothing but exams and no one was passing.

"Looks like this year we might not have anyone pass...again." Beleth commented as he was busy sealing the letters that will be going to the examiners to inform them, they did not pass.

"This is the final pile. Might as well give up hope at this point." Seteth said as he carried it to the scanner once more.

Each book flipped through one by one, each one beeps, meaning they did not pass. Seteth pinched the bridge of his nose, he was tried and then...

"Ding! Passing."

Instantly the two looked up, shocked, seeing the light green and one book still floating. Their jaws dropped and Beleth nearly accidentally spilled the ink bottle. Seteth picked up the passing book and saw the name.

"Kiana Kalsana. Age 15. She's currently staying at an inn in town." He said.

"Wait, isn't that the girl that was singing earlier this morning?" Beleth said.

"The one Catherine said has a Crest. Hmm...well for now," Seteth could not help but smile warmly, "We must inform your Lady Rhea!! It has been 15 years since we've had new Holy Magus!!" He said but saw Beleth with his hands in a praying position, taking deep breaths.

"What's wrong?" The older man asked.

"Seteth....this is Doctor Snowden all over again." Beleth said that's when it finally hit Seteth.

"By the goddess...shit." it was extremely rare for the Advisor of the Church of Serios, to curse.

Battle of offers 2.0 is on the way.
"I see." Her smile was kind and warm, yet it did not reach her eyes, "I am happy to hear the birth of a new Holy Magus. I'm sure it was by the Goddess's will that this year will be of new surprises." Rhea said as she stood in her office, both Seteth and her son brought the news, but she could see them distressed.

"Is something wrong?" She asked and her son spoke.

"Mother......it's Doctor Snowden all over again!! The one that passed is a 15-year-old girl, also known as the savior of Galatea Territory, Kiana Kalsana!! The number of nobles that will coming to the Kingdom to win her favor...!!" Beleth said and Rhea slightly shook her hand.

"Calm down Beleth. I understand how you feel but this was the girl's choice. Seteth, make sure to prepare the receiving certification ceremony along with the card. Like always, I personally will give the card to the new Holy Magus, and she will also say who she is allied to when she places a drop of her blood in the Holy Spring." Rhea said.

The door to her office opened and in came Lucius.

"Lady Rhea, you summon me?" The young man said.

"Thank you, Lucius. Tomorrow morning, I want you to deliver the news to our new Holy Magus. Beleth will give the address she is staying at along with the letter." She said and Lucius nodded.

[I--------]

"I see....so she passed." In his room in the monastery, Lucius spoke to a crystal ball, where a voice was coming out of it.

"That's right Lady Emily. Tomorrow I deliver the letter and the ceremony is to take place later that day. I shall prepare the warping system to have her safely warped to the Kingdom." He said and the Emily hummed.

"Thank you. Make sure to inform her you're with me. It has been 5 years since I have spoken to her. That is all." Emily said.

[--------]

Knock, knock.

Arisa groans as she got out of her bed and wobbled to the door. She had a bit too much fun last night and now she was having her first hangover in years. She grabbed her cloak and put it on over her nightgown, opened the door. Slammed it shut once she saw another familiar face.

"Ummmm....Lady Kiana?" The feminine male voice spoke a bit confused at the girl's actions and the door opened again, this time she didn't slam it shut like before.
"Sorry...just...a bit tired. Can I help you?" It was Lucius, from The Blazing Blade series.

Well, maybe not exactly him but his counterpart of this world. The man chuckled a bit nervously and spoke.

"I bring a letter from the Church of Serios. Also....." he leaned in and whispered, "Lady Emily has been informed. Meet me later tonight at the forest near the stables. No one is there and the guards usually aren't in that area." He said and her eyes went wide as he handed her the letter.

Arisa was completely sober now and nodded.

"Thank you." She said and he excused himself.

The girl closed the door as she stared at the letter, Sothis appearing, groaning.

"You could at least have stopped drinking at the fourth mug of wine!! Thanks to us being one, I can feel these "hangovers" of yours!!" Sothis grumbled as she finally noticed Arisa looking at the fancy gold letter with the wax seal of Serios.

Arisa opened it and read its contents.

_Congratulations, Miss Kiana Kalsana._

_I bring you good news. You have passed the Holy Magus exam with a score of 100. It had been 15 years since a new Holy Magus was born. Do come dressed appropriately during the mid-day. You will be given your official Holy Magus Card with the seal of the Church of Serios. It has brought me great joy to be awarding you this. May the goddess shine fortune on your future and protect you._

- Archbishop Rhea

"BREATHE, BREATHE, BREATHE, BREATHE!!" Sothis began screaming to poor Arisa, whose heart rate escalated a milestone and the girl had dropped the letter in shock.

Arisa passed out there on the floor, from both shock, horror, and utter joy.

- Hours Later: Midday-

Dressed in the nice yet simple blue summer dress with her blue cloak, Arisa walked behind Catherine, who was laughing.

"Goodness, it's been ages since I had so much fun!!! For just barely 15 years old, you have a high alcohol tolerance!! Kid, also that "margarita??" you made is was divine!! After this, I was wondering if you could...make again? Also, my treat as a congratulations for passing!!" Catherine grinned as the two made their way to the Cathedral.
The girl stopped for a moment, looking out the lake from the bridge. She smiled softly as she saw a couple of fish swimming then continued.

Inside the Cathedral was the typical grand Holy Church, but today it was decorated with strings, ribbons, and banners of the Church of Serios to celebrate the birth of a New Holy Magus. Catherine quickly excused herself as she made her way towards Lady Rhea to stand next to her. The grand carpet was neatly cleaned for her to walk. She took a deep breath as she began to walk, choirs singing the Holy Songs. The very end where the statue is, Rhea stood there with all her glory. On her right, was Seteth and Catherine, on her left, was Beleth and Flayn. They wore the uniform of the Church of Serios. Arisa could feel her heart beating rapidly and waves of emotions feeling her mind. 1 minute later, she stood before Rhea, her presence was graceful and pleasant, yet Arisa could see that her smile never reached her eyes. Out of instinct and respect, Arisa did a Japanese bow to her Grace.

"It is an honor to meet you Lady Rhea." Arisa spoke careful.

Ever so slightly Rhea's eyes squinted, and her smile grew a bit, the Archbishop nodded in approval.

"Raise your head child. For the goddess has guided you to this path. It is an honor to meet the newest Holy Magus. I'm sure it was by the goddess's will that brought you here." Rhea's voice smooth and silky, gentle and kind, filled with grace, yet her presence held authority. Flayn stepped forward with a silk gold pillow held by her hands, on it, was wooden box engraved with the same artworks on the stain glass, Rhea gently picked it up and presented it to the girl.

"This is a gift from us of The Church of Serios as a reward for passing the exam. Inside this wooden box, is the official card and certificate with the seal of approval. Along with the reward of 500 gold coins. Kiana Kalsana, I hereby declare you, the 6th Holy Magus of Fodlan!!" Rhea said and the priests and knights bowed to her.

Arisa gently was given the box and opened it. Indeed, inside was a certificate but also, a glass card with her name engraved with the official seal of the Church of Serios. Plus, a bag filled with gold. The seal itself, was made of pure gold.

"Now then," Seteth spoke as he and Catherine stepped from where they stood, revealing a Holy Grail filled with water, "this is the Holy Spring. Here, you will speak your words and declare who you are allied to, by placing a drop of your blood. This also shows if you have a Crest or not." He said and Arisa nodded as she walked forward and nipped the end of her thumb. She held it over the spring water and spoke her words as a droplet of blood fell.

"I, Kiana Kalsana, hereby swear to use this seal to help all those in need. Regardless if they are rich or poor, far and wide, no matter where they are from. I hereby declare, I am a freelance magus!!"

She said and everyone in the entire place looked her shocked while Rhea slightly raised her eyebrows.

The droplet of blood fell into the water, causing it to glow, the Crest of Serios projected itself, the water turning silver, showing her independence.

"Major Crest of Serios!!" Beleth said and the girl turned to them as she healed her thumb.

"Oohhh!! Congratulations!!" Flayn clapped her hands, "what do you plan to do now?" She said and Arisa smiled.
"I'm going to see friend but after that, I'm heading to the Kingdom to enroll into the Magic Academy in Fhirdiad." Arisa said and Rhea nodded.

"A wise choice!!" Catherine chuckled and spoke, "If it's alright with you, I'm heading to the Kingdom myself in a few days. I don't mind giving you a ride." Catherine said and Arisa shook her head.

"It's alright but thank you very much. I want to travel with my horse and explore my way there." She said and Catherine nodded in understanding.

"Well then," Rhea spoke, "I wish safe travels young Magus. May the goddess protect you." She smiled kindly and Arisa nodded.

She gave them all one final bow and left out the cathedral doors. There was a silence till Seteth spoke.

"She pulled a Florencio on us!!" He said and Rhea chuckled a bit.

"A Florencio?" Beleth, Flayn and Catherine said, confused.

"It means she declared to be a freelance doctor, which is very rare." Rhea chuckled as the five begin to walk.

"We'll see how things turn out from now on."

[-----]

"Pardon, I'm looking for Professor Hanneman's office. Could you help?" Arisa said to a knight and he nodded.

"Head down this way, near Lady Rhea's chambers then two to the left." The knight said and Arisa thanked him.

It was a bit of a walk, but she arrived in front of the wooden door that said, "Professor Hanneman". Right when she was about to knock, she could hear voices inside yet, also yelling. The door suddenly slammed open, making the girl back away in shock. A woman with short brown hair, light tan skin, red makeup with a mole under her right eye, and wore a dress that clearly showed her "front", she looked pissed.

"You dastard, you dare say I'm old!!??" She yelled furiously back to the room and then turned back, blinking multiple times seeing the terrified girl clinging onto the wall like a spider.

"Oh!! I am sorry you had to witness that dear!!" It was Manuela.

"I...um.....I think I came at the wrong time...." Arisa said as she finally let go of the wall and walked over to the older woman.

"Oh, no no!! It's alright." Manuela said as she turned back and let her come in, "Hanneman, someone is here to see you!!" She said and near the desk, the wall on the left with multiple papers nailed on, was Professor Hanneman.
The man turned and raised an eyebrow as he saw the girl.

"Are you a student here? Can I help you?" He said and Arisa nodded.

"Umm...can we close the door first?" Arisa said and Manuela did just that.

"And why are you still here?" Hanneman glared to Manuela who crossed her arms.

"I'm bored anyway, and the next semester doesn't start till next week. Might as well also get to
know this cutie!! Are you here to enroll in the academy? Oh, I'm Manuela Casagranda. I'm a
professor, a physician, songstress and available. Nice to meet you." Manuela smiled to her kindly.

"Arisa Byeth Reus Eisner, also known as Kiana Kalsana. Just recently became a Holy Magus 10
minutes ago." Arisa and instantly Hanneman ran to her.

"Wait, are you really Arisa?!" He said and the girl glowed a faint blue, taking everyone by
surprise, revealing her true appearance.

"Professor Hanneman!! It's been five years!!" The girl grinned to him and hugged him.

"Hahah!!" The man laughed as he hugged her back and then let go, "It has!! Look at you!! You've
grown so much!! How has your Crest research been doing? More importantly, have you been
taking care of that camera I gifted you?" He said and the girl nodded as she took it out.

"Of course, I have!! I still have package left of film. I also created a photo album!" She said
excitedly.

While the two talked excitedly, Manuela was zeroing in on the words "Holy Magus" and the name
"Kiana Kalsana". Before Arisa knew it, she was suddenly turned around and Manuela was in her
face, holding her shoulders.

"Did you just say you’re a Holy Magus and The Kiana Kalsana?!!! Oh, so young!!! Ahhhh!!! Kids
these days are advancing at a fast pace!!! It hurts!!" Manuela said tearfully and Hanneman groans.

"Ummm...." Arisa said a bit nervously and Manuela let her go.

"Oh umm...sorry I apologize. Professor Hanneman has spoken of you a bit but I'm happy to finally
meet his star pupil. Do you prefer to go by Arisa or Kiana?" The older woman said.

"Please call me Kiana. I'm going by a different identity for my safety." Arisa said as she made her
appearance change to the one, she had. "Also, please don't tell one about...me being able to change
my appearance." She said.

"No worries. I can tell by the way your tone of worry was. Your secret is safe with me.
Unfortunately, I wish I could stay longer but I have an important date to go to." Manuela said and
patted her head.

"Good luck!!! I hope you can find your soulmate!!" Arisa said.

"Aaaahhhhh!! Thank you!!" Manuela wept as she hugged her to her chest, the poor girl turning
scarlet, "Someone who understands my pain unlike some old coon I know!" She sent a glare at
Hanneman.

After another argument between the two adults, Manuela said goodbye and left.
"I am very sorry about that. This month just became her first anniversary coming here to teach at the academy. I swear that woman. Come now and have a seat. Thankfully the tea I prepared earlier is still hot. Let us celebrate you becoming a Holy Magus!" Hanneman smiled as Arisa sat across from him at the tea table.

"It's alright. I think her and I will get along well." She smiled and looked around his office.

Bookshelves with books of Crestology, the device at the center that displays Crest, a...

"Is that a printer?" Arisa said as she was looking over to a magic tool.

It had a wooden table surface, wooden hand that can grab onto the quill and write.

"Actually, I haven't even thought of a name for it yet!! I like the one you just gave it now. So, it'll be called a **printer** from now on." Hanneman chuckled.

"I'm surprised you knew what it is. One a few selected have this device. It's used to send messages around Fodlan. Of course, the only ones that own these are me, the Church of Serios, House Reigan, The Royal family of Faerghus and The Adrestian royal family." He said and she nodded, "But enough of that. How have you been?" He asked and she let go of a sigh.

"I have....good news and bad news regarding my research." She said and he looked at her worried, "Good news, I found information regarding the implementation of Crest." she said, and he put down his teacup slowly, "The bad news, the horrific results." She said and took out her tablet but not before using a spell to make sure the door was locked, and the room was sound proofed.

"I never seen such device." He muttered and she turned to look at the printer.

"May I use it?" She said and he nodded.

The girl stood up and walked to the printer, turned on her tablet, and went to the document app, and opened a specific file. Next, she sent a bit of her magic to the printer, making it activate and linked it to her tablet. She went to the settings and clicked print. The printer's wooden hand began to move and write down the 4-page document. Professor Hanneman stood up and picked up the first paper that was finished and began to read it while the printer finished the rest. His eyes narrowed, he frowned at what he was reading and picked up the next paper.

*Conclusion: Survival rate of Crest Implementation: 0.05%*

*Results:*

*Test subject 123: Deceased: Cause: Descend to madness*

*Test subject 127: Deceased: Cause: Died during Implementation*

*Test subject 140: Deceased: Cause: Turned to Demonic Beast*

*Test subject 170: Success: Name: Gregory von Essar: Implementation of Crest of Indech and*
Test Subject 190: Success: Name Lysithea von Ordelia: Implementation of Crest of Charon and Gloucester

Results of Successful test subjects: Failure: Loss in pigment of hair and eyes, life span drastically shorten.

The man slowly put the paper down as he looked over to the girl, who had turned off the tablet.

"Where did you get this information?" He said dryly and Arisa spoke honestly.

"7 years ago, during the fire of the Tailtean Plains. Barely 4 days ago, I was able to decode it. Professor Hanneman.....these....are results of people that have been horrifically have been experimented on. Whoever was the original owner of this information, was one of the ones doing these horrific things." She said as she helped the man sit back down before he fainted on her.

Hanneman was silent as he looked back at the document.

"My nephew......I'll never forgive them for what they have done to him...or any of these people.” The man said and Arisa nodded.

"But, if I'm also sure your research can help us find a way to remove Crest." Arisa said and he looked up to her, "So far, the spell I developed can surpass at least one of the Crest but at the cost of my own life span. That's why I have two streaks of white hair." She said and he nodded.

"I'm not happy reading this but... this result, like you said, I'm sure my research holds the key to removing them. Arisa, I trust you not to say one word of the information you managed to get a hold of." He said.

"I know." She said as she crossed her arms and glares to the floor, "I don't need another target on my back." She said.

After that, the two spoke for the next hours till it was getting late. She told him of everything that went down these past five years and showed him the photo album she made. Hanneman could not help but chuckle as he saw a picture of his nephew who was held in a choke hold by Fiona. The said boy, at the Alliance, sneezed.

- Late at Night -

With her belongings packed and using a shirking spell to turn Red Hare to the size of the cat. The poor pegasus felt humiliated being carried around like a cat and Feh told him to suck it up. Sothis was cackling as she saw the prideful animal as Arisa made her way through the dark woods, using her concealing cloak. Her eyes glowed a blue color as she kept walking and finally arrived at the place. Lucius nodded as he spotted her.

"You made it. The warping system is ready. You'll be dropped off in the woods near Fhirdiad but
I'm afraid your appearance spell will come undone." He said and she nodded.

"It’s alright. Since it's deep in the woods, no one will find me." She said and he nodded.

"Step here on this tile." He motioned her to step on a role that had the Crest of Gautier on it, "This will be your first time traveling such a long distance. Umm...side effects are nauseous and passing out." He said and she let go of a long sigh.

"Pray for me." Arisa said as she stepped on the tile and gulped as it began to glow red and even Feh and Red Hare were nervous.

"Lady Arisa, good luck. May Saint Cethleann protect you." He said and she nodded.

He closed his eyes and mutter ancient spell; Arisa felt the world spinning as a red light blinded her.

Away to the Kingdom she was warped.

- The Next Day -

"Come on your highness, you'll be left behind if you don’t hurry up!!" With a sword in his hand, the young boy yelled excitedly as he walked through the woods.

He had spiky orange red colored hair and the same colored eyes, he wore a black winter coat with orange shirt and brown pants with boots.

"Come on Sylvain!! We're not even supposed to be here in the woods." A young boy with blonde locks of hair in a maiden haircut, dressed in blue winter clothing but held a wooden lance in his hands, said nervously as he looked over to the other two older boys that were with them, and then to the youngest of the group, who was just 11 years old.

The 11-year-old was thinking this was a horrible idea and why he was dragged here in the first place. Oh right, it is the duty to make sure his Lord is not hurt or else he would fail as a butler.

"Hey, Felix got us covered." A 17-year-old boy with brown hair in a ponytail with his bangs covering his left eye, only showing his purple right one, said as he had brass knuckles on, just in case.

He wore a black trench coat with hunting black pants, on his waist, was strapped an axe.

"Well, only because my dad is out training. I still think we should have brought Ingrid." A young boy with black hair in a ponytail, wearing winter clothing of blue and brown said as he too held a sword.

"Felix, I said no. No way am I bringing her here." Another 17-year-old boy who looked like the much older version of the one that spoke said as he held his own sword.

"Lord Felix, Lord Sylvain, Lord Glenn, Lord Chris, Your Highness Dimitri, I really do think we should go back to the city!!" The 11-year-old boy with light blue spiky yet shoulder length hair said as he held his staff closely to his chest. He wore the clothing of a Male mage but also wore a blue cloak.
"Don't worry Dwyer." Chris said as he showed he was wearing brass knuckles, "If someone tries to attack us, Glenn and I will fight them off. Why do you think boys are afraid to get near my little sister?" Chris laughed proudly.

Dwyer knew Lady Edelgard would be fuming if she found out it was her brother scaring away the children. The 6 young boys, with the sudden bravery to explore and hunt in the woods...it was suddenly turning to a bad idea as they heard rustling. They all instantly froze. The three oldest, Sylvain, Glenn and Chris, quickly circled around the young ones to protect them. The silence of the woods only made it even more unnerving. They all turned to a bush that was rustling. Then.....

"CHIIRRRPP!!"

SNAP!!

"AAAAAHHHHHHHH!!" The six boys screamed but waved of embarrassments filled them once they saw it was just a snowy owl that swooped out of the bush.

"It's just an owl...sigh..." Dimitri sighs but groans as he saw he snapped his lance in half again and poor Dwyer looked ready to cry.

"What the?" Glenn said as he saw both Sylvain and Felix were hugging each other in fear.

"This is a bad idea!! Curse you Sylvain!!" Felix cried out and they all turned as they saw the snowy owl looking at them, judging.

"Hey little fellow, you lost?" Chris said and everyone blinked as the owl flew to land on his arm.

"Hey Dimitri, does this owl belong to one of the knights here?" Glenn said as the snowy owl let itself be touched.

"I do not know. Is there a tag with the symbol of Faerghus on it?" Dimitri said and Chris looked at its feet.

"No tag. I want to say it's wild, but it's clearly trained." Chris said as Glenn walked to him.

"Maybe it belongs to one of the citizens here?" Glenn said.

"I doubt that. Maybe it belongs to one of the students in the magic academy?" Sylvain said and backed away when the owl hissed at him.

The others laughed a bit till they heard something.

"Hmmm.....zzzzz...."

"Shh!! Do you guys hear that?" Dimitri suddenly said and before any of them could react, the snowy owl chirped happily, flapping its wings, and took off.
"Follow it!" Glenn said and they all ran after it.

It felt like a maze they were running through till they reached a lake area. The owl landed on someone and they all ran to them.

"Whooooaaa....." Chris said as the others gasped seeing what he was.

A young girl was lying on the grass, her brown hair that faded to teal was let loose, yet it spilled nicely on the grass. She wore a black robe with a black cloak, gray colored pants and they saw a bow was next to her. Her left arm was over her stomach and her right arm stretched out. They saw her bag was next to her, and the snowy owl was now hissing at them, as it was trying to protect her. Dimitri stared at the girl who looked to be sleeping peacefully, and noticed she had green eyelashes. He felt his face heating up, yet she looked familiar. They heard a small neigh and saw a miniature horse, who got on her stomach and glared at them.

"Well....um....." Chris said as everyone stared at the sleeping beauty.

"Glenn," Dimitri suddenly spoke, "we have to do something!" The price said worried.

"What do you propose we do? I don't want to risk getting punched like Ingrid does to Sylvian." Glenn said and Sylvian glared.

"I...um....guhh.....I don't know!!" Dimitri said and they all turned once they saw the girl reacting a bit.

"Hmm...hmmm....." her eyelashes fluttered open slowly and she looked around, revealing her brown colored eyes that faded to green, everyone looking at her worried but also relieved.

"I see you're awake now." Chris smiled as the girl looked at them one by one.

"Hey there!" Sylvian grinned as she groans a bit as she sat up.

"There are better places to take a nap then on the ground you know." Glenn said as he crossed his arms, yet Dimitri walked up as he stretched out his hand.

"Are you alright?" The boy asked and the girl nodded a bit dazed.

"I'm....." she took his hand, and he blushed at how warm it felt, and helped her get up.

"Urrghhh!!" The girl suddenly slapped her hand over her mouth and ran behind a bush, falling to her knees, everyone looked at her worried.

"Uurrrghhhhhhh!!" They heard her vomiting and Dwyer quickly ran towards her.

"Breath, deep breaths." He said as he lightly patted her back and reached into his pocket to pull out the stomach medicine, he always carried with him.

"Is she alright?!" Sylvian yelled out as they heard the girl still vomiting, also looking pale.

"Glenn, we may have to carry her if she's injured or sick. Thankfully Emily's clinic is nearby." Chris said and his friend nodded.

"Cough!!! Cough!!!" The girl coughed then spit and used the sleeve of her coat to wipe her mouth.
She looked to her side and saw a young boy, and noticed him holding out something to her, she recognized it, it was stomach medicine.

"Thank you...." she smiled a bit weakly and took the pills from him and gulped them down dry.

She and the boy turned back to the others, and she looked up to them, still wiping her mouth.

"I'm.....sorry you had to witness that." Her face had turned a bit red as she and the boy walked towards them.

"It's alright." Felix said with a smile.

"But seriously, what are you doing out here? You just sleep out here in the woods!! It's nearly Fall!! Did you get lost?" Glenn said as he saw the girl reach into her pocket and pulls out a hair band.

It glowed a bit and everyone saw she used magic to put her hair in high ponytail with a green ribbon, the loose part of the ponytail was braided, stopping just below her waist line, her long bangs were let loose but her right one was braid with a blue ribbon. They also saw she had two streaks of white hair. She also wore two white Lily hair pins. The girl sighed as she stretched out her right arm, the snowy owl landed on it and began nuzzling her cheek, and the spell on the red horse was undone, returning him to his original size, but also revealing he was pegasus.

"Are.....you a mage?" Dwyer said and Arisa was silent for a moment as she looked at each one.

She recognized the other 5 but who was the brown-haired boy?

"Thank you for helping me....I need to go now." She said softly and turned to walk away but froze the minute one named was called out to her.

"ARISA, DON'T GO!!"

It was Dimitri that had called out to her and he quickly ran forward.

"It's you, isn't it?!" He smiled yet tears were falling from his eyes, "It's been so long!!! Lestia and I are happy!! Are you here to sign up to become a knight?!!" Dimitri said and everyone looked at them shocked.

"Wait.....as in Arisa? Daughter of Jeralt the Blade Breaker and the one that saved your life 11 years ago from that Assassin?!" Sylvian yelled out in shock.

Glenn was silent and the girl just stood still as she felt everyone's eyes on her. But....

"RED HARE!! FEH!!" She suddenly yelled out and mounted the pegasus quickly and Feh flew high up.

"HEY WAIT!!" Felix yelled out and they all ran towards her, but Red Hare's wings power flaps created wind that knocked them off their feet.

Sylvain gritted his teeth and quickly muttered a spell, hoping to at least scare the animal.

"Gale!" He yelled and sent it towards them.
"No, you idiot!!" Dwyer yelled out but too late.

Red Hare neighed loudly as he flew up, just barely dodging that attack.

Arisa looked down at them silently as she let go of a sigh but spoke.

"It's good to see you again Dimitri....Sylvain.... Glenn.....Felix....." was all she said and flew off.

There was complete silence as everyone stood up yet looked over to Dimitri, worried.

"She's.....just like how I remembered..." the boy muttered and laughed a bit.

"Umm....Dimitri? Are you alright?" Chris said as he helped the boy up.

"Yeah, I'm alright. I guess it's been such a long time since we have seen each other, the meeting was overwhelming for her." The prince said and saw Sylvian smirking at him.

"What?" Dimitri said, confused.

"Your Highness has a crush on a mercenary beauty!!! Oh my!!" The redhead said and the boy had turned the same color as the Empire, "Plus, she's only 2 years older than you but a year older than me. So, your Highness....planning to court already?" Sylvian teased while the prince pouted, his face scarlet as he looked down to the ground.

"BE FREE OF YOUR SINFUL THOUGHTS!!" Dwyer yelled and smacked Sylvian with his staff.

"Owww!!" The red head screeched, and the others laughed.

"Well, don't be disappointed Dimitri." Chris said and the others looked at him confused, "I saw the direction the pegasus flew. They're headed to the city. We might run into her at some point. For now, let's head back. I don't want to face my sister's wrath." Chris said and everyone cringed.

Edelgard's wrath is the one thing one wishes to suffer.

- Fhirdiad-

The bustling cities of old and new, yet it almost had a magical twist. Buildings of blue and white were all around. Plus, with the magic school there, it was common to see many Magus but also people floating, using magic to get around. Arisa felt she was almost walking through a city in ancient Camelot. She could see the grand castle of The Holy Kingdom of Faerghus. Silver and bronze the color it was, huge most of all. It reminded her a bit of a British Castle. She saw knights walking around, the proud flag of the Lion hung. The blue sky matched the place and has turned back to her disguise and Sothis was scolding her. Way to ruin the moment.

"What was that?!?!!" The goddess yelled to the girl as Arisa sighed and carefully walked next to Red Hare, holding his reins and Feh was perched on her head, "It has been 11 years since you have seen those children and that was your first reaction?!? Running away from them like a coward?!?" Sothis said and Feh gave her a look that literally said, "shut up."

"Sothis...." Arisa mentally responded to her, "I know. I just did not think I would run into them and
most of all, Dimitri remembering me." She was completely taken aback that she nearly fainted again right there when Dimitri called out her name.

"You felt how my heart rate accelerated!!! You wanted me to pass out right there and then us being carried for the palace!!?" Arisa said back.

"Sigh....point, point." Sothis grumbled as they came to a series of signs.

"Magic Academy that way." The goddess pointed to the east direction and down they went, also known as The Magic District.

As they walked through, Arisa felt she was walking through Diagon Alley from Harry Potter. Men and women dressed in the uniforms of the Magic Academy. Vendors selling ingredients for potions and spells. She spotted a grimoire stand and staffs and wands being sold at one store. There was a candy shop also and saw a couple of fae flying around. She giggled when she saw an aerial fly away with a donut and the vendor lady was cursing at it.

"Whooooa!! Look at the huge pegasus!!"

Red Hare suddenly stood proudly as children began to gather around them, amazed by how big he was. Many petted him since they are respected in Faerghus.

"Are you a knight?" A little girl asked Arisa while many gasped in amazement as the said pegasus unfolded his wings.

"No, I'm a Magus actually. That's Red Hare. He's a bit of a showoff but he's softly." She said and the girl giggled as Red Hare nuzzled her cheek.

"Are you here for the entrance exams?!" One of vendors yelled out, "Lass, you better hurry!!! You have 10 minutes!!" They yelled out and instantly Arisa ran to Red Hare and mounted him.

Everyone backed away as the Pegasus rose on his two back legs, looking majestic as heck.
"HYAAA!!" Arisa said and the three bolted like rockets towards the magic academy.
"HOLY SERIOS!!! I NEVER SEEN A PEGASUS MOVE THAT FAST!!" One of the boys yelled out.

[--------]

They barely made it at the 2-minute mark at the gates, unfortunately scaring to Magus guards.
"I'm here for the entrance exams!! Which line?!" Arisa yelled out and the female magus rapidly nodded her head and pointed to a building with a yellow door.
"That one!!! Just go!! We'll take your pegasus and owl to the stables!!" The lady said and Arisa jumped off, bolting to the building before they closed the door.
"You idiot!!" The female Magus's male friend yelled, "That's the building to take the exam to become a Professor!!! It's the next building that has the green door is where the entrance exam is!!" He yelled.

"Aaahhhhh!!!!" The woman screeched horrified and about to run to building to stop the girl but too late.

The yellow doors closed, and the female Magus was a crying mess for making that mistake.

"Lady Cornelia will have my head!!" She wept.

- 2 hours later -

It was the same process all over again just like when she took the exam at the Church but this time, all they did was say to open their books, and good luck. No whole introduction of what exam they are taking and such. Arisa let go of a sigh as she was now at the stables of the Magic Academy. It felt like the church all over again because she literally ran around helping the medical staff again. She remembered a particular question in the exam that made her raised an eyebrow.

"Any new subject suggestions that could be taught this semester?"

She easily wrote down Astronomy and Medical Classes. Putting a mini note next to Astronomy that explains it was the study of the celestial stars and cosmos. Thankfully before she made her way to the academy, she paid for the inn she will be staying at. She took Red Hare out of the stables and began to walk out the school grounds. To Diagi---I mean, to The Magic District she returns!!

[----- ]

Chris let go of a sigh as he saw his friends all having to wear their cloaks to hide their identity. Except him and Dwyer of course because no one knows who they are. Dimitri pouted as he walked between Felix and Sylvian. He really wished he didn't have to hide his identity to be able to walk through here, but he didn't want a bunch of attention to him either.

"I think we might run into Annette here. She said she needed to buy supplies for the next semester." Sylvian said as they walked.

Chris was silent as the image of the forest colored hair girl came back to his mind. Dimitri called her Arisa, yet for some reason, her felt that shouldn't be her name. The name "Byleth" came to his mind when he saw her, yet he thought she shouldn't be looking that way. Hers should be blue and hair teal. He shook his head again. There it was again...that feeling emptiness. When he heard the name "Arisa", something inside him hurt yet the name felt warm. He didn't know why. But he needs to see her again. It's a must.
"You know," Glenn spoke, making him snap out of his thoughts, "I thought you or Sylvian would hit on her." He said to Chris.

"Glenn you hurt me!!" Sylvian said, dramatically putting his hand over his heart, the kids rolling their eyes, "But seriously, I couldn't bring myself to do it. It felt...wrong if I hit on her." Sylvian said and Chris nodded.

"Same. It felt wrong." Chris said as the two continued to walk but stopped when they noticed the other four frozen.

"D-Did we just hear that right?" Felix said as he looked to Dimitri and Dwyer, their mouths hanging in shock.

Glenn was looking at them as they grew a second head each.

"Come on man!! You have known me for what? 4 years now. Sylvian for life and think we're some kind of lechers?!!" Chris said and the four nodded.

"Rubbish!!! I'm hurt!" The two boys yelled.

The others laughed and out of the corner of Chris’s eye, he spotted a familiar forest color among the crowd. He turned to see far deep in the crowd, the girl walking but when she passed by a woman, instead of Arisa, a different girl passed by. Chris face became blank. He knew that was spell to change one's appearance.

"Hey Chris, you alright?" Sylvian said and Chris nodded.

"Yeah. Well, I got to head back to my uncle's house. My sister did come visit us after all. I don't want to suffer her wrath." Chris laughed.

"Umm...send my salutations to her!!" Dimitri said since the girl had yet to actually go see the prince, much to the prince's dismay.

"Don't worry I will." Chris said and began to leave.

In truth, he was going to see if he could find some information regarding Jeralt the Blade Breaker and his daughter. To the bar he goes! And hopefully to not get wasted...again.

- The Next Day -

Dear Miss Kiana Kalsana,

We of The Magic Academy, congratulate you for passing the exam. You are the second person to have ever scored a perfect 100. Because of this, you officially are qualified to be sponsored and have been accepted to the academy. Your test results have been displayed along with your name only to the nobility. If they are interested, they will write a letter to claim you under their name. Please come tomorrow morning to the Fhirdiad Magic Academy to be escorted to the palace where the event will take place.
Arisa let go a sigh of relief as she read the letter but a frown seeing Cornelia claim the Aubin house name when it should be Alexandra. She was happy at least to know Emily was there for safety measures. She made huge mental note not to accept Cornelia's sponsorship, no matter how good the deal is.

"So," Sothis appeared as she saw the letter also came with the list of supplies Arisa needed to buy, "you have this day off then. What do you plan to do?" Sothis said.

"Well, other than buying the materials I need, I think I'm going to the hot spring here. I'm surprised it's Japanese style." Arisa smiled.

"A public bath!!??" Sothis turned scarlet.

"Be grateful it isn't a mixed bath." Arisa said as her pajamas turned to gold dust and were replaced with her usual clothing and changed her appearance.

"To Diagon Alley we go!!" She said a bit too cheerfully and Sothis rolled her eyes.

"It’s called Magic District." Sothis corrected her.

"Yeah I know but I just rather call it Diagon Alley because it's easier to remember." The girl said back and Sothis let go of a long sigh.

"Damn, I overdid it on the drinks." Chris cursed as he walked through the Magic District early in the morning.

He got a huge yelling from his uncle and look of disappointment from both Edelgard and Hubert. Ahhh... he missed when his sister would run up to him and call him "Big brother!!" And would laugh when he would spin her around. Or when she would sneak into his room so he would read to her and then she falls asleep on his bed. Or when she would ask him to brush her hair. Now she won’t even let her touch him. It's been a year since he had last seen her since he was living here in Fhirdiad with his mother and stepfather, King Lambert. Not also mention his three step siblings, Dimitri, Zander and Lestia. King Lambert was a nice man and he really got along well with him. Dimitri loved training with him and Lestia love it when her showed her how to sew. He got along well with Zander, and the two felt like lost brothers, much to the dismay of King Lambert because the boys were flirts like his younger brother, Rufus. At least one helped control the other.

"El....what changed?" He muttered to himself.

He remembers when he asked her how their siblings are doing, and she said she didn't want to talk about it. Was she and her siblings not on good terms? Did something happen during the end of The Insurrection of The Seven that caused a rift between her and their siblings? And Hubert would instantly glare at him if he even dared to ask even more questions. How can one-year cause so
much change? His uncle was no help either. He sighed as he walked up to coffee vendor.

"One Gloucester coffee with three pumps of soymilk please." The boy said.

"Overdid it on the drinks again Lord Chris?! Seriously?!" The vendor said as he was preparing the drink.

"He's having sister problems again. Siscon." The vendor's a 14-year-old daughter, said.

"Can it." He groans and heard footsteps approaching.

Probably another customer.

"Excuse me, may I order a green tea warm milk drink please? Sweeten with honey if it is alright?" A female voice spoke, and he noticed the vendor's daughter turn red.

Before the vendor could reply, his daughter spoke.

"Honey, I'll prepare it for you!! Any food you want with it?! No extra charge!!" The vendor’s daughter said a bit too loudly, that it hurt his head.

Chris turned to the owner of the voice and froze.

"Well...seems the goddess is smiling down upon me today." He was completely sober now and turned to the vendor's daughter, "Yishi!! I'll pay for her drink." He said.

"Awww hell no!! I'm not letting you take this one from me!!" Yishi glared and turned to see the brown eyes worried.

The girl had short black hair, brown colored eyes and wore the same clothing from yesterday, but a clean set. But he knew it wasn't her real face.

"Ummm...there is no need to pay for my drink." The girl said and Chris smiled to her as he placed his hand on her shoulder.

"No worries Arisa, I'm paying." He said and his hand slightly sent a wave of his magic to her, undoing her spell right then and there.

Arisa's eyes went wide, and she looked at herself, her appearance had turned back to its original. The vendor and his daughter were shocked at what they had just witnessed, and the said girl was looking at herself and then to the older boy, who smiled.

"WHO THE HELL YOU THINK YOU ARE TO MESS WITH MY SPELL?! I WAS IN THE MIDDLE OF AN EXPERIMENT TESTING HOW LONG IT LASTED!!! IT TOOK 6 MONTHS TO PERFECT AND NOW I HAVE TO REDO IT AGAIN!! THAT WAS HOMEWORK!!" Arisa screeched angrily and the smile on Chris's face was wiped off clean.

"Nice going dastard!" Yishi said, "By her saying homework, meaning she's a student from the magic academy!! You just messed up her assignment!!" Yishi said but she had to admit, this Arisa was hot!!

"Sweety, keep the drink for free!! You," Yishi pointed to Chris, "you're paying double for your coffee!!" She said.
"Oh, come on!!" Chris said as the girl handed the green tea drink to Arisa, she sent a glare to Chris, but not before she kindly thanked the girl.

"Wait, hold up!!" Chris said and grabbed his drink, slammed 10 copper coins in front of Yishi, and ran after Arisa.

She was pissed.

"How the fuck did he undo that spell?!" Arisa was cursing and kept trying to change back to her disguise, but it wasn't working.

Like something was blocking it.

"Wait!!" She heard and turned to see the boy named Chris, panting, "Look I'm sorry!! I didn't mean to give the wrong impression!! Can we please talk?!" He said and she glared at him.

Sothis appeared and glared also but saw the boy raised an eyebrow.

"Hey, green haired kid? Where did you come from?" He said and Arisa dropped her drink in shock. *(Rip latte)*

"Y-You can see her?!!" She said and he stood up straight after recovering from running.

"Yeah. Am I not supposed too?" He said as he looked over to the frozen Sothis.

"Is she your familiar? Man, that's rare seeing a fae become a human's familiar." He said as he took a few steps closer.

"Whooaa!! You even got the pointy ears!!" He said and Sothis slapped him.

"You incompetent fool!! How dare you point out my ears?! I'm self-conscious you know!!" Sothis yelled to him.

"Ow....." the boy rubbed his cheek, "Sorry......." he said and Sothis disappeared.

"Ummm...let's go to a restaurant to talk. Also, please undo whatever you did to me!!! I can't cast my spell!!" Arisa said and he sighed.

"Alright." He said and touched her forehead, Arisa felt like something fell off her.

"Give it a whirl." He said and Arisa was able to change back to her disguise.

- 10 Minutes later: Cafe -

"Two red velvet cakes, one Gloucester coffee with two pumps of goat milk and green tea milk drink sweetened with honey, correct?" A waitress said as the two nodded, "Alright then. We'll bring you your food when it's ready." She said and left.

Chris let go of a sigh he saw the crossed arm Arisa, who had frown on her face. They were sitting in the far corner of the restaurant near the glass window. Thankfully they were the only ones in the
cafe and could talk without anyone eavesdropping.

"Look, I'm really sorry about earlier today. You left a lot of unanswered questions yesterday. Names, Chris von Hresvelg, but I go by von Blaidyd these past years..." he muttered as he had stretched out his hand to shake.

Arisa stared for a moment then shook hands with him.

"Arisa Byleth Reus Eisner. Arisa or Byleth, call me whichever one you prefer. But for now, I go by Kiana Kalsana." She said and his eyes widened.

"Wait, you're Kiana Kalsana?! I knew you were a woman but I was expecting you to be older....." he said and Arisa glared.

"Well, sorry to break the image you had. Kiana Kalsana is my other name I go by to hide my identity!" She said.

"Well, guess I'm not alone then." He chuckled and the lady set down their food and drinks

The two thanked her as she left.

"By the way," she said as she used her fork to cut a small piece, "what spell was that? It felt like you cut off my magic." She said and took a bit of her cake.

"Oh, this is good." She thought as her eyes widened a bit.

"Anti-magic spell. Rarity among people. So, care to explain why you took off the other day? My little brother looked really sad." He said and Arisa glared.

"Trying to gui---wait brother?" She said confused.

"Yeah. Originally I was the fourth prince of the Adrestian Empire but unfortunately...." Arisa suddenly spoke.

"Insurrection of the Seven." He saw the girl drop her fork on the table, her hand shaking.

"Hey, are you alright?" He said and Arisa's hand was shaking as she was able to stutter words.

"I-I'm too late....S-She's already returned back to the Empire." Arisa said, her eyes shaking a bit.

"You're one of Edelgard's siblings.........that means.....no....no!!! It was only Edelgard that was supposed to come with her mother to the Empire!! Then....this timeline....which one is it?!?! Crimson Flower?! Azure Moon?! Verdant Wind or Silver Snow?!?! Just what is going on?!" Arisa was internally screaming and Sothis was telling her breath.

"Hey." She looked up to Chris, who had his eyes narrowed, "Do you know something?" He said and she nodded.

She knew she tried to deny it, us would just shut off her magic till she said everything. And she does not to make an enemy of Edelgard’s siblings.

"I-I'm not supposed to be telling you this but......It's your sister....and your siblings."
She was tried and craved to get out of her uncle's home for once. After an entire year and a half of experiments, and at least given 6 months to recover, she was more than grateful. She didn't want to return to the Empire. Especially after witnessing her twin sisters go mad and kill each other. The two cackling in madness as they ripped each other's throats out then die on the cold floor. Their skin had become pale and their hair white. The girl unconsciously touched the brown-haired wig she wore to hide her white hair and also looked at herself on a glass reflection. Her dark violet eyes had become pale and she wore contacts to hide it.

"Lady Edelgard, are you alright?" She turned to Hubert, who had grown quite a bit these past 5 years.

"Yes, I'm alright. Just.....thinking about my brother." She said and Hubert nodded as the two continued to walk.

They headed towards a small cafe and she blinked as she saw the glass window.

"Wait, that's Chris." She said and noticed him talking to a girl, but it looked like they were in a heated argument.

Edelgard rolled her eyes but still chose to go in, hoping to stop whatever was going on. She saw the waiters and waitresses terrified that they had closed the doors as she went in.

"IF IT MEANS I CAN SAVE EDELGARD OR ANY OF MY SIBLINGS, I'LL GLADLY TAKE THEIR PLACE!!"

She froze, her blood ran cold. Hubert was frozen also as they heard part of the argument.

"Do you have any idea what you're saying?! If you let that happen, there is a chance you won't even make it through it!! I understand how you feel but don't act on impulse!!" The black-haired girl said.

"Then what?!?! Do I sit by and watch as my siblings are experimented on and go mad, while I'm just here??!! Not even our mother knows about this!!" Chris yelled.

"THAT'S NOT WHAT I AM SAYING!!! I CAN AT LEAST MANGE TO STOP THE PROGRESS EVEN FOR AT LEAST 10 YEARS!!!" The girl said.

"FOR WHAT?! YOUR OWN LIFE FORCE?! DON'T BE STUPID ARISA HERNANDEZ!!" He yelled and the two froze.

"W-What did just call me?" Arisa said, shocked.

"Wait....why did I call you that.....?" He said and just barely the two calmed down.

"Brother.....?" The two instantly turned to see a slightly shell-shocked Edelgard and Hubert.

Chris took a deep breath and spoke to Arisa.
"Kiana....we'll talk tomorrow if possible." He turned to her and she nodded as he handed her an envelope.

He sighed as he turned to Edelgard and Hubert.

"You two...I'm sorry you had to witness that." He smiled sadly as he walked up to them and placed his hands on their heads.

"Big bro....ther....." the kids sudden on the verge of falling on the floor, were caught but him.

He erased their memories of what they witnessed.

He carried his sleeping sister in his arm while carrying Hubert like a sack of potatoes.

"Arisa......please....." he was barely able to speak, "Even if we just met.....I feel I can trust you...." he said and left out of the cafe.

Arisa sat back down and began sobbing into her hands. Why was everything changing?! She should be happy, yet it felt like things were becoming worse!! The waitresses saw it was safe to come out and looked at the girl worried.

"Bring her some lavender tea ladies....I think she needs it." A waiter said.

Arisa felt broken after for the first time since she had come to this world. She had to open her mouth………….

Sing with me a song....of silence and blood....

Chapter 21: The New Road: Part 2: Exam: End

[-----]

I can hear the knives coming at me!!! Happy New year's everyone!!! the Magic Academy Arc/Faerghus Arc begins!! We're going to politics, clash of beliefs, confrontations a lot more. Also, we'll be seeing Zach's, Lestia's and Chris's true roles unfold.

Chris was created to show how things went down in the Empire and also, as the opposite of Arisa. Both will be balancing out each other and that will be shown throughout this arc. We'll also start to see our protagonist make enemies and allies.

I hope you are all looking forward to it!!
Chapter 22: Lion's Den: Part 1: Offers

- The Next Day -

After that whole ordeal, Arisa felt she messed up big time yet at the same time, she felt she spoke to the correct person. There was something about this Chris that felt familiar, but she didn't know why. His form of talking was carefree, yet he was calculating. She knew by the way he managed to block of her magic, he knew more than he should. That was the first time she heard of anti-magic existing in this world. The girl took a deep breath as she made her way to the Magic Academy. She's pretty sure the news that she had become a Holy Magus has already reached everyone in Fodlan right now as chaos was ensuing.

"Virgin the Guadalupe....please protect me...." she muttered as she held to the stone Elder Bara gave her.

It felt so reassuring to have the stone because it felt like a part of her family was with her. She arrived at the magic Academy and there was a carriage waiting for her.

"Miss Kalsana?" A Kingdom knight wall up to her and took out her letter to present, "Alright then. Please enter the carriage. We'll be escorting you to the palace." He said and she nodded.

The carriage was fancy but simple as she got in and sat down. The seats were made of cotton and soft sit on, what she didn't expect was to see Chris in there.

"Yo." He smirked and before she could answer, one of the female magus screeched.

"Your Highness!!! What are you doing here?!!" The poor woman screeched as she investigated the carriage through the window.

"Gina, calm down. I'm here to greet The New Holy Magus." Chris said and the poor woman was fuming.

"Your majesty, that's my job!!! You're supposed to be back at the palace preparing with your brothers and sister!!" The woman now known as Gina said as Chris opened the door and pulled her in.

"Sorry, this is Gina. My retainer and my friend. Hard to believe but she's Hubert's older sister." Chris said as the poor woman sat down next to him.

"Ufu." Arisa giggled as she sat across from them, "Nice to meet you Gina. I'm Kiana. Pleasure to make your acquaintance." She said and shook hands with the woman.

"Pleasure to meet you too miss Kiana!!! It's an honor to meet a Holy Magus!!!" Gina said and the carriage began to move, "I wish we could talk more but I have to inform you of what you will be doing when we arrive to the palace." She said and Arisa nodded.

Gina was a young woman who looked around 16 years old. She had black ember colored hair tied in a bun, green eyes, wore gold colored glasses and wore a priestess dress with the banner of the Kingdom on the back. The woman took out a notepad and fixed her glasses a bit as she began to read her notes.
"When we arrive to the palace, I will escort you to the testing field. You will be demonstrating your magic abilities and fight a mock battle against projection mages and golems. You're allowed to use any weapon of your choosing and magic. Yes, that also includes dark and black magic. Once that is done, you will be taken to the room where the sponsorship offers will take place. Lord Seteth from the church is here to overwatch to make sure things remain civil. Also, the 5 current Holy Magus have all been summoned for them all to meet you. Any questions?" Gina said and Arisa spoke.

"Yes. How many Lords or Duchesses am I going to see?" She asked and Chris and Gina looked at each other than back at her.

"Kiana, you're a Holy Magus...and you know what that means. Everyone is going to be battling against each other to earn your favor, in a way, to make you ally yourself to a specific nation." Chris said.

"But you actually managed to escape being forced to ally with one only because you declared you're a free bird." Gina said and Arisa nodded.

"I don't want to be tied down. My belief is to help those in need regardless of status. No offense Lord Chris but....I....don't like nobles who think of themselves higher than others." She said and Gina stared at her with wide eyes.

"Pfft. Haha!" Chris laughed and smiled warmly, "Glad to know I'm not alone. Hell, I may be of noble birth, but I think everyone as equals. You're aware of the Crest system correct?" He said and Gina stiffened.

"Umm...Lord Chris...I don't think we should be talking about that." The girl said and he sighed.

"Gina, I told you hundreds of times to call me’ ‘Chris'.'" He said, and the woman pouted.

Arisa was having a hard time believing Gina was Hubert's older sister.

"Anyhow, back to the subject," the prince said, "what are your thoughts on it?" He said.

"Honestly, me traveling around Fodlan and teaching children how to read and write regards of status is my big "Fuck you" to the system." Arisa said with a smirk.

While Gina looked ready to scold her for cursing in front of the prince, Chris burst out laughing and held his stomach.

"Hahaha!!! T-That is...haha... more than enough to tell me...hahaha!! Your beliefs!!" He laughed and Gina smacked him with her notepad.

He finally calmed down, relaxed as he looked back to her and smiled.

"We'll talk more in detail later. For now, we're here." He said and the three looked out the window.

Seeing the palace in person and much closer, it was beautiful. A knight opened the carriage door and the three stepped out. Arisa noticed a blank stare from the prince as he looked up to the balcony and low and behold, Dimitri, Zander and Lestia were looking down at them. Lestia excitedly waved her hands, while Zander had smirk that reminded her of Sylvain for some reason.
Meanwhile, Dimitri looked curiously at her and blinked a few times. Chris smiled, waved up and Sothis appeared.

"My, they grown a lot." She said and Chris turned to look at them.

"Hey, it's the green hair Fae!! Good to see-----!!" And he got the cold shoulder.

"Umm, Lord Chris? Who are you talking to?" Gina said.

"Oh, umm right.... well you can't see her but our friend here is contracted to a fae. She just gave me the cold shoulder." He explained and Gina looked at her shocked.

"A fae??!! Oohh!!! Sometimes I wish I had Lord Chris's abilities to see spirits, but unfortunately I'm not born with it." The girl said and Arisa blinked.

"You can see spirits?" She said as the three walked to the palace doors.

"Yeah. It's a curse and blessing but personally I just call it a gift. Also, it's fun to talk to them. Can you see them?" Chris said.

"Well, I can see them to some extent thanks to Sothis but that's about it." Arisa said and Sothis had a smug look.

"So that's your name little fae? Well then Sothis, nice to meet you." Chris said and got the cold shoulder again before she disappeared in a shower of green dust.

"You offended her pretty badly, you know? Never point out her ears." Arisa and Gina smacked Chris again.

A couple of the knights chuckled as they opened the doors for them. Inside the palace was grand, beautiful, clean, truly Arisa almost yelled out she was in Camelot.

"Well, I got to go." Chris turned to her and did small bow, "I'll see you around. By the way, good luck!! Take care!!" The price grinned and left running towards the right hallway.

"GHAAA!! WHO PUT THIS STUPID BARREL HERE??!!" They heard him crash and Gina let go of a long sigh.

"Now, please come with me. We'll be taking the left hallway." She said and Arisa followed her.

[-----]

The two walked down the hallway, Arisa behind Gina and the black-haired girl suddenly spoke.

"I'm going to be honest with you." Gina turned her head a bit to look her way, "I don't exactly appreciate the way you spoke with Lord Chris. Cursing and speaking so casually to him as if you were his friend or relative. Yet," Gina let go of a sigh, "It had been 4 years since I last seen him so relaxed. Even I talking to you...I felt I could speak freely. My family has served the Hresvelgs for generations. My little brother takes his job too seriously and he's the same age as you." She said as they made a left turn and arrived at a wooden door, "Well, that's all. Good luck out there. You're in a Lion's den now. Also," she leaned and whispered, "Avoid Lord Arundel's or any of the 7 lords of the Empire's offers at any cost!! Something isn't right about them. The only Lords I do actual
recommend from the Empire are Duke Zika of House Chevalier, Duchess Mary of House Grimm and Count Urus of House Kilauea. They are the only ones against the actions those 7 took. Lastly, be careful with Lord Jertiza von Hrym. Something just feels weird about him." She said and Arisa's eyes widen at the mention of Jertiza.

She nodded to Gina and spoke.

"Trust me, I know snakes when I see them. Besides, I have a score to settle with those Seven Lords even if I never met them. Let's just say....I'm making my presence known." Arisa said and Gina nodded, excusing herself.

Arisa turned to the door took a deep breath and opened it. Inside was a wide training field, almost like a medium size colosseum yet big enough to house 300 people. There were noblemen and women seated, their eyes looking down at her. The girl walked straight, not letting fear take her over as she made her to the center of the field. At the very top, there were balconies reserved specifically for the royal family, the Alliance, Empire and the Church of Serios. On the church balcony, sat Seteth with Catherine, and the 5 Holy Magus. Emily, Florencio, Cornelia, Edward and lastly an older man in his 40's with brown colored hair combed neatly back, and a goatee. He wore a brown lab coat with a white shirt and black pants with boots. Emily looked like she hadn't aged at all but that was because she was using a spell to disguise how much she grew. She hated men looking at her and she doesn't want her husband to burn the palace down. Florencio wore his usual purple gremory dress, except with the feathers but wore a short cloak that stopped mid chest, plus he wore his usual witch hat with purple flowers. The man looked down at the girl worried, because only he, Emily and Edward knew who she really was.

"You seem worried." Cornelia spoke as she looked over to Florencio, "Something bothering you?" She said.

"No, it's nothing. I'm just surprised to see someone so young. That's all." Florencio chuckled and Emily smirked.

"Young huh?" She closed her eyes and lifted her chin smugly as she placed her hand on her chest, "Have you forgotten that Edward and I passed our exams at young ages? I was 11 and he was 15!" She said proudly and Cornelia rolled her eyes.

"Still a brat." Cornelia muttered.

"What was that old hag?" Emily smiled and the two women growled at each other, ready to lunge.

"No, please not another fight." Robert groans and even Seteth didn't dare to try to stop them.

"Now, now." Edward said nervously, "it's about to begin." He said and the women turned their heads away from one another.

On the Empire balcony, Lord Arundel and the rest were silent as they watched.

"I'm interested in this girl." A woman spoke, "Her test scores spoke she knows quite a bit about land and production. I think she benefit us. I am the Minister of Economics Affairs after all." The woman said.

"Now Duchess Mary," Duke Aegir spoke, "Let us not be hasty. But if she proves her worth, I think she would do well working for my house." He smiled and the woman narrowed her eyes.
She is not allowing this girl fall in the hands of those disgusting 7 bastards. She looked over to Duke Zika and Count Urus, the two men nodded. Those three had to what they could to keep that girl from even accepting the offers of any of the 7 Lords. The three were barely able to hide away the youngest child of Emperor Ionius IX, a 4-year-old boy, from their clutches.

"Hmmm....." Count Varley hummed, "I do wonder if this girl will prove her worth. The fact that she outdid that Holy Magus of the Kingdom speaks values. She holds....maybe knowledge that could help us all in some sorts." He said.

"If I may speak, " Count Urus, Minister of Magic, "I believe we should respect the girl's boundaries. She may not want to share her knowledge. Do you plan to force her?" He said and Lord Arundel chuckled.

"Don't tell us you plan to have this girl take Doctor Robert's place because he refused to work with any of you?! That's absolutely absurdity!!" Duke Zika, Minister of Natural Resources, said and Duchess Marry and Count Urus looked at Lord Arundel shocked.

"You will absolutely not force that poor girl to do your dirty work!" Duchess Marry said and the 7 Lords just rolled their eyes.

The woman was fuming and was held back by Duke Zika from using her wind magic on them.

At another balcony, were all the children since the adults did not want them to get involved in their political talks.

"U-Um....I'm Bernadetta. N-Nice to meet you." Little Bernadetta squeaked as she sat curled up and Felix just raised an eyebrow while Ingrid and Annette tried to talk to her, carefully and gently.

"Hey Dimitri!! Been awhile!!" Claude said as he waved at the prince, who gave him a small smile.

"Hello Claude, it's been awhile." The prince said.

Glenn, Zander, Sylvain, Chris, Hubert and Gina, felt like babysitters as they had (forced) to be with the children. Here, the children of the Alliance, Empire and Kingdom were all seated together and get along.

"Linhardt, don't fall asleep again!!" A boy with blue spiky hair pouted at one with green hair.

"Caspar, just give up." A young girl with pearly white hair said.

"But Lysithea!!!" Caspar whine.

"Hey kids!!" Chris said and they all turned to him, "How about after this match is over, I take you all out to eat? My treat." He said and all of them had sparkles in their eyes.

"Chris, you just doomed yourself." Glenn chuckled and Edelgard just stared at her brother.

"Nah, it's fine." Chris chuckled as he saw Ferdinand and Lorenz talking to each other about tea, which was a weird subject.

He looked over and saw the girls named Hilda, Marianne, Lysithea and his sister, talking to each other excitedly about sweets.

Lysithea became much more excited at the mention of cake. He then looked over to see
Lestia...had Claude in a choke hold and his brother trying to make her let go of him.

"Hubert," he turned to the 15-year-old, "do me a solid and ask one of the maids if she could bring us some drinks?" He said and the boy groans but went and did it anyway.

The lights dimmed and instantly everyone sat straight, many filled with excitement. Arisa let go a deep breath as she heard the announcer speaks.

"Kiana Kalsana," they said, and many began muttering among themselves, "you will be taking part in a mock battle to demonstrate your magic and physical abilities. You are free to use any weapon of your choice and magic. May the goddess watch over you." They said and clicked.

The steel cages opened seeing projection mages and two golems come out. The girl threw off her cloak, revealing she wore a short skirt kimono but had its long sleeves. She wore black tights, her sword and her waist, yet she bends her knees a bit, getting into a kokutsu dachi position, her right arm in and her left arm stretched out, her palm, flat. Many raised their eyebrows as they had never seen such clothing and Florencio internally screaming but at the same time proud. She was going to make her presence known.

"Wait, what type of gauntlets are those?" Lord Reigan said as he noticed the red colored gauntlets the girl was wearing.

They had gold thin armor and a blue gem at the top of the hand, yet they looked like she was wearing gloves. Arisa took a deep breath and closed her eyes. Many other lords were looking at her in disappointment till she suddenly lunged at a projection mage, her palms met its chest and boom!!! She sent that thing flying at the stone wall, the wall cracking and creating a creator, the mage disintegrating to pieces. All that could be heard was a pin drop.

"Well damn." Chris smirked as Arisa stood straight and looked over to the 12 projection soldiers coming her way.

"Well then...." she pulled out her bow that Claude instantly narrowed his eyes as it looked familiar but her noticed some sort of stone on it, the smile on her face was relaxed, since she was glad these weren't real people and can let loose the anger she had pent up, "LET'S DANCE!!" She yelled and jumped back, firing 3 arrows, they glowed blue, piercing right through the chest of the soldiers, leaving a hole.

"Is that a Heroes Relic??!" Cornelia yelled out and Florencio chuckled to himself.

"So Sandy did give it to her....the Crest stone of Serios she found in Zanado years ago." He thought as he looked back to see the girl spinning like a dancer as she fired arrows at the incoming enemies.

He was using a magic tool to record the show it to his sister and Jeralt. Arisa countered measured two swords coming at her, jumped, and spilt kicked them to the chest.

"I KNEW IT!!! ONLY ONE PERSON IN THE ENTIRE WORLD CAN DO THAT!!! IT'S TEACH!!" Claude yelled out excitedly and saw Arisa glance his way only for a split second.

But why was she going by the name Kiana? Edward explained to him that he must not absolutely call her by her real name. He must address her as Kiana, no matter how he hates it. He didn't understand. It's been five years and yet...she looks completely different.

"Wait, you know her?" Lorenz said.
"Of course, I do!! That's my teacher!! The one that taught me how to use a bow!!!" Claude said proudly and looked back to the field.

All the men in the Colosseum cringed in pain as the girl's fist met a soldier's nether reigns and sent him flying.

"AAAAAAAAAAAAA~" Arisa sung as she raised her arms, balls of fire became spears of fire, and circled around her, "Laaaaaaa!!" She sung and sent 4 at them at the golem and the other 4 at the mages.

"Hmmm...a combination of singing and magic.... I've never heard nor seen such combinations." King Lambert muttered as his wife was looking at the girl in amazement.

"Look out!!" Zander yelled out as an arrow flew at the girl from behind yet, Arisa caught it with her hand and threw it back at the Archer, right between the eyes.

"Holy Shi----!!" Glenn was on the verge of cussing but one look from Ingrid shut him up.

"Wait....why hasn't she used her sword?" Lord Rodrigue said as he noticed that girl had yet to use her sword yet alone even touch it.

"You are the oceans gray waves~ Ahhhh...ahh...ahh ~~~ " she sung and twisted her body as a dancer as a lance came at her and the tips of her fingers, water began to appear yet...she felt...free....she couldn't help but laugh as she gracefully dodged multiple attacks as she danced the traditional dance of the goddess that Sandy taught her.

"She looks like she's having fun." Emily smiled and nodded.

"Hey Florencio," she turned to him, "Your sister trained her huh? Only two people in Fodlan know the Dance of Goddess. Xina and Sandy." She smirked and Seteth glanced to Florencio, who had a proud smile.

"Of course!!" He said proudly.

Then....

"KYYYYAAAAAAAA!!"

They instantly turned back to see that one of the magic golems turned itself into a giant spider, and let's just say, a lot of females were holding on to dear life to their husbands. Arisa unfortunately remained frozen since it was the last thing she needed to take down. The girl's eyes rolled back, and she dropped to the ground unconscious. The fear of spiders escalated to a whole new level.

"REALLY TEACH?!!" Claude yelled and Hilda smacked him, while the others felt bad for the poor girl.

The adults and medics were panicking, ready to send out a healing mage to help her.

"And looks like the match is o----" Seteth said but was stopped when Florencio stretched out his arm.
"It's not over." Florencio tone had suddenly become serious as he saw her finger twitch, and everyone saw it happen.

The girl's body rose up like a possessed woman and slouched forward, getting on all fours. Her eyes snapped open and they had the Crest of Serios in them.

"What on earth......?" Lord Arundel said as they all uncrossed their arms and leaned forward.

"Dammit...I didn't think she resort to that." Florencio said and Edward looked at him worried.

"What is going on?" Emily said and Seteth narrowed his eyes.

"Soulless Defense: Spell of Lost sight. The minute the user either drops unconscious on the battlefield or because of fear, your survival instincts take control of your body to battle. So, she perfected it." He muttered and Doctor Robert looked at him shocked.

"But it puts a bit of a strain on her body." Florencio thought as the girl lunged at the spider.

"AAHHHHHHH!!!" The girl's voice sung as she finally grasped the mantle of the sword but did not unsheathed it.

Instead, she used the sword as it is, sending magic into, causing it glow and sliced down at the spider, she landed behind it and stood up straight. The spider fell to the ground and split in two, revealing the magic golem. Silence there was as the girl's eyes closed again, putting back on her sheath sword on her waist. Arisa's eyes flutter open, back to normal and looked over to the golem.

"It worked..." she thought and suddenly heard rounds of applause.

"Absolutely Marvelous!!!"

"Incredible!!"

"Such forms of magic!!"

Florencio nodded in approval as he crossed his arms.

"That's my girl." He smiled while Cornelia felt that horrible and terrifying sensation at the back of her neck again.

"Very Interesting." Linhardt suddenly spoke, scaring all the children and even the grown kids as he was looking down at the Magus, "she hardly used the power of her Crest and it truly did show itself when she dropped unconscious because of the spider. I got to talk to her." He said excitedly, which was rare, plus he was wide awake.

Chris looked over to the Empire's balcony and saw fear in the 6 Lord's eyes but his uncle, greed and fascination. He also noticed how Jertiza seemed to be barely managing to hide the grin he had. He looked over to Claude, then Dimitri and his sister. The three kids looked down with wide eyes as the girl was surrounded by medical mages to make sure she was alright. Arisa looked up to the
children's balcony and waved, but not before she made a butterfly appear in her hand and fly towards. It flew in and it settled on Edelgard's nose. The girl giggled and Lady Patricia smiled warmly as she saw her daughter laughing. The butterfly then turned into multiple, the children were giggling as they landed on their heads and noses. One of them landed on Caspar's ear. They all pouted or whined when they turned to rainbow dust. King Lambert chuckled.

"I appreciate how she went her way to play with the children like that." He said and Lady Patricia nodded.

The match was a success.

[-------]

"I'm am very impressed and proud to be your teacher!!! Excellent work out there!!" Sothis appeared and clapped her hands excitedly as she circled around Arisa, who giggled as she walked down the hallway to ask a maid if she could get something to eat.

She had her regular clothing back on along with her cloak.

"Thank you Sothis. Really." Arisa said as she made a turn and froze.

She had to run into the children and the older ones were with them as well. They all turned her way, and it felt like she had run into an army.

"Tech!!" And of course, Claude was the first one to call her out and jumped to her.

"Whoa!!" She barely caught him and spun him around.

"Claude!!" She screeched as she settled him down and the boy grinned.

"Amazing performance out there!! This proves that my teacher is still a badass!!! Are Amir and Alexandra with you?!" He said and Sylvain, Zander and Glenn twitched.

"Sorry Claude....the girls are back home. Alex and Amir are traveling with my dad. Sorry, but I do have something for you." She said took out a small pile of letters that were tied together with a blue ribbon, "Before I left, she told me if I ran into you to give you this." She said and the boy gently took letters.

"Also, Marianne," she walked up to the blue haired girl, who blinked, "I'm the friend of Arisa and Alexandra. Alexandra told me to give this to you." She took out a pink flower crown and placed it on her.

The girl smiled softly and thanked her.

"So," Zander walked up to her and smirked, "hello Miss Kalsana. I'm am Prince Zander Alphonses Blaiddyd, first prince of the Holy Kingdom of Faerghus," he picked up her hand and kissed it, "pleasure to make your acquaintance." He smiled and Arisa just gave him a blank stare.

"No offense, but you aren't my type." She instantly shot him down.
"BWHAHAHAHAHAHA!!! SHOT DOWN!!" Glenn wheezed and the kids were snickering at the blow the prince was just dealt.

"Anyhow," Chris spoke and walked up to her while Zander had turned to stone, "I'm taking the kids and the others to eat. Care to join us?" He smiled.

"2 coppers she rejects him." Sylvain whispered to Glenn.

"You're on." Glenn said while the kids were staring.

"Sure, I love too." Arisa smiled warmly and Chris grinned.

"Hand it over." Glenn smirked as his friend that growled and handed him the two copper coins. Claude quickly held her right hand.

"We have to catch up!!! Oh!! Maybe you can train me like before!!" He said excitedly and Arisa chuckled.

Lestia grinned as she suddenly hung herself around the older girl's neck with a grin that matched Claude's. She whispered in her ear.

"Welcome back Arisa." The girl said and just barely the older girl’s eyes widened.

Lestia let go of her and Arisa stared as the girl grinned like a Cheshire cat.

"You still got 3 hours of rest before...you enter the Lion's Den. Let's go." Chris said and they all got into the carriage to restaurant that the boy had reserved ahead of time.

[-----]

"This is divine!!!" The girls squealed as they took a bite out of their slices of caramel cake.

Arisa was in heaven as she sat next to Lysithea, who grinned to her.

"Nice to meet you Miss Kiana. I am Lysithea von Ordelia. I have heard a bit about you from my parents, but it is an honor to meet you in person!!" Lysithea said as she took a sip of her sweet tea.

I'm pleased to meet you too. Aren't you adorable?" Arisa patted her head then hugged her, squealing like a little girl.

"Please let go of me!!" Poor Lysithea's face was put into her chest, and the girl was having trouble breathing.

"I'm jealous...." a couple of the boys thought as they watched the older girl hugged the younger girls to her chest.

They were just too cute and even Sothis was cooing as she was petting their heads. Only Chris could see her and chuckled as he took a bite of his steak.

"So," Hubert spoke, "I have never seen such forms of magic in my life. Yet I am very intrigue to see more. Do you use white magic?" He asked and Arisa let go of poor Annette, but the girl was
happy hugging her.

"I use all the elements, a bit of white, black and dark magic. But my specialty is healing and wind." She said and Hubert nodded.

"Well," Ferdinand spoke, "I am Ferdinand von Aegir!! Pleasure to make your acquaintance and hope you chose to join the Empire!!" The orange haired boy grinned.

"No way!!" Lestia said, "She'll be joining the Kingdom!!" The princess said and Claude burst out laughing.

"No way. Teach is obviously joining the Alliance!!" He laughed and the other two pointed their knives at him, but he just held his smirk.

"Alright calm down." Arisa said because the kids about to start arguing with each other and poor Bernadetta was just hiding behind Felix.

She took a sip of her mint tea and spoke.

"I am a freelance doctor. Meaning I am allied to no one and cannot be forced to swear loyalty unless I chose to. Nor am I under control of any nation. I know my rights." She took a sip of her tea again and Chris and Glenn chuckled.

"Still, you're going to be studying at the Magic Academy here. Good luck. I heard it's a nightmare at times." He said and Annette glared at him.

"We'll see how things turn out." She chuckled.

"Umm...Miss Kiana?" Dimitri spoke and the girl turned to him, "You said you know Arisa? Ummm.....where is she now?" He asked.

"Arisa...Is she Uncle Florencio's niece?" Bernadetta said and hid back behind Felix.

".........." Arisa was silent but let go of a sigh as she placed down her cup of tea.

"Arisa......" she began, "has been going through a difficult time lately." She said and Dimitri looked worried, "But," she turned to him and smiled warmly, "She said to wait. You'll be seeing her soon actually. She's closer than you realize because," she placed her finger on his chest, "your heart will guide her to you." She smiled.

Dimitri felt his face heat up and then...

"Oooohhhhh~" Ingrid, Annette, Hilda, Lestia, surprisingly Gina, Lysithea, and Claude all cooed and the poor Faerghus prince had turned red and covered his face.

Meanwhile, Edelgard had a frown on her face. Jealousy was the word to describe what she was feeling. She remembers when Dimitri mentioned this "Arisa". The way he talked about like she was some knight in shining armor.

"Even if our exchange wasn't long, I know I'll meet her again!! We even made promise." Those words rang back in her mind.

She was jealous of this girl she had never met. Her grip on her fork tighten and Hubert noticed.
"By the way," Edelgard snapped out of it and heard Kiana talking to her, "I never got your name little flower. Nice to meet you." Kiana smiled to her kindly and the girl nodded.

"Pleasure to meet you. I am Edelgard von Hresvelgs. Princess of the Adrestian Empire and Future Emperor." She said and Arisa nodded as she stretched out her hand to the princess.

"Nice to meet you El!" Arisa grinned to her.

Hubert narrowed his eyes while the princess stared at the older girl's hand.

"I'm sorry about that. El's just shy." Chris said as Arisa retracted her hand back.

"It's alright. Besides, you get used to it." She said and Edelgard stared at her and Chris chuckled.

The rest of the meal was nice. Linhardt at some point just bluntly asked her about her Crest and Casper scolded him. She couldn't help but feel happy as she talked to the children. Unaware of her, Sylvian, Zander and Glenn had plans to ask her about their supposed dead friend Alexandra.

- 3 Hours Later -

Once more, Gina escorted Arisa through the palace, this time a specific big door. The girl gave her a worried look.

"This is....the Round Table of Faerghus. Also known as, the literal Lion's Den. Lords of all three nations will be there....be ready. I'm just glad Lord Seteth is there to make sure things remain civil." The girl said as she opened the door.

Indeed, it was like the knights of the round table but more.....it was filled with Lords, Knights and one king. Arisa stepped in and looked over to the 5 current doctors. Cornelia sat poised, the eyes of snakes. She was going to do everything she could to make sure she accepts her offer. After all, money speaks volumes.

"Welcome, Miss Kiana Kalsana," King Lambert greeted her warmly, "I am King Lambert Egitte Blaiddyd. I welcome you to Fhirdiad and you have my sincerest gratitude for helping Count Galatea and for curing the epidemic that swept through Territory Galatea." King Lambert smiled kindly to her and the two shook hands.

"Thank you, your Highness. But I couldn't have done it without Lady Emily's help. We both deserve credit." Arisa said and Emily smiled softly.

"Now then," Seteth spoke and walked up to her as King Lambert returned to his seat, "I didn't have a chance to introduce myself before, but I am Seteth, Advisor of the Church and serve Lady Rhea. Today, I will be overseeing the offers of sponsorships because we don't want a repeat of what happened 15 years ago." He said and poor Edward buried his face in his hands in embarrassment, Doctor Robert patted his shoulder.

"We shall introduce your fellow Holy Magus." He said and the five stood up.

"It is a pleasure to meet you dear. I am Cornelia von Aubin, the first archmage of the Fhirdiad Magic Academy and royal court mage of the royal family. I hope we get along." Cornelia smiled warmly.
"Fat chance snake. Never going to happen." Arisa thought as she smiled to her.

Seteth twitched. The girl's smile reminded him of Lady Rhea for some reason.

"I am Florencio. It's an honor to finally meet my sister's student. Also, to see a fellow free-lance mage. If you need any help with antidotes, contact me." He smiled kindly and Arisa nodded.

"Uncle, I'm happy to see you!!" Arisa sent him a mental message and the man felt pride swell in his chest.

He wanted to cry and scream he was proud of his little niece. Emily smiled as she put her hand on her chest to introduce herself.

"Good to see you again my friend!! You already know who I am but I'm going to give the introductions anyway because I do not wish to suffer the spinach head's wrath." Emily said proudly and Arisa had to slap her hand over her mouth to keep herself from bursting out laughing while a few others were snickering or barely able to contain their laughter.

Seteth's eye was twitching while the other 3 shook their heads and Florencio was shaking uncontrollably, trying not to laugh. That comment reminded Seteth of his sister Noa!! Emily smirked and spoke proudly.

"I am Emily von Miller Zoltras, Head of House Zoltra. Second royal court mage of King Lambert, and second archmage of the Magic Academy!! And finally, after 5 damn years I get to see you again!!! You grown!!!" Emily said and everyone looking at her shocked.

Those of the Kingdom were already used to it, everyone else, was not.

"Lady Emily, I have to ask you to watch your language!! You are in the presence of all the important Lords of Fodlan!!" Seteth fumed and she just waved him off.

"Yeah yeah whatever Cih." She said and froze.

"Pardon?" Seteth said and only one person had ever called him that name.

"I'm Doctor Edward Snowden!!" Edward quickly spoke and saved her, "I go by Edward von Edmund these days. If you need help with Crestogoly and the study of science, feel free to look for me." He said and noticed the frown Seteth had at the mention of science.

"Lastly, I am Doctor Robert Agres. I serve Duchess Marry, Duke Zika and Count Urus of the Empire." He said and felt the glares of the 7 nobles and the other three had smug smirks.

"It is an honor to meet you all. " Ariss politely bowed to them.

"Oh my, aren't you cute." Cornelia chuckled and Arisa felt her skin crawl.

"Now then," Seteth said as they 5 went to take their seats, "I shall introduce you to the Lords here." He said, " On the right side of the table, are the lords of the Adrestian Empire. Lord Arundel is the Regent for the Empire, with the rest of the 6 Prime ministers and will be representing the Hresvelgs Royal family. You have the Duchess Marry, Duke Zika and Count Urus. The three are a group representing one and their houses combined." Seteth said and Arisa nodded.

Jertiza was with them but seems he was with the 7 lord's side. She looked over to the group of the
three Prime ministers and Sothis spoke to her in her mind.

"It’s alright. Those three you can ally to them if you desire. I can see auras of white compared to the 7 lords who are covered with death and greed." Sothis said and Arisa turned with Seteth to the left.

"The left side are the Lords that represent The Leicester Alliance. We have Duke Reigan, representing House Reigan. Duke Gonierl, Count Gloucester and Margrave Edmund. All three also represent the Alliance but also their own Houses." He said and Arisa saw Judith was with them but apparently the older woman was also there to make sure the men did not go crazy.

"Last but not least," Seteth said and the two turned to the center, "are the Lords and King of the Holy Kingdom of Faerghus. You have already been introduced to King Lambert so I will speak of the Lords. We have Duke Fraldarius, also known as Sir Rodrigue. Margrave Gautier, Count Charon, Count Galatea, Count Rowe, Viscount Keilman, Baron Dominic also known as Sir Gustave and lastly, Lord Gaspard, also known as Lord Lonato." He said and turned to her.

"Of course, the Holy Maguses of those nations will all be offering sponsorships as well. The only one who has chosen not to participate is Doctor Florencio." Seteth explained and Arisa felt betrayed, but she knew her uncle was doing it to see him much she really has grown.

"Before we begin the offers, each side has been awarded two questions to ask. Anything you like to say Miss Kalsana before we begin?" Seteth asked.

Arisa nodded and turned to the table. She had to admit, she did not expect to cause so much damage on Cornelia. She barely managed to keep a straight face when she saw the woman wearing a mask that covered the right side of her face.

"I thank you all again for having me." She said and bowed.

"Alright then, we shall start with Alliance side, with Duke Reigan." Seteth said and a stern yet kind old man spoke.

"Miss Kalsana, where did you obtain your medical training?" Duke Reigan asked.

"I began medical training at age four. My uncle is a doctor and I was intrigued by a book he had left open in his shop. Eventually, I took an early interest in medicine and became his apprentice at age 5. Also, since were both are from a family of mercenaries, we have travelled to different countries around Fodlan and have learned about different practices of medicine, new treatments, medical herbs that we never knew existed." She answered.

Part of her wish she could say she went to nursing school, but her answer was also true. All these years of travelling and training under her uncle's wing have showed many things she never knew from her old world and have discovered new methods of treatment. In her old world, she was nothing but a newbie. She saw the nobles muttering to each other and a few taking notes.

"Thank you Duke Reigan. Count Gloucester, your turn." Seteth said and they turned to Lorenz's father.

Yesh, talk about bad haircut.

"Do you prefer to use magic or science in your treatments?" He asked and couple of people sent him glares.
"Ufu." Arisa's giggle seemed to catch them a bit off guard till she spoke, "My Lord, I do not have a preference. I use both for my treatments. Though science and magic are the complete opposites, one being that of the supernatural realm out of reach and the other is based on real facts, the world of logic. However, if you take a closer look," she placed her index fingers together, "you can create a bridge that meets halfway. That both can be used to give us results one can never expect was possible. I used these two to help find a way to treat plant diseases." She said and that seemed to catch Count Galatea's attention, "Though the plant diseases cannot be eradicated, then can be surpassed. Thus, not only allowing the plant itself, to heal, but also strengthen its immune system like us humans. Hope this answers your questions." She said and the Count nodded, satisfied with her answer.

She honestly hates how scientific breakthroughs are looked down upon in this world. If progress was allowed, she could see the amazing results but at the same time, she knows the greed that grow. It was the same with her old world. Once more, mutters and notes taking.

"Lords of the Alliance, I thank you. Now," Seteth turned to the Empire side, "it is The Empire's turn. Duchess Mary, we shall start with you?" He said and they turned to woman in her early 40's who seemed like a kind wise lady.

"Thank you Lord Seteth." Duchess Mary said and turned to the girl, "Miss Kalsana, this is a bit random but there have been rumors that you have travelled across Fodlan teaching children how to read and write. Is this true and why?" Lady Mary asked.

Count Gautier sent a glare to the woman because he had the same question in mind.

"I can confirm these rumors are true." Arisa answered, "In my country, our system is that children receive free education till they reach age 18. The focus to teach children how to read and write but other subjects are offered to them as the years go by. Math, science, music, art, medicine, history, physical education, geography, chemistry, social studies, home economics, biology. There are honestly thousands of other subjects offered and they can choose what they wish to study so they can discover what they want their career to be when they become adults. Education is for everyone. Regardless of status, age and backgrounds. I want to show children that it is possible to achieve their goals. Yes, the path will be rough and difficult, but I know they can do it." She said truthfully.

This was her way of introducing 21st century thinking to this world. At least some form of the system from her old world. Duchess Mary smiled proudly, while Florencio and everyone else was trying to process what she just said. The purple haired man did not know his niece thought this way. But he was glad it was in an indirect way of flipping off the Crest System.

"TAKE THAT SETETH AND LADY RHEA!!" He thought and Emily smacked him.

"Wipe that smug smirk off your face!!" Emily whispered.

"It had been a long time since I have heard honest words." Duchess Mary nodded in approval and so did the two of her group, "Young Lady, I would be more than happy if you chose us. I thank you for your answers." The woman said and Arisa nodded.

"Cough. Thank you, Miss Kalsana, for your answers. Lord Arundel, it is your turn." Seteth partly grumbled.

The advisor was not exactly fond of the 15-year-old girl's way of thinking.
"Lady Kalsana," Lord Arundel spoke as he interviewed his hands on the table, "you showed amazingly magical abilities but also forms of magic none of us here have ever seen before. Where did you receive your magic training?" He said.

Cornelia's smile seemed to widen because she wanted to hear this. This girl had things she wanted.

"I was trained by my aunt and uncle in magic but also through my years of travel through Fodlan and the world, I learned from a different variety of people. I was also taught ancient magic from Fae I met through the years." She answered.

"FAE?!" Everyone yelled out loudly in shock while both Florencio and Emily just sigh.

The two doctors looked to each other and smirked. Oh, they knew. Arisa wasn't lying. It was around 3 years ago that her family stayed in Dadga for 6 months and other 6 months in Brigid. The tropical forest was filled with fae of all kinds and Florencio and Jeralt always found the girls in the forest with them. They would be talking happily to them and he saw how they were also teaching them spells, and other ancient methods.

"T-To be taught magic by Fae.....that is an extreme rarity!!" Count Rowe said.

The girl's value just skyrocketed, and Arisa was starting to think she should have kept that part to herself.

"Thank you, Lady Kiana. I am very impressed by your answer." Lord Arundel nodded.

Seteth coughed, making everyone shut up. He let go of a sigh and turned to the center.

"King Lambert, your turn." Seteth said and the King nodded.

"Lady Kiana, could you speak to us of your combat experience?" He said and a couple lords muttered to themselves.

"Yes. I was trained by Sir Jeralt alongside his daughter. The mercenary group I was in travel with Sir Jeralt for 5 years before we went our separate paths. He taught me the sword, Lady Sandana taught me the Dance of Goddess. I am also a Tactician. I studied military tactics, magic warfare, weapon making, and more." She answered.

Florencio hid his frown. She was right. The fact that everyone in the company saw how the girl buried herself in books to study such things.....made her respected. Her instructions were flawless, and many praised her for it. Even her father was very impressed but, there was also a small trickle of fear. The girl kept absorbing information like a sponge, and he worried it was going to be her downfall.

"I see....." The King nodded, and smiled, happy with the answer.

"Lastly, Count Galatea. You may ask your question." Seteth said and the Count nodded.

Arisa smiled sadly as she saw the man. She could tell he was tired and stressed with everything going on in his land.

"Lady Kiana, I want to thank you personally for helping my people. I don't know how we could ever repay you. You saved my daughter's life." He said and Arisa nodded.
"My question is....why did you chose to help me and my people even if we have never met till now?" He said and that caught her off guard.

Everyone was caught off guard by this and their eyes turned to her.

"I......." Arisa let go of a sigh and lightly rubbed her arm, "Count Galatea.....I'm a doctor...I'll never live it down in my life if I let people die.... I just couldn't sit back and watch." She looked up to him, "When I heard of the epidemic going on, I asked what the symptoms were. When they were told to me, I knew what it was because it's a sickness that does exist in my country, but it can easily be treated there because we have the tools and technology to. But here in Fodlan....it's nearly impossible to get the ingredients and tools to make the antibiotic. So, it took me 2 years of experimenting and finding the correct ingredients that could be used as substitutes for specific ones and create new tools to prepare for it." She said and looked at him.

Meanwhile, Seteth was not happy at the mention of technology.

"But....if it wasn't for Emily helping me, we would have never been able to produce it. I'm just happy that I was able to help your people in some way. I....chose to share my knowledge to help those in need. No matter who they are. And Count Galatea," she said, "Even if I do not choose your sponsorship, I would still do what I can to help you and your people. Because that is my belief. To help those in need regardless of age, status, background and who they are. We are all equals." Arisa smiled to him warmly.

Everyone looked rather shocked and Emily and Florencio smiled warmly. They were proud. Florencio wished Jeralt was here so he could see how much his daughter has grown.

"Thank you....thank you....thank you!!" Count Galatea could not help but burst into tears hearing her words.

Arisa smiled softly and Emily handed the man a tissue box and patted his back. After that, Arisa was asked to step outside for a few minutes to allow everyone to gather their thoughts and speak. The girl currently sat on a chair and heard footsteps approaching and turned.

"Hello there, I did not have a chance to introduce myself." A young man with light brown hair tied in a ponytail, with long side bangs, he wore a white mask that covered the top of his face and wore familiar clothing.

Arisa knew who this was, and she felt her skin crawl a bit.

"I am Jeritza von Hrym, Head of House Hrym. It is a pleasure to meet you Lady Kalsana." The 16-year-old Jeritza bowed politely to her.

She stood up and did the same.

"It's a pleasure to meet you too." She said.

"I was very impressed by your combat performance during the demonstration. If so, I would like to have a sparring match with you when you are free." He said.

"Alright then, perhaps after...I get out of the drama room." She joked a bit and he chuckled.

"Miss Kalsana," the door opened and Seteth popped his head out a bit, "you may come back in." He said and she nodded.
"Well, I must go." She smiled but not before she leaned in and whispered in his ear, "Mercedes is safe. Visit her when you get the chance." She said and Jeritza's eyes widened.

Before he could say anything, the girl had run back to the room.

--------

"Before we begin, please keep things civil. No arguments nor fights. Emily, Cornelia, I'm looking at you two." Seteth said to the two women who both sent a glare at each other.

"Actually," Cornelia spoke, "I have a question for you Miss Kalsana." She said and everyone turned to look at the woman, "I'm highly impressed by your results and the answers to the questions that have been asked to you. Yet, what do you seek enrolling Academy and wish to achieve?" She asked.

The woman's eyes were like snakes, waiting to catch their prey. Cornelia wanted this girl, badly. She held so much knowledge just waiting to be plucked like a sweet fruit from a tree.

"Well, I want to learn. I'm always seeking knowledge and wish to learn about the world around me. I want to grow and help people. That is why I am enrolling as a student." Arisa said.

"Wait what?" Emily said as she was looking back and forth at the documents in her hands.

"That can't be right...." Cornelia said suddenly worried as both women were looking at the documents.

"Is something wrong?" Seteth said and murmurs began among the people.

"You said student......" Emily said slowly and Cornelia looked back to the girl.

"Miss Kalsana......which classroom did you take the exam in?" Cornelia said.

"I was told the exams would be in the room with the yellow door. Why?" Arisa said confused.

"Oh no!!!" For the first time in forever, both Cornelia and Emily looked at each other in horror and everyone was just as confused.

"Kiana, the exam you took wasn't to become a student!!! It was to become a Professor at the academy for a semester!!" Emily cried out and Arisa suddenly had a frozen smile on her face.

"Eh?" The poor girl.... felt her heart freeze.

"BREATH, BREATH! BREATH !!!" Sothis screamed out to her friend but too late.

The entire room was in shock and Florencio and Edward had faces of horror.

"Eh......?" Arisa could barely say and dropped to the floor out cold.

The entire room was in a panic state and Cornelia and Emily were both apologizing to the king, that it was a mistake on their part. Seteth had dropped to the floor and was helping the poor girl in his arms, telling her to wake up, worried. He was using his hand to fan her while the same situation was going with Florencio, but Edward was fanning him.
"We sincerely apologize to you my friend!!! This was a mistake on our part!!" Emily said to the poor girl who was given a chair to sit on.

Arisa had her face buried in her hands and was silent.

"You may take the student exam if you desire. We'll have it prepared for you to take tomorrow." Cornelia said and about to walk out till Arisa spoke.

"I'll do it." The girl said and everyone looked at her shocked, "I'll teach at the Academy as a Professor." She said and unhide her face.

"Are you sure?!" Florencio said to her.

"I'm sure. This could be learning experience after all." Arisa said and Emily let go of a sigh.

"So…. back to being a Professor again. College all over again here I come." She thought.

"You suggested two subjects. Medical classes and Astronomy. We have never heard of this Astronomy, but you also wrote that it is the study of the stars and celestial cosmos. How does that connect to magic?" Cornelia said as everyone looked back to the girl.

"A lot. And I mean….a lot. It was also a subject the fae taught me about." Arisa said.

"Alright then. With that settled, Seteth, let us start the offers." Emily said.

Seteth nodded and turned to the Empire side.

"We shall start with the Empire. Duchess Mary, you are first." Seteth said and the woman nodded.

"Thank you." She said and turned her, "As the representative of Houses Grimm, Chevalier, and Kilauea, we three offers to pay the usual 500 gold per month, with an additional 200 gold for you use as you like. Not only that, we offer you citizenship in our territories and to be trained under us in economics, mage warfare and politics." Duchess Marry said with a kind smile.

The 6 Lord's faces had turned red as they looked at the three, ready to murder them on the spot if they could. Many looked at the group in shock while both Sothis and Arisa were mentally discussing with one another the deal. They admit, it was a good one and it would benefit them well.

"Lord Arundel, you next." Seteth said.

"As the representative of the royal family, we offer you full access to the libraries, royal archives, that includes the forbidden sections. Also, the position as Court mage of the royal family so you may work freely wherever you wish in the Empire with an additional 1000 gold coins." Lord Arundel said and Mary became pale.

Doctor Robert's fist shook with anger as he glared the Lords. As much as Arisa liked the deal because she knew those Lords especially work with those who Slither in the dark and could help her get her hands-on technology, but she refused to be forced to help them with their Crest research. She figured that why Doctor Robert looked angrily at them. Also, she could never forgive
them for hurting her precious future students.

"Duke Reigan, it is your turn." Seteth said and they turned to the Alliance side.

Duke Reigan nodded and spoke.

"Well, Miss Kiana, I admit, I've had an interest in you for some time because my grandson has
taken a liking to you. He called you his teacher. I'm guessing you and the other young lady taught
him well in the subjects of science and Archery. So, my offer is this, you are granted full freedom
to travel around the Alliance along with access to the public libraries and the family archives. Also,
an additional 600 gold to use for your research and projects. And if the future decides it, I allow
you to marry my grandson." He said and Arisa's face turned red while everyone was looking at the
Duke like he grew a second head.

"Ummm.....Duke Reigan." Arisa muttered a bit shyly, "I um.....I thank you for the offer if I accept
but um.....please to all of you....don't offer marriage to me. I'm um......currently not ready for
such....cough!! Plans." Arisa coughed a bit uncomfortably and Edward and Emily were holding
Florence back, barely.

"Well, there goes that plan...." a couple of the Lords thought because they were going to offer their
sons since the girl had a Major Crest, which is rare.

"Next, Count Gloucester." Seteth quickly spoke and the Count coughed.

"Miss Kalsana, we offer you 500 extra gold per semester with the offer of being trained in
traditional mage warfare and safe travel to your country. Also, for you to train my son in magic." 
Count Gloucester said.

"So, he's offering safe travel, to make Lorenz my apprentice......unfortunately, he is wasting that
money on me because I can't travel to the United States in this world. Sigh...still, training Lorenz
wouldn't be bad but..." she made a quick glance to Lysithea's father, "I have plans to save Lysithea
and her family. I won't be able to make a move if I'm under this man's house because he will try to
assassinate Claude's grandfather." She thought and Seteth spoke.

"Lastly, representing House Goneril, we have Duke Holst." Seteth said and Arisa turned to Hilda's
older brother.

"Hmm...Amir wasn't kidding." She thought as she looked at the older man with the same colored
hair and eyes as Hilda.

"Lady Kiana, my house offers this. 800 gold to use as you please, access to the mountain mines in
our territory. As well as to be trained in military strikes and defenses. Also, the forest in our
territory is home to many rare fae and I believe it would benefit you well." He smiled.

"You son of a bitch......" everyone else that had already made offers thought this because the man
was offering the one thing NONE of their territories had, especially in the Empire.

"The mountain mines huh? Not bad. If I remember correctly, Amir mention that House Goneril
was also famous for its mines that produce rare gems. Especially emeralds and rubies. Also,
despite the family in charge of fending off Alymran forces, their territory is known as heaven for
jewelry lovers. Arisa, I must admit, I like this deal." Sothis said to her and Arisa nodded bit.

Jewels since they have high compatibility with her magic. Arisa pulled out a ruby, making a few
people raise eyebrows but gasped when it burst into flames and she made it disappear.

"Jewels hold knowledge. For they come from the earth itself. They represent different elements. Rubies for example represent purity and passion but in terms of magic, it benefits well for a fire mage user." She said and many blinked.

"I call it Jewel magic. I'll think about your offer Sir Holst." Arisa said with nodded and the man had a bright smile.

He felt he just won, while the others that made offers or had yet to make one, looked ready to kill him.

"Finally, we have those of the Kingdom." Seteth said and Arisa looked to the center.

"Sir Rodrigue, you may begin." He said and the man nodded.

"Miss Kalsana, we offer to pay the standards set by the two archmage and be trained in knighthood by me personally, as well as an additional 900 gold coins and for you to train my son Felix in swordsmanship." Lord Rodrigue said and Arisa crossed her arms.

"To become a knight, to be trained directly under Sir Rodrigue.......and to train Felix." She thought.

"Count Galatea, your turn." Seteth said and the count nodded.

"Unlike everyone here, I can't give you extra funds. But, once again, I thank you for helping my people. My offer is simple. To help me find a solution to help my land flourish once more with food for my people. Famine has scarred the land and I wish for answers and solutions. In exchange, you will have sole credit to future projects you work and be adopted into the Galatea Household as my daughter's older sister." He said.

Everyone looked at the man in shocked and Arisa was only silent.

"I'm offered control of my projects and freedom. Yet, I already have a family and I do not wish to betray them." She thought as she made a quick glance over to her Uncle whose face had become stone.

"Count Gautier, it is your turn." Seteth said and Sylvian's father spoke.

"We offer 1500 gold coins, pay for your living expenses, offer you citizenship and the full privileges of House Gautier, the position of Head Mage and representative of our house." The man said and many once more looked shocked.

"Hell no." Arisa thought, but she will still find a way to help Sylvian's mental state.

"Lastly, we have the King himself." Seteth said and the King chuckled.

"Miss Kiana, you demonstrated you have power, knowledge, skills and wisdom. For that, I offer you 3000 additional gold coins, full citizenship in The Holy Kingdom of Faerghus. The freedom for research, the funds needed, access to all the royal archives and to become my children's instructor. As well as territory under your name. And if you chose to become the third Holy Magus of the Kingdom in the future, you will not be forced to be allied to this nation. You may come and leave as you desire." He said and everyone looked at him horrified yet amazed.
"So my own house name....freedom....citizenship. I'm not tied down." she thought.

"Also," Cornelia spoke, "in addition to the sponsorship, I offer 12,000 additional gold coins with you becoming my apprentice and teaching you the ways of the magical arts. As well as the Aubin name." The woman said and everyone had become pale as paper except the King.

"Unbelievable......" Emily muttered and spoke.

Cornelia was just throwing money away!! That woman was desperate!!

"Kiana," Arisa turned to her and Cornelia glared furiously at the red-haired girl, "as the head of House Zoltras, I offer you this. Absolute freedom and control of your research. The resources and materials you will need as the new Professor of the Magic Academy. The Zoltras name because this house has served as doctors to the royal family since its founding. There will be no need for you to be adopted since just you having the Zoltras name is enough. The power and privileges that my family has. You may be allied to whoever you wish. Teach whoever you wish. Help whoever you wish. You will not be judged by your beliefs. Travel whenever you wish. You will be allowed access to both magic and science books, ancient history and archives. Finally, 5,000 gold coins and you becoming my apprentice. Of course, you will have full credit to your projects. And, freedom to visit your family whenever you desire. Of course, this also goes with the king’s offer, but should you choose his, you will have to also chose either me or Cornelia. So, Kiana, who do you choose to sponsor you?" Emily said seriously.

Seteth felt like he was looking at his sister Noa. While Cornelia gritted her teeth. Arisa was silent as she intertwined her fingers and thought.

"It's obvious Cornelia is trying to win me with money and what's more...trying to clear her name. Hana told me everything that went down after the fire and we really did a huge dent on Cornelia's reputation. Also, I'll admit, learning from the woman would benefit me but......" she made quick glance to her, "you snake have already hurt too many people. I don't need you to be on my back for every little thing I do. You want my knowledge. You're getting nothing. " Arisa thought and looked over to Emily then her Uncle.

"Emily's deal.....is good also along with Duchess Mary's. It's clear that those three do not get along with those 7 Lords. If safe to say.... they may have been fighting against Those Who Slither in the Dark. What's more, I'm being offered to learn more about The Empire and its politics. It would help find a way to help Edelgard but also prevent the war. However, I am worried about how things will go down. Next, we got Count Galatea but I had already had plans to help him regardless. Plus, I'm not leaving my family. I care about Ingrid but like to suddenly leave my family? Sorry sir.... Finally, Holst's is good along with Claude's grandfather expect the marriage part. As much as I like Claude, romantic feelings are something I never felt towards him. He's like a brother to me. Back to Emily's, and The King's......" she looked over to them, "hrr mmmm.....it's a good one. Too good. But......" she let go of a small smile, "Power and control. Something everyone else was lacking. Cornelia wanted to control me and not let me have any freedom. If it's one thing every person fears yet loves, it's freedom of will." She nodded to herself.

Finally, she made one more glance to everyone and turned to Seteth.

"I've made my choice." She said and Seteth nodded.

"King Lambert," Arisa stood up, "I chose you and Lady Emily's offer." She said and Cornelia snapped in half her quill.
Emily and the king nodded, and Arisa spoke to the rest of the table.

"I thank you all for the opportunity. But, even if I did not accept your offers, I offer a hand in need when needed. Thank you all once again." She said a bowed politely.

Duchess Mary nodded and understood.

"Very well then girl. Honestly, I'm glad you chose the king and Miss Emily. Lady Emily is the most trustworthy Doctor I have ever met along with Doctor Robert. I wish you good luck. Oh, and if you ever want to talk to any of us, send an owl and I'll set up a tea party for us ladies!!" Duchess Mary said and shook hands with the girl, but Arisa felt a paper slipped into her hand.

"The honor is mine Lady Mary." Arisa grinned and Duchess's Mary group walked out along with Doctor Robert, who gave her a thumbs up, they nodded in approval to her, but she noticed the other 7 Lords narrowed their eyes at her before they left.

Those of the Alliance, a few of them were grumbling while Duke Reigan gave her a small nod. She looked over to Lysithea's father, who let go of a sigh before he left. Edward nodded to her and her Uncle gave a simple nod. She knew it meant he was proud of her and to be careful from now on. He then left. Lastly, the rest of the Lords left out except King Lambert, Seteth and Emily.

"Thank you for choosing us Miss Kiana." King Lambert said as they shook hands.

"Kiana is just fine. I'm honored your Highness and I won't disappoint you." She said and he smiled at her.

Emily grinned as she walked up to her and hugged her.

"Yay!! I'm glad you chose me!!! And I meant everything that I said!! As director of the Magic Academy, you have my full support. Plus, I think it's time for new subjects to be introduced anyway. Also, if you would have chosen Lady Mary, I would be happy with that too. She's very respected in the Empire." Emily grinned and Seteth coughed.

"Lady Kiana, " Seteth spoke, "since you have accepted the offers of Blaiddyd and Zoltras, please take out your card to show which Houses you are currently serving. This is to make sure no one tries anything against you and to show proof of who you are." He said and the girl took out her glass card.

King Lambert and Emily touched it, sending a bit of magic into it. The glass card began to glow and turned to half blue and green, with the Crest of Blaiddyd on the right and the Crest of Lamine on the left.

"With that, the contracts are complete. I wish you good luck Miss Kiana, may the goddess watch over you." He said and Arisa nodded.

"To you too. May the Goddess's winds guide you." Arisa grinned and he smiled to her softly and nodded before he left.

"I shall introduce you to my family later tonight. For now, Emily will help you get your documents set up. I will speak to you tomorrow morning regarding the land I will be giving you." He said and she nodded.
Time to properly meet everyone.

- Cornelia's office -

"RRRAAAHHHHH!!!" The woman screamed furiously as she threw a vase across the room and it shattered to pieces.

"My one ticket to success and it's taken away from me!!! To think that girl chose that bitch over what I offered her!!" Cornelia roared furiously as she threw the papers off her desk.

"YOU RUINED EVERYTHING ALEXANDRA!!!" She roared as she stabbed the picture of her husband and daughter multiple times, "All my research, gone!! Even my backed up saved data, gone!!! My name has been tarnished!! My face is ruined!! I am forced to wear this mask!!! I am losing trust of the Lords every day!!! CURSE YOU DESCENDANT OF CIRINA!!" She panted as she finally stopped stabbing the picture.

Her mask had fallen off and her hair was a mess. Cornelia seethe with absolute rage. She despised Emily with a passion and wanted that girl, no matter the cost.

"I will...make that girl work with me...one way...or another....."

- Emily's office -

"Uncle!" Arisa cheered as Emily locked the door and Florencio along with Edward and Doctor Robert were in the woman's office.

Arisa undid her disguise as she jumped into her uncle's arms.

"You crazy girl!!!" He said but he hugged her tightly and Doctor Robert was confused.

"Wait, this is how she truly looks like?" Said shocked and Emily nodded.

"My friend, Kiana Kalsana is a false name she is using to hide her true identity. Do you remember that child you looked over 15 years ago? The one with no heartbeat?" She said and he looked at Arisa shocked.

"It can't be.... you're Jeralt's daughter!! But I thought you died in the fire!!" He said but could not help but hug the girl.

"I just can't believe it!! I'm glad you are away from that woman. Oh, child you grown beautiful." He said and Arisa smiled sadly.

"Thank you for helping my father escape with me. Truly. Also, I have a heartbeat." She said and he took out his stethoscope to check.

"You're....right." he said shocked.
"We're actually waiting for three more. The door and walls to this room are fully secured. Arisa Duchess Marry put a piece of paper in your hands. Place it on the floor." She said and Arisa did just that.

The paper glowed red and a warping magic circle appeared, and three humans fell out.

"Get off me!!" Duke Zika groans as Count Urus and Duchess Mary quickly get off him.

"Oh, hello there! Good to see you again dear!! No worries, Emily already informed us what is going on." Duchess Marry giggled as she fixed her coat.

"Now that everyone is here, I can properly introduce you to a few members of Sirius." Emily smiled and Arisa looked at her Uncle in shock.

"Y-you're a part of this?" She said and he nodded.

"Sorry Byleth. I had to keep this one hidden when I spoke to you days ago." He apologized and she let go of a sigh.

"Arisa, you already met everyone here. These are our most trusted spies of Sirius. Doctor Robert, Duchess Marry, Duke Zika and Count Urus are in charge of keeping track of the Empire. Mary had noticed that Duke Aegir is working with Those Who Slither in the Dark." Emily said.

"Right now, we managed to help the Emperor's youngest son, Henry, escape the Empire and will be staying under Emily's wing. We haven't been able to locate the other children but we're doing everything we can." Duke Zika said and Arisa was worried.

"I keep an eye on the nobles of the Alliance. The tensions have been growing worse over the years, and I'm worried about Count Ordelia." Edward said.

"I'll help you fake the entire family's death if I have too!! Please!! Lysithea is being experimented on!! I want to at least try and save her! TWSD are still in House Ordelia!!" Arisa cried out.

"What did you just say?!" Emily said, horrified.

"One of the fae I spoke to said they have noticed the shadow of death increasing over their manor. Emily, we're going to have to investigate." Edward said and the woman nodded.

"Son of......shit!!! That means they'll be starting the next phase of their plan soon!!" Emily punched a wall.

"Arisa, you already met Lucius. He's in charge of the Church. And yes, Rhea is increasing those spies. It's only a matter of time before she discovers.....what was done to Serios tomb." Emily said and Arisa gulped as she had her hand over her sword.

"And obviously, Florencio is your Uncle. He keeps track of gathering information all around Fodlan." She said and sighed.

"Arisa, by accepting my deal, you are hereby our newest member. Also, because you bare my mother's Crest. I know you possess the Crest of Flames. I will never forgive what Rhea has done to you but at the same time, if she didn't, you wouldn't be standing here today. Arisa Byleth, are you prepared to be part of the silent war against Those Who Slither in The Dark?" Emily said and Florencio was shaking his head.
"Absolutely not!! I will not allow my niece/Jeralt's daughter to be dragged into this!!! I don't need her to have a target on her back!!" Florencio said furiously.

"Florencio, she already has a target on her back since she and Alexandra screwed up Cornelia's reputation!!" Edward said and the man glared at everyone.

"Enough!" Arisa yelled out, making them all turn to her, "Uncle, I'm sorry but I have too!! I must stop them!!! I maybe to create change!! I need to defy the flow of fate!!" Arisa cried out.

"What are you talking about?! What are you saying Byleth?!!" He said and Arisa snapped.

"I'M SAYING I KNOW EVERYTHING THAT WILL HAPPEN IN THE FUTURE BECAUSE THIS IS MY SECOND LIFE!!!" She yelled out and the room went silent.

Not even Emily knew of this.

"What......?" Florencio said, shocked.

"Uncle, you have secrets of your own well so do I!!! The day I jumped in front of that bandit 11 years ago, was the day all the memories of my past life came back to me!! The knowledge I have...everything from knowing medicine, sword training, the songs I would sing, the books I have written, this is all the knowledge I had in the past!! The reason I hate lighting and despise getting sick is because that was my life back then!! I was born sick!! I didn't know freedom like this!! I didn't have the chance to grow up like a normal child because I always forced to be bedridden because I was born in my first life with a sickly body!! I was always lonely!! I was always coughing blood!! My only escape from my past reality were books and legends!! That's why I know more than I should!! I'm not stupid Uncle! I know you and everyone else in the company do fear me!!" She yelled out and panted.

Florencio stared at her shocked and Emily had to sit down, taking in everything.

"She's...just like.... she’s just like....and Erik....she...." the redhead girl took deep breaths as she looked over to the shaking girl, who was doing everything in her power not to burst out crying.

"I......I kept this hidden.....for 11 years......I....I want to prevent so many things. I want to stop dad from being killed in 5 years....I want.....I want to save.....my precious students and family.....for them...not to meet the cruel fate that awaits them...." Arisa was barely able to say as she looked at her Uncle.

"It hurts.....keeping everything in because if I say one wrong thing, it could cost me life. I...I...." Florencio hugged her to his chest and nodded.

"Say no more....I understand. Now.....let it all out." He said and Arisa began screaming and wailing loudly for the first time in ages.

She let her emotions finally take over and let herself cry her heart out. Even if she could finally move on, the burden of knowing what will transpire, was something that taking more and more of a toll on the girl. Sothis was silent as she and everyone heard the girl's screams in wails of pain and sorrow. Emily was glad to have sound proofed the room. She let go of a sad smile as she saw the two had dropped to their knees and the girl was crying in his chest. How many years has it been...since she has heard such sorrow?
"I HATE YOU NOA!! I HATE YOU!!! IT'S YOUR FAULT MOTHER IS DEAD!!"

"God dammit...." Noa muttered and hand her hands over her eyes.

Her lip quivered and she let her first tears fall. It was the one thing that made her different before she was taken in by House Zoltras, her stepmother. She never cried. Emily and Noa are the same person, yet what separates both was a simple thing. Human emotions. The Noa of the past loved her research more than anything and was often shunned by her siblings for always being into her research. She didn't fully understand humans till she met her beloved. He was an Agarthal who was exiled and had found his way to Zanados with his sister, who was Cirina's mother. With him, she learned what it was to truly love someone, and learned to reconnect with her family.

"Noa, watch over Serios for me. For I cannot be with her till the day I awaken once more."

The Noa of the present, Emily von Miller Zoltras, now fully understood the human heart, and at times, she hated it. She looked over once more to the girl and let go of a shaky sob.

"Curse you.....but also thank you....for making me realize the gift of what makes us human.

Chapter 22: Lion's Den: Part 1: Offers

[------]

This chapter was inspired by the story, Stolen Remedy by Stormtide Leviathan. I highly recommend checking out their story. It's amazing and I love it.

Siiiggghhh....this chapter was honestly nerve wracking to write. First, I decided to do research on the Nobility of all three nations plus, I added about 4 of own support characters on the Empire side. And yes, the Magic District was inspired by Harry Potter. I have been re-watching the movies lately. Next, we have Gina. Her and Chris will be making quite a few appearances in this arc. Also, this was a perfect chance to have the Black Eagle's kids meet our protagonist. I plan to have this arc be around 6-10 chapters. I want to take it slow because we're entering a dangerous area. Welp, LET THE DARMA BEGIN!!
"King Lambert," Emily spoke to the king in his office.

The woman and the rest had chosen to leave for office to allow the young girl and her uncle to speak privately. The four of the Empire had politely excused themselves and warped themselves back to their homes. Edward returned to Duke Reigan.

"Lady Kiana unfortunately would not be able to join you later tonight for dinner. Seems...that today's meeting put a huge stress on her." Emily said King Lambert looked up from his papers, concerned.

"Is she alright?" He asked.

"She is. I currently had a maid set up a room for her to stay in. She's asleep right now. Seems the journey to come here to the Kingdom and the stress has gotten to her. I swear," Emily chuckled, "she always over works herself. I'll have to keep an eye on her." She said and he nodded.

"I hope she'll be better tomorrow morning. But you arrived at a good time. I wanted to discuss with you about the contracts with Miss Kalsana." He said and she nodded as she sat in the chair in front of his desk.

"I'm surprised you offered the Zoltras name to her. There aren't many members left in your house. Do wish to bring in new people?" He asked and Emily sighed.

"Truthfully, I wish to start a family soon." She said and the man looked at her surprised, "But for now, I wish to adopt and bring in new members. My stepmother took me in after House Martritz fell. I had no mother and father, for they had given their lives to protect me. I wish to reach out my hand to someone. Just like Lady Zoltra did to me." She said and he smiled softly.

"Truthfully, you reminded me a lot of her. She was the one that helped raise me and my brother. I'm sure if she was here with us, she would be proud." He said and she smiled softly.

"Thank you." She chuckled, "Seems we got a bit off topic." She said.

"Ahh!! Forgive me about that. Back to the contracts, this is the land I will be giving Miss Kalsana." He said and handed her a document.

"Hmm...not bad." Emily said, "The Lands of Mateus. The land rich in natural materials along the coast of the sea. Perfect for trade and its valuable flowers said to have originated from Duscur and Sreng." She said and he nodded.

"Also, home to many fae." He smirked and the woman snickered.

"So, you were tipped off too by Lord Holst offer!! I knew it!!" Emily laughed and the king chuckled.

"It's not every day one has such an opportunity. When I heard his offer, I must admit, I was impressed. The Alliance is well known for its large forest terrain as well as its large population of fae." King Lambert stated as he took out another document and handed it to her.

The girl read its contents and slightly raised an eyebrow.
"So, let me get this straight, you wish for her to be your children's professor but also, IF she agrees, to possibly make one of them her own apprentice? And, if fate decides it, marry one of them?! King Lambert, the girl clearly stated she isn't ready for marriage!! You saw how uncomfortable she was when Duke Reigan said she could marry his grandson!!" Emily said as she slammed the paper down.

"Marriage? I didn't put that in the document." He said and Emily took out her glasses and read again.

She face palms.

"Forgive me. I confused military training with marriage. I'm an idiot." She groans and he chuckled.

"It is alright. I wish for her to do a mock battle to demonstrate her talent as a tactician. Also, since the semester doesn't start in another 7 days, I recommend taking her to your land in Rhodos Coast. You two will be neighbors." He said and she nodded.

"All right then. Also, I think she'll like Lake Teautates." She said and he nodded.

"Your highness, be honest with me." She began, "What did you think of Cornelia's offer to the girl and my own?" She said the King let go of a sigh as he turned her.

"Truthfully, the offer you made her gave her freedom of many things. I think it was what Kiana desired most. Control of her research and to not be judge unless she breaks taboos. However, the deal Cornelia offered her was power. With her being her apprentice, she gained authority of many things. But then I heard you say the rest of your offer. You gave her BOTH power on control along with freedom. Something very few were willing to give her. The girl may be young but is just as smart as you. She cares, she watches, she listens and thinks before she makes her choices. The sword styles she demonstrated during the mock battle was a combination of her own, but I also felt I was once more watching Jeralt the Blade Breaker, from my childhood days. He did used to serve the Kingdom after all. Also, seems Cornelia thought she could win over the girl with money. That may be true for many but those that do not accept, and do not let both power and control corrupt them, show they are truly worth working with." He said and Emily nodded.

"I'm going to repeat this question I asked you 5 years ago, do you still trust Cornelia?" She asked and the King shook his head.

"I do not. For now, I shall allow her to finish this final half of the year and after that, she will be dismissed from the Royal Court and Magic Academy. My wife trusts her which honestly has caused some conflict but.....I just know the woman has changed far too much. Truthfully, you have worked wonders despite being so young. Now looking back to the old days when Alexander was alive and the tensions between those two and how much it affected their daughter; I should have known sooner or later something was going to happen. Look where that led us...the death of my second right hand man and childhood friend." King Lambert said softly, and she smiled sadly.

"I understand. But, what will you do when that woman is gone? Obviously, the Aubin name will be taken from her." Emily said, worried and the King spoke.

"I have decided to give my son Zander that land. Name him Duke of Aubin. Though he may not have a Crest, he is an excellent knight and leader. He is the same age as Glenn and my stepson. Those three get along just like Rodrigue, Gustave, Alexander and I did in our younger days. I wouldn't surprise me if Miss Kiana and Gina became the new members of their group!! Haha!!! The two remind me of Ingrid." King Lambert laughed and Emily snorted.
"Very well then!!" Emily chuckled and there was a knock on the door.

"Come in." The king said, the door opened, revealing a maid.

"Oh, umm...I apologize for suddenly coming in, but Lady Emily, its Miss Kiana. She said she will be attending dinner tonight. Seems she is feeling better after speaking with Doctor Florencio." The maid said and Emily nodded.

"Well, that's my que. I'll see how Kiana is doing. In the meantime, get those documents set up or I'll have Lady Patricia after you." She said and the King chuckled a bit nervously.

With that done, Emily headed towards Kiana's room along with the maid, unfortunately, they ran into Cornelia along the way. The poor maid became tense, the two women shared a single stare that you could literally feel the temperature drop. The silence turned to one full minute that the maid looked ready to cry, and unfortunately, a few butlers and knights were nearby, the air getting colder and colder. The stares at the two women, finally broke, when they passed each other, not a single snark thrown. Their stares said everything. Another 5-minute walk and they arrived at room which was surprising in the hallway of the children's room, right in between Lestia's and Dimitri's. The maid excused herself and Emily knocked on the door, hearing a soft "come in". Open the door and closing it, seeing the girl sitting on the bed with a cup of lavender tea and Florencio on a chair next to the bed.

"Feeling a bit better.... after all that?" Emily said as grabbed a chair and sat next to Florencio.

Arisa did a bitter smile.

"Honestly.......I feel relieved being able to finally tell someone why I am the person I am today.....but I still can't say everything that I know. Uncle....you were right...this knowledge going to be my undoing in the end." She said softly and Florencio let go of a sigh.

"I always wonder why you suddenly started calling yourself Arisa one day. You wouldn't react when we would call you Byleth back when you were a child. It wasn't until a month later you finally fully reacted when we would call you your birth name. Dear, do you wish for us to call you your pass name, which I see you are more comfortable with, or Byleth?" He said, worried about her.

Arisa gave a soft smile and nodded.

"I prefer you call me either uncle. Because both hold feelings and a bond of my loving family. I would never give up one name for another." She said and Florencio hugged her.

"I won't tell a soul what I learned today. But promise me this," he said, "when the day comes you believe is the moment to speak the truth, do not lie to yourself. Accept who you are. Even if there will be some that will not believe a word you say, know that I will. Your aunt will. Your father, and those that truly love you will. You are not alone anymore. You never will be, ever." He said and he heard her giggle.

Emily smiled softly and nodded as Florencio stood up.

"I'll go bring Red Hare and Feh to the stables. I already told Jeralt that I'll be staying here in the Kingdom with you for a while to make sure you're okay, just to be safe. Also," he turned to Emily, "watch your back Emily. Cornelia is furious." He said and she nodded as he left out the door but not before saying goodbye.

"So," Emily turned to Arisa, "I told you that I was reincarnated but seeing a fellow being to also be
reincarnated brings another sense of easy. So far, it had only been my husband and I that have the memories of our past lives. As much as I wish you could tell me everything, I know the laws of time won't allow it. To some extent you can but that is about it." She said and Arisa nodded.

"Emily.....thank you. For respecting my choice and....to not force me to speak." Arisa said and the red head nodded.

"You're welcome. Now, all your belongings have already been brought here since you will be living in the palace for a bit, when the semester starts next Monday. By the way, will you be telling the king who you truly are at the dinner table?" She asked and Arisa shook her head.

"That is a no. With the way Cornelia has been active, right now that is a risk I do not wish to take. Lestia already figured me out and I have no clue how she did it.....and Chris also...that threw me off big time." Arisa said and Emily was silent.

Emily knew how Lestia was able to know it was her. The answer was simple. Her Crest. The same case was with Claude even before Edward told him not to say a word about who she was.

Emily closed her eyes and let go of a soft smirk.

"So that's it. For someone of Blaiddyd bloodline to be born with a Crest of Reigan, is lower than 1%. Yet, you be surprised what nature brings. But Chris....I've heard stories of anti-magic users but.......I thought that bloodline was wiped out by Serios because she feared them........hmm...so survivors did live. Because just like there is Beginning there is always an End." She thought then spoke.

"How about you tell me a few stories from your old home? Anything funny, legends, history, this Astronomy?? You got two hours before dinner. Also, I wish I could join you but unfortunately, we Magus are going home for the night." She said Arisa smiled.

"Alright then. Hmmm....where to start?" Arisa said as she lightly tapped her index finger on chin, while Emily smiled.

"Oh!!! How about I tell you the story of Aladdin? There are many different versions of this story but the one I love reading as a teenager back then was written by an author by the name Shinobu Ohtaka." Arisa said and Emily raised an eyebrow.

The two hours turned to Arisa telling the story of the magi and the forms of magic that existed in that story along with her telling legends and myths of her old home. The faces of excitement, shock, horror, joy, sadness that all appeared on Emily amusing. It had been years since the red-haired girl had heard stories like this and was fascinated by them. A small bite of the apple Arisa had given Emily and it was enough to satisfy the woman. For it had been a long time since Emily enjoyed hearing someone tell a story and to simply listen and enjoy. For it was her mother and Lady Zoltras that could do such a thing, and here she is now, listening and having fun. The woman may be too prideful, but her heart is always something else.

[--------]

"There, I think this should suit you well." Emily chuckled as she finished brushing Arisa's hair.

"Still....must you force me to wear makeup up...? No offense, I do like it, but it feels a bit too much." Arisa said as she was seated in front of a mirror.

She wore a simple nice green knee length dress that slightly flowed out. Along with a green cloak, because she refused to take it off because it made her feel secure. Her short hair was tied up to a
bun and Emily only applied a light blush on her lips. The girl also wore green heels. Emily smiled as she placed her hands on the girl’s shoulders.

"I only applied a light blush on your lips." Emily said and then grinned evilly as she picked up a pallet with green colors, "Unless you want me to really make you pop out?" She giggled and Arisa shook her head rapidly.

"N-No!! This is perfectly fine." Arisa quickly said as she stood up and Emily giggled.

"Still, was it really necessary for me to be dressed like this?" Arisa said as she motioned her hands over herself, "I could have just gone in my regular clothing." She said and Emily snorted.

"Oh please!!" Sothis appeared and glared at the girl.

"Hey mom, give Arisa the scolding you used to give me." Emily said at Sothis's outline that just nodded in agreement

"First of all!!" Sothis began as she turned back to Arisa, "It will most rude to be dressed in casual clothing. You are to be present in front of royalty!! The royal family!! Let us not forget, you will also be meeting the queen!! And you know us females well, if we do not like someone, we give, the cold shoulder. The queen as already seen your excellent performance during the mock battle. Now, it is time for you to win her over with your personality!!" Sothis said and both mother and daughter nodded in agreement.

Arisa just rolled her eyes and shook her head.

"So basically, make her my mother-in-law?" Arisa said and Emily burst out laughing while Sothis pretty much facepalms.

"That isn't what I meant woman!!" Sothis yelled out before she disappeared in a shower of green dust and Arisa sighed as she and Emily walked out the door and down the hallway.

"Hey!! Good to see you!! And you look lovely!"

Oh look, Chris. He was dressed in a black button up long-sleeved shirt with gray pants and black shoes, but had his hair, tied up like usual.

"Hey Chris, take charge." Emily said and turned to leave, "Take care~" Emily sand as she waved goodbye and warped away.

Arisa let go of a sigh as she turned back to the prince, who smiled at her.

"Came to get you. Honestly, if it's your first time in the palace, finding the dining hall is a nightmare, so I'll be personally escorting you there. Besides, I want to talk to you more." He said and Sothis appeared with arms crossed.

"So, already making a move on my friend? My, you human males like to prey when the opportunity comes." Sothis glared.

"What?" Chris looked at her shocked, "I'm not Zander or Lord Rufus!! Hell, I may like flirting with both men and women, but I know when someone puts a boundary." Chris defended himself and Arisa blinked.

"You like both men and women too?" Sothis could not believe the happy tone that came out of her friend's mouth.
"Oh?" Chris smirked, and got close to her, "Do my eyes spy a fellow friend? Question one!!" He said dramatically, "What is more appealing to you?!" He said.

Arisa smirked proudly and spoke as a gleam appeared near her eyes.

"Thighs and Abs!!" Sothis beginning to think that her friend was an idiot.

Chris smirked proudly and the two shook hands like long lost siblings.

"Legs and eyes!" He said and the two snickered.

"I'm surrounded by idiots!!" Sothis groans as they began walking through the hallway.

After a 5-minute walk, they arrived to the dining room doors. A maid and butler greeted then and opened the doors. Inside was a long table set for 12 people, but the only seats taken were the one in the mid center at the end of the table where the King sat next to him on the right sat the Queen, Lady Patricia. Next to her sat Lestia and Zander. Across from those three, sat Dimitri and there were two empty seats.

"Lady Kiana, I'm glad you could join us. Are you feeling better? Emily informed me that you were feeling tired." The king said as he motioned her to have a seat.

"I'm feeling better. Thank you." She said politely as she bowed to them before she sat down.

Well, right when she was going to sit at the chair that was across from Zander...

"Ah!!" Chris suddenly motioned her to sit on the one between him and Dimitri, "You sit right there Kiana. I think this is better so we can get to know you a bit better." He gave her a closed eye smile that made everyone but Lestia raise eyebrows at what he was doing.

"Hey Chris, trying to hook up my brother with her?" Lestia sent him a telepathic message and snickered while Dimitri was turning red as he watched the older girl sit down next to him.

Arisa turned to look over to him and blinked. It was only for a split second, but Dimitri saw her brown eyes turn half green before they reverted back to brown. Now that he thought about it, her brown eyes looked familiar. Well, when her first met her, there was this familiar feeling of warmth. She was kind and gentle with all of children and, he felt he has met her before. He couldn't put his finger on it but, just something about her felt familiar. Perhaps when he has the chance, he will ask her.

"It is an honor to finally meet you young Lady. I am Lady Patricia. Seems you already met my children." The queen, Lady Patricia, smiled kindly.

She looked like grown up Edelgard but a bit older except the white hair. Her hair was tied in a milkmaid braid and was dressed in a blue dress that was simple yet elegant. She spoke with grace and elegance, yet Arisa could see sadness in her eyes. It was loneliness and she knew why the queen had such look in her eyes.

"It's an honor Lady Patricia. Thank you all for having me." Arisa lightly dipped her head.

The maids and butlers came in with the dishes and placed them down at each person. Arisa felt....very out of place since she grew up in both lives as a middle class but she still took etiquette classes anyway, just in case. She saw Dimitri's eyes sparkled as a butler placed down tonight's dinner. It was Gautier Cheese Gratin, a gratin of bird meat topped with heaps of Gautier cheese, which is famous for its low-fat content. Everyone thanked the butlers and maids before they
excused themselves and left them to eat. Arisa picked up her dinner fork and in she went. Honestly, Zander raised an eyebrow as he watched the girl eating and saw her eyes widened a bit as she took her first bite of the dish. Unconsciously, Arisa put her left-hand fingers just over her mouth, her usual reaction that meant the dish was delicious.

"It's delicious isn't it?!" Dimitri said excitedly as he took another bite of his food and he looked like her was in heaven.

"It is. This is..my first time trying this dish." Arisa admitted a bit embarrassed and chuckled a bit lightly.

"You think this is good? Try Enbarr's legendary caramels along with Fhirdiad's legendary Saghert and Cream. Those are divine!!" Lestia said and the older ones chuckled.

"Well, I think it's time to introduce to everyone Miss Kiana." King Lambert said and turned to his daughter, "My wife and I have already introduced ourselves so I shall start with daughter. This is Lestia Flora Blaiddyd, the Princess of Faerghus." He said and Lestia grinned.

The young princess had grown quite a bit. She still wore her curly blonde hair in two drill pigtails and still had the same eyes, one brown and the other blue. Currently, she was wearing a cute blue dress with ruffles. Along with low blue heels and light peach colored tights. Earlier she was wearing a winter dress and no way anyone missed the dagger she had on her waist.

"Next, these two are my oldest sons. Zander Alphonses Blaiddyd the first prince of Faerghus and Chris von Blaiddyd, Third Prince of Faerghus." King Lambert said and Arisa looked over to Zander then Chris.

Zander had changed quite a bit. His blonde hair was still spiky, but it had grown a bit longer, in simple terms, his hair was a bit like time skip Dimitri (Arisa: Pray for me.). His brown eyes were sharp and her wore the Lord class uniform from that one Cipher artwork by Tomohide Takaya but color dark blue. Of course, without the armor parts because that would put her on edge.

"Lastly, we have my youngest son and second prince of Faerghus, Dimitri Alexandre Blaiddyd." He said and Arisa looked over to Dimitri who gave her a shy smile.

"Baby." Sothis said and Arisa had to keep herself from laughing at her saying that.

Seems Chris heard and had his hand over his mouth to keep himself from bursting out laughing from hearing that. But it was true!!! Dimitri reminded her of a sweet baby.

"It is a pleasure to meet you all. I look forward to working with you." Arisa politely dipped her head, and everyone nodded.

"Dimitri and Lestia," the king spoke, and the two kids turned to him, "Miss Kiana will be also your new instructor for the rest of this year. She will teach you along with her teaching at the magic academy as a new professor. She and I will be discussing her schedule tomorrow." He said and the twins blinked at each other confused.

"New instructor? But...I thought we didn't need a new one. What happened to our previous one?" Dimitri said.

"Dimi," Zander sighed, and pointed to Lestia, "that's your answer." He said and Dimitri instantly glared at Lestia.

"Did you scare them off again?!?" The boy said and Lestia shrugged.
"More like I got rid of them for good. I don't exactly LIKE people who talk down on others!! Especially to the maids and butlers!! A noble's duty is to protect our people and keep them safe! Not strike fear into them!" Lestia said back as she had slammed her palm onto the table and the twins began arguing, again.

The King let go of a sigh as Lady Patricia held his hand and gave Arisa an apologetic smile.

"Well, you have your work cut out for you." Sothis appeared and hugged the poor girl from behind like usual.

Chris did a quick mental link with them and spoke to them.

"Trust me, when those two fight, it's a nightmare. Even Zander refuses to go near them. He doesn't want his hand crushed by Dimitri's strength nor get burned to a crisp by Lestia's fire magic." He said and Sothis snorted.

"Do you know who to ride pegasus!!?" Lestia suddenly turned to her, scaring both Arisa and Sothis.

"Pardon?" Arisa said a bit confused and Lestia repeated her question.

"Do you know how to ride a pegasus?" She said and Arisa nodded.

"Yes actually. I have been riding one since I was 5. My father showed me how. My pegasus is in the stables along with my owl. If you like, I could introduce you to them tomorrow." Arisa said and Lestia smirked.

"Gladly!! See!! If she's a doctor and knows how to ride pegasus, then I'm sure she's an amazing Professor!! Maybe even help you learn to control that strength of yours!" Lestia jabbed at Dimitri who looked down to his hands.

"Lestia......" Zander said lowly because he was very aware how Dimitri was afraid of fragile things and was afraid, he may accidentally hurt someone if he is not careful.

The prince gritted his teeth and about to throw a jab back at his sister until he suddenly felt warm hands pick up his. He looked and saw Kiana smile softly as she held them and lightly touched his palms. She saw they were a bit red and the skin hard, meaning he has been training without gloves. Dimitri felt his face turning redder by the second and Arisa spoke.

"It's okay." Arisa began as she smiled to him warmly, "It is alright to be afraid. It is alright to fear yourself, but it depends on you if you let that fear control you. It takes time and patience to learn to control one's strength, but it is also alright not to be strong. I'll teach you how to control your strength but the results that will come will depend on you." She gave him a soft closed eye smile and Dimitri looked her shocked.

Silence had befallen the room till....

"Ooohhhhh~" Lestia teased till she got a karate chop on the head from Zander.

Dimitri looked like a teapot as Arisa used some magic to heal his hands, and then patted his head, which turned him even more red.

"I used a bit of magic to heal your hands. Make sure to wear gloves from now on when using a lance or sword." She said and the boy could barely nod.
The king could not help but chuckle along with the queen.

"Looks like I made the right choice." King Lambert thought.

The rest of the dinner went well.

- The next day -

"Ooohhh!! I'm loving these clothing you chose!!" Sothis commented as saw what Arisa had bought at the Magic District the other day.

Arisa like usual, changed her appearance but she wore a dark green Chinese cheongsam top with the left sleeve short and the right sleeve was long that it hung over her hand. She wore a long black skirt with black boots and of course, her green cloak. On her neck, was the stone that Elder Bara had given her in a form of a necklace and she also wore her travel bag. On her waist, was strapped her sword.

"I'm going to introduce Red Hare and Feh to the kids. I'll make it look like "Arisa", left me in charge of taking care of them." She said and Sothis nodded as the two walked out the room and locked the door. Emily taught them her security system spell to keep Cornelia out since they had a pretty good idea the woman was pissed that she chose Emily over her. They walked down the hallway and Arisa headed down the stables which was at the back of the palace. It was a 5-minute walk and when she arrived, she saw the children from the other day along with....

"Oh. Ingrid and Annette are here along with Gina and..... who is that??" Arisa thought as she saw a young man with dark brown hair and dark brown eyes.

He looked around 22 years old. As she walked closer, she heard the name Christophe, she knew she was looking at Lord Lonato's son, and, she spotted a 10-year-old Ashe near him. All of them were in a group looking into the stables and Arisa quickly ran towards them.

"Out of the way please!!" She yelled and out of shock, the group move as she ran in.

Low and behold, Red Hare was neighing angrily because he was not pleased waking up in an unknown place. Everyone else was wondering what was going on and no one dared go near him till he heard a simple whistle. The pegasus stopped and instantly turned and neighed happily at the sight of his friend and walked to her quickly, and nuzzled her along with Feh, who landed on her shoulder.

"Ya...ya....estas bien...." Arisa said softly and the pegasus calmed down.

"That's your pegasus?! He's huge!!" Lestia yelled out as everyone looked at him and then Arisa.

"Wait, I thought he was Arisa's!!" Glenn yelled out and Arisa let go of a sigh.

"He's mine and hers. We both own him and Feh." She said as the snowy owl hissed at them, "She had to leave the Kingdom unfortunately. Her father has gotten ill and she had to return home." She said and felt a pang of guilt for lying as she saw Dimitri looked sadly at her.

"Look, I get you have to hide your identity, but can you at least tell him?" Chris mentally said to her and Arisa avoided eye contact with him.

"Oh!!! Are you the new Professor at the magic Academy? I signed up for your class!! I'm Annette!! Nice to meet you Professor!!" Annette walked up to her and grinned.
The girl has orange bright hair and had her hair tied up in two knot pigtails like in part one of the games. She wore an orange dress with brown boots. Feh landed on her shoulder and nuzzled her cheer, making the girl giggle.

"Glad to meet my fellow future student. You'll like the classes. You be surprised how much the stars connect with history." Arisa smiled as Red Hare nuzzled her cheek.

"Hello there," she looked up and saw Christophe walk up to her with Ashe, "I'm Christophe, Lord Lonato is my father and this young one here is my little brother, Ashe." Christophe said and a mini Ashe poked his head out from behind him.

He had gray hair, green colored eyes, wore a gray shirt with black winter pants and on his waist was a wooden sword.

"Hello.." the boy said shyly and Arisa smiled softly to him, making the boy turn red.

"All of us were confused seeing the red pegasus here but at least that was solved quickly, seeing he belongs to you along with the snowy owl." The older man said.

"He's about....22 years old. Hmm...7 years older than you." Sothis said to her.

"It’s alright. Red Hare was just confused why he woke up here." She said and turned back to Feh and Red Hare.

"(You two, we'll be living in the palace from now on for the rest of the year. Behave and don't cause a ruckus with the others please.)" She spoke in the language of fae and the two animals nodded to her.

"What was that?" Sylvian said and Arisa answered to him.

"The language of Fae. Took me 7 years to fully master it. I can't tell you how many times I bit my tongue." She said and the others chuckled.

Arisa took out Red Hare and mounted him, the pegasus spread his wings up proudly, showing them off. What the girl did not expect....

"Ingrid!!" Glenn yelled out as red pegasus picked up the blonde-haired girl from the back of her dress and threw her up, making her land seated in front of Arisa.

"Red!" Arisa glared at him as the shell-shocked young girl was blinking multiple times at what just happened.

Sothis appeared and spoke.

"He's saying he sees potential in this girl to become a pegasus knight. So, he wants to test he if she can handle his speed." Sothis and Chris yelled out.

"Are you serious?!?! Come on! She's still a kid." Chris said and the others looked at him weirdly.

"Who are you talking to?" Sylvian said.

"Oh...shoot...I forgot. Well, you guys can't see her but there is a fae here." He said and everyone began to look around minus Chris and Arisa.

"Again, with your ability to see spirits?" Glenn said and Chris nodded.
"Anyway, Sothi (Chris: Nickname I gave her. I think it's cute.) said that Red Hare said that he sees potential in Ingrid to become a pegasus knight and wants to test her." He said and everyone looked at Red Hare shocked.

"Do you...mean it...?" Ingrid said and the pegasus nodded to her.

The girl could not help but let tears of joy fall as she hugged his neck.

"Thank you thank you!!" She cried and he neighed again.

"He says there's actually one person he wishes to ride with us." Sothis said and Chris spoke.

"Sothi says he says there is one person he wants to bring along." He said and the kids began saying, "bring me!!", "no me!!".

Red Hare shook his head and his wings suddenly flapped because he spotted his target. Oh boy.....

"Oh!! Lady Edelgard and Hubert!!" Gina walked over to the princess and her brother, who were arriving at the stables.

"Good morning Gina. I saw the group from afar and decided to come and see what was going on." Edelgard said and saw Kiana, who waved from being seated on the pegasus.

Red Hare suddenly neighed loudly and before Hubert knew it, he was thrown and seated behind Arisa.

"Wait, Hubert is the second person?!!" Chris yelled out and the pegasus nodded while Gina was suddenly very nervous.

"Ummm....Miss Kiana, what is going on?" Hubert asked as he gulped.

"Red Hare see-------Aahhh!!" The girl didn't even have a chance to answer because the pegasus took off flying, and everyone was yelling up, worried.

Ingrid was giggling in utter joy while poor Hubert had wrapped his arms around Arisa's waist and was holding onto her for dear life. They were, getting higher and higher, way above the clouds. Arisa was used to it, Ingrid and Hubert, not so much.

"G-Get us down!!!" Hubert cried out and Ingrid looked a bit nervous.

Arisa let go of a sigh as she saw the poor boy had his eyes closed shut and Feh had flown up to them. Even if she knew the boy was terrified of such heights, she wanted him to at some point at least in his life to experience the feeling above the clouds and feel freedom. Something that he didn’t have much growing up. She wasn’t happy with the way Red Hare was doing it. But, maybe...just maybe...she could change the feeling of fear he has.

"Hubert, open your eyes." Arisa said and the boy shook his head.

"This is Faerghus.....it's beautiful!!" Ingrid yelled out as the two girls looked out to the view and Hubert opened one eye.

He gasped as he saw the view and couldn't believe its beauty. Trees and snow as far as the eye could see. The blue hues of rivers that glisten in the sun’s rays. Birds of all colors flying through the sky, a beautiful blue and the sun itself was amazing. That's when he finally noticed he had his arms around Arisa. The girl was.....soft.
"Oh...ummm....cough...I am...very sorry..." he said and she giggled.

"It's alright. But...both of you hang on tight!! Red Hare is about to dive down!" She yelled out as she got a hold onto the reins quickly.

"What.....?" Hubert said and Ingrid was excited, and Red Hare dove down and Feh went after them. Except.....both were completely caught off guard by his speed.

**Meanwhile at the surface:**

"We have to get Hubert down!! He's terrified of heights!!" Gina said worried and Edelgard face palms.

"Gina.....no one was supposed to find out about that...." the princess thought which Christophe was about to get on his own pegasus to fly up but there was no need.

Everyone could hear screaming and horror befell everyone at how fast the pegasus was coming.

"He's going to crash!!" Felix screamed and everyone quickly scattered rapidly.

You could hear both Ingrid's and Hubert's screams, one filled with pure joy while the second one of complete terror. Right when everyone thought he was going to crash onto the ground, Red Hare just stopped and gently landed, letting out a proud neigh and flapping his wings proudly.

"I am so sorry!!!!" Arisa said as she saw Hubert looked like his soul left his body, "I did not think Red Hare would go this wild!! The last time I saw him like this was 7 years ago when he was a foal!!" Arisa said as she jumped down and got the two back on the ground.

"THAT WAS AMAZING!!! LET'S DO IT AGAIN!!" Ingrid yelled out while Hubert was shaking as he fell to his knees.

Despite him and Arisa being the same age, Hubert was currently traumatized. Red Hare began neighing as he tapped his right hove on the ground and Sothis sighed.

"He says they both passed his test. Usually people pass out other than Amir, Alexandra and Claude but he is glad to see two more people worthy riding him. The fact that Hubert didn't pass out is enough." Sothis said and Arisa patted Hubert's back.

"Red Hare says you passed. You and Ingrid are both worthy of riding him." She said and Hubert gave her a weak glare.

"Are you alright!!!!??"

Gina's screech made Arisa turn to the left as saw the woman running like possessed one and fell to her knees to check on her brother.

"I-I'm okay...just...need to breath..." Hubert as barely able to say but even if he was shaken, he slightly turned to Arisa, who looked at him worried, "I...still enjoyed...the view......C-Can... y-you t-teach me.....h-how to....ride a p-pegasus?" He smiled a bit crooked and the rest of the group had returned.

"Ummm.....I think I rather wait till you fully recovered after that shock..." Arisa said as she knelt down and placed her hand over his forehead, her hand glowed a bit red and the boy fell asleep in his sister's arms.
"What did you do?" Edelgard said.

"Well, considering the scare Red Hare gave him," she shot a glare at the smug pegasus that received a wing slap from Feh, "I put him to sleep so he could recover a bit. He'll wake up in an hour." She sighed and felt Ingrid tug her skirt, the girl had sparkles in her eyes.

"Please teach me how to ride pegasus!! I have been wanting to become a knight for so long!!" She said and Arisa was getting a bit scared.

"Well, I don't mind teaching you and the twins how to ride horses. You have to start of with horses first before you take the next big step of riding a wyvern, kinshi, pegasus or griffin." Arisa chuckled a bit nervously and felt that Gina was burning her gaze into her soul.

"What about magic?" Sylvian suddenly said.

"Or a bow?!" Ashe said and his older brother raised an eyebrow.

"Sword?" Felix said.

"Umm.....dance?" Edelgard said shyly.

"All of them. I can teach you all of them." Arisa sighed and that just turned into her biggest mistake because the kids all instantly had sparkles in her eyes as they grouped around her.

"Umm....Kiana....I think you just......got yourself more students..." Chris laughed a bit nervously as Arisa took a step back from the adorable yet now terrifyingly group of kids.

The older ones were trying not to laugh except Sylvian because he was part of the group.

"Oh, karma came back to you at the perfect time." Gina smirked.

Well, Arisa's got her hands full.

- 4 hour later: On the road to Zoltras Territory: Carriage-

"So let me get this straight....." Emily pinched the bridge of her nose," Red Hare went wide and had taken both Ingrid and Hubert up to the sky. Possibly traumatized the boy for life, and because the group saw your skills, they all asked you about certain subjects and you answered you could teach all of them because you weren't paying attention completely thus now......" The girl looked up to her friend who was trying to ignore a cackling Sothis sitting next to her, "you literally now have a bunch of new students that you fell victim to their puppy eyes and will be teaching them for the next 5 months till December along with you being a professor........ARE YOU KIDDING ME?!?!

Emily yelled and Arisa groaned loudly into her hands.

"I know!!! It was stupid mistake and now I literally regret it!!" Arisa said and Sothis was wheezing, holding her stomach as she laughed hard.

"Well....at least the rest of the children from the Alliance and Empire had returned to their home because if they had stayed, you would be doomed. Literally you would be teaching all three nation’s children." Emily sighed.

"Well that's not too far from the truth.... Five more years and I WILL actually be teaching all of them...." Arisa thought and Sothis spoke.

"Well, now you have your hands full (Arisa: So, you finally stopped laughing.) But this as an
opportunity to learn. How many years has it been since you have been a Professor?" Sothis said with a giggle and Arisa let go of another sigh.

"Anyhow, considering you now literally have your hands full," Emily said she propped her elbow over the window edge of the carriage and rested her cheek on her hand, "I'm looking forward to you teaching those children. I'll let the staff know that those kids will sometimes be coming to visit you." She said and Arisa nodded.

The girl looked out and noticed they were going through deep forest territory and it was faint, but she could smell the salt in the air.

"Usually it would take an entire two weeks to get to our destination if we went by normal carriage but I'm using some of warping magic and a little help from a few fae to get us to our destination, Rhodos Coast. So, hold on tight!!" Emily smirked and was suddenly holding tightly to a pole.

"Wait what?" Both Sothis and Arisa said, suddenly, the carriage was moving at inhumate speed.

While Emily was used to it, the other two, were not. Arisa and Sothis were screaming for their lives while the red-haired girl just let go of a yawn, and Sothis cursing the profanities that she had learned over the years. Is a goddess allowed to curse? Yes? No? Anyhow, 30 seconds later, they had landed in front of....

"I'm literally looking at the Château de Brissac from France....." Arisa groans as Emily opened the carriage door and walked out like nothing.

Emily snickered as she helped her friend walked towards the door and it was opened by a maid and butler inside who greeted them.

"Welcome home Lady Emily and we welcome you Lady Arisa." The two servants said and bowed to them.

"Lady Arisa's room has been prepared along with Lord Henry's room." The butler said as the two stood up straight.

"The owl and pegasus have also been taken to the stables and have been fed." The maid smiled kindly.

"Thank you, Ural and Opal. Has my husband arrived yet?" Emily said.

"Lord Erik said he will be arriving late. He said he's taking care of business with his father, Count Charon and his sister, Lady Cassandra." The butler, Ural said.

"So Catharine has a brother in this time?! I know Hubert has siblings because his FEH profile said "true heir", meaning he has bastard siblings but (forgive me Gina) Catharine? What's next? Lor---you know what? Just fuck it at this point." Arisa thought and Sothis rolled her eyes.

The four heard footsteps running and looked up at the stairs to see a young boy about 4 years old, who looked like the male version of Edelgard but much tinier. The boy looked excitedly at Emily who spread her arms wide, with a warm smile on her face.

"Aunty Noa!!! Welcome back!!" The boy grinned and.....jumped off the balcony.

Arisa and Sothis both screeched and ran to catch the boy, but low and hold, the boy could use magic and used a gust a wind to secure his landing on the wooden floor. The maids and butlers of the mansion along with the other members of House Zoltras were used to it, Arisa and Sothis, were
not. The boy jumped into Emily's arms and she spun him around.

"You're back, you're back!!!! Aunty Mary said I'm going to be living here with you for a while. Also, big brother Zemes and big sis Jenna are cooking today. Oh!! And the wyvern riders were teaching me how to fly one!!" The boy said excitedly, and Emily giggled.

"Now Henry, calm down. I want you to meet someone." She said and the boy turned towards Arisa with a raised eyebrow.

"This is Arisa Byleth. She'll be part of House Zoltras from." She said and the girl walked forward.

"Nice to meet you. I'm Arisa." She undid her disguise because Emily said she would be safe being herself in her territory.

The boy looked at her up and down before he smiled to her.

"Hello there!! Names Henry von Hersvelg!! 5th prince of the Adrestian Empire. Nice to meet you." He said to her and she smiled at him kindly.

"So Edelgard's youngest brother." Arisa thought then spoke.

"Nice to meet you." She said and patted his head.

"Henry, I'm going to be busy for a bit. We're going out again. I just came to get something from my room quickly." Emily and turned to Arisa, "I go get Red Hare if I were you. Opal will take you to the stables and set up my Kinshi. We're heading to Lake Teutates. I have business to take care of there." Emily said in slight bitter tone that last sentence and Sothis was a bit confused as the boy waved goodbye and left with the maid Opal.

"Sothis, let's go meet Red Hare and Feh. I'm sure they are both throwing a hissy fit." Arisa said and Sothis nodded as the two followed the butler.

Sothis felt...like a memory of hers was returning.

- Emily's room -

Her personal bedroom was lavished with red velvet silk sheets, the walls decorated with natural plants and flowers that she personally tends. Her cat slept peacefully on the bed as the woman dug through her closet and took out a dark purple stone and let go of a bitter sigh.

"Never in all my years....did I think I would resort to this to turn to my other form...." she muttered as she placed the stone in her purse.

"Well, you must deal with it. It is your punishment for reviving your body and fusing it with your human one."

She turned to her cat, a brown white maine coon that let go of a yawn from where it was. The female cat gave her lazy look and Emily let go of a sigh.

"King of Cats....Tina...my friend...is this really my punishment for such?" Emily sighed as she walked up to her and sat on her bed, next to the cat.

Tina sighed as she stretched a bit and spoke.

"You committed a taboo simply by fusing what should have remained dead to you, who is alive. Still, at least you could still transform." Tina said and Emily let go of a sigh as she stood back up.
"Emily," Tina said, "you have done more than enough. But I am glad you are sharing the burden then letting it all be on your shoulders. Be careful out there. If worse comes, summon me." She said and Emily nodded.

"Thank you, my friend." Emily smiled softly and left.

The flight to Lake Teutates was around 2 hours since they had to fly over the mountains. Emily's kinshi was beautiful bird of red and blue feathers. It was respectful and kind, and thankfully it got along with Red Hare. The kinshi's name was Mulan, which sent Arisa to be blinking multiple times. Emily sighed as they arrived at the forest and Sothis felt unnerved by how foggy the place had become. Even the two flying animals let out cries of nervousness.

"Shh...shh...It's okay Mulan." Emily said softly and the kinshi calmed down a bit at the four continued to the very center of the lake. There, they landed at an ancient looking temple and Arisa knew exactly where they were and figured out what Emily meant by "taking care of business". The girls tied the reins of their friends to a tree as they looked towards the thick fog. Arisa lit a torch as they walked into the fog. She noticed that Emily's eyes were glowing a bit as they continued to walk for another 10 minutes then....

"Who dares enter my temple?!!"

A voice boomed and Arisa flinched while both Emily and Sothis were silent as towering shadow appeared in the fog.

"I do." Emily took a step forward as the palm of her hand glowed and waved it fast, making to fog completely disappear, revealing a huge beast that sort of resemble a turtle minus the spikes.

"Foolish humans, you are frail and weak. Turn your tail and run." The Immovable, also known as Saint Indech, said as he looked down at them.

Emily did not break eye contact nor blink as she looked up to the Beast and spoke.

"It has been 990 years, hasn't it, Elder Brother?" She said and Arisa looked at her shocked while Indech was silent.

The beast sniffed the air and froze.

"This scent....it cannot be....." it said Emily completely undid her appearance spell, revealing a fully adult woman with curvy body, huge "assets", dark colored green hair that faded to red, curled in a similar fashion as Flayn's.

The women's eyes had become green that faded to red and put on her round glasses. She let go of a sigh as she took out a smoking pipe and lit it up. Taking in a deep breath before she puffed it out.

"It's been awhile." Even her voice had become deeper and mature, a womanly voice.

Emily smiled softly as Indech stared at the older woman.

"How is this possible......? You were killed protecting Serios. We buried your body. You blood was drained; your heart was taken. How are you alive?" He said and Emily chuckled.

"You be surprised Indech.....what has transpired these past 990 years. Serios is falling to ruin and the Agarthans will be making a move soon, and the fact that you all betray Cirina when she gave
her life to protect Cethleann!!" Emily finally snapped and roared furiously Elder Brother who was silent.

"Do you have any idea how pissed I was learning everything that went down these past 990 years?!! The actions that Serios has done?!! The ruin that many have fallen to?! I WAS NOT SUDDENLY REINCARNATED BY THE RIVER OF TIME TO WATCH THE WORLD OUR MOTHER LOVED BE BROUGHT DOWN TO RUIN!!! WHAT'S MORE THE EXTREMELY LENGTHS YOU ALL WENT, MINUS MELODY AND CETHLEANN, TO RUIN CIRINA'S NAME?! HOW DARE YOU ALL TWIST OUR MOTHER'S WORDS AND TURN THIS WORLD BE RULED BY TYRANNY!?!?" The older woman roared furiously and panted as she made her pipe disappear.

Indech was silent as he had his head down, and Arisa looked back and forth between them. Sothis was silent as she listened and looked at the two worried as she Emily laughed dryly.

"I always thought of you as the voice of reason....." Emily said and Indech spoke.

"You're right. I should have spoken. But what is done, is done. The past cannot be changed, no matter how much you desire it Noa." Indech said and Emily smiled bitterly.

"I know....but I'm not here to reminisce of the past...." she said and looked over to Arisa, "I want you to meet Arisa. Serios....created her. She is the incarnation of our mother." Emily said and Indech turned to Arisa, who stiffened.

"This scent....and power......so you truly are the incarnation of Sothis... Let us test your mettle!!" He said and the girl was getting ready to make a run for it, till a flash of purple blinded her and she saw a beautiful purple feathered dragon with four wings but purple eyes.

"You will not harm this girl!!" It roared as it placed it's wing to protect Arisa.

"I thought only Serios could transform but seems you also, but to a certain extent. To think that you must use a dragon stone to do so. Hmph....I thought Sothis hid those things away." He said and Emily turned back to normal but with a purple stone in her hands.

"That isn't what I am here to discuss with you." Emily sighed, "I need your help.... Melody...has gone missing." She said and Indech let out a low growl.

"What does that woman have to do with anything?" He growled and Emily glared.

"Do not forget, you owe her and Macuil a favor!! She saved your life all those years ago! Let us not forget, she is your friend!! Don't tell me you're still pissed off that she and Macuil got together?!" She said and Arisa was waving her hands frantically, seeing that the aura around the beast darken.

"Emily, I can tell that's a taboo subject!!" Arisa said and Sothis made the wind blow the trees.

Indech became still as the winds began to blow and only Arisa could hear Sothis speak.

"It is faint, but you are someone I knew. Yet, this is not the face I remember. This is your other form, us...Nabateans. Though I cannot speak to you directly, may my winds carry my voice to you. Emily is the other name she goes by, but please. She means well. I may not know what transpired in the past but now is time for a new beginning. So, will you stay in the past and let your grudge blind you?" Sothis said.

Indech was silent as he stared at Arisa, who smiled warmly to Sothis.
"Hmph." He said and his head back to Emily, "When was the last time she was seen?" He said.

"She was fighting off mages and there was an explosion. The fire aerials confirmed there was no
body and there are traces of dark magic. Macuil won't admit but he's worried." And that instantly
made Sothis and Arisa snap their heads to her and Indech was silent.

"Hrrmmmmm.......a new brethren are to be born soon......." he thought, and Emily took out a
bracelet and showed him.

"This bracelet, you gave it to her. Can you use it to track her down?" Emily said and he nodded.

The beast raised his head and roared loudly, to the point the ground shook. Emily knew what he
did, but Arisa did not. What neither could them see but only Indech could, were different colored
strings, one, was a light pink, yet it looked tattered.

"She is somewhere in the territory of the Alliance. The problem is something is blocking her
location. Seems she was forced to come here to Fodlan." He said and Emily nodded.

"I'll contact the Queen of Faeries to help us keep a look out. I'm having a bad feeling something
happened." Emily said and Indech nodded.

"Emily, what can I do?" Arisa said and Emily let go of a sigh as she looked over to her friend.

"Unfortunately....nothing for right now. This is between my family and me. For now, we'll get you
set up with your materials for your class. Also, to set up a security system in your office at the
Academy to keep Cornelia out." Emily sighed as she pinched the bridge of her nose and looked up
to her brother.

"Thank you Indech." She smiled sadly to her brother, who grunted.

"Let me ask you this Noa." Indech said, "You said said Serios created the incarnation of Sothis,"
he said and turned to Arisa then back to her, "what actions has our youngest sister has done?" He
said and Emily frowned.

"Let's just say, human lives were experimented on. That is all." Emily said and Indech was
silenced.

"Tch...how low.....so she has fallen to Nemesis level." He said and Emily gritted her teeth but
seems Arisa was done keeping silent.

"Rhea may have done countless questionable actions but at the same time if they weren't done not a
single one of us would be standing here!!" Arisa yelled and Emily snapped her head towards.

"Arisa, be quiet." Emily said and Arisa shook her head.

"Let the incarnation speak." Indech said and he turned her way, "Girl who bares the heart of
Sothis, speak your words wisely. Why do you defend the actions of the one who saved your life for
their own gain? You and others were created to be sacrificed to bring back the Progenitor Goddess.
Speak or forever hold your tongue." He said and Arisa nodded.

"Rhea....no...Serios...is blinded by grief and anger. She believed that she could regain all that is lost
if she could revive her mother." She said and looked over to Sothis, who was silent and listened, "I
was born from a woman who bore the heart of Sothis and from the knight who Serios saved using
her blood. I originally was born a still born child. My mother, Rosa, pleaded to Serios to save my
life even if her own was in danger. The heart of Sothis was put in me, allowing me to breathe
again. I...I am the 13th vessel who...is already becoming one with Sothis. Her will is my will, and my will is her will." She said and Sothis smiled sadly to her as she hugged the girl from behind like always.

Arisa unsheathed her sword and revealed the rapier version of The Sword of The Creator. The girl looked up to see the spikes on Indech's shell spike up.

"I know the truth. I know these weapons, Crest, and Crest stone were created from your brethren. I know Sothis never gifted these powers to humans." She said as she gently held the sword to her chest as if it were made of glass.

"What I have now....is only part of Sothis....her other half...is still with Serios." She said, "I wish to stop Fodlan's blood stained history of lies along with.....to create a new path. One where....those I treasure can live. I don't want them to suffer the bloody path that is set. So...I will deny the flow of fate. I will deny the River of Time." She said and Indech growled.

"You have already broken far too many taboos. But your wish is foolish. Denying the flow of fate, the flow of density? Hmph. You have already done that the minute your ancient soul awaken girl!!" He raised his claws to strike her down, and Emily tried to run towards her yet, Indech's Phantom soldiers held her back.

Arisa only stayed still while Sothis screamed for her to move but one look from her friend, made her eyes widen. Arisa's eyes held only one message.

"Trust me.

His claws one stopped a millimeter from her neck, the girl never moved, yet she shook with fear, but she refused to break eye contact with the former Saint in front of her. Emily could only watch in shock as the girl and her brother did not break eye contact. What she did was a suicidal move. Indech can crush her like a bug easily since the girl was not physically ready to fight him, yet she did not move from her spot.

"If am a taboo by simply being alive," Arisa spoke as she narrowed her eyes, "then so be it." Was all she said.

Indech was silent as he stared at the girl. She knew he wasn't going to kill her, yet the way he attacked her had the aura of pure murder, yet there she stood. He could tell. She was terrified, she wanted to run. Yet, here she was, still standing before him despite shaking.

"Hmph." He said, "You did well. What do you desire? I shall grand it." He said and the girl began blinking like an owl.

"Eh?" Arisa said confused while Emily had taken out her brass knuckles to pound her brother dead.

"I shall not repeat myself." He said angrily and Arisa nodded.

"Then...if it be alright...may I... have your bow?" She said a bit shyly as she fidgeted with her fingers.

"Hahahaha!!" Indech laughed as the girl was becoming redder, "You remind me of Serios when she was a child. Very well then. And you!" He turned to Emily who glared at him, "I know the other reason you are here. Take them." He said.

A glowing shower of golden dust appeared in Arisa's hands. The girl quickly sheathed back the sword, and in her hands, appeared the legendary bow of Saint Indech, The Inexhaustible, along
with a Crest stone that had Saint Indech's crest. With Emily, three medium size potion bottles with blood in them appeared in her hands along with a small pouch filled with seeds.

"Noa and Incarnation of Sothis," he spoke as he raised his head, "may you succeed in your mission." He said and Emily knew, there was a ghost of a smile on him.

The fog came back thick and they could not see, but when it dispersed, the two women were out of the ruins.

"Sigh.....you...." Emily said lowly and Arisa flinched at the older woman's glare, "got a lot of nerves and guts to not only defend what Rhea did to you but also....thank you..." Emily spoke softly," you...saw the sides of the two scales. Thank you...." Emily said with a sad smile.

"Let's go home. 7 days from now, your life as a Professor begins." Emily said and Arisa nodded as they returned to their rides.

On the way back, Arisa was feeling conflicted with receiving Saint Indech's bow. For one, she literally just destroyed (in a way??) Leonie's and Linhardt's chance of ever getting this bow much more, completely decimated their paralogue. She let go of a sigh.

"Am I really making things better....or am I making things worse?"

Chapter 23: Lion's Den: Part 2: Introductions: End

[---------------------]

Bit of a surprise that I decided to add the meeting of Indech and the mentioned of Macuil and my OC Saint. Unfortunately, I can't say much about that Oc Saint of mine but let's just say, tragedy is coming in about 6 chapters.
Chapter 24: Class: Professor

- Dream/Vision: ???? -

"I'm not always going to be around. Who knows? I might get blasted off a cliff and be put in a comatose state for five years."

With a list of names in her hands and doing everything in her power not to giggle evilly, the woman joked a bit of what she knew was going to happen to her in the future. Unfortunately, as much as she wished she could stop it, the river of time prevents her from doing it. Her students chuckled while her spirit friend rolled her eyes. The woman sighed and turned to her class of 27 students, all of them from all three houses. This special classroom was built to house up to 200 students. It was like her former classroom in the Magic Academy. The banners of the three houses hung proudly in the ceiling along with the banner of the Church of Serios. Her fellow professors and friends stood nearby as she had spoken to them days prior to her plan. Truth be told, Lady Rhea thought it was a bold plan and wanted to see how things turned out.

"So, for the next month till the day of the actual Battle of The Eagle and Lion, we'll be doing practice mock battles." She said and the students began to talk to each other, and her fellow professors told them to quiet down.

She really was trying not to smile because it would give away her intentions. Many of her students would probably secretly call her a bitch (Students: Why would you think of us like that?!) for doing this to them. But fear not!! For this plan of hers is to FORCE all of them to adapt rapidly.

"I spoke with your professors and I also spoke with the Archbishop. Lady Rhea has granted us permission and, she also seems interested in the idea. Now, there will be a twist to these practice mock battles." She said and many raised an eyebrow except her fellow professors.

Her friends all were smirking, and many students were slightly unsettled by it. Edelgard, Hilda, and Annette felt they were walking straight into a lava pit as Amir’s smirk was turning more terrifying by the second while Alexandra’s feathers were twitching with glee. The lance users, Dimitri, Sylvain, and Ferdinand were all feeling shivers go down their spines at Alexandra’s flowery atmosphere. Cirina was cackling evilly as she rubbed her hands together. She was looking forward to seeing the descendants of the 10 Elites suffer.

"All of you say goodbye to your fellow house members because none of you will be fighting for your respected house." She sang with a cheerful smile as she saw the wave of emotions that befell on each student once they processed her words.

"SAY WHAT?!!" All the students yelled out and her friends all had smirks on their faces.

"Claude, Sylvain, Hubert!!" She yelled out and the three boys she called out walked forward. "You three are the best tacticians of your Houses. We're putting it to the test." She said and turned to her fellow professor, Manuela.

The older woman nodded and spoke as she took a step forward and smiled. Ahhh!! Finally, she could relax and drink peacefully for a while!!

"All of you will be mixed up into three different groups. And for each group, one of these boys will be leading you." She said and many began protesting and what was the purpose of this till professor Hanneman spoke.
“The main purpose of this is to see how well you can adapt to change. Especially tacticians.” He said as he saw the face of betrayal from Lysithea.

“Come on Teach!!” Claude said to her, “You're seriously doing this to us?!” He said.

“Professor, I'm not a tactician. I'm not good at things like this." Sylvain said and she crossed her arms.

"Really now?” She smiled and the entire class flinched except the professors, "Don't take me for a fool Sylvain. I know how hard you study in magic and," she pulled out a pile of papers and placed them on the desk, their score showing a 100% on each of them, "How high you score in the tactics test. You're at the exact same level as Claude and Hubert." She said and the Blue Lions all looked at Sylvain in shock.

The said orange haired student had a closed eye smile, but the shadows were covering his eyes. He wasn’t exactly please that his little secret was shown like that. Claude was trying to hide his own smirk along with Hubert. Seems the two were looking forward to seeing what the boy of House Gautier was made of. But back to the original subject, Hubert had to agree with everyone. This plan the professor had was just so rash. What was she hoping to gain from this? What would any of them gain from this? He hated how the Professor was unpredictable the majority of the time. Her smile at times reminded him of Lady Rhea with a combination of his own and Claude’s. It was unsettling to say the least.

"Just because you witnessed us in a three-way chess game, does not mean we're suited for such positions." Hubert tried to reason but failed.

She chuckled and spoke once more. The three tacticians could not help but shiver at the gleam her eyes held. It somehow reminded them of their childhood days when she would train them. They knew she was terrifying when it was needed.

"The purpose is to test how well you are able to adapt to change. How fast can you conduct? How fast can you send out orders? And every mock battle practice we do, we will be having new groups. We'll be switching members each time." She said and the entire class began protesting again.

"AND!!" She waved her hand which glowed a bit, "We'll be testing how you all can adapt to the weather change!! So, expect rain, snow, heat, and all that jazz thanks to my magic!!" She sang.

"OH, COME ON!!" All the students yelled and Sothis was cackling along with Cirina.

"Professor, as much as we all understand the need to improve," Dimitri said, "I honestly see no point in mixing us all into random groups!! Would it not be better if we fought alongside those of our respective houses?!!” He said.

Her smile instantly disappeared. That was not a good sign and all the students knew it.

"Oh no.” Lysithea said and everyone was very much suddenly unnerved.

She never stopped smiling. That was the first time they had ever seen her frown. Dimitri Alexandre Blaiddyd, suddenly felt very scared as she saw her place down the list she had in her hands on the desk and remove her glasses.

"So...you've actually had the nerves to question my teaching methods?” She said and Edelgard looked at her stepbrother, worried.

She had taken a deep breath and turned to him with the sweetest yet most terrifying smile anyone
had ever seen.

"Oh...he fucked up. Pfft." Chris whispered to Alexandra, who just shook her head.

She personally was looking forward to seeing Claude struggle.

"Your Highness," a title he hated hearing from her lips, and she would only use it when she was very upset, her form of challenging him, "congratulations!! You're going to be in the group led by Hubert." She said and Dimitri felt he stepped on a landmine.

Rule number one: NEVER QUESTION A PROFESSIONAL TACTICIAN'S TEACHING METHODS

After that, they were all taken to the field for the mock battle and it was a complete disaster.

- End of Dream -

"What the hell was that?!"

Arisa woke up in bedroom in the palace, utterly confused at what she had just dreamed. It was officially the second week of September and today was Monday, meaning she officially starts teaching today. Thankfully her class isn't till 10 in the morning and it currently was 8 am. She was used to waking up at this hour thanks to the strict training from her father. Currently, she was very confused by the dream she just had. Its faint but she remembers an adult woman speaking to all the students of the Three Houses but...who was she?

"Still....was that...a vision of the future or a different life?" She questions and turned her head to the left as she heard snoring.

Arisa sighed as she saw it was Sothis, who was sleep next to her. It's been two days since she arrived back at the palace after staying for a few days in Emily's home. She learned many things from the woman, was introduced to her staff and house members. Her husband, Erik von Charon, was Catharine's older brother and the heir to House Charon. He was born with a major Crest. Emily's two stepsibling, one bore a Crest of Cethleann and the other a minor Crest of Cichol. The two were also adopted by the previous Head of House Zoltras, Lady Ciara Zoltras. She unfortunately could not bear children and chose to adopt. Of course, there are 5 other members of House Zoltras, which Arisa has yet to meet. But she learned that two of them are from a tribe called Laguz, one from the kitsune tribe, another from taguel, and lastly, someone from the wolf skin tribe. Imagine the shock that had when she learned the ice tribe exist in this world, now learning other tribes existed along with Fae?!

"This is too much for my heart to take.." the girl muttered to herself.

Emily had informed her that these clans along with others she has yet to learn of, have existed before Sothis came to this world and are greatly respected by the people of Fodlan because they are natives of this land. Unfortunately, she doesn't deny that there is prejudice against them, especially by nobles who's Houses bare Crest. In particular those of the Empire and House Keilman, who is very jealous of those of the Ice tribe. Thankfully, that clan lives in the mountains of Fraldarius territory, but a few do live in the Keilman mountains. The man has never been able to track them down, much his displeasure and a blessing to Emily.

"Oh, wearing your regular clothing?" Sothis yawned as Arisa put on her usual green cheongsam, black skirt, tights and boots, along with her green cloak.

"Yes." Arisa answered as she changed her appearance and saw from her mirror Sothis stretching like a cat, "It's my first day and I finally mapped out the entire palace. Plus, Emily gave me a map
of every single secret passageway here. Seems Cornelia doesn't know about it. Good, means I can plan to save Dimitri's uncle. Despite Lord Rufus being a damn skirt chaser, it's obvious that the death of the king affected him badly. Sex and alcohol to escape political issues.....depression. And we know TWSD will take advantage of that. Thankfully, Amir passed the message I had for the nobles of Duscur." She said as put on her bag with her study lesson for today.

Sothis rolled over onto her stomach and rested her chin on crossed arms.

"Just what exactly did you have Amir do when she traveled to Duscur?" The goddess said and Arisa smiled sadly.

"Let's just say....I'm preparing them for what is to come." Was all the girl said and Sothis nodded.

With clothing changed and her things in her bag, Arisa and Sothis left their room, locked the door, headed to the stables.

[-----]

"Good morning Lady Kiana. Glad to see you've returned." Christophe smiled to her kindly as he spotted her entering the stables.

He was busy feeding the animals.

"Good morning. Also, just Kiana is fine." Arisa chuckled as she went over to Red Hare's section and saw the red pegasus eating along with Feh, who was eating a lizard she must have hunted down.

She looked around, seeing many pegasus along with horses. Maybe like 2 wyverns, one kinshi and a griffin. She also spotted the owl pen, where there were several owls, all males and unfortunately, they wouldn't stop checking out Feh. Arisa isn't looking forward to November or December because that is mating season for owls and Feh has downright rejected other owls making advances to her. She literally slapped them with her wings. While Amir cackled as she saw the male owls leave with their pride destroyed, Ares had let go of a sigh and commented that Arisa had unconsciously raised that bird to be too prideful. The girl questioned what the hell she did, and Ares answered that Feh had a deep attachment to her and had been hanging out too much with Nuke, Fiona's wolf.

"Well.....not my fault those two get along." Arisa muttered and Christophe cringed when his owl was slapped by Feh for trying to make advances on her.

"Feh. Come here." She said, Feh chirped happily at the sight of her and flew to her head.

The snowy owl had made itself comfortable and Arisa turned to Christophe and apologized.

"I'm sorry about that. Feh is....a little difficult." She chuckled a bit nervously and Feh puffed her feathers.

"It’s alright. At the same time Ages deserved it. He's been trying to woo too many female owls lately." The 22 year older chuckled as his owl landed on his shoulder with his pride shattered.

"Anyhow, I heard your first class is today." He said and Arisa nodded.

"Yes. I have my astronomy/astrology class at 10 am and my medical class at 1pm. Lastly, my first lesson with the children is at 3:30pm. I got my work cut out for me." She let go a sigh and he patted her shoulder.
"Good luck Kiana. Especially with the kids. Also, thank you for taking your time to teach my brother." He smiled to her and she nodded.

"You're welcome. To be honest, I'm glad to see Ashe doing well. The last time I saw him, he was around 2 years old and I was around. I think... 7 years old." She said and Christophe raised an eyebrow.

"So, you knew his parents?" He said.

"Well, not completely. My family stopped by to eat at the restaurant his family owned years ago. I told him the story of King Arthur and The Knights of Camelot. Also, I just recently learned he was adopted by your father, Lord Lonato." She said and he nodded.

"Wait, that book did not exist back then. I always wondered how Ashe knew about it." He said.

"Well that's because I'm the one that wrote it." Arisa said and Sothis faced palms.

"Wait, you're Cecilia Schariac?!" Christophe said shocked and Arisa nodded.

"I am. Also, please don't tell anyone about it. I'm not about to deal with a wave of fans." She bluntly said and he chuckled.

"Don't worry. I won't. I'm a man of my word." He said and she nodded as the two began to walk out together with their horse and pegasus.

Plus, their owls.

"To be honest, Ashe to me is like a real brother. My father took him in along with his siblings and I'm glad he did. I love those little rascals. I admit, Ashe has talent for the bow but unfortunately that isn't my expertise. I hope you teach him well." He smiled to her and she felt a slight blush on her cheek.

"U-Um...thank you." She chuckled and he smiled to her.

"Oh, what's this?" Sothis smirked and Arisa sent her a glare.

"Well, I have to go. My father wants me to help him on a few things. Have a good day Kiana." Christophe said and waved to her goodbye as he rode off.

"Oh my~"

She instantly turned to see Lestia floating her way with a smirk.

"Hey Arisa." The princess smirked to her as she landed in front of her, a blue gem staff the girl held, it looked like the typical ones from barbie toys.

"Good morning Lestia." Arisa sighed as the princess grinned.

She felt she was looking at Dimitri's and Claude's love child because this girl looked like Dimitri but had Claude's personality. Yay.....goddess, help her.

"Good to see you back!! It's been 11 years!! You're probably wondering how I remember you. The answer is simple, my Crest. It has an ability to negate magic." Lestia grinned proudly and Arisa nodded.

"Well, I figured that much because the way you kept smirking at me. Not to mention, how you
figured out who I really was." Arisa sighed.

"Yup. I'll keep your secret, but I expect you to at least tell Dimitri at some point. Also," the girl smirked once more, "I'm looking forward to dance class!! I have a score to settle with Edelgard!!!" Lestia grinned and Arisa chuckled.

"Alright. But the dance lessons I'm teaching you are a bit more advanced than ballroom dancing." She said and Lestia raised an eyebrow.

"And this dance is?" The princess said and Arisa chuckles evilly.

"Prepare to suffer ballet." Arisa smirked and suddenly Lestia felt scared.

But...what is ballet??

- 2 hours later -

Her classroom was huge. Like she literally felt she was back into her old classroom but this one felt more on the slightest ancient side. Her desk was at the very center while the desk circled around her, each desk setup for the students. The class was made like astronomy auditorium, which she gladly appreciated.

"Now, let's do this." Arisa muttered as she cupped her hands and a small purple sphere formed in her hands.

"Gods, cosmos, light, stars, world." She said and raised her arms, the sphere floated up to the center and turned to her version of a global sphere with six rings spinning around it.

"Ooohhh!!" Sothis said as she floated up as she circled around the ringed glove, "I am very impressed by this." She said as she floated back down to her friend.

"Inspired by Celestial Hymn and Harry Potter." Arisa thought and the bell for classes rung.

The door to her class opened in surprisingly, a good portion of students came in. Around 90 of them.

"Hmmm.....I'm surprised to see Linhardt here. Oh, there's Annette and....Mercedes." Arisa thought as she saw the three near each other.

Annette gave her a happy wave while Linhardt looked ready to sleep. Mercedes had grown beautifully and wore a blue uniform dress. All the females wore it while the males wore a dark blue pants with a black shirt. She saw a mixture of young and older students; some were even adults. Each one took their seats, but she saw the shock and amazed faces of many as they stared at the magic sphere in the ceiling. She waited another five minutes before the door closed. She smiled and took a deep breath as she looked around her class. How long as she felt this joy? How long has it been since she felt....normal?

"Good morning everyone!! I am Kiana Kalsana but you may refer to me as Professor or Professor Kalsana. Some of you know me as the new Holy Magus. I welcome you all to my class of Astronomy and Astrology." She said and continued.

"I'll start with a small introduction." She said and took out her wand and pointed it at the ringed globe.

The rings aligned upwards and images of the stars and constellations appeared in it. May had their
mouths wide open and she could hear "whooooaaa" or "woooowww" she heard "damn!" And had to keep herself from giggling.

"Astronomy is a natural science that studies celestial objects and phenomena. It uses mathematics, physics, and chemistry in order to explain their origin and evolution. Objects of interest include planets, moons, stars, nebulae, galaxies, and comets. As well as learning the movement of the planets and stars. But...how does that also connect to magic?" She smiled as the image changed to the star’s planets aligning.

"At times, there are certain conditions that must be met in order to create potions, even a specific spell, or even medicine. This not only improves the quality of the spell, but also its results. Since ancient times, the stars have been described to also be home to different beings. Different cultures see the cosmos as the home of the gods and goddesses. Others see them as signs of directions. You be surprised how well they also connect to fae.” She said and the images changed to that of different people with different colored auras but also Crest, which immediately caught a few Crest Scholars attention.

"Now, Astrology is the belief that the alignment of stars and planets affects every individual’s mood, personality, and environment, depending on when he or she was born." She explained as she took out her tarot deck.

"Any Crest Scholars here?" She said and a couple raised their hands.


"Tch. Outsiders." She heard a man say and Arisa smiled.

"And you just got yourself a warning!!" She pointed to the man who shivered at her smile, "I will absolutely not tolerate bigotry, prejudice, bullying, racism and any wrong actions against people of different cultures, race, faith, beliefs and such in this class. You get three warnings. At the third, say goodbye to my class." She said and a couple hung their heads.

Her students from those countries, gave her a small smile and a silent thank you.

"Now back to what I was saying." Arisa sighed as she made the major arcana cards appeared on her screen, "I'm also a Crest Scholar and even I have come up with a few theories of my own. Now, how exactly do they connect to the Cards of the Stars?" She said and instantly many began to lean forward.

"Well, you're going to have to wait till The Red Wolf Moon to find out!!" She said and Linhardt slammed his face onto the desk along with many others.

"We will be touching a bit of the subject of Crestology here so do prepared. I'll give you all a heads up when the subject will be brought up. For how, everyone please look at the syllabus on your desk." She said and many picked up the four-page stapled document.

"Oh my. This is very organized." Mercedes whispered to Annette as the orange haired girl gawked at the schedule.

It had lesson plans, dates for quizzes, midterms, days off and the final in December.

"There may be changes to the syllabus so don't expect everything to go completely right." She said.

"This class will consist of one quiz every month along with the usual midterms each month. Your
final will be one group project (Entire class: Uuuugghhhhhhhhh......) and can be about any topic from the lessons that will be taught this semester. I have written my office hours. This class will only be on Monday, Wednesdays and Fridays. Tuesdays and Thursdays, I will be free those days and you could come talk to me if there is a subject you do not understand, and I will help you on it. If there is a day, I know I unfortunately won't be there on those hours, I will have a note on my door saying I'm not there. But you are welcome to slide a letter underneath my door, so I know who needs to talk to me." She said.

"Also, if you are absent, make sure to speak to your classmates and ask what you missed. Plus, attendance is mandatory. You are given 5 absences. If you miss more than five, your grade will start dropping. Lastly, if I catch you plagiarizing, cheating during a test and such, it's an automatic zero and we will be talking to the Directors of the academy." She said.

"Any questions?" Arisa said and one person raised their hand.

A young man who looked about the same age as Christophe, he has long silver colored hair that is a very light lavender color that was tied in a ponytail, bangs that covered his right eye, dark brown skin, and wore a white lab coat with his uniform underneath.

"Yes?" Arisa said and the man spoke.

"On the schedule here it says we will be having a magic mock battle. Why?" He asked and many nodded.

"The purpose of this mock battle is to see how you are able to apply my lessons to your studies and magic." She said and many began to mutter.

"Magic, as you all know, is the power of apparently influencing the course of events by using mysterious or supernatural forces. We humans can only reach a certain level, but it is also, the very energy of the earth. The life force of many things. You are channeling that power within you and able to transform it to a certain degree. " She said and took out a ruby.

She threw it in the air, and it burst into flames, revealing a fire bird that landed on her arm.

"What spell was that?!" Annette yelled out and Arisa smiled.

"What I just casted is a form of magic I created by channeling the element of what a ruby represents fire. I call it, jewel magic and it took me 3 years to perfect it." She said and then took out a lapis lazuli and threw it in the air, it turned to water koi fish that swum around the air.

"This spell, I had to wait till there was a full moon and also to make sure the day was raining." She said and many chuckle as the koi fish circled around Linhardt, who poked.

That resulted in him getting squirted in the face and the class bursting out laughing.

"And I am deeply sorry about that!!! Koi!! Get back here!!" Arisa said and Mercedes uses a bit of wind magic to dry him.

The koi fish returned to her and the two element animals disappeared in a shower of golden dust.

"During the mock battle, you're allowed to use any form of magic as long as you apply some form of my lessons to it." She said and the sphere began turning again.

"Since today is the first day of class, we'll take it a bit easy. Today, we are doing introductions as well as I'll talk a bit about myself." She said and bowed a bit.
"Once more, I am Kiana Kalsana. You may refer to me as Professor or Professor Kalsana. I love sweets, but you can't bribe me with them to get your grade up." She said and many in the class chuckled, "I'm a doctor. Dancer, pegasus rider, I own a snowy owl. Once a month, I'll teach you all new spells. Lastly, I love reading books. And I was born here in Fodlan but travelled all around the world as a mercenary." she said.

"So, who wants to go first?" She said and many shy away.

"Are we going to have to resort to victims?" She said and the young man with the silver purple hair stood up.

"My name is Kuza Grindor Snowdrop. I am from the Snowdrop House in Duscur. Pleasure to meet you all." He bowed politely and many began muttering.

"No way!! A noble from Duscur!!" She heard whispered.

"So, exchange student? Damn." Another said and Annette stood up.

"Hello everyone!! I'm Annette Fantine Dominic!! I love sweets, singing, cooking and studying!! Hope we all get along." Annette smiled and sat down.

"Hello there." Mercedes smiled kindly as she stood up, "I am Mercedes von Martritz. I love baking, needlework, ghost stories, adorable things, painting, reading, and fragrant flowers." She giggled as she sat down.

"Reminding me," Arisa said, "I got hundreds of ghosts stories ready to tell so expect many to be told around The Wyvern moon for it is the month of Saint Hallows Eve!!" She said and half the class had sparkles in their eyes and the other half grew nervous.

"Yaawwn....I'm Linhardt von Hevring. If you need help with Crestology, just say the word. Yawwwnnn..." and he fell asleep right there. Arisa had a closed eye smile and rolled up her syllabus and....threw at him like a boomerang, and HEAD SHOT!! Right on the head. Linhardt was thankfully quickly caught by Annette and Mercedes was a giggling mess as the orange haired girl dramatically was telling the green haired boy to stay alive.

"Rule two!!! No sleeping in my class unless there an actual reason!!" She said and many were laughing.

"I think I'm going to like this class!!" A student said and the first introduction lesson began.

- 2 hours later: 12 PM -

"Have a good day everyone!!" Arisa said as her students walked out the class and waved goodbye.

"Bye Professor!!" Annette giggled as she was trying to drag out a half asleep Linhardt and Mercedes was behind them.

"Quick reminder!! If any of you are in my medical class at 1pm, make sure to bring your staff, grimoire, or wand with you!!" She yelled out and was answered with a "Yes Professor!!" from her students.

She chuckled as she made her sphere disappear and sat down at her desk. Arisa let go of a sigh of relief as she looked around and couldn't help but close her eyes in bliss. How much she missed
teaching as a full-fledged Professor. Even after all these years, there was still that unfulfilled craving to teach. It was partly quelled thanks to her going around teaching children but now.....

"I'm happy..." she muttered and smiled warmly as she took in small breaths of air.

"My my. Very impressive."

Her eyes snapped open and she looked towards her left, to see Cornelia with her usual smile.

"Lady Cornelia. Sorry, I didn't notice you. I was.... relaxing a bit." Arisa said as she straightens herself out.

Cornelia chuckled as she walked up to the girl and looked around the class.

"Seems your first day as a Professor went well." She said, recalling seeing the happy and excited faces the students had as they left the girl's class.

It partly disgusted her but seeing those students all so happy meant that the class must have been interesting that even the Crest Scholars that entered the class wouldn't shut up about it. Cornelia looked up and down the girl. She had to admit, the girl was beautiful and would most likely grow more as she became an adult. Not also mention she had a major Crest of Serios, which was extremely rare because the only major Crest bearers are Felix, Rhea and this girl. The rest are minor crest.

"It did. Glad to see the students are going to be enjoying it. I'm currently on break. I'm planning to make a quick stop at the town to buy some food. Anything you like?" Arisa said.

"No, I'm alright." Cornelia lightly shook her head, "I was wondering if you would like to join me for tea?" She smiled.

"Oh...." Arisa said and lightly scratched her cheek, "I'm sorry but I'm not a fan of tea." She lied.

"Oh, that's too bad." Cornelia said, "Well if not tea, then perhaps hot chocolate would do or is there a preferred drink you like?" She said.

"She really is trying to win me over...." Arisa internally frowned, "I guess I'll play along for now." She thought.

"Hot chocolate is fine. Is there a day you wish to set up so we could talk properly?" Arisa said.

"Friday would be good. Would in the afternoon be alright with you?" Cornelia smiled to her.

"Of course." Arisa said.

"Very well then. Unfortunately, I must go but I liked this talk. I'll see you again dear." Cornelia smiled and left, closing the door behind her.

Arisa let go of a sigh of relief as Sothis floated to her, worried.

"Are you alright?" The goddess asked and Aria ran her fingers through her hair.

"Yeah. I think I'm going to have to use that security system spell on this classroom and my office. But.....I'm think I'm going to do some modifications on it. Emily isn't going to be happy about it if she learns what I'm planning to modify in her spell. Well, you win some you lose some." She said and sat as she took out the lunch box, she packed herself earlier that morning.
The chefs of the palace were nice enough to let her use the kitchen and they were surprised by the food she was making. She had made herself a hamburger steak with a sunny side egg, rice, cooked vegetables, an omelet and had also packed herself blueberry and mint tea in her canteen. She used her homemade chopsticks to eat and had a small number of flowers surrounding her as she ate. Sothis stared and let go of a sigh.

"Be careful with that woman. We both know she wants you to work for her and I'm very certain she will do anything to achieve it." She said and Arisa nodded.

"One thing about the Crest of Flames, is the fact I can tell if something is poisoned or not just by looking at it." Arisa thought as she kept eating and took a gulp of her drink.

"But you have been doing dangerous things these years!! Taking small doses of poison to the point you have become almost immune to them!!" Sothis said and Arisa instantly avoid eye contact.

Funny how her medical experiments turn to her making herself immune to poisons. Her first try was 8 years ago and man that was horrible!!! The yelling she got from Sothis but that didn't stop Arisa. Nope. The girl continued to experiment and taking small doses of poisons to force her body to become immune to them. The worst one she took was puffer fish poison. Thankfully she had the antidote for that. No one in her family knows of her actions she had been doing behind the scenes.

"Well," she took out a small bottle the size of nail filled with wisteria poison and drank it, making Sothis screech, "at least I'm pretty much amu---" and she ran to the trash can and vomited.

"What did I just say?!" Sothis yelled but the goddess could already feel that the girl's body instantly adapted and became immune to it.

Arisa coughed, pulled out the antidote and gulped it down. Her eyes glowed a bit green and she coughed again.

"I'll be alright. Besides, I have a reason for doing this." She said and Sothis let go of a sigh.

"Just...don't overdo it." The goddess said.

She still wasn't happy with the girl's actions.

- 1pm: Medical class-

Like usual, she gave her syllabus, introduced herself, she won't tolerate bigotry and spoke of what will be taught in the class. Mercedes was part of her class, which she was glad for. Of course, they'll be going over the basic healing methods as well teaching them how to make medicine. However, Arisa will also be teaching the advanced medical methods from her old world and that included basic surgery like sew wounds, the ability to treat muscles and when it was needed. And first and foremost!!

"S-Sex education?!" An adult female student screeched loudly as she was reading her syllabus.

Therefore she had Emily put the sign that her medical class is only for those 12 years and up. Unfortunately, Annette and Linhardt aren't at that age yet, much to their displeasure. The entire class became a complete mess of blushing adults and young students alike. Meanwhile, Mercedes just had her closed eye smile but still had a heavy blush. Arisa let go of a sigh as before she spoke.

"Yes, I know the lesson sounds indecent, but it is something that is extremely necessary. Especially since diseases can be transmitted to another person through sexual intercourse." She said and many began muttering to each other while they were completely red.
"On the Red Wolf Moon, that will be the topic along with learning the parts of the human body and high advanced medical methods. And yes, I'm making you all learn by making you all watch a woman give birth and how to properly handle it." Arisa said the class exploded.

"Before we actually do such a thing!!" She said and the class shut up, "We'll be performing an autopsy on a real human body." She said with a straight face and at least 4 students passed out right there on their desk.

"Before someone comes after my neck," Arisa let go of a slightly frustrated sigh, "The main purpose of this is for you to gain experience. In real life, by learning what is the cause of death of an individual, you can learn ways to prevent it. For example," she used her wand to show a projection of a dead man, of course his nether regions covered with a cloth, "What do you see?" She said.

"A dead man!" A 14-year-old screamed and Arisa face palms.

"Take a closer look!!" She said and Mercedes spoke.

"Wait...." the woman said as she squinted her eyes, "his nails have these strange white lines. Also....I'm noticing his lips are dry and....there seems to be some sort of rash on the body." Mercedes said.

"Keep going." Arisa smiled softly and a man spoke, "taking a closer look....I'm noticing swelling around his chest and sores and redness around the mouth...." he said and Arisa nodded.

"He died of poisoning!!" A 17-year-old screeched, and Arisa clapped.

"Correct!!" She said and everyone stared rather stun at the 15-year-old girl, "Good observation skills. Now, if we were to take a blood test, we would be able to see what poison was used to to kill him. However, you also must be careful in these cases because there are poisons that leave no trace whatsoever in the body. When handling a patient, you must wear gloves. And rule number one!!" Arisa pointed her index finger, "NEVER TOUCH BLOOD DIRECTLY!!" She said.

Of course, she herself has already broken this rule too many times because blood has literally already been on her hands and face because of people she killed, but that's why she is always carrying medicine with her. Her fear of blood is still something that has not gone away, and she doubts it ever will. The first thing she does after killing a person is washing her hands and immediately use soap and alcohol to disinfect herself and her family and friends also.

"The main reason for this is because blood can carry diseases, viruses, infections that can be passed on if they come in direct contact with it. Even worse If you have an open wound. Body fluids such as saliva, urine and sweat have a less risk unless blood is mixed in it. You need to be careful." Arisa sighed as she looked at everyone in her class.

"These advanced methods of medicine and magic I learned from traveling the world. I will teach you what I can to help you all be prepared. Some of you know the basics of treating wounds, making medicine. But the methods I will teach are much more advanced and have saved countless lives.” She said as she pointed to her chalkboard.

"I will be strict. I will be harsh at times. Some of you may even think of me as complete bitch." She said and few students looked away, "But I promise you this, " she took a deep breath and looked at everyone in the class, "you will not regret taking this class. Medicine is the physical body. Magic is to manipulate the energy flow in the body. We will combine both science and magic in this class. That is why I have it required that you take chemistry and biology before taking
this class." She said as she took out the book she wrote.

"This month, you will be learning advance healing spells. Make sure to get all the materials in the list I gave you all. We'll be using all those tools throughout the semester." She said.

The next 2 hours were talks of magic formulas with a combination of math.

- 3 PM -

The students were stunned to silence as they left her class and could not believe the advanced magic formulas the girl was talking. Then again, it was expected from a Holy Magus but the advanced level she talked, was overwhelming for many in her class. The good thing is that Arisa took her time to explain everything step by step and had plans to make study guides for her students so they could use them as references. She let go of a long sigh as she looked over to her clock and let go of another sigh.

"I did not think medical classes would cause that much of a commotion." Arisa buried her face in her crossed arms.

Sothis sighed and patted her head.

"It's only the first day. Let us not forget you will have to teach the children." She said and Arisa nodded as she stood up and warped out of the classroom.

Before she went back to the castle, she made a quick stop at the bakery.

- 3:30 PM -

The room that the king gave her to teach was perfect!! A perfect table like a round table, shelves with books, a magic board she could use!! Apparently, it was new magic tool invented by Hanneman. Materials she needs along with other resources. Arisa smiled to herself as she was holding in a squeal as she saw Dimitri and Lestia come in along with Annette, Ashe, Felix, Ingrid, Edelgard, Dwyer, Hubert and Sylvian. The table was made for 16 people, so this was more than enough for her.

"Hello everyone. Glad you all made it." She smiled warmly as they all sat down where they wanted.

Edelgard sat across from Hubert, Ashe sat between Annette and Sylvian. Ingrid and Felix sat across from those three and Lestia, Dimitri and Dwyer sat near where she was.

"Since it's the first day, and I have met you all, I'll start something simple. First, what are your main goals?" She said and Dimitri spoke.

"I want to be able to control my strength." He said and Lestia snickered because she remembered when he snapped in half Felix's sword.

"I want to become the best dancer in the world!!! But seriously though, I want to master how to use an axe." Lestia said and Edelgard shook her head.

"U-Um...I want to become better at using a sword." Felix said shyly and Sothis cooed as she appeared and floated next to Arisa.

"I want to learn how to ride pegasus!!" Ingrid said cheerfully and Hubert nodded in agreement with her.
Arisa internally let go of a sigh of relief. It still confused her how Edelgard was still here in The Kingdom. She should have returned to the Empire in 1174 but Chris explained to that their uncle, Lord Arundel, had brought her back just last month. Of course, Arisa knew damn well that the real Arundel is dead thanks to Dimitri’s time in researching the church funds in the game. Lord Arundel suddenly stopped making donations to the church in 1174, so her theory is that the real one was killed, and Thales disguised himself as him. The same case was with Tomas (Solon) and Monica (Kronya). Also, Edelgard in this time never interacted with any of the Kingdom children, much less Dimitri’s friends. Now that she thinks about it deeper, Hubert shouldn’t even be here with her. It was confusing and frustrating. Now also looking back to the day of the offers, all the noble children of the three houses were there and got to meet each other. Claude, she knew was a distant relative of the Blaiddyd family. Change...she created a change she never knew was possible. All the noble children of the three houses met and became friends. And that part originally wasn’t supposed to happen till 1180. She saw how attached Bernadetta became to Felix since she kept hiding behind him. Arisa let go of a soft smile. This...was the positive change she wanted to create. Something that both Edelgard and Dimitri lacked, she created the opportunity for them to become closer to others. Unfortunately, Dimitri and Ferdinand still don’t get along, at least him Hubert talk at...a civil level. Edelgard was able to get the taste of talking to others. She remembers how happy she looked talking to Marianne, Hilda, especially with Lysithea. It was, beautiful.

"I want to learn how to catch the lady's hearts." Sylvain's voice made her snap out of it and everyone witnessed his ear got pulled by Ingrid.

"Yeah no. If you're trying to play hooker, then go to a bar." Arisa said and Hubert tried not chuckle at the face Sylvain was making.

"What's a hooker?" Dimitri said confused and Sylvain burst out laughing at the horrified face Arisa was making, while Hubert face palms.

"Dimitri, please, do not ever ask me that again." Arisa said while Sothis was cackling as she patted the boy's head.

"Cough!!" Dwyer said and everyone turned to him, "I want to master blades. Also, can you teach me how to prepare coffee?" He asked a bit nervously and Arisa smiled softly.

"I'm more than happy to. I also know how to cook so if you want cooking lessons, I'll gladly teach you." Arisa winked and Dwyer and Annette eyes sparkled a bit.

"I want to learn how to bake sweets!! Also, use an axe and magic!!" Annette said and Sylvain chuckled.

"What's so funny?!" Annette glared at him.

"No offense but aren't you a bit...short?" He said and that earned him a glare from the girl and, Edelgard.

"Annette," Edelgard said and the girl turned to her, "let us both Master the axe to take him down." She said and both girls shook hands.

"Short ladies unite." Sothis giggled and Arisa chuckled.

"Don't worry ladies. I'll show you how to sharpen your weapons also." Arisa smirked as she turned to the magic board and began to write down the lessons that will take place for September.

"Now, for this month, we'll be focusing on math, sword fighting, axe training and also forms of
meditation." She said as she circled meditation.

"The main purpose of this month is to measure out everyone's area of expertise but also what isn't. Sylvain and Hubert," she said, and the two boys sat up straight, "I'm going to be teaching you both advanced battle tactics. So, prepare for your head to spin." She said and the two looked at each other confused.

"Usually, I have a syllabus but you younger ones aren't exactly ready for that. Other than that, we'll be starting from scratch when it comes to sword fighting as well as using an axe. I want to make sure you all have the basics down before we head to the intermediate levels." She said and wrote down the materials they need.

"Make sure you all bring gloves as well as a blank notebook. I am having you all take notes. Also, I am making you take all take tests." Arisa said and everyone began groaning except Hubert and Annette.

Bless those two.

"Hey, this is for your own good. I do have an entire plan set up for these next months but if any of you are having a hard time, don't hesitate to ask me to help you. That's why I am here, to help you all." She smiled warmly.

Dimitri felt his face heat up again and Edelgard noticed. But who can blame him? She didn't want to admit it either, but she has grown a small crush on Kiana. The older girl was strong, elegant, a genius, beautiful, and a Holy Magus, nonetheless!! Still....

"I feel she's hiding something." Edelgard thought.

She kept analyzing the older girl. She just.... something about her felt she could trust her yet there was that nagging at the back of her head that she needs to be careful. Her eyes shifted to the stone on Kina's chest as the older girl was speaking about possibly teaching then a couple of spells based on how strong their magic is.

"I seen that stone before....but, I thought they were destroyed." Edelgard thought as Kiana had to write down a few things she won't tolerate in the class.

"Edelgard," she snapped out of her thoughts and turned to see Kiana speaking to her, "I'll be having you, Lestia and Annette working with me but also with a friend of mine who will be arriving next week. The axe isn't my specialty, but she is professional." Arisa smiled.

She'll be having Amir come.

"Alright." Edelgard nodded.

The next two hours along with two 15-minute breaks, were of writing and reading lessons. Arisa had her work cut out for her. Annette, Edelgard, Dimitri, Hubert, Lestia, and Sylvian had reading down while the others were struggling. Thankfully it wasn't too bad, but she assigned to them homework that way they could practice. She internally hated how the tradition of Faerghus is that children learn how to wield a weapon first before they learn to read and write. But she understood why. This land was cold and very difficult to survive in. Their past ancestors had to learn to survive in order to make The Kingdom what it is today. Arisa at some point had to help Felix with writing a few words as well as pronouncing. Well as taking a couple coffee breaks. She took advantage of that to show Dwyer how she prepared her own coffee. Too bad instant coffee doesn't exist in this time. While explaining what nouns and pronouns are, Dimitri kept noticing that Kiana's eyes kept
flickering between brown and partly green. The boy may be young, but he had sharp eyes. Too sharp at times.

"Arisa, your spell." Sothis whispered to her and Arisa stopped midway among a sentence.

Thankfully her back was facing the others as.

"Is it wearing off? That shouldn't be possible." Arisa thought and Sothis shook her head.

"Everything else is okay but it's your eyes. They are flickering." Sothis said.

“Shit…..Sothis ...that means I’m going to go through another magic shift tonight……” Why must she suffer through puberty again?!

"Professor, is everything alright?" Ingrid said, worried since she did stop suddenly in the middle of a lesson.

"Yes. Cough!" Arisa coughed and smiled to them, "I'm alright. I was just correcting myself on something. Anyhow, back to the lesson." She said and continued.

She needs to be careful.

[--------]

"Ghuughh....rah......ahh....."

Thankfully it had been hours later that she began to have her "episode" again. Her body felt like it was on fire, her skin burned, her blood felt like it was boiling. Her body hurt. Every nerve screamed in agony. The shift of magic in her body was happening again and more frequently. She hated how this happened every month.

"Mhhpppppphhh!!" Arisa screamed into her pillow as she held it tightly to her chest and the other between her legs.

Her eyes were flickering between mint green and her forest colors, as well as her hair. She was glad Sothis was asleep whenever this happened to her so her friend wouldn't witness it. She knew Byleth went through a series of changes when she fused with Sothis, but she thinks the most changes happened during the five-year gap when she was asleep. But now, Arisa literally must go through these changes by force because Sothis was awakened when she was 4 years old. This was literally puberty at a whole new level of agony.

"Goph If hapth thiphhs ((God, I hate this!!))" Her scream was muffled once more as she squeezes her legs tighter around the pillow, as her nails dug into the other one.

"I just pray I don't have a lewd dream, or I'll never live it down!!" Arisa thought as she panted and finally went limp on her bed.

She lazily looked around her new room. Arisa still couldn't believe she was living in the royal palace and next to Dimitri's room. Across from hers was Lestia's. Next to the princess's was Chris's and across from his was Zander's. Her room was a lavish baby blue colored room with velvet and silk blankets. The shelves were a beautiful redwood and even a table with where she could eat and drink tea. Her desk was made of maple and pine wood and had a faint smell of pine. Her room was huge, and she loved her king size bed. Even the closet was big. Arisa let go of a sigh as she tries to move her body, but everything still stung. She couldn't help but suddenly remember happened today in her class. Lestia commented to her that she was happy that it wasn't just her and her
stepmother living in the palace anymore because Lestia hated she was surrounded by so much testosterone. Arisa had to keep herself from bursting out laughing when the princess said that with a straight face during the class and Dimitri glared at his sister. Edelgard couldn't help but comment she knows how she feels. She let go of another sigh and undid her spell. She was wearing a simple green nightgown and her hair was let loose. She was tried and it was only the first day.

"Time to sleep...." she muttered and closed her eyes, making sure the door was locked.

Tomorrow was the second day.

- Meanwhile in Lestia's room -

With a plain pink nightgown, her hair let loose, showing how curly it was, the girl sat on her bed with arms crossed and puffed cheeks as Dimitri sat across from her, who had a cheerful smile as he checkmates her queen.

"Checkmate. I win again." He chuckled and she glared at him.

"It's not fair!!" She flopped on her stomach, "How are you so good at chess but horrible at using an axe?!? Arghhh!! And I even followed Claude's advice!!" The girl complained as she sat back as Dimitri was putting the board game back into its wooden box.

"Well, I play often with Sylvain and Gina. They taught me how to play.” he said as he closed the box and slide it under her bed.

Lestia sighs as she made herself comfortable on her bed and Dimitri sat next to her.

"Hey, did you like the class?" She asked and he nodded.

"I did." He smiled warmly as he fixes her blanket, "I think we're going to enjoy the Professor's class. Seeing everyone having fun, especially Edelgard talking to everyone, I really did enjoy it. It has been a long time since we...actually enjoyed our lessons." He smiled sadly and she nodded.

"Agree. The last time I saw you so happy was.... back when we were two years old. When, you were saved by 'her'." Lestia said referring to Arisa and Dimitri's smile seem to become like that of a love-struck schoolboy.

"You want to see her that much?" Lestia raised an eyebrow and shook her head.

Would it hurt to drop hints that the girl he was crushing on was literally sleeping right in the room across? You know what? Screw it. She hated waiting and wasn't about to witness a love opera in this castle!! She already seen how lovey dovey her father and stepmother get as much the one time she caught Chris making out with Gina! Screws it!

"Come with me." She grabbed his hand and the two climbed out of her bed.

"Where are we going?" Dimitri said as she was pulling (dragging) him put her door and quickly turned off the light in her room.

Lestia giggles evilly as she carefully opened the door of her room and peeked out. All the candles were out and only moonlight illuminates’ part of the hallway through the stain glass window. She dragged her twin brother to the door across her room and smirked as she saw his confused face.

"This is Kiana's room. Why a----" then it dawned on him, " No no. We are not going into her room without her permission!!" He whispers yelled to her and she just gave him a blank face.
She turned to the door and touched the doorknob, using a bit of magic to undo the lock on it. The door quietly clicked and Lestia quietly opened it. She peeked her head to make sure everything was clear and smirked when she saw her friend was asleep. *Very deeply asleep.*

"*Come on in...*" Lestia grinned as she made way in and motioned her brother to join her.

"N-No...I'm okay." Dimitri stuttered and Lestia pulled him in.

"Just shut up and look!" She whispered hissed to him and pointed at the bed.

Dimitri looked and his eyes went wide. He slowly walked up to her bed and stared at the sleeping girl, shocked.

"It...can't be...." he whispered as he gently touched her cheek.

The girl was lightly snoring and deeply asleep. Sothis's sleeping habits have become hers. The boy could only stare and felt his eyes tear up.

"*She's closer than you realize.*" Lestia repeated Arisa's words, making Dimitri look up to her, "*your heart will guide her to you.*" She smiled softly.

"Her heart led her to us. She's here Dimitri. Kiana Kalsana and Arisa Byleth are the same person." She said Dimitri smiled as he wiped a tear away.

"But...why is she hiding who she really is?" He asked, worried as he looked back to the girl, who moved a bit in her bed.

"Simple answer." Lestia crossed her arms, "She's worried for our safety." She said and had to keep herself from bursting out laughing when Arisa suddenly grabbed his wrist and pulled him into her bed, also her chest.

Dimitri was frozen stiff and had become a tomato.

"She thinks you're her teddy bear!!" Lestia snickered as she got a hold of Arisa's actual stuffed bear and shook it a bit as she snickered at the predicament her twin brother was in.

Dimitri tried to move but seems Arisa's grip had become tighter.

"Hmmmmm......tea.... chamomile tea....hmm....nice...." Arisa muttered softly and just hugged the poor boy to her chest, and Dimitri was having a heart attack.

"I'll leave you two alone....." Lestia snickered as she walked to the door.

"No, Lestia!!! Help me please!!" Dimitri plead, trying not to wake up the sleeping girl, despite how warm she felt.

"Nope. Good night big brother!!" Lestia smirked and quickly left, shutting the door.

"Lestia!!!!!!" Dimitri whispered screams.

He was so going to get her back for this but for now....

He turned back the sleeping girl and gave up. He knew he wouldn't be able to escape her arms because she had a grip of iron. Dimitri let go of a sigh and let himself sleep. In Arisa's arms, he felt warm and safe. Unknown to him, Sothis woke up and was doing everything in her power not the squeal but also screech at the sight.
Meanwhile, Lestia was outside the door with a smug smirk and had her arms proudly cross.

"I'm not about to witness a love soap opera in this palace!!"

Chapter 24: Class: Professor : End

Lestia is the troublemaker oc of this story. She’s impatient, reckless, the opposite of Dimitri. I’ll have a couple character profiles ready soon. The next chapter is the result of what the girl did and, we’ll finally have spotlight on Cornelia’s motives as well as the planning phase for the upcoming Tragedy of Duscur.

How Arisa looks like: Age 15 (I am not a professional artist):

Update: I saw the trailer for wave 4 of the DLC and I’m like…..Fuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuckkkkkkk!!! Time to update my plans. I don’t plan to add anything new, that includes The Ashen Wolves gang, till the actual DLC comes out because I want to learn more about them before anything. I will play the route first before I even do anything. But another than that, my story will continue with the original plan I have set.

Also, I’m answering any questions you guys have in the next chapter. So, leave them in the comments please, and also, please remain civil with the questions.

End Notes

And though I am gone,
Just ash in the wind,
One life surrendered,
So yours can begin.
Courage my children—
This is your song.
I am the Earth—
I will make you strong.

Please drop by the archive and comment to let the author know if you enjoyed their work!